



方想◆著

10

零部传奇

Legend of the Zero Part

UNDEFEATED GOD OF WAR

BOOK 07

Fang Xiang

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Undeclared God of War

(不败战神)

by

Fang Xiang

(方想)

Synopsis

Youth, is meant to be used to shed sweat under the sun!

Youth, is to continuously engage in battles, and secure the win!

The endless journey on Heaven's Road, an endless expedition, a testimony of a hot-blooded youth's legend!

A dream every man harbors, with the ignition of the blood!
Forever young, Undefeated God of War!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ting, BerrryBunz @ [Translation Nations](#)

Translation Edits by Robin, Leo and De Andre, and Boost Turtle
@ [Translation Nations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 – Richard

To be able to persevere when everyone else have failed, it could be stupid, or it could be brave.

Regardless if it was stupidity or bravery, Tang Tian felt good about that, because he was like that.

Although the manager could not understand Tang Tian's decision, he understood rich people, and all the rich people were extremely weird. Once a person becomes rich, he naturally will become weird as well. Maybe it was a type of fetish, or maybe they were things that made rich people interested, all in all, who cares!

After signing the sponsorship agreement, and receiving the first 100 million sponsorship, Richard's heart finally went down towards his stomach. In truth, he was not supportive of his son's choice, but who called him to be his son? To be able to help his son gave Richard the biggest comfort.

“This is the research information report regarding the Honorable Martial Continent, in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, no one is better in it than me. No one understands the Honorable Martial Continent better than me.”

Richard spoke with an arrogant tone, with his nose pointed towards the sky.

After Tang Tian received the report, he sat down and started to read carefully.

The Honorable Martial Continent had emerged in the recent few hundred years, and compared to the Gold Continent that held ten thousand years of history, a traditional rich and power aristocratic continent, they were an upstart so new that it cannot be any newer. But in this world. It was not the history and past that determined their ranking, but power which was the most cruel gauge.

The Honorable Martial Continent had already rose in the Sacred Saint Galaxy to become the top grade powerhouse, their sudden emergence was through annexing.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy has tens of thousands of continents, where the West Region had the most number of continents, consisting of over 4000 of different sized continents, but recently there were only 2000 remaining. After the few hundred years, the Honorable Martial Continent continuously grew bigger, annexing the rest, from a mid tier continent in the West Region, they quickly became the tyrant of West Region, and then became the strongest powerhouse in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.

The current Honorable Martial Continent already represented the entire Western Region.

The entire Western Region was hidden under the dazzling limelight of the Honorable Martial Continent.

What was even more surprising was that in the years when the Honorable Martial Continent grew to emergence, they did not

produce absolute geniuses. They quietly changed and improved their Honorable Martial martial techniques, quietly improved on their spirit research, and quietly built up their Honorable Martial Army, and quietly annexed other continents.

Many people have thus called this special feature of Honorable Martial Continent as the “undercurrent style of progression”.

They praised Honorable Martial Continent’s team spirit highly, and thought that although they did not have any great potential leaders, their outstanding team cooperation and harmony pushed them to unprecedented heights.

From this, Tang Tian already knew what was going on. Why the Honorable Martial Continent was able to succeed in researching spirits was because they had the Honorable Martial Group and the Temple, which allowed them to form a bridge between the two worlds and draw the advantages of both worlds.

Now, another person who has the advantage of both worlds have appeared, and he is Tang Tian. Furthermore, the Honorable Martial Continent did not know Tang Tian had already arrived in the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

But time was not on Tang Tian’s side.

There was no time for Tang Tian to expand slowly. Once the Star Door opens, the army of the Honorable Martial Continent will be able to enter Heaven’s Road, and that would definitely become a disaster.

Recognizing the might of warships, Tang Tian knew that the armies of Heaven's Road would definitely not be able to stop the army from Sacred Saint Galaxy, as the powers between the two were of totally different grades.

From the start, the Honorable Martial Continent already had the plan to subdue and annex the entire Heaven's Road.

That was not something Tang Tian wanted. Heaven's Road was his home, and he could not tolerate Heaven's Road being trampled upon. He had set his mind to it, he would return to Three Spirits City, and allow Ursa Major Constellation to join the fight against Honorable Martial Group. Honorable Martial Group and the Temple were the Honorable Martial Continent's claws and teeth.

Suddenly, he noticed a paragraph.

"The Thirteen Families? Can you tell me about them?" Tang Tian asked.

"The Thirteen Families, is the name I have given them, thirteen families that have suffered the attacks of the Honorable Martial Continent." Richard shrugged his shoulders: "There are many families that have been attacked by Honorable Martial Continent, in the few hundred years, the number of continents they have annexed is not less than 500. On average, in one year they would annex one continent. And this is just direct annexing, the number of indirect annexing is even higher. But these Thirteen Families are not in West Region, but in the South Region."

Seeing that Tang Tian was so immersed in his explanation, Richard became more excited: “When I was researching on the Honorable Martial Continent’s history, I realised that they rarely left the Western Region to attack other families of other continents. But these Thirteen Families suffered their full force attacks instead. I became particularly curious, why must Honorable Martial Continent go against them so hard. Only when I researched about these families did I realize something interesting. These Thirteen Families, in a far ancient time, all had a case of missing people. And between the Thirteen Families, this is the only link.”

Hearing to this point, Tang Tian understood everything, that was the 12 Ecliptic Palaces and Onyx Soul.

“The Honorable Martial Continent used many underhanded methods against them, and in the past hundred years, they have been constantly attacking them. This matter is not known to everyone, as I found it in an old diary when I was studying the information from the illegal underworld. All this research will constantly touch upon some strange things. So, I highly suspect that the reason why the Honorable Martial Continent is so against the Thirteen Families is precisely because of the missing accident. Then I thought, for what reason, would the Honorable Martial Continent persistently attack them? Take note, it is attack, attack in the hopes of destroying the target! That leads us to only one possibility, that the Honorable Martial Continent sees these Thirteen Families as a potential threat....”

Tang Tian interrupted him: “Are the Thirteen Families still around?”

Tang Tian naturally knew of the reason why the Honorable Martial Continent was attacking them, the 12 Ecliptic Palaces and Onyx Soul were Honorable Martial Group and Temple's most hated enemies.

If I can find the Thirteen Families, they will be my natural allies.

"Some of them still are." Charlie said: "This is after all the South Region, no matter how strong the Honorable Martial Continent is, they cannot extend their reach here. They can only spend some money to hire some people of the dark forces to take action, But you know, no one will allow these dark forces to go too far, because it is basically challenging order. The aristocratic families and tyrants of the Southern Region naturally will not permit that. And the Dark Forces are smarter than anybody, they are not willing to suffer a disaster for money."

"What can I do to find them? Tang Tian asked.

Richard suddenly sensed that something was amiss, as though he was being swept into a tornado, he knew very clearly how deep this water was, and he started to evade: "Hmm, I am just a teacher in the academy, and this is just my research task...."

"It is just research, and those, many of them are found by rubbish paper..." Richard shook his head.

"1 Billion." Tang Tian interrupted him, seeing that Richard was still shaking his head, he reiterated himself: "I will raise your son's

budget by another 1 billion.”

2 Billion.....

The hotel manager stared at Tang Tian, That's 2 billion, 2 billion! Why didn't I study back when i was younger? Why didn't I research on the Honorable Martial Continent? Why.....

And, Do you even know how to negotiate? Do you know how to set a price? Do you know how to outwit....

It is simply too cruel that it makes my hair stand!

The two of you dirty moneybags think with money, you guys can act like you're everything.....alright, who am I bluffing, you guys can do that.....

The Hotel Manager was extremely jealous of Richard.

Shi Sen who was by the side was not at all envious of Richard, but staring coldly at him, the moment when the Master orders, he would instantly rush up without hesitation, and cut off his throat!

Richard hesitated, his mind was in a conflict: “But....”

Tang Tian was never a person who was kind to others, he stared at Richard, and shouted: “Shi Sen!”

Shi Sen and the few others immediately surrounded Richard.

The Hotel Manager's face instantly turned pale, This is the White Sands Academy, If any violence were to occur here. Then I who have pulled strings to initiate all of this, will not be able to escape. No, I need to stop everything before it happens!

“What are all of you doing? This is the White Sands Academy! You dare to make a move here, The academy will not let you go...” Richard bellowed sternly.

“Then I will trample this whole ground!” Tang Tian lost his patience, killing intent suddenly surged out of his entire body. The Honorable Martial Continent was like a mountain pressurizing Tang Tian, and as time was of the essence, Tang Tian's pressure increased substantially.

“Master, can I advise him for a bit?” The Hotel Manager said weakly.

Woosh, everyone turned to look at him.

“I'll give you two minutes.” Tang Tian said coldly.

The hotel manager spoke extremely quickly: “Professor, I don't understand why you are refusing? Are you afraid of being implicated? Or is your report not substantial enough? You have already found all the secrets of the Honorable Martial Continent, as long as we publicly announce and release this report, the

Honorable Martial Continent will not let you go. Do you think you can go against the Honorable Martial Continent? They are not able to destroy the Thirteen Families, but they can end your life easily by spending money, oh, and your son too.”

Richard’s face turned pale white.

He’s right.

As long as the report was released to public, the Honorable Martial Continent would definitely find and kill him. He knew of their means and ways, far more than anyone else.

Silence, dead silence.

After a long time, Richard raised his head, revealing his pale face: “I can promise you, but you must promise to keep my son safe.”

“Not a problem!” Tang Tian was ecstatic: “We are also very powerful!”

Tang Tian turned, and to the hotel manager, he praised: “You’re good, this is your reward!!”

The hotel manager accepted the card, and seeing the number on the card, he almost fainted, it was 100 million cloud coins!

“I am lacking an agent in the White Sands, are you interested?”

Tang Tian suddenly asked, he thought that the hotel manager's mind was extremely quick and flexible, and was rather reliable in doing things.

“This subordinate is willing! Whatever errands Boss wants to be done, Han Sen will complete it, no matter the difficulty, without hesitation!” He said without hesitation.

Following and mixing with a rich man was far better than being a hotel manager, and with just one day of revenue, he has changed his entire life.

Upon making the decision, Richard moved very quickly. He immediately quit his job. Upon returning to the hotel, he had another young man by his side, Richard Jr. Richard Jr. heard that Tang Tian was willing to sponsor his spirit research, and without any questioning. Tang Tian even threw him a treasure, which immediately aroused Richard Jr.'s attention, and he became dumbstruck the entire way.

Seeing that, Richard knew and was undoubtedly sure, that the that the treasure with spirit had an extremely high price. Tang Tian had casually given Richard Jr. one, as though it was an ordinary object.

Richard was secretly trying to guess what and where Tang Tian was from.

Tang Tian was extremely pleased with the harvest he had, but he knew, it was just the beginning.

Chapter 602 – Mercenary Center

The enemies were much stronger than they thought.

But the good thing was that they have already found their target, but the enemy did not know of their existence. That gave them a definite advantage, and other than the lack of time, Tang Tian felt that they still had a big chance of winning.

His confidence was not from nowhere, throughout their journey, they have defeated opponents much stronger than themselves. Tang Tian had never been afraid of opponents stronger than him.

Richard found Tang Tian for money, and then he left.

Tang Tian did not stay in the hotel long too.

“Master, this is the White Sands City’s largest mercenary center. The mercenaries that come here to seek a living are all quite good. White Sands has a lot of trading companies which form many trading expeditions and caravans, and thus frequently need to replenish their staff. There are also some local wealthy landlords here that visit this famous location.” Han Sen’s tone was full of flattery: “If any of them are caught by Master’s eyes, then they are truly blessed with great fortune from their past lives.”

Shi Sen’s face revealed an expression of despise, he hated the way Han Sen acted, like a “Treacherous person”.

What made him even more unhappy, was that both of them had the name “Sen”, and the boss would call him [Da Sen](#), and call Han Sen, [Er Sen](#).

(Big is Da in chinese, and Big Sen and Small Sen is truly too weird, thus, i will call them as Da Sen and Er Sen. Er is Second.)

To be classified in the same term as this fellow with no backbone, it truly is a humiliation.

But upon stepping into the Mercenary Center, his expression became serious.

“Can I ask what are you looking for?” A lady smiled and welcomed them.

Shi Sen asked: “Do you have Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts?”

“Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts?” The lady who was in charge of servicing them nodded her head: “Yes, I do, in Area D, please follow me.”

Following behind, the group came to Area D, which was packed filled with mercenaries waiting to be picked. Most of them came from poor and barren lands, and had no other talent than killing. Having no other life skills, they could only wait in their areas all day, waiting for the chance to be picked.

The competition inside was always intense.

“This mister hopes to recruit some Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, please keep according to the criteria, and come up to accept interviews.” The lady spoke loudly.

The group immediately flew into laughter.

“Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts? Ha, that’s an amateur!”

“Good for us that an amateur is here, they are easy to deceive! Maybe we will finally have our chance today!”

“With one look, I can tell that that fellow is foolish with loads of money, I’m going up.”

“Me too!”

.....

Tang Tian had long given Shi Sen the task to choose the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, Tang Tian was also curious to how Shi Sen would be able to choose the real Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts from the group of people. Initially Shi Sen had planned to recruit them straight from Underworld Continent, but as they were still lacking in manpower, he suggested to test their luck at the local mercenary center.

Shi Sen's face remained calm, only his eyes revealing a cold intent, causing him to look increasingly cold.

A large group of people laughed and stood up, while the others wanted to enjoy the exciting scene. In the recent years, the Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts' fame had become stinking bad, and only a group of amateurs would come to ask for them.

"Are there any more that wants to come up?" Shi Sen asked indifferently.

"No!" The people below shouted, and some even chuckled.

"Good." Shi Sen's face remained calm: "If you can stand after 30 seconds, then you qualify."

With that, he stepped out, and the 10 people behind him, all of them leaning forward and holding onto their blades, they stepped out, and with just that step, their light auras all combined into one.

Bang!

A burst of astonishing aura erupted out without any warning, the surging killing intent suddenly caused the room's temperature to plummet to negative. Without any proper defense, the majority of the saints suffered a pain similar to being struck in the chest, and retreated seven to eight steps, before stopping with overwhelming shock in their hearts.

There were 20 people who were persevering without moving.

Shi Sen continued to shout out the timer indifferently: “Seven, Eight, Nine....”

His right hand, also casually held onto the grip of Evening Snow Ocean, his aura suddenly increasing by another degree.

Another six people were unable to persist, and stepped back to retreat, and three of them felt their legs go weak, and dropped onto the ground. At the moment no one were mocking them, everyone were looking at Shi Sen and his team in fear.

The aura of the eleven people were of one body, without any flaws, like a furious big wave, one wave after another, each wave higher than the previous.

The remaining fourteen people were bitterly persisting on, with their clenched teeth, veins protruding out of their bodies, activating all of their energy to the maximum, all of them releasing light auras that enveloped their bodies.

On the contrary, the light aura around Shi Sen and his team was extremely gentle.

But their light aura were as one.

Everyone were stunned in their place, their synchronization was over 80%. And caused them to feel even more fear, they had not even unsheathed their blades!

“Eighteen, nineteen....”

Shi Sen’s mouth drew into an arc, but it was a smile, that was without any warmth. It was extremely cold like ice. After the ridicule by the people previously, it had already caused a burning fire in his stomach.

Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, have you all ever seen the true Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts?

The cold in his eyes became even colder, and Evening Snow Ocean gradually raised up.

The aura that he released was astonishing, the energy in the room became more and more active. Many people realized that they were gradually losing control of the energy in their bodies.

The Demonic Mounts behind Shi Sen also gradually raised the Black Wind Blades in their sheathes.

Boom!

The energy around Shi Sen and his team swept crazily, one after another of streaks of dazzling light streaks like a tornado spinning and rising quickly.

Bang! Bang!

One after another, bodies flew out, they struck onto the walls fiercely, two of them even sustained light injuries, as blood leaked out of their mouths, all of their faces revealed overwhelming shock.

In a blink of an eye, the field only had three people left.

And at the same time, Evening Snow Ocean which was in Shi Sen's hand was already at the highest point, his aura also peaked to maximum, like a reservoir that was filled to maximum and was leaking with water!

Everyone were unconsciously holding their breaths, they had a strange foreboding, the following strike would be earth-shattering. The remaining three used all of their power and prepared to accept the following strike.

The timer was already at 26 seconds!

Shi Sen's mouth suddenly revealed a mocking laugh, along with his ten other subordinates.

Without any warning, the energy that soared to its pinnacle and was at the edge of erupting suddenly disappeared without a trace.

It was as though the feeling and spectacle of energy were all just a hallucination.

The three men still standing all spat out blood at the same time, and fell to the ground.

“29, 30.”

The last two words came out of Shi Sen’s mouth, and without hesitation his face was filled with disdain as he spoke with mockery: “A group of trash.”

His voice was not loud, but in the dead silent environment, the entire place could hear him.

Everyone looked at Shi Sen’s group as though they had just seen a ghost. The scene where the energy had suddenly disappeared completely betrayed common sense. A fist that was already full force and prepared to strike, how could it suddenly be retracted?

That last withdrawal of energy, was the true game changer transformation, a strike that exceeded everyone’s expectation of the limit.

The three people who had persevered till the end, were all injured because of the formless strike.

A group of trash, just those four painful words went into everyone’s ears, but to these violent characters, it was a large slap

to all of their faces, and they could only stand there blankly in their own place.

Compared to the group, they truly were a group of trash.

Even the three people who persisted till the end were filled with shame.

Clap clap clap.

The sound of claps came out from behind, it was a short haired man, who started to praise: “I never expected to be able to meet the real Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, as expected, all of you are of quality. But it is truly a pity, you are all old and not our opponents. There is no way to see the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts that were at their peak, otherwise, at least they would have the qualifications to spar a bit with our Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts.”

The short haired man was crowded around by a community of swift and fierce companions, all of their looks revealed ominous glints.

“Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts?” Shi Sen squinted his eyes.

Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts were the most recent elite soldiers, and in every battle of the recent two years, there would be traces of them. They were a team full of offensive power, and extremely dauntless, and they had even absorbed the Demonic

Mount's mistakes of the past, the Qing Continent Tyrannical Mount's management was extremely strict, as long as they found out any impersonators, they would kill them.

The current Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts were renowned in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and were one of the 10 Elite Armies known in Sacred Saint Galaxy.

“Good blade!” The short haired man noticed Evening Snow Ocean in Shi Sen's hand, and said: “If we meet in battle the next time, We will not be merciful because you guys are old. Let's go, Uncles, we will leave first.”

He called for the companions behind him and turned to leave.

Just before they left, a few of the Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts revealed hostility towards Shi Sen.

The group of them left the Mercenary Center, and one of them asked: “Ah Sang, why didn't we take action? That blade was truly powerful, although it was not unsheathed, but I could sense its power!”

“That's right that's right! That's such a good blade, in that old man's hand, is truly a waste! Why not give it to us, and allow us to reveal all of its might.”

“Humph, for us to see his blade can be considered their blessing. A group of old men that soon be unable to even walk, they have no

qualifications to hold such a good blade!”

The group of them discussed lively, all of them did not understand, Ah Sang was not one to talk well with.

Ah Sang’s expression turned gloomy, and spoke as he walked: “You guys didn’t notice the young man standing behind the group of old men, he is very dangerous.”

“Very dangerous?” The group were in disbelief, Ah Sang was the fiercest person out of all of them, and he was never afraid of the Heavens or anyone, to actually feel fear because of someone dangerous?

Is he still the same Ah Sang we know?

Everyone could not believe their own ears.

“Yes.” Ah Sang’s eyes still had a trace of lingering fear: “When I noticed the blade in the old man’s hand, that young man looked at me once, and all the hair on my body immediately stood! And he was just casually looking at me.”

Everyone looked at each other, they did not doubt Ah Sang’s senses.

Ah Sang’s intuition was the strongest among all of them, and by relying on that, he had saved many of them many times in battle, they never doubted his strong intuition.

“Who is he?”

“I did not recognize him, but it’s normal, Miss Qin Yu Ran is here, so how many people would come to see her? I reckon he is someone after her as well!”

“Possible!”

“Everyone, stay low profile for a while for this period of time, there will be many experts these few days, so don’t cause any trouble.”

Hearing everyone’s discussion, Ah Sang thought back to that scene. He did not understand, why did that seemingly ordinary young man actually gave him such a strong sense of danger.

Who exactly is he?

Chapter 603 – Pirates, Lending Money, Black Gold

“Boss, I’ve checked it out!” The Adjutant said excitedly: “This group has 40 plus people, and the one leading them is a brat. On their way, they chanced upon and boarded Qin Yu Ran’s ship, and it is said that they stayed in the cargo area, and only took action when they met us. I heard that the Bloodwood Warship is being sent to the Forever Bright Shipyard for repairs and maintenance, and spent a bit of money to bribe the shipyard people, from the looks of it, a set of Silver Grade Honeycomb Sword Cannon and Spiralling blast Machine were used until they exploded, completely into pieces, the burden might have been too much, to have led to the explosion.”

“40 plus people.” Lian Bo Jun muttered to himself, It seems to be a good fit, from the looks of it, this small team most probably has an outstanding military leader, using high synchronization , it allowed the 40 men to share the energy charge from the use of the machines.

Elites!

To be able to do it to such an extent, they are truly elites worth noticing.

Furthermore, to rely on these 40 people to change the entire battle outcome, such a team, if they’re not elites, then what are they?

“Where did they go afterwards?” Lian Bo Jun asked.

“They parted ways with Qin Yu Ran, their current whereabouts unknown.” The adjutant said: “The people close and around Qin Yu Ran are not easy to bribe.”

“Seems like it was a matter uncalled for.” Lian Bo Jun said, battles were always filled with different accidents and uncalled things, and furthermore they were a group of pirates, meaning that they would face more of such matters.

The adjutant looked at Lian Bo Jun hesitatingly: “Boss, the other side is extremely angry by our actions, they think that we have broken the agreement, and saying we are not trustworthy.”

“Oh, let them be angry.” Lian Bo Jun did not even raise his head: “We’re pirates, when did pirates ever need trust?”

The Adjutant laughed, trying to act treacherous: “Haha, then I will reply to them like that! Break what, they dare to criticize and give orders to us! Are they tired of living?”

“They’re trying to conspire too large a scale.” Lian Bo Jun said: “This time, we cannot risk going in too deep. A pity, Qin Yu Ran did not fall into our hands, if not, we would have earned enough to get a fleet.”

“A.....a fleet?” The Adjutant stammered, he was in shock.

“They have a lot of money.” Lian Bo Jun was expressionless, but a cold glint flashed past his eyes: “Qin Yu Ran is the most important part of their plan.”

“Then what do we do now?” The Adjutant was at a loss, the boss has spoken so much, but why do I not understand? But thinking about the fleet that had slipped out of his fingers, he took in a breath of cold air and puckered his lips, his face filled with anguish.

A woman in exchange for a fleet, Is this woman made of gold? Even gold is not worth enough!

“Coleslaw.” Lian Bo Jun said without raising his head.

Inside a luxurious manor.

“What? You actually met with a Pirate attack? AND a fleet of pirates? Oh my god! The sea around our White Sands Continent actually has pirates?” A beautiful lady used her feathered fan to cover her mouth, her face filled with shock.

All the upper class ladies seating in a circle were all shocked.

“Yes, the situation was very dangerous at that time.” Qin Yu Ran laughed: “But our luck was considered, good, we met upon a group of traders on the way, and they helped us a lot. Finally we managed

to push back the pirates.”

She knew that Big Brother Meng and his group did not want outsiders to know, and thus she explained it in vague terms.

“You are kindhearted and benevolent, and as precious as gold, your karma has proven itself time and time again.” Another beauty praised.

“Are they very powerful?”

“Miss Yu Ran, how long are you staying in the White Sands this time?”

.....

The group continued to talk excitedly, luckily for Qin Yu Ran, she was well versed and could speak well, and thus handled them well.

In the hall at another corner, Bai Xiao and a middle aged man were seated down drinking alcohol, laughing and talking.

“I heard that you met with pirates, that scared me.” The middle aged man laughed: “But in the end, thinking about your strength, You will always be able to get out of it, so I wasn’t anxious.”

“Second Uncle, You don’t have to worry about me.” Bai Xiao whined, but his face was not one of unhappiness.

His second uncle Bai Yue had always been his idol since young, becoming a captain of a unit at 16 years old. This achievement, in any continent was extremely shocking. After 20 years, time and time again He had defeated powerful enemies, and became the top military general of the Bai Family, and was the true authoritative person in the Bai Family.

This time, he had arrived in the White Sands Continent for work, and never expected to meet his nephew.

Bai Yue laughed: “Anyways you are also cockroach, and not easy to die.”

“Second Uncle, can you lend me a bit of money.” Bai Xiao said suddenly, exploiting the opportunity.

“What? Are you lacking of money?” Bai Yue looked at Qin Yu Ran, and mocked: “Did you spend all your money on chasing after girls? But Xiao Bai, if you are able to carry the beautiful woman home, Second Uncle will definitely support you! I’ll do something to get your father in the loop, what about it? If you don’t dare, then just admit that you’re afraid!”

Bai Xiao had a helpless look on his face: “Second Uncle, where are your thoughts going to. Although I do admire Yu Ran, but this is not about relationship. I want to borrow money for another matter.”

“No!” Bai Yue shook his head: “If it is not for a girl, I will

definitely not lend you!”

Bai Xiao looked at Bai Yue in shock, he actually did not know what to say.

“What? Are you thinking about it?” Bai Yue raised his eyebrows.

“Second Uncle, I want to buy Empyrean Ice Tree Spears.” Bai Xiao said suddenly.

“Empyrean Ice Tree Spears?” Bai Yue was stunned, he immediately lost the smile on his face: “Empyrean Ice Tree Spears? You want to borrow money to buy Empyrean Ice Tree Spears?”

“Yes.” Bai Xiao spoke softly: “This time, the pirates that we met were defeated by a group of people. 46 men, first, they used the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, then they used a Spiralling Blast Machine, and pushed back the pirates.”

“Really?” Bai Yue was familiar with battle, and he had quickly calculated in his mind, and suddenly raised his head: “That is extremely difficult!”

For 46 men to control a Honeycomb Sword Cannon and a Spiralling Blast Machine to defeat the pirates, no matter how he thought, it required an extremely high rate of frequency of attack.”

Bai Xiao [then corrected him](#): “These pirates had a Black Dragon Warship, and ten frigates.”

(In this chapter, in the original chinese, Bai Xiao had explained that Tang Tian's team used the Honeycomb Sword Cannon and an unknown weapon which is not the Spiralling Blast Machine written in the battle in chapter 595, due to the inconsistency I will keep it to Spiralling Blast Machine.)

“Impossible!” the light in Bai Yue's eyes exploded as he blurted out.

“I also thought that it is impossible.” Bai Yue said: “But I witnessed it personally. The Honeycomb Sword Cannon and Spiralling blast Machine were shattered to pieces, both unable to bear the energy charges. I was prepared to rush out to fight, but upon seeing the Spiralling Blast Machine that covered the sky, I was dumbstruck.”

“Where are those people?” Bai Yue became excited: “I want to see them!”

Bai Xiao ignored him, and continued: “I bought the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears from them. But I do not have enough money, and only bought 100 of them.”

“Wait a minute!” Bai Yue was completely shocked: “You frigging said 100 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears? Are you joking? How is it possible to buy so many of them?”

“Second Uncle, how can I get it wrong, did you forget who my mentor is?” Bai Xiao refuted.

“That’s right.” Bai Yue nodded his head: “I will give you 100 million, is that enough. Those goods are good, and worth buying, and currying favor with your mentor is good too, didn’t he have the project about the Blue Poison that year? Wasn’t it because there wasn’t enough Empyrean Ice Tree Spears.”

“It isn’t enough!” Bai Xiao shook his head.

“They still have so many?” Bai Yue was shocked: “Are you sure you’re not mistaken?”

“I’m not!” Bai Xiao replied: “Second Uncle, give your money to me first, I have already notified my mentor, and asked the family to send money over.”

“200 million, that should be enough, I am going to become poor.” Bai Yue said helplessly.

“Not enough!” Bai Xiao shook his head determinedly.

“How many does that fellow have?” Bai Yue was shocked.

“At least a thousand of them.” Bai Xiao judged.

“Hey, Xiao Bai, you’re not running a fever are you.” Bai Yue extended his hand out and touched Bai Xiao’s forehead, he did not believe Bai Xiao at all: “If you said he has one or two hundred, then I would somewhat believe that, But now you’re saying he has over a thousand? Haha, you must have been tricked! A naive young

man! Only the high ranking Blue Dwarves have Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, and they will definitely not sell them. Those people must have tricked you.”

“I checked the spears before.” Bai Xiao said straightforwardly.

“Are you sure?” Bai Yue’s smile slowly disappeared.

“I am sure!” Bai Xiao said without hesitating.

Bai Yue stood up.

Bai Xiao immediately pulled him back: “Second Uncle, where are you going?”

“To borrow money of course!” Bai Yue’s killing intent soared: “We definitely cannot let this batch of Empyrean Ice Tree Spears fall into other people’s hands. That old man’s luck is truly good, We must take advantage of it, and hope he can truly research on the Spears.”

At Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, Ning Hai had just walked into the research laboratory, when a manager walked in: “Ning Hai, there is a metal ingot on your table, Boss wants you to carry out a full evaluation on it. Do it fast.”

“Ok!” Ning Hai did not ask about the price, it was his job.

He sat down at the table, and noticed the metal ingot, a black metal ingot, completely glossy. He picked it up and was surprised by its weight. It was heavier than what he thought. This caused him to become excited, from the looks of it, its density was much bigger.

Ning Hai was the White Sands Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce most famous material appraisal master, and was responsible for assessing the worthiness of materials. This was an extremely covetous profession, with an extremely high salary, and the work relatively relaxing.

To Ning Hai, this sort of work was as easy as doing it with his hands tied to the back.

To judge the value of a material, it required a steady process. As long as he followed the process, there would not be a problem.

Ning Hai leisurely sipped on his tea and ate tidbits. To wait for the results, it required half a day.

Time quickly swept past, and he slept through the afternoon.

By the time it was evening, where sunset appeared out of the window, the evaluation report on the black metal ingot was done.

Ning Hai casually picked up the report, but when he looked for a

bit, he immediately jumped up, and kept on repeating: “How is this possible, how is this possible?”

The dazzling amount of numbers written on the paper, could only appear on the most outstanding metals sent over by aristocratic families.

Could I have made some mistakes somewhere? He pulled on his own hair in pain, because it meant that he had to redo it again. I cannot make the same mistake, this is Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, and the requirements are extremely stringent. If boss knew I made such a big mistake, I won't have my job anymore.

He threw the relaxed state of mind away, and began to work seriously. By night time, he did not go home, and continued to stay to work, carefully repeating the tests he had conducted in the day with full concentration.

On the second day, the results finally came out.

When the second report appeared in front of Ning Hai, he was completely dumbstruck: “Oh my god!”

After about 10 seconds, he finally came back to his senses, and with his shocked expression, he staggered out and ran, he needed to tell his master about his massive discovery.

No matter what, we definitely need to buy all of this black metal ingot!

Chapter 604 – Ling Xia

In the Mercenary Center, Area D's activity had caused the entire center to become lively. Shi Sen's group had displayed an extremely strong power, and had caused shock all around.

And when the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts appeared and revealed Shi Sen's true identity, The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, everyone immediately became excited. The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts decline were due to the inability to distinguish between the real and fake, and thus the strength of the real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts had become a mystery.

Is this the real Demonic Mounts?

Many people became extremely excited. Any legend would cause people's heart to be stirred, The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mount's emergence were filled with legendary tales, to finally witness Shi Sen's team strength, everyone then understood the true power of Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts.

The conflict between Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts and Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts quickly became the heated topic.

One was the current elites, and the other was the matchless and glorious strongest, their clash would definitely be spectacular. But no one would had thought that the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts would suddenly drop their heads and leave, without any

intention to fight.

This made many people disappointed.

Area D was filled with many people, and in the corners, people were discussing softly.

“So they are the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, no wonder.” The person who spoke was dressed in moss green clothes, his face looked malicious, whenever his eyes opened, a cold gaze would shoot out.

“Are they here for us?” The person who spoke was extremely thin, and his voice extremely soft, his expression indifferent.

“They shouldn’t be, they are most likely here to replenish members.” The man in green shook his head: “Oh, they left.”

The skinny man nodded his head, without saying a thing, his gaze landed on Tang Tian.

Upon leaving the Mercenary Center, Shi Sen looked to be normal, but he was extremely angry inside. He secretly made a decision, I must definitely bring back the name of Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts.

Tang Tian did not advise Shi Sen to care about what had happened. How could he not care? How could he ignore it? Da Sen had already controlled himself, If It was me, I would have

definitely beat those Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts up.

If you care about it, then do it, that is what makes a real man. To say that you are not angry and you're tolerant and magnanimous, those are all lies.

“Master, this subordinate wishes to go to the Underworld Continent!” Shi Sen suddenly said.

“Now?” Tang Tian was surprised.

“Yes, Master!” Shi Sen said gloomily: “The Underworld Continent is not far from the White Sands, if we are fast, we only need 12 days to rush there, and adding the time of recruitment, within a month, this subordinate will definitely bring back 500 Demonic Mounts.”

Tang Tian looked at Shi Sen, the face that was covered with hardships and the aging of time, the the white hair and beard that still had tenacity as tough as steel, the muddled eyes that were bright, was like a bonfire being sparked by wind and an ember, suddenly lighting up so bright like a charcoal burning red.

Suddenly, Tang Tian was extremely emotional, he took out a card: “Alright, be careful on the road!”

Shi Sen took the card, and immediately panicked: “Master, I do not need so much!”

An Underworld Continent Demonic Mount was worth 2 million, 500 would cost 100 million, and Master had actually given 150 million cloud coins.

“It’s alright, bring some extra money with you, if they are good enough, get more of them, the Precious Bright Village Regiment is still lacking in men.” Tang Tian said.

Shi Sen’s eyes turned red, the big sum of money was Master’s trust in him. In the many years of struggle, he had never experienced the trust with a worth of 150 million.

“Bring everyone with you, and be careful.” Tang Tian said.

Shi Sen was uneasy: “But Master’s safety...”

“I’m not far from the hotel, It’ll be easy to walk back, Don’t worry about me, anyways it’s not like I cannot protect myself.” Tang Tian waved his hand and said nonchalantly.

Shi Sen thought about it, That’s right, with Master’s strength, no one would dare to take action on him. He bowed to Tang Tian: “Master, then we will be off!”

Han Sen immediately said: “To get to Underworld Continent, this subordinate knows a boss, specially dealing with business between the Underworld Continent and the White Sands, you guys can board his cargo ship, and in that way, you can reach Underworld Continent in seven to eight days.”

Shi Sen was ecstatic: “That’s great!”

Tang Tian spoke to Han Sen: “Er Sen, bring them to your friends, then return to the hotel.”

Han Sen immediately patted his chest: “This subordinate will definitely accomplish it.”

Han Sen brought Shi Sen and moved out.

In a blink of an eye, Tang Tian was alone. The bustling number of people walking along the road caused the place to be extremely crowded. But because the City Lord did not wish for the sky to be covered, no one was allowed to build in the sky of White Sands City. All of the buildings in the sky were placed outside of the city.

All the wooden huts were colored in different colors, and when overlooking the city from the edge, extending to the distance, the city looked to be a gigantic rainbow labyrinth. The White Sands City’s land was extremely expensive, and the price outside the city was much lower. To saints that knew flying like the back of their palms, the distance was not considered much. The inner city was gradually formed and relied mainly on large businesses. While outside the city, relied mainly on smaller businesses and transactions.

Floating in the sky were clustered yet multicolored small wooden huts, attracting Tang Tian’s interest.

He shot up, using his unique Adaptive Eclipse, immediately attracting people who were travelling via the air.

“What a strange way of flying!”

“He is not using energy!”

.....

Various exclamations came out, but Tang Tian ignored them, and continued to increase his speed. A series of sonic booms occurred, like bubbles popping, Tang Tian continued to increase his speed.

“So fast!”

“Is that a secret technique?”

This sort of flying that did not produce any energy undulations, was never heard or seen of before, and the speed was still so fast, how could it not be surprising?

Tang Tian did not bother much, his concentration was at its peak, it was his first time flying at such a high speed. Although the standard of his Adaptive Eclipse had rose greatly, but such a high flight speed, adding that he had to avoid other people, he still needed to focus. If he was slightly inattentive and lost control, he would instantly fall, and with Tang Tian’s perverse body, it would

definitely not have a good outcome. If he clashed into other people, he would not have much of a problem, but if the other party was not in time to form their energy barrier, they might die.

Ling Xia had just left the City Lord's mansion, her face was still red with excitement, after finally meeting Miss Yu Ran, and even speaking with her, she was still immersed in her excitement.

Suddenly, a figure swept past her, bringing forth a gale, blowing her hair into a mess.

Ling Xia was stunned, but also became angry.

Who's that, so rude!"

Thinking that she was not even able to sense his approach, Ling Xia became even angrier, since when had she suffered such an experience like that before in the White Sands City? Snorting, Ling Xia increased her speed and rushed towards the other party.

Upon increasing her speed, two dazzling arcs of fire lit up beside her and surrounded her body as she moved.

"Eldest Miss Li!"

"Fiery Ling!"

Pedestrians on the road were shocked, and immediately made

way for her. Eldest Miss LI's temper was just like her nickname, she hated evil and sought grievances easily, and was the Big sister of the White Sands. All the young thugs in White Sands who met Eldest Miss Li would all have their tails between their legs and become obedient.

Ling Xia was from the Ling Family, and was not considered wealthy in White Sands, but had a long line of history. The Ling Family were well known, every generation Ling Family Patriarch possessed noble characters, and were well respected. One generation after the other of accumulation led the Ling Family to become a family that was not to be underestimated in the White Sands City.

From young, Ling Xia had displayed an extremely strong talent, and from young she became one of the most dazzling people of the younger generation in White Sands. Her character was outspoken and straightforward, although she was not calm, but she never shirked her faults and pushed responsibility away, convincing everyone of her talent. She quickly became the Big Sister of the White Sands younger generation, as she had the potential to become the White Sands Continent's first ever Female Commander.

All of the citizens were shocked, but were not afraid of Ling Xia, the Ling Family's teachings were strict, Eldest Sister Li was one who hated evil and sought grievances, and had brought many silk pants under control, but to the ordinary citizen she was extremely kind.

Suddenly, a blonde haired young man who was overcome with

boredom and hanging around in the air, caught side of the fiery red light.

When he saw the fire streak clearly, he instantly became excited.

Big Sister!

He began to increase his speed, and chased after the red streak of light, and when he saw that there was another person in front of Big Sister, he immediately became extremely excited. He took out a metal plate and imbued energy into it, and then shouted: “Hey, Ah Bin, quickly come to the north of the city, there’s a show to watch! Big Sister is chasing after someone!”

“WHAT! To dare compete with Big Sister? Crap! Who would be so fierce! I’m coming right now!”

Golden hair immediately imbued energy again, and repeated the same words.

“Oh my heavenly mother, to dare play with big sister, he is so daring! There’s a show to watch, I cannot miss it!”

Golden hair informed everyone he knew immediately.

The entire White Sands Silk Pants were completely shocked, and all came out of their nests.

To dare challenge Big Sister, he must definitely be a man of steel!

Very quickly, Tang Tian noticed that there was a woman that was chasing him without stopping. He turned back to look at her once, and knowing that he did not know her, he did not plan to care. But after a while, the other party was still chasing after his tail. Tang Tian frowned, and suddenly flipped his body and shot into an alley between the wooden houses.

In a moment, the other party's figure also appeared.

In that moment, if Tang Tian did not know that the other party was rushing for him, he would truly be too stupid.

Tang Tian snorted and curling himself up, he flipped and turned to the other direction. With an astonishing speed, he skidded through the air with his feet.

Pa pa pa

The consecutive exploding sounds came out, Tang Tian retracted as much as possible, like an extremely compressed spring, strangely stuck in the air, as though there was an invisible wall in front of him.

He kicked out with his legs fiercely, and like an arrow leaving the bow, Tang Tian shot towards Ling Xia.

Ling Xia's eyes contracted, she was secretly shocked, how is that

possible!

How is it possible that he can instantaneously turn in the opposite direction?

The other party's figure was like a shadow, shooting towards her with an incredible speed. Ling Xia was originally using her maximum speed to fly, and watched as the other party rushed towards her.

Her face changed, not good!

If they collided at such a high speed, the result.....

Without thinking, she immediately produced her energy barrier.

Is he crazy?

It was not only Ling Xia, all the silk pants who ran over to watch the excitement also had a change of expression, everyone revealing horrified looks, with such a high speed collision, even with the protection of an energy barrier, they would definitely be injured.

What they felt even more inconceivable was that the other party did not even use an energy barrier!

Was he trying to die?

As the two of them closed in the distance, Ling Xia had recovered from her shock, clenching her mouth, she was preparing for the impact. The distance was already less than 20m, when she finally saw the other party's expression clearly.

Wait a minute!

Ling Xia suddenly realised that the other party was revealing a look of complacency, and even pulled a face at her.

A stupid look...

Before she could react, the other party clashed head on, and Ling Xia who had braced for the impact did not feel anything at all.

Slightly in a daze, she rushed into the distance and clashed into a wooden house. The wooden house lit up with an energy barrier, Boom, Ling Xia was stupefied.

What's going on....

And the silk pants who were all watching the battle in the air, who were deadly silent for a few seconds, immediately exploded into a hoorah!

Chapter 605 – Why Are You Chasing Me?

The silk pants were completely shocked by Tang Tian's crazy performance.

He had suddenly turned directions and shot forward, and when the distance between him and Big Sister was around 3m, he deviated to the side, using the afterimage to confuse Big Sister, and Big Sister who lost control struck into a wooden house.

Oh my god, how is that possible.....

The silk pants could not believe their eyes, in that instant, the performance was too inconceivable. That sudden stop that completely violated common sense, and erupting full force in the other direction, and in that moment right before clashing with the other party, that perfect 90 degrees deviation, and with that, the afterimage that was conjured without any technique. And the conjured afterimage instantly became alive for the moment of impact.

So powerful!

An expert!

Everyone was even more shocked to see that Big Sister was at the disadvantage! Seeing that she had her energy barrier up and clashed into the wooden house energy barrier, their faces turned pale.

That is Big Sister, the Big Sister that can roam in the silk pants world, no one has ever seen Big Sister suffer so much before.

Who is that person?

That was the question that popped into everyone's mind at the same time.

Ling Xia wavered as she stabilized herself, although she had the protection of the energy barrier, she had suffered greatly from that clash. Only after about 10 seconds did she finally come to her senses.

Ling Xia's face flushed red suddenly.

I was fooled!

I was actually fooled by the most ordinary afterimage! Asshole!

She clenched her fists involuntarily, her veins protruding out, her formidable and valiant look was brimming with anger. She rushed towards the alley that the other party had rushed into previously and looked around, Where is he?

The clustered wooden houses outside of the city caused people to have to go around them. It was like a vast colorful labyrinth, and people could easily get lost in it. The complicated topography made

it look like a heaven for sin, it was easy to break away from tailing, and sudden ambush and assassinations.

Asshole!

Just at that moment, the metal plate on her body trembled, she imbued energy into it, causing it to light up with a gentle light aura, and a familiar sound came out.

“Big Sister, head west! That person is behind the seventh house at your west!”

Tang Tian was like an agile fish, moving between the complicated roads between the houses. Thinking about how he had successfully pulled a fast one on the opponent, Tang Tian was extremely pleased. Want to fight with this young lad? No way!

He inquisitively swept through the various weird looking houses, all of them had signboards hung at their door, with their scope of business and their various goods written on it.

Every wooden house was a family store, and by a look, there were so many of them, there're so many family businesses here, Tang Tian was inwardly speechless.

He was prepared to go into one to take a look, but from the corner of his eyes, he saw a red light.

Isn't that the crazy woman who was rushing at me before.

Tang Tian was shocked, and without thinking, he sprinted off.

The terrain of the place was perfect for escaping, Tang Tian's Adaptive Eclipse did not release any energy undulations, and was specialized for changing directions, so he was like a slippery fish, turning here and there between houses, in a blink of an eye, he had shook off the pursuer again.

Tang Tian relaxed once again, regaining the satisfied and leisure look. You want to fight with this brother, still too inexperienced!

In a blink of an eye he had thrown the matter to the back of his hand, this is just a minor episode on a normal day. And he did not care about such brief minor episodes.

Ling Xia did not expect that the other party would be so slippery, and had once again lost traces of him. But, she had arrangements made already, and her plate sounded out again.

“Big sister, he is 100m to your right, at the entrance of Old Lin's shop!”

Another silk pants had caught Tang Tian's position.

Without saying a word, she turned and flew to the right, she was a local of White Sands, and had played hide and seek since young, so she was extremely familiar with all the shops.

His figure once again appeared in her vision.

This time she did not raise her speed, but quietly approached him, but Tang Tian's intuition was much stronger than she had imagined. When she was 30m away from him, Tang Tian noticed her.

Tang Tian was shocked, and once again turned tail and ran.

Ling Xia clenched her teeth, and without hesitation she raised her speed and gave chase.

The other party's flight method is extremely strange, and goes against the problem of turning, It is extremely strange and yet so fast. In a blink of an eye, Ling Xia had lost sight of him again.

The metal plate on her body buzzed again, and Tang Tian's location was revealed again.

Ling Xia's mouth revealed a confident smile, all of those excited silk pants were being used by her as scouts, separated into all the different corners of the area. No matter where Tang Tian went, he was unable to escape from the vast net.

With a move, she disappeared once again.

Both parties began an unrelenting chase around the clustered wooden houses. Every time Tang Tian successfully shook her off, she would suddenly come back again.

Is this woman crazy!

I didn't do anything to her, why is she being so clingy.

Tang Tian felt that it was unreasonable, Is she looking to fight? He was lazy to run anymore, since it would be no end, fighting would still be easier and quicker.

Wait a minute, he suddenly realised, why am i even running? He smacked his forehead.

He stood there, and waited for her to appear.

The fiery light suddenly lit up the valley in front of him. Tang Tian's expression turned cold, and waited for the opponent to rush over.

The anger in Ling Xia's mind had dropped by half, she had to admit, without the help of her companions, she would not be able to catch up to him. This seemingly young fellow has extremely high attainments to escaping. People with true strength naturally would earn the respect of others.

She was already thinking about who he was. The bizarre way of flying, it was reasonable to say that it had outstanding characteristics, but no matter how she racked her brains, she could not think of who he was.

Suddenly from the corner of her eyes, she saw a figure.

He was not trying to run, but quietly floated in the sky.

She had lost her sight on him!

Ling Xia's expression changed, she suddenly realized that her very actions were a taboo. She was about to open her mouth, when a figure appeared in front of her, before she could even say a word, she could only act to resist.

Bang!

A fist smashed onto her energy barrier, the energy barrier immediately shattered into dust.

Ling Xia's face completely changed, He has killing intent!

Her reaction was extremely fast, she knew whatever she said was too late, and it was more important to ward off his attacks.

A strand of fiery light suddenly lit up, and like a fire snake, it pounced towards Tang Tian.

Tang Tian snorted, he struck the ray of fire light, the Null Flame coiling around it, causing the fiery light to extinguish as though water was poured onto it,.

Ling Xia's spirit dropped, she knew she had kicked the wrong board this time.

When Tang Tian had made a move against Ling Xia, the silk pants were all startled, and then started laughing. Is he trying to fight with Big Sister?

To them, the person was like a rat, and had no other capabilities other than running. In terms of crossing swords, how can he be an opponent for Big Sister? In their eyes, the entire operation was like a game show and was extremely pleasurable.

But when Tang Tian broke Ling Xia's energy barrier with one punch, the faces of all the silk pants changed. Every single one of them were people with experience, fighting and brawling were as common as rice, whether or not he had skills, they could tell with one look.

The few silk pants who were closest immediately rushed towards the two of them. No matter what, we cannot let Big Sister be injured.

Tang Tian who had never been the most patient person was completely annoyed. Maybe other people might hold back as Ling Xia was a female, but in Tang Tian's eyes, there were never a difference between a male and female.

A woman is weak? What joke are you making! When Qian Hui was in Andrew Academy, she had beaten up so many men!

And women who dared to stir trouble were all difficult to deal with.

Tang Tian released his fists and legs without mercy.

Ling Xia's entire body was caught up in the series of attacks, the frequency of attacks released by Tang Tian was too high, and she could not catch up at all. In the violent bursts of attack, she was unable to even catch a breath, her mind was in a blank, and all she could do was defend.

Bang bang bang!

The other party's fists were heavy and strong, far more than what she had expected, she kept on raising her energy barriers, but under the steel fists, her energy barriers were as weak as paper. What made Ling Xia even fearful was the lingering grey flames around his fists, it was an unknown grey flames, releasing an aura that caused her heart to feel extreme fear, regardless of what powerful energy was used, as long as it was struck by those grey flames, the energy would be extinguished.

Soon after, Ling Xia's heart and mind was overwhelmed by the strong sense of fear, she regretted her rash actions.

“Big Sister!”

“We're here!”

Ling Xia's state of mind was roused, a few figures had pounced towards Tang Tian.

Trying to gang up on me?

Tang Tian's eyes turned serious.

Golden Hair's eyes dazzled, and a figure appeared like a ghost. He shook, and immediately summoned his energy barrier.

He felt like a heavy sledge hammer had struck him, his energy barrier had instantly shattered, it was unable to withstand the power of the force. Golden Hair flew out like a sprinting beast!

Without stopping, Tang Tian tiptoed, extending his body outwards while bending forward, he formed a handsome long arc, and coincidentally stopped a fatty's path.

Retracting his waist, his legs were like whip as he suddenly released his legs.

Bang!

The energy barrier shattered like rain, and another figure flew out.

Relying on the momentum, Tang Tian continued to move, and appeared behind Ling Xia, and another fist came forward!

Ling Xia who felt that she just had the chance to breathe, in that helplessness, could only defend with all her might, sparks flew everywhere, her body was jolted, and unable to control her body, she moved forward by two steps.

But Tang Tian had already completed a turn and blocked off the reinforcements from the other side, his fists sent another flying one.

Pa pa pa, the light yet consecutive exploding sounds were like battle drums sounding out.

Tang Tian was like a never ending lightning bolt shooting back and forth, spinning around Ling Xia's surrounding at astonishing speed, shooting unrelentlessly. Not one person was able to break through his line, it was as though anyone who tried to approach would get flung away.

An inescapable net.

The phrase appeared in the minds of the citizens who had noticed the hoorah in the air.

Ling Xia was like a bird caught in a cage, regardless of how much she struggled, she could not escape.

One after another, a consecutive number of people were beaten down, which followed with exploding sounds and cries, but by

relying on himself, this trap that the young man had made was silent.

Who is this person?

One man against so many of us, yet he is unable to fall!

Her slender snow white neck was grabbed by a hand.

The hand that was like steel claws, made Ling Xia feel the back of her neck tensing up, the intense choking feeling caused her mind to go blank.

“Why are you chasing ?”

The young man’s voice was extremely stern.

Chapter 606 – An Exchange Of Blows Leading To Friendship

“Why are you chasing me?”

The stern voice did not sound out loudly, but contained a trace of coldness.

Ling Xia who was being grabbed and choked by the neck, with her messy short hair and pale white face, she had fear in her eyes, and became so weak that she looked so pitiful.

Everyone who were watching the excitement were completely stunned, no one thought that the situation would turn out like that,.

People further away could not discern Tang Tian’s question, but they had already sent message to the Ling Family. The Ling Family had a good reputation, and many people had received the kindness from the Ling Family, and thus many people had close ties to them.

And they were in the White Sands City.

An angry shout sounded out: “Let go off Miss Ling Xia!”

Without turning back, Tang Tian had already sensed that a group of people had arrived. And, they were even separating towards the

surroundings. Tang Tian who had trained with Shi Sen for a long time, had already understood their intent.

They were trying to surround him!

Tang Tian knew that facing an army or a unit, the last thing that anyone wanted was to be surrounded. Upon being surrounded, he would lose his space, and that was the most dangerous thing.

Without looking, Tang Tian carried Ling Xia and rushed ahead.

“Grab him!”

The man behind Tang Tian roared, and the soldiers that were preparing for the trap flew towards Tang Tian with all their might.

Ahead of him, a group of people were rushing forward in an attempt to block and hinder Tang Tian. Tang Tian’s eyes turned cold, why are you all suddenly chasing after me, why are all of you suddenly trying to fight me, and now you are all trying to catch me.

Is this godlike young lad so easily bullied?

Tang Tian squinted his eyes, without any intent to evade, he rushed towards the group in a straight line.

The opponents all lit up with light auras, forming a light wall and

blocking Tang Tian. Tang Tian snorted, he lifted Ling Xia up, ready to use her to smash the light wall!

Despicable!

The faces of the people who had raised the light wall immediately changed, the man who took charge immediately yelled in panic: “Everyone scatter!”

The light wall crumbled, and everyone scattered, making a path for Tang Tian.

Tang Tian was like a gust of wind, and blew across them. After a few flashes and borrowing the wooden houses as covers, Tang Tian carried Ling Xia and disappeared.

Tang Tian’s expression was focused, he carefully and cautiously checked his surroundings. Although he did not understand, but the girl in his hands seemed to be important.

This is not Ursa Major Constellation.

“Let go of me!”

Ling Xia finally regained her senses, and she screamed.

“Why are you chasing me?” Tang Tian looked around, his legs not stopping.

Ling Xia was stunned, Why am I chasing him? After thinking for a bit, she felt it hard to speak. Curiosity? Angry that I was shamed? It seems that any reason, I am still groundless.

Curious?

Tang Tian was startled, he thought for a long time, but could not think of any strange reason, and asked: "Curious of what?"

Ling Xia spoke: "Your method of flight."

"Oh oh oh!" Tang Tian saw the light, he immediately let go of Ling Xia and said proudly: "What do you think? Very powerful right! I created it by myself, it's called the Adaptive Eclipse, are you shocked by it, young lady?"

Ling Xia never imagined the other party to let her go just like that, and could also not imagine that Tang Tian would become so pleased, she was stunned for a while.

"To be able to see the power of the Adaptive Eclipse, Hey, young lady, your eyesight is good!"

Tang Tian portrayed a "Senior speaking meaningful and heartfelt words" expression.

Ling Xia stared blankly at Tang Tian, for a moment, she actually

did not know what to say.

Ling Xia regained her senses, and shouted to everyone: “It’s a mistake! It’s a mistake!”

The expression on everybody’s faces finally relaxed, since Big Sister Li said it was a mistake, then everything was fine. Tang Tian’s display of strength had struck fear in all of them. If they were to truly engage against him, they would most probably be dead and severely wounded.

Compared to them, the silk pants who suffered under Tang Tian greatly all surrounded them. They were extremely playful and their personalities were all rather naive, they might not look up to the majority, but they were extremely respectful to people stronger than them.

Big Sister was subdued, that means that this man who is full of life, must be number one!

“Brother, you were so full of life!”

“Your kick, holy mother, it was too fast! Even now my chest still feels tight!”

“Brothers, shall we go and have a drink?”

They surrounded Tang Tian, every single one of them were excited.

“Of course, men should be full of life!”

“Adaptive Eclipse, It was Adaptive Eclipse, it’s powerful right, I created it!”

“From now on, everyone will be brothers!”

.....

....

Ling Xia watched in dumbstruck as Tang Tian patched up with everyone, and even proclaimed to be brothers.

The silk pants felt that Tang Tian was likeable and strong, which they could respect, but his personality was so well too, that was hard to come by! They extremely hated those who feigned to be modest and hypocritical. Tang Tian was pleased, it seemed like everyone were frank and sincere.

Seems like they are all nice people, worthy to make friends with!

“What? Big Brother Meng is here to run errands? Why didn’t you tell me! My family has many shops to help you, it’s a small thing!”

“It’s a small matter, Big brother Meng, if you thank us, it means you’re ridiculing us!”

“Big brother Meng, your business, will be our business as well! In the land of White Sands, we still have a name of ourselves!”

.....

....

Everyone had already forgotten Ling Xia's existence, to be able to make friends with an expert, and for everyone to share the same habits, no, to appreciate one another's talents, that is fate!

Seeing that they were becoming more excited the more they talked, Ling Xia helplessly pulled herself into the group, and spoke in a serious tone: “Brother Meng, it is this Junior Sister's wrong today, this Junior Sister has planned a banquet feast as an apology to Brother Meng, I hope Brother Meng will accept!”

Everyone quietened down, since when did Big Sister ever apologized to anyone?

Just nice, Tang Tian was hungry, he nodded his head: “Great! Let us go together!”

“That is a must!”

“Big Sister, today your Junior Brothers did hard labor as well!”

.....

Ling Xia nodded her head: “Everyone will go together, all of you wait for me for a moment.”

She then floated to the people who had rushed down to help her, and thanked everybody. After finishing that, she flew back to Tang Tian and the rest.

Wooosh, the group of people pulled Tang Tian towards a restaurant.

As silk pants, anyone who isn’t an expert in eating, drinking or playing would never last in the circle.

The White Restaurant, White Sands best restaurant.

A group of people rushed into the White Restaurant, all of them were the usual customers, and the restaurant manager rushed over to welcome them in. Ling Xia was the one who had the highest probability of becoming the Commander of White Sands Fifth Army, and such a character must definitely be well taken care of. The White Sands Continent pursuit for an elite army, as compared to the 36 armies of Vast Star Continent, with just a mere 5 armies, seemed to be much weaker.

But the 5 armies were all elites, and were carefully selected through tens of thousands of people. The White Sands Continent’s Commanders as compared to the Vast Star Continent’s

Commanders were much stronger and had more power. Wielding true influence and authority, the five commanders of the five armies could be considered as influential generals of their region.

For a person to have the potential to become an influential general was not to be underestimated.

Tang Tian looked around curiously, the restaurant hall was filled, and the fragrance of food caused him to become even hungrier.

But they were stopped.

“Isn’t it Miss Li? I never thought that I would be able to run into Miss Li here, It is truly fortunate.” A man laughed and said, he was roughly 27 to 28 years old with a built body, he looked rather charismatic, and had a gentle and warm smile on his face, he held a wine cup and spoke to Ling Xia.

Tang Tian frowned, he disliked the vibe the person was giving off.

Ling Xia remained expressionless: “I never thought that Young Master would be here for a feast as well, it is fortunate to meet. Ling Xia has matters at hand and will not accompany Young Master, Young Master please continue with what you were doing.”

Her tone did not sound like she was happy at all.

Yet, He Ying did not make way, he lowered his head and spun the wine cup in his hand, and said playfully: “A direct invitation cannot be compared to a fated meeting, It is so difficult to meet Miss Li, why not we drink a few glasses together? Miss Li’s opponent wasn’t weak, why not everyone drink together and share a bit of stories together.”

Ling Xia’s face turned green, He Ying’s words had threats in it which were abundantly clear.

“Who is this?” Tang Tian nudged a silk pants beside him.

Young Master He heard him, and laughed: “I am He Ying. You must be the expert who sparred with Miss Li, you’re truly a young hero! I heard that there was a mysterious expert today, that shook the White Sands City.”

He Ying’s eccentric words caused Tang Tian to frown. Without giving any concerns: “Hey, I’m hungry, give way!”

He stretched his hand out ready to pull He Ying to one side.

“How dare you!” A fierce looking short and stout man rushed up to the front and stood in front of He Ying, and squinted his eyes, speaking out coldly: “You dare to be rude to Master, you must be sick of living!”

“And who is this now?” Tang Tian turned his head and asked Ling Xia.

“His bodyguard, name Heng Shan, an expert from the Eternal Pass Continent....” Before Ling Xia finished introducing, the scene before her dazzled.

Tang Tian had used the sole of his feet to firmly smash Heng Shan in the face.

Bang

Heng Shan opened his eyes wide, from the kick, he felt as if a force that could move mountains and topple the seas overwhelming him, and he flew backwards like a ball.

His stature was like a small hill, smashing painfully on the table, causing it to split into pieces, and all the drinks flying everywhere. Heng Shan fell into the mess, his face covered in blood, and he stopped moving.

No one had expected Tang Tian to instantly attack without even greeting.

He Ying’s face turned green, as the Commander of the 2nd Army, when had anyone ever dare act so wantonly in front of him?

Without needing to give any orders, all the bodyguards around He Ying immediately rushed at Tang Tian.

Ling Xia's face changed, all of He Ying's bodyguards were all experts with considerable strength. Tang Tian's sudden attack was out of her expectation, in a blink of an eye, the situation had become extremely terrible.

In truth, she was not willing to offend He Ying, after all he was the commander of the 2nd Army, even if she became the commander of the 5th Army, she was still ranked behind him.

But Tang Tian had already taken action, there was no route to retreat. She clenched her teeth, ready to make her move.

Tang Tian's actions were faster than her.

In his dictionary, there never was the phrase 'to be behind anyone else', his belief had always been

Strike first to gain the upper hand!

Furthermore, to dare block this brother from eating, you're truly sick of living!

Chapter 607 – Molten Iron Fist

“What leads do you have?”

Suo Ya asked. He had extremely stiff short hair and dense eyebrows, his squarish face looked to be chipped by a hatchet, his lips were thick and deep, and his skin was tan. No matter where he was, he gave off the feeling of being as steady as a mountain.

He was the commander of the 1st Army, and also the most trusted right hand of the Continent Lord, and was most illustrious powerful figure of the White Sands Continent.

“It’s Lian Bo Jun.” his subordinate reported respectfully: “We have spent a lot of effort and managed to bribe some pirates, and found that out on one of their replenishing boats. They have quite a few frigates that had suffered damages, and are in repairs now, and their losses were not small this time.”

“Lian Bo Jun?” Suo Ya frowned, the pirates were mostly ill disciplined people who grouped together, they were unorganized and would fall from the first blow. But there were also elites amongst the real pirates, which had strict regulations and discipline that were not inferior in any respect when compared to a regular army. These types of pirates were not good to provoke, and were the overlords of the Pirate world.

The [[Black Mountain](#)] that Lian Bo Jun commanded was one of them.

(Lian Bo Jun’s ship was Black Dragon, but the chinese here is

Black Mountain, if it ever changes I will let you all know.)

Suo Ya was one of the few that knew of Lian Bo Jun's background. He was a genius military leader that graduated as the third place in the Sky Forest Academy, and regardless of whether it was strategizing, guts or decisiveness, Suo Ya respected Lian Bo Jun in all aspects.

The Black Mountain Pirates, from nothing to something, from being extremely weak to a strong fleet, everything was created from this junior's hands. And the Black Mountain Pirates, although they plundered and robbed, but they never willfully killed innocents, it seems that at least, he still abides and holds to some baseline.

But, the person who had defeated his junior brother and even caused such loss to him, it seems his standard isn't low either.

“Who was the one who fought them?” Suo Ya asked.

“It was a small team comprising of 46 men, and the leader is a man called Meng Nan, they boarded the ship halfway in the journey, and said that they were coming to the White Sands Continent to run errands.” His subordinate replied respectfully.

“Run errands?” Suo Ya laughed, then said: “Check on him.”

What kind of joke is this? Even if it was me, I would not be able to make Lian Bo Jun retreat with just 46 men, what kind of

powerful people would come here to run errands?

“Yes!” The subordinate replied.

Suo Ya nodded his head, and then continued: “Pay attention to the security of the city, recently there are too many people in the city, and it is extremely crowded, get everyone to caution up.”

“Yes Master!” His subordinate complied.

“Go on then.”

When the subordinate left, Suo Ya remained deep in thoughts, If Lian Bo Jun is involved, then this matter is definitely not simple. He took out a message plate and imbued energy into it, a few seconds, a calm voice came out: “Senior Suo Ya.”

“Bo Jun, why are you attacking Qin Yu Ran?” Suo Ya asked.

“Senior, are you here to criticize me?” Lian Bo Jun did not seemed surprised, his voice was extremely calm.

“No, I just think that the matter is not that simple, that’s all.” Suo Ya answered.

Lian Bo Jun did not answer.

“If I’m not wrong.” Suo Ya’s tone went back to normal, but a cold glint flashed past his eyes: “There are people that want to make a move on the White Sands Continent?”

“You are truly senior brother.” Lian Bo Jun praised.

“What are the conditions that they gave you?” Suo Ya asked.

Lian Bo Jun started to become cheeky: “Is senior trying to bribe me?”

“Yes.” Suo Ya admitted straightforwardly: “Why can’t I? I believe that White Sands can give you equivalent offers. And I believe that compared to other people, my trustworthiness is better.”

Lian Bo Jun kept quiet for a moment, then said: “I’m sorry.”

Suo Ya was not angry, he nodded: “Oh, It seems like it’s not about the money. If it is not about the money, to be able to move you, that’s really interesting.”

“Senior, please be careful.” Lian Bo Jun said quietly, without any undulation.

“Thank You Bo Jun.” Suo Ya said courteously.

With that, he ended the communication, Suo Ya remained deep

in thought. In the dark, a light aura flashed past his eyes.

He Ying's bodyguards were all strong martial artists bought by money, and were all known experts. They were not proficient in battle formations, but all of them were strong individually, and even He Ying who was a prestigious military leader praised them to the skies. In the past few years, they had made He Ying's name flourish, causing envy from the other army commanders. In times of need, they would be the vanguards, and like heavy axes, they were unstoppable, and one of their ultimate moves of the 2nd Army.

White Sands City was a strategic location and flourished in terms of trade, as countless experts would come to try and make a fortune.

Money, position, power, all of the experts placed themselves above the rest and looked for higher goals.

It was survival of the fittests, and the bodyguards who stood by He Ying, would continuously change in batches, and each one getting stronger and stronger. In the White Sands Continent, the 2nd Army's "The Vanguard Battalion" was a name known to everybody.

The strength of the Vanguard Battalion made He Ying run amuck for many years without restrain.

But the scene before everyone, shocked them all.

Tang Tian did not even think, He Ying was a trash that he did not like, and the crazy young lad always beat first before talking. To think about the consequences, and the circumstances, opportunities, such troublesome high end problems, to the crazy young lad was simply too high end for him to look up to it as a need, oh, and he might not even be looking up to it.

Compared to that, he preferred to use battles to solve problems.

Tang Tian who took the first move, moved extremely quickly, and in a blink of an eye, he arrived in front of a huge sturdy man.

This huge sturdy man was extremely tall, although he was not frightened, he continued to rush forward, his arms trembling and borrowing the momentum, he roared, and shot his hands out like a cannon!

A scarlet light aura suddenly lit up from his body, and started to congeal into a state like molten iron, flowing all around his body slowly, like a molten iron armor, the temperature of the air around rose sharply, and the floorboards beneath his feet started to melt, the qi around his body rising to maximum.

His fist was like an artillery shooting out from the cannon.

Tang Tian's eyes lit up, this was the first time that he have met a person that used fist techniques in Sacred Saint Galaxy!

He also raised his right fist.

Null Flames coiled and quickly revolved around his fist, zzzii zzzii zzzii, the Null Flames revolved faster and faster, transforming into a grey vortex.

Null Flame·Spiralling Energy!

This young lad has no time to waste on being fanciful.

He stepped forward, his body was the bow, and his fist was the arrow.

The fist that held the grey flames clashed directly with the scarlet red energy fist light aura.

Bang!

Tang Tian stepped three steps back and stabilized himself, his arm was feeling extremely limp and painful, as though he could not raise it up, but his face revealed a look of excitement. The saints of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, although they do not have marvelous spirit techniques, but their usage of energy is more direct and even more explosive.

The Fist Saints of Heaven's Road won in terms of techniques, but the energy accumulated in the fist in front of him far exceeded that

of any fist techniques Tang Tian had ever seen before.

Even for Tang Tian's sturdy body, he had suffered still.

He stretched his arms, and took a cold breath in: "Hey, it's numb, hehehe, you're powerful! You're strong! Very strong!"

The sturdy man stared intently at him, his eyes were filled with a complicated mix of disbelief, caution and fear, the scarlet red molten metal energy around his body had lessened by a great amount, and his right hand, all the way to his chest, were exposed.

What fist energy was that?

My own energy was actually destroyed! Completely suppressed and destroyed!

The strange energy was like a needle that bore into his arm, it was unstoppable, and other than that, all of his energy were destroyed. What made him even more fearful was that the parts where his energy was destroyed, felt as though they were in an extremely toxic and corrosive environment, his energy was unable to restore itself and inch forward.

He knew how scary that was!

The intense ripple when the two fists collided swept throughout like a hurricane.

But there were many experts on scene, as though it was nothing, they released a few palms, and caused the ripple to dissipate.

The White Restaurant, being the best restaurant in White Sands City, had customers that were all known figures in White Sands Continent. And because of the arrival of Qin Yu Ran, there were even more famous and powerful figures from various other continents that had come into the White Sands Continent, and thus led to the White Restaurant to be filled everyday.

The Boss of White Restaurant naturally will not not have a backer. If it were other people, he would had thrown them out. But on one side it was Ling Xia, and the other was He Ying, so he dare not do anything. Ling Xia was about to become the Commander of the 5th Army, and the Ling Family had deep connections everywhere, while He Ying was a powerful and authoritative figure, he was crafty and sly, if he were to remember to debt, it will not only lead to the downfall of the restaurant, but the danger of having families killed.

Both sides came from huge backgrounds, and thus no one dared to do anything.

The clash of the fists caused everyone to be shocked and moved.

“Who is that? He’s actually so strong!” Duke Ming was shocked, he was the White Sands Older Generation’s elder, and for the current Continent Lord to be in his position today, was because of Duke Ming’s support. He was one of the oldest resident of White

Sands, and knew of He Ying's Vanguard Battalion, seeing that people did not recognize them, he explained: "That boxer is called Xi Ao."

"Molten Iron Fist Xi Ao!" Someone exclaimed.

Initially those people who were still objecting to the quarrel immediately became gloomy.

Bai Yue spoke out: "The famous fist aura of Xi Ao, congeals into a state like molten iron, and to finally see it today, it truly lives up to its name."

Duke Ming nodded his head and praised: "Xi Ao had trained his fists in an extremely novel way, he started out by training inside the lava of a volcano, and then inside molten iron, and finally gaining great success, thus having a fist that is praised for burning 14 Continents. Amongst the Vanguard Battalion's influential generals, he is definitely one of the top five, I never expected him to see him lose out in a fist battle. But this old one is curious, who is that kid?"

Bai Xiao watched in dumbstruck, Xi Ao's prestige as not as known as him, but in terms of strength, Xi Ao was definitely not lacking. Xi Ao had had fought his way up the ranks from the bottom, his one fist had burned down 14 Continents. It could be said that he earned his name through wars and battles, and in three years, he had challenged all the experts from the 14 continents, causing a sensation.

But Xi Ao was actually losing!

He could not believe his own eyes. Tang Tian was at the other side thoughtlessly waving his hands about, muttering here and there, completely without the vibe of an expert. But Xi Ao was standing there with fear in his eyes, his completely visible molten iron like energy armor had a chunk bitten off.

No matter how hard Xi Ao remained his steadiness, but people who had eyesight could tell that Xi Ao had lost in that exchange.

Hearing Duke Ming ask “Who is that kid”, he finally reacted, and was about to reply, when Tang Tian started to yell out towards Xi Ao.

“Again!”

Tang Tian roared, causing the entire place to hear him.

Xi Ao’s eyes revealed a trace of fear, at the moment, a figure suddenly snorted: “You don’t know your place!”

Xi Ao relaxed, he knew his friend’s strength, and moved sideways to give space, a sword light swept past his body, and flew towards Tang Tian.

Silver light auras flew in and out of the sky, the dense sword concept enveloped Tang Tian.

The familiar yet foreign qi caused the hairs on Tang Tian's body to erect, it's laws!

This sword has the hint of laws.

Tang Tian's eyes immediately contracted.

Chapter 608 – Silver Winged Swordsman

Law!

Tang Tian was surprised and frightened.

Although the light aura was not dazzling, but when the sword was released, the looks on everyone's face changed. Saints who did not have sufficient strength would not understand what laws were, they only felt as though their state of mind were completely attracted to the sword, their bodies froze, their minds drawn into a blank, unable to draw up any bit of resistance

And for the people who knew what it was, were unable to maintain their calm, all of them suddenly stood up.

He Ying actually had a swordsman who was enlightened on laws!

Duke Ming who initially thought that he had deep understanding of He Ying was completely stunned. To have enlightened on any law, in any domain, it meant that they had attained the next level.

A Silver Saint's goal was Energy Transmutation, but it also showed how much energy they could use. And when the saint, in his own respective domain had deep attainments and comprehension, laws would be another goal.

Tang Tian was also shocked.

He had finally understood the difficulty of attaining laws in the Sacred Saint Galaxy was at a much higher difficulty than in Heaven's Road. The energy in the Sacred Saint Galaxy was too abundant, to the point that it was like thick snow, and have covered up the laws to a huge extent. People who were able to be enlightened on laws in the Sacred Saint Galaxy were all powerful figures!

It was truly a surprise, it was Tang Tian's first time meeting a saint who had been enlightened on laws in the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

The silver sword light aura brought forth a cold intent, like the autumn wind, caused the entire hall that was being roasted like a furnace by Xi Ao's Molten Iron Fist to become as cool as autumn.

Tang Tian immediately calmed down and retracted his gaze.

Others might revere laws, but to Tang Tian, it was something that he was too familiar with. Jing Hao, Crane, Ling Xu all had enlightened on laws, and in Heaven's Road, enlightenment on laws was a requirement to be bestowed as a Saint.

Even if the laws displayed here are stronger, laws are in the end still laws.

Suddenly, Tang Tian thought of the other advantage that Heaven Road held, that was laws!

But, it isn't the time to think about such things

Tang Tian took a deep breath. Facing the incoming silver sword light aura, he moved his feet, extending out his hands, the grey Null Flames coiled around his hand and around his 10 fingers.

His expression turned serious, and cold light appeared in his eyes.

The 10 fingers stretched, forming a line of sparks that blossomed out from his fingertips. In a blink of an eye, the air seemed to be combusting, crackle crackle crackle crackle, countless of bright lit dotted auras gradually floated in the air, dancing in the sky like fireflies in the summer. It was like a dream, enveloping the entire hall.

What's this?

If the law in the silver light sword aura caused people to feel shock, then this completely different martial technique, caused everyone to become completely emotionally immersed in it. How could they have ever witnessed such a meticulous martial technique before?

It was so beautiful, that it looked like an art painting.

Bai Xiao's expression looked as if he had seen a ghost, if he was not personally witnessing it, even if people beat him up death, he would never believe it. The beautiful and exquisite martial

technique that caused people's hair to stand, actually came out from Meng Nan's hands.

Shouldn't this guy be someone who has muscles of the devil, transform into a rapacious aggressor with veins popping out all over his body with strength like a bull, shaking the earth with every step he took?

But the current Tang Tian was not in the least bit sinister, he did not roar, his expression was indifferent, not one hair out of place, he was calm as water, as though he had transformed into another person.

The fireflies that filled the sky, in the beauty, held an extremely dangerous killing intent.

Bai Yue stared intently at the floating dotted regiments. The light regiments that were the size of beans, were releasing a gently light aura, and did not have any surprising light or warmth.

But Bai Yue's expression continued to change, inside the warm light aura, he could sense a whiff of Energy Transmutation.

Energy Transmutation, the mark of a Silver Saint.

It was not only Bai Yue's face who changed, He Ying's eyes had a trace of shock. Although He Ying was domineering, but there was no doubt to his strength, he himself was in the silver realm.

Military generals who were in the silver realm held outstanding commanding power, and was able to greatly raise the strength of their armies.

And saints who were in the silver realm were terrifying killing machines, they were extremely dangerous and the sharpest of blades.

The sky filled of fireflies flew towards the silver light sword auras, the sky suddenly lit up with countless of light streaks, the fireflies that were like raindrops or snowflakes, the light streaks formed strands and weaves, the light auras were enchanting and beautiful.

When the rain of light entered the sword auras, the sword auras buzzed gently, as though a proud wild beast had been enraged, and was releasing a enraged roar. Yet, the fireflies continued to dance gracefully, continuously pouncing on the sword auras.

Amidst the buzzing hums that caused people's heart to shake, the sword auras were being melted at a speed noticeable by the naked eye, and the remaining strands of faint transparent light streaks trembled in the air.

Their trembling attracted even more fireflies, and the fireflies shuttled back and forth, pa, they exploded into formless ripples and disappeared.

What remained in the hall were the floating fireflies, without any smoke or fiery qi.

A tall figure, with a handsome appearance walked out from the crowd, and asked clearly: “I am Qiao Yi An, may I ask of sire’s great name?”

Everyone burst into a hoorah, they were all shocked, Silver Winged Swordsman!

Silver Winged Swordsman Qiao Yi An!

Ling Xia’s face changed, she never expected that He Ying would actually be able to recruit the Silver Winged Swordsman. The Silver Winged Swordsman was one of the most famous swordsman of the Southern Region. He was extremely powerful, stepping into the realm of the Silver Saints at 30 years old, he was currently 35, and at the peak of his time.

Everyone was in shock. Previously, people were guessing what powerful swordsman had arrived, but no one would had thought that it was Qiao Yi An.

To be able to block Qiao Yi An’s sword, everyone’s gaze towards Tang Tian changed.

“I’m Meng Nan!” Tang Tian spoke casually, but he was excited: “Hey, are we fighting or not?”

Although he did not know what kind of Saint Qiu Yi An was, but he could clearly sense that the sword from him was played down

and not his full force. Tang Tian's battle intent was strong, he did not want to just stop.

Qiu Yi An was startled, and immediately laughed out in self ridicule: "To make friends through a an exchange of blows, To be able to meet Brother Meng, It is my honor. At the moment we are just swapping pointers, why don't we do it again next time? So as not to sweep away the crowd's interest."

Tang Tian thought about it, yeah, if we are to fight here, we will most likely destroy the restaurant. More importantly, once my battle intent goes away, my hunger will make my legs go weak.

He swallowed his saliva with difficulty: "Alright! Let us eat first!"

Bai Xiao then raised his hand and shouted: "Brother Meng!"

Tang Tian looked towards the direction of the voice, and his eyes lit up: "Ha, Xiao Bai!"

Xiao Bai.....

Bai Xiao immediately regretted, Why did I shout out like that. Everyone's gaze turned towards him. There were already a few female customers giggling, Young Master Bai Xiao, a distinguished and confident person, to actually be called Xiao Bai that sounded like a pet name.

Ling Xia noticed Bai Xiao's table and immediately walked over

and bowed: “Duke Ming, General Bai, Young Master Xiao.”

The silk pants behind her all kept quiet out of fear, and followed along to greet them.

Tang Tian looked at the table filled with food. He was already to the point that his hands and legs were trembling from hunger, and shouted: “Xiao Bai, I’m eating first, I’m famished!”

With that, he immediately stuffed his face impolitely.

Tang Tian’s actions once again shook everyone, the silk pants were almost to the point of worshipping him. Big Brother, how fierce are you truly, do you know who are those people that are seated?

Ling Xia’s complexion changed, Duke Ming viewed customs and etiquette very heavily, and even the sons of various Continent Lords dared not act recklessly in front of him. And for General Bai Yue, he was one of the influential generals, far more than what the armies of White Sands could be. The power of the Bai Family, regardless of where they went, would be treated as honored guests with utmost respect.

“You’re still in the growing phase, eat more!” Duke Ming was full of smiles and said amiably, and even turned: “Waiter, serve us more meat dishes!”

His happy appearance caused Ling Xia’s eyes to almost drop onto

the ground. Even the silk pants behind her revealed looks as though they had seen a ghost.

Tang Tian had currently stuffed his mouth full with food, and kept out making out inaudible sounds.

“One cannot function properly on an empty stomach, to be so good at eating, you are definitely a great man!” Bai Yue praised.

Bai Xiao watched quietly, if his cousins heard what their father had said, they would definitely spit out blood.

“How hungry can you be.” Bai Xiao poured Tang Tian a glass of water: “We haven’t seen each other for just two days, and you’re already like that, if Yu Ran were to see this, she would scold me again.”

“Wu wu wu!” Tang Tian did not even lift up his head.

Two days....

Duke Ming’s expression twitched, he asked in surprise: “Could it be that you guys were on the same boat? Could it be that the rumored person who pushed away the pirates is this Junior Brother Meng.”

“Duke Ming’s eyes are sharp!” Bai Xiao praised: “Brother Meng’s skills are unique, his subordinates are all heroes as well. Without Brother Meng’s help this time, I and Yu Ran would had been in

danger.”

“Wu wu wu!” Tang Tian continued to eat.

Bai Yue was moved: “With 46 men to push back a fleet of 10 frigates and a warship, that is truly inconceivable. Even If I had personally took charge, I would not dare to say I could do the same.”

“Wu wu wu!” Tang Tian did not seem to have any intention to stop and continued to eat.

Just then, He Ying, Qiao Yi An and the few others brought their glasses over.

“I never thought that Duke Ming and General Bai was here, We have interrupted your state of mind, He Ying apologizes to the two sires.” He Ying said with an apologetic look.

Duke Ming Laughed: “General He, why do you say such things? To be able to witness such a spectacle of a battle, We have truly gained something from it.”

Bai Yue laughed: “That’s right, our trip has been worthwhile just from that battle.”

Everyone were engaging in laughter and talks, and only Tang Tian was busy stuffing himself with food. After a while, everyone seemed to have forgotten about his existence, and no one talked

about him.

He Ying brought Qiao Yi An and turned to return to their table, his complexion becoming gloomy at once.

“How’s his strength? Do you have confidence?” He Ying spoke softly.

“He is not that strong, but more strange. He had just touched upon the threshold of the realm of the Silver Saints, but his style and approach is unconventional and he has plentiful of changes and movements. What this subordinate cannot understand is, when he was fighting just now, he actually did not have any energy undulations. This subordinate has checked Xi Ao’s injury, that grey flame is extremely insidious, with an extremely strong destructive ability, I do not know if Doctor Xu will have any ideas about it. This unknown flame is the most dangerous.” Qiao Yi An laughed bitterly.

Doctor Xu was the most powerful Doctor of the 2nd Army, his medical techniques were considered top notch.

“Could it be Destructive Energy?” He Ying was shocked, he as a silver military general, and knew that Destructive Energy could cause a lot of harm to saints. Injuries sustained from it were extremely difficult to recover from, and he had never heard of anyone’s martial techniques that could produce destructive energy capabilities.

His expression became gloomy.

He suddenly had this premonition that the fellow would be big trouble.

Chapter 609 – Black Gold Transaction

In a night, the battle in the White Restaurant spread through the entire White Sands City.

Silver Winged Swordsman Qiao Yi An was a subordinate of He Ying, causing He Ying's prestige to soar. At the same time, Meng Nan who had heavily injured Molten Iron Fist Xi Ao, blocked Qiao Yi An's sword, gave Ling Xia, who was about to become the commander of the 5th Army, even bigger prestige.

Quickly, movements in the darkness quickly moved in the White Sands City.

On the training grounds, Tang Tian's entire body was covered in perspiration, he looked forward, gradually retracting his fist.

Bai Xiao, Bai Yue and Qin Yu Ran did not disrupt Tang Tian while he was training.

Qin Yu Ran's eyes were filled with admiration, men who were focused always released some sort of charisma. Tang Tian's vigorous, strong, and toned body was covered in perspiration, with a mist evaporating off from him, was an extremely charming sight.

Bai Xiao was instead filled with respect and was emotional. This guy is truly excessively hard working, everytime I come to find him, he will always be training, as though he will never ever be tired.

Bai Yue looked at Tang Tian's training with a strange look on his face, his heart filled with suspicion. From the way he saw it, all that Tang Tian was training were all fundamentals that could not become any simpler, and he could not see through anything special about him.

If it were anyone else that was training, he would probably scoff disdainfully at him. But this was a person who had severely injured Xi Ao and resisted Qiao Yi An, and to be doing such training, then he must definitely be doing something he had not thought of.

Hu Hu Hu, Tang Tian finished his last movement, he was so tired his entire body seemed out of strength. Fundamental martial techniques did not consume much strength, but the control over the Null Flames consumed his physical strength and focus quickly.

"It's so early in the morning, why are all of you here?" Tang Tian asked weakly.

Qin Yu Ran gave a sweet smile: "Big Brother Meng's glorious matter of yesterday had reached Yu Ran's ears and it just kept on ringing in Yu Ran's mind, it was a pity that I could not personally witness it, so I have to come so early to congratulate Big Brother Meng!"

"Hahaha! Is that so? Does everyone know about it? I truly am powerful!" Tang Tian's spirit was immediately roused, he was pleased, but following that he started to mumble to himself: "A pity, I could only spar with Qiao Yi An once. He is only slightly

stronger than me, but I already thought of how to defeat him.”

Bai Xiao and Bai Yue looked at each other, their hearts instantly turned cold.

Qin Yu Ran’s eyes twinkled: “I knew that Big Brother Meng would definitely find a way!”

“Of course!” Tang Tian was not modest at all, he was so pleased with himself that his nose was pointing towards the sky, he turned and look at Bai Xiao: “What’s up Xiao Bai?”

Bai Xiao rubbed his nose: “I am here about the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, I heard that you sold a big batch to Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, and could only rush over quickly. Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is too strong, and I cannot compete with them. My requirements isn’t too high, I won’t take too much, I just want a bit. Will you sell me some?”

“No problem!” Tang Tian was very easy to work with: “How many do you want?”

“Not too many, just 4 billion cloud coins worth.” Bai Xiao hardened himself.

“500 then? Great!”

Tang Tian was so casual about it that Bai Xiao could not believe it. Bang, a pile of Empyrean Ice Tree Spears appeared in front of

Bai Xiao. Tang Tian said with a smug look: “Count it yourself.”

Bai Xiao was stunned, and only after awhile did he laugh bitterly: “Truly, when it comes to time of need, money is never enough.”

Bai Yue glanced at the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears once, then retracted his gaze, he decided to ask flamboyantly about another question: “Xiao Meng, I just watched you train, and what you were doing were all fundamental movements, this Uncle is stupid, can you tell me about the dao and reasoning behind them?”

Qin Yu Ran was secretly shocked, who was Bai Yue? He was a true famous General!

He was actually asking Big Brother Meng a question about training!

Tang Tian did not find anything weird about it, and said as a matter of factly: “Because It’s simple ah.”

“Simple?” Bai Yue was startled: “But don’t you think that it’s power is too weak?”

“Power is too weak?” Tang Tian looked at Bai Yue once, and shook his head: “Being simple isn’t necessary weak.”

Being simple isn’t necessary weak?

Bai Yue was stunned by the sentence, he wanted to think of something to refute, but the more he thought about it, the more he felt that there were a deeper meaning behind those words. In time, he was standing there blankly deep in thought.

Bai Xiao had finished counting, and looked at the remaining Empyrean Ice Tree Spears with reluctance.

Tang Tian noticed Bai Xiao's look of reluctance and laughed out loud, he threw the remaining Empyrean Ice Tree Spears to Bai Xiao: "I'll give them to you!"

Everyone were shocked by Tang Tian's words, the remaining half were around 450 spears.

Bai Xiao suddenly raised his head.

What he saw in his eyes was Tang Tian's sincere face, the warm sincerity that felt like the sunlight. He stared at Tang Tian for a few seconds, then suddenly laughed: "Truly a rich man, then I won't be impolite!"

He kept all the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears.

Tang Tian laughed, his expression did not change a bit. Xiao Bai is truly a good person. He did not care much about the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, there were truly too many of them....

Qin Yu Ran was completely shaken by Tang Tian's big check.

Even Bai Yue who had seen countless things in his life was secretly shocked, he stared at Tang Tian's face, but could not see any pretense or reluctance, and was greatly moved. To casually hand out 4 billion, such spirit was not something anyone had.

Just at that moment, Han Sen walked in with a report: "Master, Boss Xu is here."

Xu Jin walked in, and seeing Qin Yu Ran and the rest, he was greatly shocked: "I never thought I'd be able to see Miss Yu Ran, General Bai and Young Master Bai here, I am Xu Jin, Worldwide Commerce's Xu Jin, Nice to meet you."

The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce was a weapon trading company known by everyone, holding such power, maybe ordinary people might not know them, but how could Bai Yue and the rest not know them?

Xu Jin initially had some guesses about Tang Tian's background. Qin Yu Ran, Bai Yue and the rest, he was even more surprised. Miss Yu Ran was a proud person and rarely spoke or looked at people. And the power of the Bai Family was in no way inferior to the Xu Family.

Xu Jin was just a shopkeeper in the White Sands Continent, but Bai Yue was the top military general of the Bai Family, and thus he greeted Bai Yue as though he was a junior.

After introducing and greeting them, Xu Jin spoke to Tang Tian: "Mister Meng, I am here for the Black Gold, my shop hopes to be

able to purchase your Black Gold, and hope that Mister Meng would be able to steadily offer us a price on the Black Gold, no matter how much is it, we are willing to purchase it.”

“Oh, to be able to enter the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce’s eyes, I wonder if I can take a look?” Bai Yue asked curiously.

In truth, when seeing Bai Yue, Xu Jin immediately knew that he had miscalculated. Although the Black Gold was good, but the traders of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce loved to buy low and sell high, naturally hoping to be able to purchase the goods at a lower price. On the day when he saw Tang Tian’s reaction, Xu Jin felt that Tang Tian did not know the true worth of the Black Gold.

Tang Tian threw a piece of Black Gold to Bai Yue.

Bai Yue took the Black Gold and scrutinized it carefully, his expression remaining neutral. When he imbued energy into it, his face gradually stiffened, and after half a minute, he spoke: “Good stuff! If I am not wrong, it can bear a very powerful amount of energy charge.”

Xu Jin sighed in his heart again, I have truly miscalculated, and he grew even more admiration for Bai Yue, He only found it out through the laboratory reports and test, while Bai Yue had only touched it for a moment, but was able to realize the perk of the Black Gold, with such astute and experience, how could he not feel admiration for him?

“General’s eyes are really sharp!” Xu Jin could only harden his

skin and say: “We have already tested it, it’s ability to withstand energy charge, is stronger than Corundum, and only slightly inferior to Energium Jade!”

Bai Yue’s body trembled, the light aura in his eyes exploded, and without hesitating: “We will take all of the Black Gold!”

Xu Jin could not back down: “How can Senior bully the junior generation? You are stealing from this Junior generation’s food bowl, that is not the way a senior should act!”

“Your food bowl? Since when did this become your food bowl?” Bai Yue shook his head.

Xu Jin’s face became unkind: “What does senior mean?”

In a blink of an eye, the two of them were staring at each other, their gazes were like swords clashing, Tang Tian was stunned.

Seeing this, Bai Xiao quietly explained; “The stronger and more the material can withstand an energy charge, the more suitable it is to make into a weapon for the warship. The most expensive parts of the warships are the weapons above. Energium Jades are the market’s best silver grade warship weapon material, but they are extremely expensive, 1 Li of it costs more than 500 million, and the important thing is that its quantity is limited. A warship can only have a limited number of weapons, you have truly earned this time.”

Tang Tian finally understood: “So how much is this Black Gold worth?”

Xu Jin quickly replied: “Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is willing to purchase 1 Li of it at 300 million, as much as you have! General Bai, according to your nephew, you won’t have enough cash right now right.”

Bai Yue smiled: “That’s true. But Xiao Meng and Xiao Bai have a good relationship, so what If I don’t have enough cash?”

Xu Jin’s face darkened.

Bai Yue quickly changed the way he spoke, and said: “If you want me to give up purchasing the Black Gold, I can, my Bai Family is not very interested in the manufacturing of weapons, but if Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is willing to offer us the best favorable price for the Black Gold warship weapons, we can consider it.”

“85% of the original price!” Xu Jin said without hesitating.

Bai Yue sneered: “Xiao Xu is not sincere enough, the profits of weapons are extremely shady.”

“80%!” Xu Jin had a pained expression.

Bai Yue laughed: “The Bai Family can promise you, we will only use the Black Gold warship weapons that we purchase from Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce for ourselves, and not sell it.”

“75%!” Xu Jin clenched his teeth.

Bai Yue shook his head: “At 50% of the price, by selling to the Bai Family every year, the amount of Black Gold warship weapons we will purchase will be no lower than 100 billion, and not higher than 500 billion.”

Xu Jin almost wanted to scold him, but he resisted: “Then I want to have the exclusive rights of purchasing it.”

“I have no objection to that!” Bai Yue laughed evilly, he turned and looked at Tang Tian: “Selling to them is a good idea, it saves you the trouble, and the price is not too bad as well. You get them to do the transportation. Oh, if you have any special requests, quickly make it, they can buy anything.”

Xu Jin almost wanted to box Bai Yue’s face, he was being ripped off by him.

Bai Yue was feeling extremely good, he did not even spend one cloud coin, empty handedly, he had obtained such an advantage. He clearly knew the importance of the agreement.

More importantly, he was repaying Tang Tian back a favor. He had just obtained 4 billion worth of Empyrean Ice Tree Spears for free from him, it was no small favor, but in a blink of an eye, he had already helped Tang Tian earn a large sum of money. He wanted to obtain much more for Tang Tian, and thus reminded Tang Tian.

“I can buy anything?” Tang Tian asked curiously.

“Almost.” Bai Yue laughed.

Xu Jin was scolding their mothers in his heart, he did not want to answer such a question, but since the Black Gold was too important to Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, he had no choice and said: “As long as Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is able to complete it.”

Hearing that, Tang Tian’s eyes lit up: “I want to buy an army! A full and complete army!”

Everyone was stunned.

Chapter 610 – Rich Man Buys An Army

No one would have thought that Tang Tian actually wanted to buy an army, they had never heard of anyone wanting to buy an army.

Xu Jin who had always remained calm in all situations, finally revealed a bitter smile: “Mister Meng is truly making things difficult for me, I have never heard of an army that can be bought.”

Bai Yue touched his chin and muttered to himself: “Eh, Xiao Meng, although your idea is not easily fulfilled, but it’s rather creative. You’re carrying a gold mine with you, it’s not right if you do not have an army.”

The smile on Xu Jin’s face became even more bitter: “Mister Meng, if you want any weapons of sorts, even if they are gold grade, I can think of a way. But for an army...”

“I can’t buy one?” Tang Tian was disappointed, the idea was thought on the spot. What he was truly lacking were not weapons or cloud coins, but men. Precious Bright Village Regiment’s foundation was too terrible, Shi Sen went to recruit the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts, but that was only 500 men.

If he could instantly buy an army, even though they were slightly lacking, throwing them to Bing would still make them useful.

“It’s not that you can’t buy one, but we need to think of a way.”

Bai Yue sighed: “An army, only the Continent Lords have them, if we go and scout a bit, we can find which continent is not doing so well financially. Raising an army requires money, if their financials are lacking, they will be unable to raise them. But the larger continents will not do, only the smaller ones, so we can start from there. Oh, we can still poach for them! Start poaching the commanders, since you have money. Especially those commanders that are not being put in important positions, poach them one by one.”

Xu Jin's eyes lit up, Bai Xiao was perspiring all over, Second Uncle is actually so cunning!

“How much would the commanders of those small continents be worth?” Bai Yue sneered: “20 million cloud coins would suffice. For the staff officers below them, each one can be 5 million. Soldiers are worth even less, it'll be best if you can even migrate their families, as long as their entire families are willing to move, 1 million to settle them down. You will definitely be able to obtain a 1000 man army with 1.2 billion. Now that you have money, you should utilize and learn to play around with money.”

“If that's the case, it is plausible.” Xu Jin was merely just someone who never did such type of business before, but the moment Bai Yue spoke of it, he quickly regained his senses. With Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's guarantee, digging up the armies of the small continents would be an easy feat. And how would the Continent Lords dare to find Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce for trouble? By spending some money, they would definitely close their eyes.

Xu Jin immediately realised the advantages of it, by poaching the armies, they required equipment, and that would be another business.

“The commanders need strength.” Tang Tian reiterated.

“Xiao Meng has foresight.” Bai Yue praised: “All the qualities of the soldiers of the smaller armies will definitely be incomparable to the big armies, so you must definitely check the strength of the commanders. If the commanders are strong with a high standard, then the army’s strength will not be too bad, and at least the training standard will not be low. With an average synchronization, even if they cannot operate a warship, they can operate a Frigate without any problems.”

Tang Tian suddenly thought about what Xiao Bai had said about Black Gold being suitable to manufacture warship weapons, he thought about the Sword Forest Stronghold, which was completely made up of Black Gold, could they change it into warship weapons? Then wouldn’t the Sword Forest Stronghold be able to have offensive capabilities?

“I also want a warship weapon specialist.” Tang Tian raised his hand.

Xu Jin’s face changed: “Mister Meng wants to engage in the weapons business?”

“Nope, I want to change my Stronghold.” Tang Tian used his hand to illustrate: “I have a castle made of Black Gold.”

The surrounding immediately became silent, everyone stared at Tang Tian with their mouths open.

“A....a-a ca-castle made of Bl-black....gold?” Xu Jin stammered, his expression as though he had seen a ghost.

The Black Gold that costs 300 million for 1 Li, used to make a castle.....

Xu Jin could not dare imagine that scene.

Bai Yue was also stupefied and looked at Tang Tian blankly.

“Yes, but the castle is a bit small, we are currently expanding.” Tang Tian rubbed his forehead: “Since Black Gold can be used to make warship weapons, then can I change parts of the castle to warship weapons? That would definitely be powerful!”

Xu Jin finally withdrew out of his lifeless shock, he started to spasm and talk nonstop: “Black Gold! That is Black Gold! You actually used it to build a castle! You’re crazy! Are you so rich that you have nowhere to burn your money? I’ll give you full discount! Full! For Free! Don’t waste them, sell them to me! Sell it to me! You want to build a stronghold, I will give you transportation and materials to construct your stronghold, I will provide free transportation, is that fine?”

Bai Yue could no longer hold back anymore and scolded: “I can’t

stand it anymore!”

Qin Yu Ran and Bai Xiao were completely stunned to the point of going numb.

Tang Tian was also shocked by Xu Jin’s spasm: “Are the materials better than Black Gold?”

Xu Jin felt as if the air in his body was being drawn out, what kind of materials could be better than Black Gold? Why, why can’t you not use such good materials just for a stronghold?

What kind of world is a rich man looking at truly.....

He gave up on struggling: “Warship Weapon Specialist, it’ll be difficult for the top figures, but for those with profound knowledge of the required skills and strength are still easy to recruit, how many do you want?”

“Are they very expensive?” Tang Tian asked since he was not sure.

For some reason, Xu Jin heaved a sigh of relief, You finally know what is expensive.....

“Not cheap, The cost to migrate and setting up their family home is 10 million.”

It truly was not cheap!

Tang Tian thought with a serious look on his face: “Then recruit a 100.”

Xu Jin almost went crazy: “What do you need so many warship weapon specialists for? 100 Warship Weapon Specialists, you want to raise them to play? 10! 10 is enough for you to build up your Warship Weapon Stronghold!”

Like that huh, Tang Tian thought for a bit: “Then 10 of them, change the others to specialists of other fields. Warship specialists, material specialists, weapon specialists, armor specialists, I will build laboratories for them.”

Xu Jin completely gave up, and reminded weakly: “Laboratories are bottomless pits.”

Bai Yue also advised: “That’s right, Xiao Meng ah, laboratories and such are all money wasters. Now, all of those shops with established reputations have a lot of experience and wisdom.”

“It’s alright, anyways I can’t spend much.” Tang Tian waved his hand, he had his own ideas. He was not wishing for them to create unique weapons, but to merge Heaven’s Road and Sacred Saint Galaxy’s systems, but he required professionals.

Although he had Sai Lei, but Sai Lei also needed assistance, Tang Tian wanted to prepare them to be Sai Lei’s assistants.

“As long as you are willing to.” Xu Jin no longer bothered to advise him, He isn’t treating money as money anymore, let him do what he wants. “What about the army? How many do you want? Also, to poach armies, you need to prepare equipment. Poaching is not a problem, but you will be unable to take their equipments, if not they will fight with us.”

“How much will that be?” Tang Tian asked.

“If you’re talking about ordinary standards, for one person, 500 thousand cloud coins worth of equipment will be enough. If you want it to be slightly better, than each person will cost 3 million cloud coins, there will be no need for even higher grade equipment, since the quality of the soldiers are not that high. Then the army equipment will cost 3 billion.”

Bai Yue jumped up: “Is that the allocation for a silver army? Do they really need such good equipment? Is Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce trying to commit daylight robbery?”

Seeing that Tang Tian had no reaction, Bai Yue was secretly scolding him a ‘nouveau riche’, but he patiently explained: “Xiao Meng, don’t think that 4 billion plus is enough to settle an army, that is just the first time cost. You will still need to maintain and upkeep the army, the salary, the incentives, and training costs, equipment maintenance also require money. From your allocation, an army will cost at least 2 billion a year. Do you know what standard is that? That is definitely seeing it as a silver grade army!”

All elites were fed by cloud coins. For example, every training they had require a large sum of expenses. The expenses of elite armies always cost a lot.

2 billion a year, that was a sum that the small continents were not able to upkeep.

“If it’s 2 billion then let it be 2 billion, if their standard is high enough, I am willing to even pay 3 billion.” Tang Tian spoke very tyrannically, immediately stunning the rest.

Bai Yue did not know what to say, he calmed himself down: “Let me work this out. With these conditions, do you even need to poach anymore? This is truly the treatment of a silver grade army. All of those unworthy people would break their heads to join in! But Xiao Meng, you must guarantee that you are able to pay 2 billion of military expenditures.”

Xu Jin immediately became anxious: “Senior, we already said that this is my Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce’s business! Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce still has this ability!”

It was not just a business, Bai Yue was right, such attractive conditions, all of those scheming and ambitious military leaders would definitely break their heads.

The two of them was about to quarrel again, when Tang Tian stopped them: “The both of you will find one army each. I only want the best quality!”

“Not a problem! I have been in the army for so many years, I know how to discern standards with a look. Amongst my old acquaintances and friends, there are a few powerful fierce characters.” Bai Yue patted his chest.

Bai Yue’s army’s treatment was even better, as they were groomed by the robust wealth of the Bai Family. And the military generals who had no backgrounds, no matter how promising there are, could only remain in the bronze grade armies and be unable to improve.

Regardless of location, resources were limited.

Bai Yue knew that such conditions, to those unsatisfied people, were so attractive that it was worth dying for. The number of bronze armies in Sacred Saint Galaxies were as many as the hair on a cow, and they were definitely not lacking in competition. But, they were only able to scoop out from the bronze armies, to try and poach silver armies, that would not be a problem about money anymore.

“The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce has accumulated a vast network of connections in the military world, we will definitely help Mister Meng filter out the most outstanding and most optimal army.” Xu Jin said, he had set his mind to it, to definitely choose and form a better army, an army far better than Bai Yue’s.

Tang Tian was happy.

Bai Yue and Xu Jin felt that it was expensive, but Tang Tian

thought it was too cheap. “A warship was already over 60 billion, how many armies was that.”

Hearing Tang Tian’s idea, Bai Yue laughed out loud: “You cannot think just like that. Now what you are offering is the treatment and salary of a preliminary silver grade army, and not a true silver grade army. They are still a bronze army, wishing to grow into a silver grade army, that is not easy. Not all bronze armies can become silver armies. And no one knows how much money and time it would take, five years? Six years? A true silver grade army is not worth just 60 billion, a silver grade army is worth more than a warship. There was once a person who came to find the Bai Family, and requested a silver grade army to help support him, do you know how much money he spent?”

Tang Tian was curious: “How much?”

“50 billion!” Bai Yue said proudly: “When his enemies saw me, they were so afraid they started peeing in their pants, I did not even spend any energy, and I brought down two continents, as though I was playing. This 50 billion was earned so happily. But a pity, such a business rarely comes by. But you will know in the future, any armies, all talk about profits, if you have money, then all you need to do is spend it. But this will only work on small powerhouses, if your enemy is a large powerhouse, then the problem becomes complicated. For example, White Sands Continent, no matter how much money you give, no one will dare to accept it.”

Tang Tian was suddenly shocked.

Chapter 611 – Golden Rose

The matter of the army was handed to the two of them. Tang Tian had calculated, he still had 10.3 billion cloud coins, and he still had enough money to buy 2 more armies. He was extremely pleased with his idea, what kind of godlike young man can be able to think up of such a genius plan?

Just then, Ling Xia brought a middle aged man over to visit.

Ling Xia introduced him simply: “This is my father, Ling Yuan Hong.”

Other people around all greeted him, Ling Yuan Hong was not only Ling Xia’s father, but also the current generation Patriarch of the Ling Family, and had a great influence in the White Sands Continent.

Hearing what Ling Xia had said, Tang Tian then found out that many outsiders who supported the Ling Family were out and about gossiping.

“I never expected that the situation would turn out like this.” Ling Xia immediately apologized, hearing the rumors and slanders, she immediately rushed to the White Sands Hotel to apologize to Tang Tian.

To be able to obtain the 5th Army, other than her family background, her individual strength and intellect were all outstanding. He Ying’s display of hostility caused her to become

cautious.

From the way she saw it, because of her, Tang Tian was accidentally swept up into the power struggle. This mysterious expert, had already been imprinted with the Ling Family's mark and to them it was a good thing, but if because of it they had offended Tang Tian, then it was not worth it.

This time, Ling Yuan Hong had personally come up to apologize and to represent the Ling Family. Ling Yuan Hong was not only Ling Xia's father, but also the Ling Family Patriarch, with such a move, it gave Tang Tian enough face.

“Mister Meng, if you need us to do anything, feel free to tell us, the Ling Family will not decline.”

Ling Yuan Hong was rejoicing, It was right to come today. Seeing how everyone is treating Tang Tian, I knew that he was no simple person.

“Uncle Ling, don't worry about it, we are all friends here, and it was just a small effort.” Tang Tian did not care about it, he had already integrated with the silk pants, who would care about the conspiracies going on?

Ling Yuan Hong heaved a sigh of relief.

From the corner of his eye, Tang Tian saw a figure through the window, and his eyes immediately shrunk.

Outside the hotel, a man was covered in blood, he was flying straight towards the hotel in a hurry, and behind him was a group of black dots chasing after him.

Richard!

The man covered in blood was Richard!

He suddenly surged with killing intent, causing everyone around to be startled. In their eyes, Tang Tian was like an extremely quick cheetah, in a moment he had leaped out, bang, the glass window shattered, and Tang Tian who was in mid air already had an Empyrean Ice Blue Spear.

Twisting his waist, the Empyrean Ice Tree Spear in his hand transformed into a blue light, hu, it soared towards the black figures chasing Richard.

The few black figured people at the front produced their weapons to deflect the blue light.

Pa, the blue light shattered easily like ice, but the irremovable blue light aura entered their bodies.

The few of them turned sluggish, and then they started to fall from the sky like dumplings. Those that were struck had a beautiful enchanting blue surfacing on their faces.

“Empyrean Ice Tree Spear!”

Someone exclaimed out loud, causing the black robed people to stop and look towards Tang Tian from afar.

Richard who was already spent saw Tang Tian, and his mind relaxed completely, and rushed towards him.

A hand locked down on Richard firmly.

Tang Tian had mysteriously appeared beside him, and he threw Richard down, towards the rushing Demonic Mounts: “Bring him to the doctor.”

The black robed people were obviously not people with kind intentions, their gazes were stern and fierce, and on their black robes, on their chests were golden roses insignias.

The black robed man in the lead said coldly: “This man dares to steal the secrets of my Golden Rose, were you the one who planned it?”

Golden Rose, that word seemed to hold some type of power. The bodyguards who initially rushed out of the hotel immediately retreated.

Just then, security dressed in their uniforms rushed over from everywhere, and surrounded the White Sands Restaurant. The leader of the security team bellowed: “Do not let the convicted go!”

A manager of the hotel came out with a distorted expression and asked: “Master Tian, what is the meaning of this?”

Officer Tian remained expressionless: “Official Business! This is of huge business, help me inform Boss Xu, this younger brother is helpless against it.”

He might have said helpless against it, but his face revealed no expressions.

The manager’s face changed, he finally understood that the matter was not simple.

A few frigates had also arrived, and their weapons were aimed directly at Tang Tian and the White Sands Hotel.

Officer Tian ignored the hotel manager and squinted his eyes, and spoke to Tang Tian coldly: “Not only are you protecting the fugitive, but you are also attempting to kill people here, I advise you to wait to be captured! If you dare to resist and behave stupidly, I will kill you on the spot!”

The entire place was extremely tensed, all the frigates lit up with dazzling light auras.

“Kill on the spot? Officer Tian speaks such big words!” Ling Xia flew out of the window with a cold look on her face: “Officer Tian, who do you want to kill?”

When Officer Tian saw who it was, his face changed, Ling Xia!

“Young Miss Ling!” Officer Tian immediately bowed: “This criminal is guilty of terrible crimes, Tian Mou has a responsibility, if my tone had offended you, I hope that Young Miss Ling will be able to forgive me.”

Ling Xia stared at Officer Tian, his words sounded extremely courteous, but in truth it reminded her to mind her own business. She sensed that something was amiss, since when did the Security Bureau become so forceful?

The Security Bureau was responsible for the security inside White Sands City, and to the Commanders, they were nothing. Normally when Officer Tian meets Ling Xia, he would be like a rat seeing a mouse, but his attitude was different, as if he had someone to rely on.

“Officer Tian is saying that he is a criminal?” Ling Xia suddenly asked.

“That’s right!” Officer Tian said sternly: “He is a suspect of a big case and has escaped from punishment, and thus we are trying to catch him. I did not expect his companion to be here and trying to kill people. Now that Young Miss Ling is here, It truly is good, this subordinate hopes that Young Miss Ling can help me apprehend him!”

Ling Xia never thought that Officer Tian would actually exploit

the situation and used her position to gain the upper hand.

Her expression did not change: “Mister Meng is a distinguished guest of the Continent Lord, and is not someone the Security Bureau has jurisdiction over. I will get Duke Ming’s investigation unit to clarify this issue. If Officer Tian has proof, the Investigation team will claim it from Security Bureau.”

Officer Tian’s feelings darkened, without any fluctuation in emotions: “How do I dare to trouble Duke Ming? Miss Ling, please do not make things difficult for my Security Bureau, I think there must be a misunderstanding somewhere, I just want to walk them to the Security Bureau, and explain and clarify any mistakes made.”

How could Ling Xia not know what Officer Tian was doing: “Mister Meng is of a noble background, Duke Ming will personally handle this, Officer Tian you can go back first.”

Officer Tian also knew there were no way to retreat, and his expression turned cold: “Miss Ling, if you’re being obstinate, then please don’t blame me! Take them all!”

“Impressive, Security Bureau of White Sands, it truly is an eye opener today.”

A few people flew out of the broken window, Bai Yue seemed to be sneering, beside him, Young Master Bai Xiao was to one side, Xu Jin, Ling Yuan Hong and Qin Yu Ran to the other.

Ling Yuan Hong sneered: “Seems like we have become thieves! Officer Tian wants to take all of us!”

Xu Jin remained expressionless: “I wonder if Officer Tian needs to investigate the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce as well?”

Qin Yu Ran did not speak, and only looked at Officer Tian coldly.

When they flew out, everyone watching excitedly immediately flew into an uproar. Especially with the appearance of Qin Yu Ran, everyone became restless.

Officer Tian’s face changed, the matter had blew out of control, and his skin became numb. The uncle and nephew represented the Bai Family, even with ten times his guts, he did not dare to do anything. The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce was also not nice to provoke, as even the Continent Lord had to be polite to them.

As the Ling Family Patriarch, although Ling Yuan Hong did not hold any official position in the bureau, but the Ling Family were noble and extremely clean, with their successive generations of kindness, Ling Yuan Hong had spent all of his time in the past decade on helping the needy and feeding the poor, feeble and handicapped, receiving the respect and love from everybody.

Officer Tian dared to be use violence on Ling Xia, but never to Ling Yuan Hong.

There was no need to speak about Qin Yu Ran, as the

distinguished guest of the Continent Lord, if he dared to take action against her, by the next day, his position in the Bureau would be trampled clean.

“I am mistaken, I am mistaken!” Officer Tian’s face changed greatly, and quickly put on a fake smile: “For this small matter to have actually disturbed noble masters, My apologies my apologies, this lowly one already felt that there was a problem in the inside, we will immediately return to investigate.”

With that, he brought all his men and quickly left.

The black robed people had already disappeared.

Ling Xia finally heaved a sigh of relief, she was not worried about Officer Tian using violence, but that Big brother Meng would take action. Under the eyes of the people, if he were to take action against the Security Bureau, it would instead cause them to be in trouble.

But she did not expect that the Big Brother Meng who seemed to be very impulsive was actually extremely calm headed.

“Thank you everyone, for your help!” Tang Tian thanked the few of them.

Ling Yuan Hong spoke out: “The hotel is still slightly inconvenient for you, the Ling Family has a manor in the west which is quieter and with less people, it has been empty for a long

time, if Mister Meng doesn't mind, why not move over there."

Tang Tian did not reject: "Thank you Uncle Ling!"

Qin Yu Ran had been observing Tang Tian, she noticed that Tang Tian was extremely quiet and calm, but deep in his eyes, it was extremely cold, and she knew that he was completely enraged.

She was already thinking how to be able to obtain useful information for him.

Tang Tian was concerned about Richard's injuries, but after checking on him and found out that although he was covered in blood, they were all flesh wounds. He then became much calmer.

Ling Yuang Hong was worried that something might happen en route, so he personally sent Tang Tian to the manor courtyard of the Ling Family.

"Help me check up on that person with the last name Tian." Tang Tian said.

Ling Xia nodded her head.

The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts had quickly arranged for sentries and defense.

When Richard woke up and saw Tang Tian, he heaved a sigh of

relief.

“What happened?” Tang Tian asked.

“It’s the matter of the Thirteen Families, someone was observing them, and when I went to seek information, it scared them.” Richard laughed bitterly: “Luckily the people I found were familiar people, upon sensing that something was wrong, they quickly warned me. If not, I would not be here today.”

“There’s someone observing the matter?” A cold glint flashed past Tang Tian’s eyes: “Who are they?”

“I do not know.” Richard shook his head.

“Then what about the people chasing after you?” Tang Tian asked.

“They are the Golden Rose people, the Golden Rose is White Sand’s most famous hitman organization, we must be more careful, they will not let things go so easily.” Richard said.

“Let things go easily? They have to ask me first!”

Under that light, Tang Tian’s face turned sinister, his killing intent soaring to saturation.

Chapter 612 – Tang Tian’s Counterattack!

“Meng Nan?”

The man in the shadows spoke without any hint of anger or joy.

Golden Rose’s head, Lei Er Fu, was a famous martial artist known for his slit eyes that resembled snakes. Yet he was sprawled to the ground with his head bowed, and spoke with a tremble in his voice: “A group of 47 elites that boarded Qin Yu Ran’s boat halfway. The ones who defeated the fleet of pirates were them.”

“What relation does he have with the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce?”

The voice in the shadow caused Lei Er Fu to perspire in cold sweat, he lowered even further: “This subordinate does not know.”

The person snorted, causing Lei Er Fu’s perspiration to increase and drench his clothes, he immediately said: “This subordinate will go and check it out immediately!”

“The Thirteen Families, did you check up on them?”

Lei Er Fu immediately replied: “This subordinate has been secretly investigating for the past few years, and there are some issues. Of the thirteen continents, six of them have already escaped to the Gold Continent, as though there is someone there rescuing them, out of the seven families, there is one walking towards the

Western Region, while the remaining six are still at Southern Region.”

“Did you check on those six positions?”

“They have all been checked, do you want us to take action?” Lei Er Fu was excited.

“Wait a little while more.” The voice in the shadow was extremely cold: “Send people to spy on them, this time, I want to catch them in one swoop.”

“Yes!” Lei Er Fu complied, he hesitated for a moment, then gathered his courage: “Then this person called Meng Nan....”

“Check up on him properly first, do not cause him to be alarmed.” the voice in the shadow said, and with a trace of complacency: “Inside our trap, how can he possibly escape?”

Lei Er Fu’s body trembled, he lowered his head even further: “Yes!”

Xu Jin looked at Tang Tian who had a calm look on his face, his heart shuddering suddenly. For a hot-headed, impulsive person to be suddenly so calm and collected, without any rage or shouts, or any sense of losing control, as though nothing had happened. To stand in front of you, that bone chilling cold intent would cause

the surrounding air to become ice cold and choking.

“No problem.”

Xu Jin did not hesitate at all, he was expressing all his support for Tang Tian. the warship that cost 60 billion was nothing for Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce. The cost of the warship was already over 60 billion, furthermore Tang Tian was a large customer holding the Black Gold. Xu Jin had been in the business for so many years, so he knew Tang Tian's potential very clearly.

With the Black Gold, and also being an ally of the Bai Family, Tang Tian would only become richer and richer.

“Is this enough? My authority limit is 100 billion!” Xu Jin reiterated once again, from the last few days of discussing, he found out that Meng Nan was a person who spoke a lot of comradeship, and to be able to help him at this time, he was reaping good karma.

“Thank you Old Xu.” Tang Tian did not reject him: “You can give me everything.”

Xu Jin did not beat about the bush and directly gave the money card to Tang Tian.

Coming out from the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, Tang Tian boarded the small transport boat that the Ling family had prepared for him. It was just a 16m small boat, and could only accommodate

50 people. It's defensive properties were outstanding and extremely agile. It's shape was extremely unique too, it had an open fretwork exterior, making it look like a wood basket, all the empty spaces made for bodyguards.

35 Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts firmly guarded each space and maintained high vigilance. Shi Sen took 10 Demonic Mounts with him, and the remaining 35 prepared themselves against enemies.

Other than Tang Tian inside the small boat, Han Sen sat with a nervous face, and Richard who had not recovered.

Richard was also curious, how Master would be counterattacking. Although he and Tang Tian have only interacted for a short period of time, he also knew that Master was definitely not a good tempered person. He initially thought that Master would bring people to fight their way in through the front doors, and never expected the Master to be doing that.

It was an early morning, and Tang Tian brought them all to Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, causing Richard to be confused.

“How many people are there in Golden Rose?”

“In White Sands City, about 100, in the entire White Sands Continent, around a thousand.” Richard said.

“That's not a lot.” Tang Tian sneered: “What about ten million

for one person?”

Richard was startled: “Ah?”

He did not understand Tang Tian.

“Reward, per Golden Rose people, 10 million per life.” Tang Tian’s eyes revealed a cold glint, and said: “After coming to White Sands, I finally know how to spend money!”

Tang Tian had thought about it the night before, he could buy warships, he could also buy armies, so what about the Golden Rose? He could buy them down too!

“10 million a life!” Richard was stunned.

“Yes, and I will even gift an Empyrean Ice Tree Spear.” Tang Tian said proudly: “An elite will be 100 million and 10 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, a small leader will be 1 billion and 100 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears! A big leader will be 10 billion and 1000 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears!”

Han Sen and the rest became stiff, Richard’s mouth was wide open and did not speak for a long time.

Tang Tian looked at Richard curiously: “Is this price not attractive enough?”

Pitiful Richard, he was completely at a loss for words.

“Could the price be too low? Then double it, 20 million a life and two empyrean ice tree spears!” Tang Tian was feeling extremely rich.

“Not low not low!” Richard quickly reacted and immediately advised: “For ordinary men, 10 million is too much, they are only worth two million.”

“No matter, even the guards at the door is fine! They don’t have much, so we should fight for money!” Tang Tian snarled, revealing his pure white teeth, he clenched his teeth: “I don’t care about the money, spending a bit more is fine, but this time, I want to completely destroy the Golden Rose. And to buy information, state a price to the informants, I want to know, who is the man behind the Golden Rose. I have prepared 100 billion for that!”

100 billion!

Richard was completely blank, a counterattack worth 100 billion was far above what he had imagined!

He did not dare to think what kind of reaction would occur when he threw the bomb.

Richard trembled, he started giving out the price lists.

The Ge Lun Barracks had a small scale mercenary army, called

the White Oak Mercenary Army, with a total of 300 plus men. In a flourishing place like the White Sands Continent, the White Oak Mercenary Army did not have any advantage, and could only accept small businesses like bodyguards on a daily basis.

Ge Lun looked at the dilapidated barracks, and the members who were lifeless, and his heart was filled with worry. If they did not have any more business in the year, they would not be able to afford the rental of the barracks next year and they would have to leave White Sands City.

Suddenly, a member rushed forward anxiously: “Captain! Captain!”

Ge Lun frowned, and spoke: “Is your butt on fire? Or are you owing money again? Didn’t I send you to the guild to stay and get business? Why are you back?”

“Captain! Business! It’s business!” The member was full of excitement.

“Business” the two words, immediately aroused everyone’s attention, all the lifeless members swarmed him quickly.

“Xiao Jiu, you finally got us some business!”

“Business! That’s great! My butt was going to rust!”

“Idiot, are you going to use your butt to do work?”

.....

Everyone quickly became excited, business meant money, everyone was so poor they could not leave their place, and even the smallest of business could save their life.

Ge Lun was extremely excited, but in the end he was still the captain, and maintained his calm: “Xiao Jiu, what business is it? Who is the other party?”

“Captain, take a look!” Xiao Jiu passed a paper over.

Ge Lun took the paper, and when he saw the contents on the paper, his face changed. The price written caused him to become alarmed, the red words were extremely bloodthirsty.

“Who did the Golden Rose offend now?” Ge Lun muttered, he was at a loss for words.

“Golden Rose”, the words quickly make everyone who were excited become extremely quiet, as though they were being poured by a bucket of ice water. When talking about business in White Sands, who wouldn’t know about Golden Rose? People who dared to go against Golden Rose never lived to see another day.

“A person called Meng Nan!” Xiao Jiu had actually already checked up on it, and quickly explained: “Yesterday, Golden Rose was chasing after Meng Nan’s subordinate, and even the Security

Bureau tried to meddle in, but who knew Meng Nan's backing would be so strong, a group of large figures came up and helped him, causing the Security Bureau to retreat. This morning, he gave the guild the bounty!"

"All of the guilds? Ge Lun was excited.

"Yes, all the guilds, the Dark guild, the Mercenary Guild, all of the guilds receive such bounty. He has already handed over 40 billion as insurance! And 3000 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears!" Xiao Jiu was extremely excited.

Ge Lun was stunned, and then blurted out: "The Golden Rose is finished!"

Xiao Jiu looked at Ge Lun: "Captain, are we doing it?"

"We are! Why not?" Ge Lun immediately reacted, his killing intent soaring: "The Golden Rose stronghold is on the next street only, there aren't many people who knows about it, let us take it down first! Damn, it's at least a few hundred millions! Everyone, let's kill some!"

Hearing the words a few hundred million, everyone's eyes immediately turned red.

The entire White Sands City was already in a hoorah.

Tian Qi Guang entered the Security Bureau as per usual, thinking

about the last night, the master's promise and consolation, did he become somewhat calmer. The master did not blame him for what had happened.

But, Tian Qi Guang did not plan to give up.

He did not believe that those big figures will keep on protecting that Meng Nan. As long as he had the chance to capture him, he would act first and report after, to grab the person back to Security Bureau, and at that time, it would be a huge service.

Tian Qi Guang was extremely clever, he could sense that the Master was extremely interested in Meng Nan.

I ought to plan this well, Tian Qi Guang knew that he was just a hunting dog, and patience was more important than the bite.

Just at that moment, knocking came from the door, disrupting Tian Qi Guang's thoughts, he frowned: "Come in."

A subordinate came in with his head tucked low, and he handed over a letter of resignation: "Master, this subordinate's mother is sick, and wants to take care of the family, I cannot do this anymore, and this is my letter of resignation."

Tian Qi Guang snorted: "Go."

The person was just making up excuses, and trying to escape.

Very quickly, many more people started to resign, Tian Qi Guang did not care, after facing the figure the night before, who were all big figures, many of the cowards were afraid of the calamity, and thus quitting was extremely normal.

But when more than half of the Security Bureau started to quit, Tian Qi Guang finally realized that something was amiss, he pulled onto a more loyal subordinate: “What’s happening with you guys?”

The subordinate did not say a word, and pushed the bounty paper into Tian Qi Guang’s hand, and immediately escaped.

Tian Qi Guang opened the bounty paper with a frown, looking at the blood red words, his eyes immediately grew round, and blood surged into his mind.

When he finished reading the bounty paper, all the blood had left his face completely, an intense fear had enveloped his entire body, he felt as if he could not breath, like a fish out of water and choking.

His body involuntarily shuddered, he finally understood why his subordinates had quit, 100 billion, that astronomical amount had sucked all the energy out his body.

He dropped to the ground, paralyzed.

Chapter 613 – Inside Plot

Ling Xia woke up early in the morning. After her bath, she was summoned by her father. Upon seeing her, he handed over a piece of paper to her.

She accepted it with a suspicious look on her face, and when she read the contents of it, the remaining lethargy in her body immediately flew away, her hands started to tremble, as though the piece of paper weighed a thousand tons, her mouth became dry: “T-this.....this is real?”

“Yes.” Ling Yuan Hong admitted that when he received the news, he was totally unlike his daughter, but at the moment, he had already calm down.

“It’s too crazy.” Ling Xua muttered.

Ling Yuan Hong felt the same way, and nodded: “Too crazy.”

He changed the subject: “How much do you understand about him?”

Ling Xia reacted, although her face still had a look of shock and distractedness, she laughed bitterly: “Almost nothing. His family, background, the power he holds, nothing.”

“Recently, it hasn’t been calm.” Ling Yuan Hong sighed. For a family with a rich background, they had deep roots in White

Sands, their connections were so deep that outsiders could never imagine it.

Ling Xia's mind was shaking, she knew her father knew something.

Ling Yuan Hong laughed: "And now there is a lunatic and fierce person, I wonder if it is a good or bad thing."

Ling Xia rarely saw the complicated and hesitating look on her father's face, although he was a gentle and warm man, but he was extremely firm on the inside, and was always decisive on matters, and rarely had any opinions.

"Is the situation very bad?" Ling Xia decided to test and ask.

"Quite bad." Ling Yuan Hong sighed: "Since three years ago, He Ying went to the Continent Lord to present Lady Rou to him, and the Continent Lord started to neglect the government affairs. Two years ago, I heard that majority of the government affairs were handled by Lady Rou, and I knew that something was wrong. Lady Rou's hands are brilliant with tricks, in just two years, how many elders are left inside the internal department? Last Month, Eldest young noble met with danger, if not for the hidden protection sent by Master Suo Bi to protect him, I'm afraid....."

Ling Xia widened her eyes, her face was in disbelief: "Could it be that they...."

“They are starting to make their moves.” Ling Yuan Hong’s tone was heavy: “The 3rd and 4th army have already begun to lean towards Ying He, Lady Rou who has control over the internal department, and has been pulling strings the past few years, half of the families in White Sands Continent are all under her now.”

“The Continent Lord isn’t aware of any of these?” Ling Xia was stunned.

“The Continent Lord is completely blind towards women, Lady Rou had completely taken control of the Continent Lord’s manor, and now we cannot even meet with the Continent Lord. The Manor is filled with Lady Rou’s servants, initially we thought to sneak into the manor, but who knew that the servants have strengths that are unfathomable, and we lost many people. Lady Rou’s background is definitely not simple!” Ling Yuan Hong clenched his teeth and said.

Ling Xia had never thought that the situation would be so terrible to such a state, and her face turned white.

“Then what do we do now?” Ling Xia asked at a loss, although she was intelligent, but she was after all still young.

Ling Yuan Hong nodded his head: “That is the reason why I called you here. You need to do two things, firstly, go and manage the 5th army.”

“But, the true order have not been given....” Ling Xia did not understand.

“It’s already here, it was sent here this morning.” Ling Yuan Hong passed the order over to Ling Xia, it was written with the official stamp, and was the formal order: “Master Suo Bi had personally worked to get this, do not restrain and fear, you must, in the shortest amount of time, take control of the 5th army.”

“Understand.” Ling Xia nodded her head.

“Second thing, have a good relation with Meng Nan.” Ling Yuan Hong suddenly said.

“Why?” Ling Xia was startled.

Ling Yuan Hong’s gaze was deep: “We have made plenty of extrapolations, He Ying and Lady Rou have already completed their initial preparations. If everything continues steadily, our chances of winning will become smaller and smaller. We need to have a disruptor externally, someone who can completely wreck everything.”

“You’re saying Meng Nan?” Ling Xia thought she heard wrongly.

“That’s right, I just thought about it.” Ling Yuan Hong did not even hide from it: “He is wild, a rule breaker, and a brave fellow, who else but him can be the perfect candidate for that?”

“But.....” Ling Xia was hesitant.

“You think I’m making use of him?” Ling Yuan Hong laughed out loud: “Don’t worry, you don’t have to do anything, just pay attention to him, if he comes into trouble, help him out of it. I have a premonition, he is born to be a disruptor!”

Ling Xia heaved a sigh of relief, she did not completely believe her father. Although she and Meng Nan have not known each other for long, she felt that he was frank but rather reckless with his reasoning, and completely not a person like what her father had described.

Ling Yuan Hong saw Ling Xia’s expression, and understood his daughter’s thoughts, he laughed out loud, but did not bother explaining.

Continuous explosion sounds sounded out from outside, groans and wails sounded out through the dense and huge door, Lei Fu Er’s entire body trembled, his entire body was trembling, and there were no more the vigor and scariness of his slit eyes. Every time the fervent shouting came out from outside the door, his entire body would tremble, fear and the thought of his bleak future was written all over his face.

This was the Golden Rose’s largest stronghold, and it had become a huge piece of meat.

He could roughly discern out the familiar voices, they were people of low statuses that used to fawn and curry his favor, and

now they were holding blades trying to kill him. They used to tremble under the name of the Golden Rose, but currently, with the astronomical bounty, they had lost all their fear and banded together, planning to eat up all the corpses of Golden Rose.

What made Lei Fu Er most afraid of was that people wanted his life.

10 billion cloud coins, 1000 Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, was what made Lei Fu Er filled with despair.

And what made him despair even further was that the Master had disappeared. He knew how big the power the Master held, and if he was willing to help him, he would have the possibility of surviving.

But, the Master never appeared.

Could it be that he was not worried that I'll reveal everything that we have done?

The footsteps from outside were getting closer and closer, Lei Fu Er could no longer wait, he came to a fireplace and opened a secret passageway; it was his last lifeline.

A stern look flashed past his eyes, the secret passageway had a bronze mechanism by the side of the wall. Beneath the house was an extremely powerful energy crystal installed. He pressed the button, in a minute, the intense explosion would destroy the entire

place, and all of the people chasing after him would explode along with the place!

Suddenly, Lei Fu Er felt a pain in his chest, his expression turned pale, as a sword tip protruded out from his chest.

A shadow had quietly crept up from behind him.

“You have done well all these years. Sigh, with you dead, my loss is huge, what a pity.”

An indifferent voice came out from behind him.

He truly came to silence me....

Lei Fu Er's face revealed a strange smile, and he fell down.

The shadow did not escape from the passageway, but closed it, and at the same time he moved Lei Fu Er's body beside a table.

10 seconds later, bang, the door smashed open with all the crazy people.

Countless people saw Lei Fu Er's body on a chair, their eyes lit up, everyone roaring and pouncing on Lei Fu Er's body, quarreling, scolding, fighting. The entire place grew into a chaos.

No one had noticed that an extremely ordinary person had quietly left the room.

Bang!

A gigantic fire regiment soared up from the ground, the intense explosion caused the entire White Sands City to shake.

Everyone rushed out from their homes and saw the intense raging flames, and had complicated looks on their faces.

The Golden Rose was finished, and the White Sands Continent's largest underground powerhouse, was completely obliterated.

The Golden Rose was completely obliterated.

The astronomical sum of money made people take risks out of desperation, although they had fear towards the Golden Rose, but they were completely dispelled by the cloud coins. In the entire White Sands Continent, Golden Rose's 32 strongholds were baptised with blood, the most infamous underground powerhouse of the White Sands Continent, in just one night, was pulled from the roots.

The night flowed with blood.

White Sands Continent had no lack of rich and powerful people, and there were people who were as filthy rich as Tang Tian, but there never was anyone who used such a ruthless method for

revenge.

Tang Tian became famous, extremely famous.

Although this popularity was not a good popularity, crazy, ruthless, stupid etc. But no one dared to provoke him, and no one dared to look down on him. It was said that when 2nd Army Commander He Ying received the news, he flew into a rage and killed three of his beloved dancers to vent his anger.

The Security Bureau was completely deserted, as over 70% of their members had resigned, and caused the Security Bureau to instantly become paralyzed. The Security Bureau that was never afraid of anything, to actually become frightened to such a stage, caused Tang Tian's name to soar to an unprecedented height.

In just a day, the entire White Sands Continent knew that there was a rich man that was tyrannical and crazy.

As Tian Qi Guang ran to He Ying for help, He Ying had already calmed down, and quickly thought of a way, and sneered: "That's right, the Security Bureau is actually paralyzed, then let it be. Think about it, if even the Security Bureau fears his ruthlessness, then who will protect the citizens of White Sands? Who will protect the families? Such a violent situation will cause the streets of White Sands City to become rivers of blood. Only when the bleeding is sufficient will they realize the importance of the Security Bureau, and they will understand who is their true enemy."

Tian Qi Guang's mind was aroused, he felt that the master's idea was too miraculous.

This brat is an outsider, his arrogance will definitely cause people to find him annoying. The Security Bureau just have to pull out a few weak martial artists, and add fuel to the fire, causing the White Sands City to become even more chaotic. Assassinations and kidnappings, will make everyone and every family feel the pain, they will naturally pour their hatred towards that asshole.

“This subordinate knows what to do!” Tian Qi Guang said respectfully.

Tian Qi Guang just left, when a voice came out from the shadows: “Your idea is not too bad.”

He Ying's face did not reveal any joy, he replied coldly: “You better not stir anything up for me! I asked you to come here, for you to resolve the matter about Eldest Young Noble. In the end, you failed, and now things are so troublesome. You better not stop chasing, once Eldest Young Noble is dead, White Sands City will belong to us, and at that time, you can do whatever you like. But before that, you better kill him first! If not for the fact that our men are being watched, why would I call you?”

“Relax, he will die very soon.” The voice in the shadow was as indifferent as before.

Leaving He Ying's manor, Tian Qi Guang immediately gave the Security Bureau holidays, and he himself also went back home on

the pretense of being sick. And the originally chaotic city became even more chaotic, and blood started to paint the streets.

In time, everyone realized the danger.

Chapter 614 – Advantage

In a blink of an eye, Young lad's Tang fearsome bomb thrown in White Sands City, quickly became forgotten.

What, didn't I give all of you money?

Didn't you all say the price is high enough? That it would be effective? Oh, If it is effective then it is fine, good good, this young lad is extremely busy and rich, and have many matters at hand, you all wouldn't understand the pain of a young lad!

Tang Tian's current problem was, paying back money!

It was extremely enjoyable spending money, and extremely tyrannical, but in the blink of an eye, he had spent a few billions. The money was borrowed, so Tang Tian was putting his all to urge Bing to refine the Black Gold, to quickly use the Black Gold for repayment. When Bing heard the burden of billions that Tang Tian owed, he almost spat out blood.

Tang Tian was worried about repaying money, but Xu Jin was not in the least bit worried. Tang Tian had the Black Gold mine, how could he lack money? But Tang Tian's reward also made his eyes light up, and he became extremely excited.

Weapon businesses most hated peace!

Tang Tian's method was so simple and crude that it made

people's hair stand, it broke all the rules, and caused a stir. Because of Tang Tian, the market had been rowdy and unsafe, it was extremely chaotic, and the weapon businesses were thriving, Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's business was booming.

If more people like him came, who knows if I can hit my target early this year.

Xu Jin was extremely happy in his mind, he was idling and bored, so he ran over to Tang Tian's side to hang around, he was extremely curious towards Tang Tian.

Walking into the courtyard of the Ling Family, he noticed Richard being extremely busy, obtaining information regarding the Thirteen families. After everyone found out that Richard had a huge backing behind his intelligence research, all the intelligence traders in White Sands became extremely lively. Many people felt that Tang Tian was a fool with money, and wanted to take advantage of him, but unluckily for them, they met with Richard.

Richard was not a famous intelligence personnel, but he knew and understood the Thirteen Families much deeper than other people, and he could quickly discern between the reliable and unreliable information.

After many of them hit up the wall of Richard, Richard's reputation grew in the circle.

Xu Jin who had been closely tied with the situation naturally knew of all this, he courteously greeted Richard, people who had

abilities naturally earned respect.

Xu Jin was prepared to find Tang Tian, but was told that he was training, he is truly a calm and composed man, to actually have the mood to train still!

After entering the inner courtyard, he suddenly saw another young lad muttering to himself, talking gibberish, ignoring everything else.

Xu Jin noticed that he looked rather well-disposed, and after a while, he realised that the young lad looked like Richard, and after thinking about it, he realised that there was a Richard Jr. in Tang Tian's team.

Xu Jin initially did not want to disrupt Richard Jr., but when he heard Richard Jr. saying the word 'spirit', he could not help but stop and listen closely.

After listening for a moment, he realized that Richard Jr. should be researching on spirits.

He smiled, his heart feeling disapproval. Since the emergence of the Honorable Martial Continent, spirit research had become the most trending research. But Xu Jin knew how deep the pit was, countless people had dived into that research and never crawled back up.

It was simple, spirit objects were too expensive and uncommon.

Although he did not know how the Honorable Martial Continent had solved that problem, but it was obvious that other people could not solve it.

But, Richard Jr. had mumbled a few words that aroused Xu Jin's interest. Xu Jin understood and knew spirits more than the average person, and the two immediately started to discuss on it.

Whenever Richard Jr. met people with the same interests, he becomes extremely excited, and immediately invited Xu Jin to view his laboratory.

Xu Jin gladly agreed, after talking further, Richard Jr.'s thoughts and ideas made his eyes light up, he became so moved to the point that he had the thoughts to provide for his research.

And when he walked into Richard Jr.'s laboratory, and saw the shelves full of spirit objects, he was immediately stupefied.

Spirit objects!

For the past few years, anything with spirits were considered treasures. How did the Honorable Martial Continent rise? Because of spirits, there were advantages to spirits, the most direct advantage was that it was intellectual. If saints could produce spirits, then they could form saint spirits, and infer laws by themselves! Mechanisms that had spirits would become stronger and become smarter, and naturally grow in strength.

After recovering from his senses, Xu Jin's blood seemed to have disappeared from his body, instantly turning ice cold.

After knowing that the spirit objects came from Tang Tian, Xu Jin immediately turned tail and pounced towards Tang Tian, and requested to purchase spirit objects.

Tang Tian was shocked, he never had the intention to sell spirit objects, if the spirit objects were to appear in the market, then wouldn't it be telling Honorable Martial Continent that there were Heaven's Road people present in Sacred Saint Galaxy? To attract Honorable Martial Continent's attention now was a definite way of seeking death.

Facing Tang Tian's hope to secrecy, Xu Jin happily agreed to it, especially knowing that Tang Tian rejected selling spirit objects, he hoped to be able to join in Richard Jr.'s research.

Tang Tian thought for a moment, and then agreed. He had to give face to his creditor still.

Xu Jin was beyond happy, he knew that Richard Jr.'s research held a vast amount of potential, and that was where he placed the most importance in investments. He packed up all of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's lab equipment and sent them over, and then he invested all of his years of research and savings into Richard Jr.'s lab.

He had a conscience, and did not inform Xu Ji Worldwide

Commerce about the news, as it was his life savings.

He was even more curious to Tang Tian's identity, to have so many spirit objects, he kept on guessing and making speculations on Tang Tian's background.

Xu Jin's extremely weird display immediately attracted Bai Yue and the other's attention.

Three Spirits City.

“This is the warship weapon specially used on warships. Their warships are extremely powerful, if we do not have a warship ourselves, we would definitely lose out. And I realized that the Zero Energy Bodies and warships are extremely compatible. I have no idea on how to bring a warship over, and only bought the blueprint, materials, and the warship weapons. All of you need to study them.”

Tang Tian told Sai Lei.

Sai Lei's gaze was completely attracted to the warship weapon, a weapon that was of a different style from Heaven's Road, released an extremely fatal enticing emotion for Sai Lei.

Tang Tian demonstrated the power of the Honeycomb Sword Cannon once, its terrifying might shocked everybody.

All of their complexions changed, if their armies were to face

against such an attack, they simply had no way to fight back.

“Such a powerful capability!” Tang Chou muttered, he suddenly had a question: “Does the Honorable Martial Group have these warships?”

“No. If they did, then who could stop them?” Bell replied with certainty, she then continued and said: “If this is the case, there should be some sort of communication ability between the Temple and Sacred Saint Galaxy, but they are cannot move between them. In this case, the so called labs of the Sacred Saint Galaxy should be at Temple!”

“That’s right.” Tang Chou quickly regained his senses: “Compared to them, we have a much bigger advantage. We can bring our spirit lab into Sacred Saint Galaxy, and our star treasures over to Sacred Saint Galaxy. We can also bring materials back to Heaven’s Road, and create warships in Heaven’s Road, we only need to study and research them, and we can immediately get rid of the Honorable Martial Group and Temple, adding our Zero Energy Bodies, no one can stop us. Star Treasures, Spirit Treasures, and Master being at the Sacred Saint Galaxy are our advantages.”

Tang Chou’s words roused everybody.

“Time, what is most important to us now is time, we need to rush before the Star Door opens, that is what matters. Once the Star Door opens, our advantage immediately becomes nil.”

Tension immediately filled the room.

Sai Lei suddenly laughed, and spoke with a tyrannical tone in her voice: “Isn’t it the same as last time, to just give it our all? Haven’t we been doing it this whole time? Furthermore, we now have such a large advantage, it is much better than last time!”

The haze in everybody’s mind was swept apart, and morale was immediately boosted.

“That’s right! Our conditions now are much better than last time!”

“Yes, that’s right!”

.....

Seeing everyone so excited, Tang Tian suddenly felt that he had no more troubles.

Ling Xia’s courtyard was not far from the teahouse, Xu Jin was pulled by Bai Yue and Bai Xiao over to drink tea.

Bai Yue laughed bitterly: “This guy is too crazy! If I buy the army for him, with his temper, if anyone provokes him, I reckon he will instantly flatten them.”

Bai Xiao also had a look of distress, Tang Tian’s bounty had

completely toppled his common sense and reasoning. To do something to the other party was right, but where was the planning? The method? The arrangements? There were nothing, only smashing the opponents to death with money.....

What kind of method was that?

Upon thinking if anyone were to provoke him in the future, without saying a word, a few billions worth of bounty would fly out again. To the point where his enemies would be completely annihilated, forever never seen the sky and sun again.

The crucial point was, it broke the rules, that was not how the aristocratic families did things. Everyone had money, by doing that, he only became the public enemy of the big families.

“But what does that have to do with us?” Xu Jin who was completely on Tang Tian’s side said disapprovingly: “It is after all only money, I can sell it to him, we have nothing to fear if it comes to war.”

“You war profiteer!” Bai Yue said with a look of disdain.

“That’s right! I am in this trade after all!” Xu Jin was roused: “Senior, if you are afraid of him getting into trouble, that’s fine, uncle can pass over the army to me, I will buy it from you.”

Xu Jin was in deep thoughts, he wanted to curry favor from Tang Tian, as his mind was completely filled with the spirit objects. He

was very clear that it was a gamble, if he won, his future, his children, oh no, his family, for generations, would be prosperous. Tang Tian was a true rich man, if he missed it, he would definitely regret for life and for generations.

Something is wrong!

Something is definitely wrong!

Bai Yue and Bai Xiao looked at each other. Bai Yue laughed: “He will definitely invite trouble, but if you want to curry favor from Junior brother Meng, it is not that easy. Only the fierce and truly powerful can do such things, Junior brother Meng is so fierce to the point that he cannot be any fiercer! The army that I have chosen for him is already on the way.”

Xu Jin was an experienced man, and he immediately realized what was happening, so he laughed: “Senior Bai is truly a person with deep connections.”

Xu Jin who regained his senses was a slippery man, and would not leak any information.

The Bai uncle and nephew were helpless against him.

“The news recently haven’t been good.” Bai Xiao said: “The market is in a mess, there are rumors everywhere, it seems that there have been a few murder cases, and many people are criticizing and pointing the blame at Brother Meng, thinking he

has broken the rules.”

“Someone wants to go against him.” Xu Jin was an experienced man, and said without hesitating: “It should be He Ying, he is the most suspicious.”

“That’s right.” Bai Yue sigh: “Recently, the White Sands Continent has been in a state of turmoil, I hope Junior Brother Meng will not be pulled into it.”

Xu Jin revealed a bitter laugh: “Senior, you’ve got it right.”

The Bai uncle and nephew were startled, the two of them looked towards where Xu Jin was looking at, and became shocked.

“Eldest Young Noble!”

“Ling Xia!”

Ling Xia and the Eldest Young Noble had appeared at the entrance of the Ling Family courtyard.

Chapter 615 – Cutting Off At The Estuary

Bu Zi Fei watched as Sun Jie scrutinized the war summary carefully.

The war summaries were usually compiled by the recounts of the lucky survivors, the entire process of war and restoration for great amount of details would become important information to gauge the enemy's strength.

Bu Zi Fei knew the content of the summaries inside and out, as he had flipped through them multiple times. Sun Jie's strength was not inferior to his, but he was still afraid of dying, and thus this made him never underestimate his enemies. Although in the summaries, the majority of it was "Greatly underestimated the enemy", "Shi Sen is a traitor" etc, but Bu Zi Fei was not affected by them at all. Maybe Sun Jie did underestimate the enemy, Shi Sen's turncoat was truly a huge influence, but the enemy's battle power was also strong.

Speaking of Shi Sen's turncoat, the Continent Lord flew into a rage, what he was angry was not the turncoat, but it was the strong talents that were actually hidden in the Vast Star Continent, and it was like a slap in the face. The people who had suspected something about Shi Sen, after continuous investigations, were completely overruled. The change in the 36th Army was also revealed, Sun Zheng's laziness and his seizing of authority to lead the 36th Army was the cause of the change.

The investigations was the only thing for the Vast Star Continent to able to produce reasons for them to send their troops out,

without clarifying the reasons, the Vast Star Continent would be at the disadvantage, and if they were not able to find out able the people who had been keeping watch on Vast Star Continent early on, it would be extremely dangerous.

And the one with the biggest loss was undoubtedly the Sun Family, Sun Jie placed the Sun Family as his most important priority, and people with a bit of foresight would know that with the death of Sun Jie, it could potentially be the turning point of the Su Family, from their peak to their decline. Furthermore, Sun Zheng was still in the hands of the mysterious person in the Shang Continent, if the Sun Family wanted to give a ransom for him back, they would have to give up a big fortune.

The survival or decline of the Sun Family did not matter to Bu Zi Fei, what he cared more about was the fighting ability displayed by the opponent. Firstly, it was the experts they had, the few experts who had unique strength. And there were the strange weapons, the blue spears, in which he suspected were the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, and the small bronze boxes which he had never seen or heard before. Shi Sen's small team, was much stronger and more elite than he had thought, and after changing their equipments, this elite team was a source of headache for Bu Zi Fei.

The Vast Star Continent had a total of eight silver armies, other than Sun Jie's 8th Army, there were seven more silver armies. But the most important matter at hand was the restoration of the pontoon bridge, for the sake of preparing against the Blue Dwarves that could appear any moment, two silver armies were a mandatory requirements to stand guard.

The Vast Star Continent was accessible from all sides, and this created the heavy commerce in Vast Star Continent, but that also meant that if the Vast Star Continent were to engage in war, it would require them to defend many places. Some of the non important places could be left to the garrison of ordinary armies, but the more crucial installations needed the silver armies to stand guard, and thus they could not be mobilized.

In ordinary times, Sun Jie's 8th Army and Bu Zi Fei's 7th army could be quickly mobilized and activated, and were skilful at it. But with the sudden change in development, the annihilation of the 8th Army, it meant that only Bu Zi Fei's 7th army could be sent out to war.

Bu Zi Fei had outstanding strength and was a cautious person, his 7th Army was also a silver army, and in Vast Star Continent, they were an army well thought of.

Bu Zi Fei laughed bitterly, in truth, he did not want to fight in the war.

To the Vast Star Continent, the Shang Continent did not have any benefits, it was a barren and poor land, what was the point trying to take over it? For the hundred thousand lives? That was truly a joke.

But, he could not avoid the fight.

Because Sun Jie was dead, and the 8th Army and 36th Army dead. If Vast Star Continent did not take any actions, then the powerful

and rich powerhouses around would pounce over like jackals.

So, not only would Bu Zi Fei have to win the upcoming battle, but he had to do it beautifully. The Vast Star Continent needed the win, a win that could not be doubted and was so overwhelming that it could to prove to the other continents that they had the strength to defend themselves.

This made Bu Zi Fei even more cautious.

Around the estuary, there were no strongholds or any defensive locations. It seemed that the opponent had limited manpower. To any continent, putting up a fort in the place surrounding the estuary was the most fundamental defense. But around the estuary into the Shang Continent, it was blank with nothing.

The tension in Bu Zi Fei's mind lessened, but when he looked at the estuary carefully, he shook his head, it only had a width of 150m, and thus the warship of the 7th Army could not enter. Such a small estuary, it truly is a poor land, even a slightly bigger trading ship will not be able to fly in.

“200 of you will guard the ship, the rest of you, unboard and enter the continent.”

Bu Zi Fei quickly set down his order.

The 7th Army quickly completed their arrangement into a new formation and flew into the estuary.

“How slow can they be? It’s been so many days and they’re not coming?” Ling Xu was extremely unhappy, he had been guarding the estuary every day, and it was wasting his time for training.

He had been feeling good recently, as his spear techniques had improved greatly, but it made him unhappy to be unable to completely immerse himself in training

In the distance, Crane and Jing Hao floated in the sky cross legged with their eyes closed. The only difference was that Crane’s Crane Sword floated beside him, while Jing Hao’s Drunk on Saint Blood was laid horizontally on his leg.

After the last fight, Drunk on Saint Blood was bathed in the blood of the saints, and thus started releasing an astonishing amount of killing intent, and began to stir restlessly. But it was helpless, as Jing Hao was like an immovable mountain, firmly suppressing it.

The Qi that Crane Sword released was different, occasionally it would be light and faintly discernible, at times it would be congealed and still. But it was not affected at all facing against the surging fierce Qi of Drunk on Saint Blood.

“Spear you to death! Spear you to death! Spear you to death!”

Ling Xu roared by the side, his figure moving like lightning, one after another, spear auras shot into the estuary, lighting up the place, he was training his [Spear Rush].

When he started to assimilate the [Spear Rush] into his spear techniques, he quickly realized that it was not only used to burst forward, but could be used in greater aspects during battle.

Although his roars never stopped, it seemed that his endurance had reached a critical point, but his release of spears were not affected at all, one after another, he continued to train, he did not cut corners at all.

Suddenly, he stopped.

In the distance, Crane and Jing hao opened their eyes.

“They’re here.”

The three of them looked at each other. Crane stood up and Crane Sword that was flying around flew into his hand. Jing Hao grabbed onto Drunk on Saint Blood and stood up without saying a word. Violent Ling Xu suddenly kept all of his qi, and quietly looked into the distance.

The three of them were like hunters waiting to pounce onto their prey.

“The vanguard unit will enter first, be careful of the enemy’s ambush.” Bu Zi Fei said, entering the continent was the easiest time to be ambushed.

“Yes!” Vanguard Unit leader Long Nan replied, he looked around, and then ordered: “Vanguard Unit, move out!”

The Vanguard Unit comprised of 50 men, all of them were experts. Long Nan used to be a famous solitary pirate, with outstanding strength, who was recruited by Bu Zi Fei, and thus changed his unit into the Vanguard unit.

Long Nan did not approve of Bu Zi Fei’s cautiousness, and hoped for his opponents to directly challenge him.

The 50 men unit looked to be in a messy formation, but each of them maintained a suitable distance between each other, for when the situation arises, each teammate would be able to make and execute prompt reactions. The battle tactics for a vanguard unit is completely different from an army, and even if they were an army for hire, but they were all individually very strong, thus maintaining their promising offensive ability.

Light pillars lit up around them from the ground beneath them, through the clouds and forest.

They were all skilled and brave people, they did not drop in free fall, but instead increased their speed and burst downwards like arrows with extraordinary speed.

Wooosh!

The estuary passage sped past Long Nan’s vision, and in the blink

of an eye they had almost reached the end of the estuary passage into the Shang Continent. Suddenly, Long Nan had a feeling in his mind, his face changed, he immediately bellowed: “Be careful!”

The members who had just flown out of the passage ahead seemed to have entered a drunken state, all of their bodies losing control.

A mental attack!

Long Nan never expected that they would face mental attacks in such a barren land. Saints that specialized in mental attacks numbered a few, and were the most hated existences, but at the same time, they all held extremely high worth. Long Nan was already not in time to reduce his speed, but with his abundant experience, he clenched his teeth and activated the energy in his body, a layer of energy forming around him.

A dense energy would be able to disrupt mental attacks to a degree.

As expected, the moment he left the estuary, his state of mind was jolted, as if he had barged into a formless web.

He immediately bit his tongue, the pain and mouth full of blood immediately dispelled the mental attack, his gaze immediately landing on the terrifying martial artist that utilized mental attacks!

The black robed young man stood still with sword in hand, like a

crane dancing, he moved agilely in the sky.

But he never expected that the web in front of him was only one layer.

Silver auras suddenly lit up, enveloping his vision, the sharp Qi immediately aimed straight for the space between Long Nan's eyebrows, his mind trembled, spear aura!

The dense amount of spear auras enveloped the sky, although their might were not strong, but to be used at such a degree, it was brimming with killing potential.

Chi chi chi!

The vanguard unit members who had lost control erupted with blood. In the blink of an eye, more than 10 of them were pierced through.

Long Nan's eyes turned red, he roared and punched out with his right fist!

The dazzling fist aura shot out like an intense shooting star, the destructive spirit qi enveloped the entire place!

Although he was injured, he needed to destroy the web of spears.

Although it was impossible to effectively defend against mental

attacks, but their wounding and killing potential was not strong, mainly used for disrupting the opponent's state of mind. As long as they were able to escape the region, his members would regain their fighting ability.

His punch was his killing technique, consuming a third of the energy in his body, transforming it into a blaze and rotating at extremely high speed, it converged into a blazing whirlpool the length of 60 m, like a gigantic fire disk.

[Fire Whirlpool Disk]!

The fist was able to form a passage out of the rain of spears.

Suddenly, a dangerous feeling swept across his heart, before he could react, the fire whirlpool disk in front of him was cut into two by a blade like tofu.

Splitting the Fire Whirlpool Disk, a figure holding a sword appeared.

How.....how is this possible.....

Bing looked at the completed Sword Forest Stronghold, revealing a look of satisfaction. The completed Sword Forest Stronghold was able to withstand extremely strong attacks, even if the only play in his hands was the Precious Bright Village Regiment.

When he heard that Crazy Tang had bought two armies, Bing was stunned, he never heard of armies that could be bought before.

But Crazy Tang was able to sell the Black Gold for a good price, and this made him relax. Money was a huge issue, and in truth, Bing himself was not good at making money. But Crazy Tang was not a person who knew his own place, and would always cause trouble wherever he went.

Suddenly, a treasure on him started to buzz with caution, Bing's heart trembled, Jing Hao and the rest had located enemies!

He did not pin his hopes on the sentries of the Precious Bright Village Regiment, but luckily for Jing Hao and the other two who were strong enough, to use them as sentries was a waste of resources, but it was the only thing he could do.

Are they finally here.....

Estimating the time, it should be time for the Vast Star Continent to take action.

The sharp alarm resonated throughout the place, causing everyone's face to change, and immediately stop what they were doing. When they finally reacted, they all rushed into the Sword Forest Stronghold.

In the center of Sword Forest Stronghold, a dazzling light aura lit

up, following that, it started to spread to the outside. The 36 Sword Strongholds, started to buzz and lit up like swords, soaring into the sky.

Chapter 616 – The Fortifications Of The Sword Forest Stronghold

The arrival of Eldest Young Noble caused many to gasp.

The situation of the White Sands Continent was obvious to everybody, the Eldest Young Noble was here to seek help. Although no one knew what the Eldest Young Noble and Meng Nan talked about, but everyone could roughly guess. What did Meng Nan have? Money! Although Meng Nan had a few elites with him, but the few of them could not truly affect the situation, and the only thing that could concern the Eldest Young Noble was money, everyone needed money.

That astronomical bounty made everyone believe that Meng Nan was a rich tyrant, and not just some average rich tyrant.

Did no one see how Xu Jin was flattering Meng Nan the whole day? If even the shopkeeper of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is already doing his best to curry favor, who would suspect his wealth?

But everyone knew that after the matter, Meng Nan would completely infuriate He Ying, and there would be no space for them to reconcile.

Tang Tian sent Ling Xia and Eldest Young Noble out.

When he turned, he saw Han Sen's worried look, and became

curious: “What’s the meaning of your expression?”

Han Sen hesitated for a moment: “Master might not know, but He Ying and Lady Rou have been in cahoots for many years, Eldest Young Noble’s strength has been greatly reduced, and everyone is saying that Eldest Young Noble cannot last for long. Now, the aristocratic families inside the continent are all supporting He Ying.”

He had been hanging around in the White Sands City for many years, and had all sorts of information, and definitely knew about the power struggles between the parties.

Tang Tian: “Oh, so it’s like that.”

“Master is brilliant!” Han Sen immediately replied: “if not for Master Suo Bi always supporting Eldest Young Noble, he most likely would had....”

Tang Tian then refuted: “Do you think He Ying will let us go?”

Han Sen became silent, he had never seen He Ying before, but the news and information spread in the city of He Ying were countless. He Ying was narrow-minded, brutal and cruel etc, etc. Everyone knew of the conflicting views between Master and He Ying, so Han Sen immediately felt stupid suggesting such an idea.

“It’s not a problem, I am just attending a banquet.” Tang Tian said indifferently.

The Eldest Young Noble had invited Tang Tian to the banquet hosted by the Continent Lord. Due to the great influx of important guests from the continents around the White Sands Continent, the Continent Lord that had always been held up inside his manor finally decided to hold a large scale banquet.

To show their grandeur, the location of the banquet had been placed in the White Sands Gardens, which was the Continent Lord's private garden.

Tang Tian did not care much about attending the banquet.

Tang Tian had other thoughts in mind, which was the positive progress on Richard's investigation regarding the Thirteen Families. The Thirteen Families, other than one of them which was in the Western Region, there were seven families heading towards the Gold Continent, while the other five were in the White Sands Continent.

What Tang Tian could not understand was that the position of the Five Families in the White Sands Continent was extremely high. When they had just migrated to the White Sands Continent, coincidentally, the White Sands Continent was surrounded by pirates, and the Five Families risked their all to support the White Sands Continent to push back the pirates, earning rewards by the Continent lord of that time. At that time, the Five Families were already concealing their identities, although they had done great service, but they were not flamboyant about it, and instead, with their power, they cleared all traces of clues that led to them.

Tang Tian's expenditure did not go to waste, Richard had indeed found a few precious clues. If the clues were to land in other people's hands, it would most likely confuse them, but in the hands of Richard, who had profound knowledge on the field, it immediately roused his spirit and he quickly locked down the identities of the Five families.

After many years of concealing their strength and biding time, the five families were currently very powerful.

Tang Tian's headache was how to establish communication with them. Would the Five Families know about the existence of Heaven's Road? If they do not, how can I explain it to them? Will they believe me? Will that expose my identity?

The continuous lines of questions made Tang Tian feel even more stressed.

What worried him the most was exposing himself. If Honorable Martial Continent knows that I came from Heaven's Road, I am afraid they would do everything to capture us. We are still weak, and that would be extremely dangerous.

Would the Five Families have any plans towards Heaven's Road?

At the start, he only thought that they shared a common enemy, but he then realized that he was thinking too simply.

He shook his head, he would put down the complicated

questions, and let Uncle Bing, or Crane, people with better brains to think about it. He continued to urge Richard not to disclose such information.

I wonder how Uncle Bing and the rest are doing in the Shang Continent, Tang Tian thought.

Bu Zi Fei looked at the remaining 10 vanguard unit, his face was pale green. He did not underestimate his enemy, but he never thought that when he reached the battle, the enemies were much more terrifying than he thought.

They were just three men, but they had practically wiped out the entire vanguard unit. Long Nan himself had suffered severe injuries, and thus the morale of the vanguard unit immediately dropped to a low.

Long Nan's strength was powerful and unique, and was just a step away from the realm of the Silver Saints, and was definitely a powerful general in the warzone, but with just one sword, he was injured.

If Bu Zi Fei did not see that something was amiss and anxiously reacted, Long Nan might not have survived, it was difficult to say.

But at the moment, the vanguard unit had suffered heavy losses. Around him, the faces of the soldiers were filled with fear. The

vanguard unit was the 7th army's most arrogant and despotic people, and were also their strongest, and was the elite team, with extremely good battle achievements.

But their opponents were just three people, and they were actually so easily killed.

Pale-faced, Long Nan's heart was brimming with fear and shock, no one was clearer than him of the danger in the exchange earlier. The cold and strange mental attack, the swordsman with his enlightened laws, the spear auras that covered the sky like stars, all three of them were experts among experts, and were all stronger than him.

For three such experts to appear together, and they were extremely tacit and compatible with each other, where exactly did they come from?

He was filled with suspicion.

Bu Zi Fei took a deep breath, he regained his steadiness. He suddenly had a premonition that the battle would definitely not be easy. But that did not make him feel discouraged, but instead roused his fighting spirit. He did not have the backing of a family like Sun Jie. Born as a nobody, Bu Zi Fei knew that his current position was relying on his military achievements.

“Move out!”

The 7th Army flew into formation in the sky, like a regiment of dark clouds, they headed towards the Sword Forest Stronghold. Bu Zi Fei had done his homework, and had already found out the location of the opponent, although he did not understand why they built a stronghold in the middle of a barren land.

They advanced extremely carefully, scouts were sent out like rivers, continuously investigating their surroundings and situation.

The anticipated ambush did not happen, and everyone in the 7th Army heaved a sigh of relief.

But when they reached their destination and saw the majestic Sword Forest Stronghold, every single one of them all sucked in cold air.

The tall Sword Strongholds released dazzling light auras, like swords pointed straight to the sky, the densely packed sharp edges were filled with killing intent.

The entire 7th Army became extremely quiet.

Bu Zi Fei was lost for a moment, the scale of the stronghold in front of him was completely different from the reports. It was not a stronghold, it was a fortifications of strongholds, and the many light auras seemed to be resonating towards each other.

Such a scale of fortifications of strongholds was definitely not

something done in a day. Bu Zi Fei was so mad he wanted to behead the intelligence unit who gave him the report, it was a fortifications of strongholds, how could they have messed it up?

The war became the thing he hated the most, sieging. Although the 7th army was powerful, but sieging was not their forte. If it was one stronghold, he was not too worried, but for such a scale, his hands immediately turned numb.

“We will station here.”

Bu ZI Fei quickly made a decision, he had never seen such a layout of fortifications, and decided to investigate, whether or not the fortifications of strongholds was all, or were there other heaven defying things.

He could not retreat, but he had patience. The standard of his opponents were truly surprising.

Inside the Sword Forest Stronghold, Bing and the rest were watching the enemies.

“That’s the 7th Army.” The one who spoke was an elder chosen from the 36th Army by Bing, his face turned gloomy: “The main commander of the 7th Army is Bu Zi Fei, he is extremely cautious and strict, his standards are high, thus the 7th Army is a silver army, and extremely respected. Bu Zi Fei does not have much of a background, and relied on his services to be where he is today. In the past, this subordinate had heard of a saying, that if Bu Zi Fei was not tied down by his background, his personal strength would

be one of the top three.”

Everyone nodded their heads in agreement, no one knew the depth of Bu Zi Fei’s strength, but from the looks of it, he truly was an elite.

Crane turned and asked Bing: “Are we not going to inform Crazy Tang?”

“If we did, will he be able to rush back?” Bing did not even look at Crane: “He also has important things at his side, although Precious Bright Village Regiment’s strength cannot compare to our enemy, but if they still can be wiped out by that army inside this stronghold, I will knock myself to death.”

Bing’s words were exaggerated, but no one thought it was big talk. He was a famous general himself, as long as he made a move, he would sweep everything before him. His standards were so high that even Tang Chou who was a proud person had to admit that Bing was extremely powerful.

Furthermore, they had the Sword Forest Stronghold.

The fortifications of Sword Forest Stronghold was formed by Sai Lei’s hard work, the mining of Black Gold, stability of star treasures, and the formation of the Treasure City. Even Bing himself would not be willing to pit himself against the Sword Forest Stronghold.

My head will definitely bleed attacking this stronghold.

And inside the Sword Forest Stronghold, they had sufficient manpower, so he was not worried about being surrounded. The training for the Precious Bright Village Regiment was personally handled by him, and their synchronization had finally reached a qualified standard in Bing's eyes.

He did not have much hope for the Precious Bright Village Regiment, to use them to defend the city was enough.

He was thinking about a deeper problem, he had asked before, there were only eight silver armies in the Vast Star Continent, Sun Jie's 8th Army was annihilated, and it was only a flesh wound for Vast Star Continent, but if Bu ZI Fei's 7th Army were to be destroyed again, it would truly be a deep wound. For the most elite of armies to lose a quarter of their strength was not as simple as a flesh wound.

At that time, the Vast Star Continent would most probably be unable to ignore us anymore, and would send even more firepower. The Sword Forest Stronghold can only win under marginal circumstances right now, and the expensive Black Gold has given us sufficient wealth, Tang Tian had bought two armies, Shi Sen had replenished his Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, and at that time, our strength would soar in quality.

But between now and then, it will be the most important time for the Sword Forest Stronghold.

I have to think of a way to completely trap the 7th Army here.

Bing rubbed his chin, as if he was in deep thoughts.

Chapter 617 – I Am The Important Figure!

Tang Tian did not know that the Shang Continent was currently in a huge war, he was currently dressed impeccably, and kept on turning his head to look at himself.

“Are you sure I need to wear this?” Tang Tian felt restricted.

Han Sen replied with certainty: “Yes, Master! You must! Without question, you will become the most attractive main character in the banquet, etiquette is a must!”

Tang Tian looked at Han Sen’s persevering look, and replied helplessly: “Alright, when entering the city, we must follow their local customs!”

“Master, it is when you enter a village, follow the local customs!” Han Sen corrected him, he was a sly person, but being a manager in the hotel for so long, he have become extremely good with etiquette.

“Don’t you think city sounds more powerful?” Tang Tian refuted.

More powerful.....

Han Sen felt that quarreling with the Master over the phrasing was too dumb.

Ling Xia who was by the side was laughing till her stomach hurt.

“Alright.” Han Sen sighed: “Master, please be extra careful, and remember you should not move too vigorously, move slowly, and be gentle.”

Tang Tian replied loudly: “Relax relax, such a simple matter, to this godlike young lad, it is amateur hour.”

“You can bring 20 bodyguards for protection.” Ling Xia reiterated: “Of course, these guards will be unable to enter the garden, and can only stand guard outside.”

“Then I won’t need any.” Tang Tian waved his hand.

The courtyard also required protection, in the recent days, there had been many suspicious characters lurking outside of the courtyard. If they were not careful and someone were to break in, that would be a messy matter, as it had to be said, just with Richard Jr.’s laboratory was not something that could be measured with money.

Ling Xia did not refute him: “Alright!”

She was not worried about Tang Tian’s safety at all, throughout their journey, there would be the Ling Family bodyguards, and the banquet would be even more stringent, Meng Nan’s personal strength was also extremely powerful, trying to fight him was definitely not an easy matter.

Seated inside the Ling Family's small boat, Tang Tian felt as if he was being tied and bundled up like glutinous rice, which was extremely uncomfortable. The smart black western suit, as compared to the clothes Tang Tian wore everyday was extremely different.

But opposite him, Ling Xia sat down with sparkles in her eyes, Tang Tian was tyrannical, yet his body size was not too big, on the contrary, he was very well proportioned. Usually there was not much to him, but upon wearing the suit, he had become exceptionally suave and looked heroic. Tang Tian's facial expressions were rather stiff, and if it were anybody else, it would be extremely awkward, but Tang Tian's had been so accustomed with setting off a killing intent, that it became an indescribable coolness.

"The people who created this suit should be speared to death." Tang Tian hated the suit, and used Little Xu Xu's favourite phrase.

"Actually, I think that it looks good on you." Ling Xia laughed: "At least you look handsome, it seems that you will attract a lot of people."

Tang Tian sat in place like a puppet, he was afraid that he would tear the suit. Han Sen had repeated again and again to him that the material for the suit was not sturdy. Tang Tian had already broken three pieces before he finally understood how fragile they were. It made another bad impression for him, it was sloppy work!

Alright, since I have no other suits left to remedy this, I better not move.

But when he heard what Ling Xia said, he said in disdain: “This type of farce, showing the face and eating, have always been Little Crane’s or Magic Flute’s matters, for this godlike young lad, I have always relied on my fists to talk.”

In a blink of an eye he had already mocked Crane and Magic Flute, Why should you all be more good looking than me?

Although Ling Xia did not know who Little Crane or Magic Flute was, but she could roughly guess how they were related, but she could not help but chide: “This is your first time going to such a thing, you must absolutely remember, no matter what kind of argument occurs, you cannot use your fists!”

“Then what do i use?” Tang Tian frowned: “I am not good with other weapons.”

Ling Xia caressed her forehead, she suddenly thought that accompanying Tang Tian to the banquet might be a mistake. But the arrow had already left its bow, no matter what, she could not retreat.

“I mean not to use force.” Ling Xia patiently explained: “There will be many important figures present, so we have to restrain ourselves a bit.”

Tang Tian looked at Ling Xia, and spoke unhappily: “I am the important figure!”

Ling Xia became quiet, she did not know what to reply.

If she said that Tang Tian was not an important figure, Ling Xia suspected that he might do something stupid. To find trouble with the important figures to prove that he was one, she believed that he would do such a thing.

Oh no, I cannot let him do such a thing!

Ling Xia suddenly felt the pressure on her, and the heavy responsibility that was on her shoulders! Although she did not understand what her father and Eldest Young Noble saw in Meng Nan, but she knew the severity of the matter.

“That’s right, you are an important figure!” Ling Xia spurted out the words, but felt like she wanted to puke. She refrained herself from doing so and portrayed a serious emotion: “But look, important figures are all about manners, about their bearings, even if anyone has hatred for each other, they maintain their calmness in the eyes to others. If with just speech, they show off their blades, that is just crude and disgusting behaviors!”

Ling Xia stopped, she noticed that Tang Tian was looking at her with a strange look, and asked: “What?”

Tang Tian asked with a look of suspicion: “Have you ever seen a

real important and big figure?”

Ling Xia was startled.

Tang Tian felt that Ling Xia was talking complete nonsense, Lion King Lei Ang, Temple, The 12 Ecliptic Palaces, which one of them didn't brandish their weapons as long as things went sour? What maintain of calmness, Tang Tian had fought for so many years, he had never heard of such a thing.

“Do you know what is a big figure?” Tang Tian extended a finger, and scoffed: “A big figure is one who is elated to seek vengeance, they will not bring their hatred and pain through the night, if there are grievances, they must be avenged, even the smallest of grievances must be avenged greatly, if you cannot seek vengeance, you find vengeance!”

Ling Xia was stupefied.

“Think about it, all the important figures are all very powerful, why would such people tolerate or hold back?” Tang Tian had an arrogant look as he patted his chest: “When us big and important figures do things, whoever dares to provoke us, we will smash them down, kick them down, kill them down, killing the monkeys to warn the chickens!”

Ling Xia started to think, Yea, what he says is right, wait a minute, am I being brainwashed by him?

Ling Xia subconsciously corrected him: “[It is killing the chicken to warn the monkey.](#)”

(It is a chinese idiom: to punish an individual to warn the others.)

“You have truly never seen an important and major figure.” Tang Tian said happily: “How is killing the chicken to warn the monkey more powerful than killing the monkey to warn the chicken? If you kill the monkey, will the chicken ever dare to do anything?”

Ling Xia was once again speechless, the voice in her mind was screaming, That is completely fallacious reasoning and harmful teachings! But should I refute him? Ling Xia suddenly realized that she did not know how to argue against that, causing her to be stumped.

To be unable to beat a fool in reasoning.....

If he truly starts fighting because of some argument at the banquet.....

Thinking about that scene, Ling Xia shuddered. No! I cannot let that happen! She took a breath, and regained her tranquility, she had decided, to fully lock him down by her side, to prevent all of the unprecedented things from happening.

“What are you looking at me like that for?” Tang Tian asked innocently.

Ling Xia had already decided. When at the banquet, she will not

leave an inch away from him.

“Welcome, Mister Meng!”

Manager Qu of the Continent Lords manor greeted respectfully, he knew that the extremely young man in front of him was a vicious character, so he had maintained a smile on his face, and praised: “Mister Meng’s glory will definitely surprise everyone tonight, I wonder how many hearts would Mister Meng attract tonight.”

Although he did not planned to put up a farce, but to be praised suave and glorious, Tang Tian felt extremely pleased, the qualities of a fool immediately came up, he started to exhibit a weird posture in front of the manager: “Is that so? I am very handsome right!”

Oh, my god!

Ling Xia so badly wanted to find a hole to hide herself in.

The servant nearby could not resist and chuckled. Manager Qu’s eyes flashed a strange look, but very quickly he regained his smile: “I believe everyone will be reintroduced to Mister Meng tonight. Two esteemed guests, please!”

It was an outdoor banquet.

The night sky had just risen, it was the early evening with

lanterns that lit the lawn and pavilions, buildings, and fountains. There was food and drinks everywhere, and servants in uniform going around.

The main gathering place was a vast lawn with many tables and chairs placed down under the bright lanterns, which made the place as bright as daytime. At the moment, many people had arrived, and they were in groups of three to fives, all holding wine glasses in their hands, talking and laughing.

The moment Tang Tian appeared, there was a brief silence.

But very quickly, everyone realized that they had lost themselves in that moment, and immediately started to talk loudly to cover their awkwardness, but as everyone started to talk loudly, it became even more rowdy, and everyone were once again frightened.

“Is that the rich man with the name of Meng?”

“Yes, that’s him! If not for him, the market will not be so chaotic now!”

“Where does he get all his money from?”

“Too ruthless!”

.....

The discussions around were all filled with fear and caution. On the contrary, the discussion among the ladies were much better. Although Tang Tian was not the most handsome person, but his well proportioned body and the aura he gave off made him extremely dazzling amongst the group of big bellied officials.

Tang Tian saw the table of food and his eyes immediately lit up. Without hesitating, he sat down and started to wolf down the food.

Countless of looks came from around him, Tang Tian's behavior of eating and table manners, in their eyes, was a display of bad etiquette.

Ling Xia was in an uncomfortable situation, she was born from an aristocratic family, and it was almost instinct for her to abide by proper table manners and etiquette. Under the scrutiny of everyone, for Tang Tian to be so unruly, adding the looks of despise and disdain, the mocking gazes, her face quickly flushed red.

Tang Tian did not care.

Compared to the people, the food in front of him were worth more attention to.

When the Continent Lord and Lady Rou walked in, what welcomed them was the scene. The Continent Lord revealed a look of disdain, while Lady Rou who was beside him, other than a look of surprise, her face did not have much change.

Ling Xia turned pale with fright, and immediately nudged Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's mouth was stuffed with butter cakes, he looked at Ling Xia, not knowing what was going on.

This is my first time tasting such good food.....

Ling Xia nodded her head towards the Continent Lord's direction. Tang Tian followed her gaze, and realized. He nodded his head.

Ling Xia heaved a sigh of relief and immediately got up, prepared to bring Tang Tian up to greet the Continent Lord.

After a moment, she realized that there were no movements behind her. What is he doing? Ling Xia was annoyed. She turned her head, but was stupefied.

Tang Tian was still busy eating.

“Audacious!”

“Impudent!”

Two roars came out at the same time, scaring Ling Xia. She turned her head, and when she saw the two person who roared,

her face immediately turned pale white.

Tang Tian who was focused on eating was not in time to defend, his hand trembled, and half the cake dropped on the ground. He looked at the cake on the grass.

His face immediately turned gloomy.

Chapter 618 – Gong Chen

If we were to talk about what Tang Tian hated the most, one of them would be being disturbed in the midst of eating.

Tang Tian stared at the two people unkindly.

Ling Xia thought that something would happen, but never expected that that something would occur so quickly. Especially when she saw the two persons who shouted at him, she knew that things would not go well.

Gong Chen, the man standing on the left who looked to be about 30, he was rather handsome and had the Continent Lord's trust, and was the right hand man closest to the Continent Lord. To the right was a beautiful lady called An Xuan, who was Lady Rou's servant.

Ling Xia felt that her father had greatly miscalculated. Eldest Young Noble could have a hostile relation with Lady Rou and He Ying, but he definitely could not go against the Continent Lord. If he provoked the Continent Lord, then Eldest Young Noble's successor position would become dangerous.

The displeased look on Continent's Lord face flashed past.

Gong Chen took a step forward and said coldly: "Mister Meng has disturbed the entire White Sands City and caused a bloodbath, forcing the Security Bureau to not dare step out of their door. Initially, I thought you would be something, but I never thought

you to be a vulgar person, it truly is disappointing.”

Hearing that, Continent Lord was surprised, he lowered his head and spoke to Lady Rou, by which she replied softly.

Ling Xia was feeling anxious, if they continued to let Gong Chen badmouth Meng Nan, then the Continent Lord would only have a worse impression of Mister Meng. She could not hold back: “How can Imperial guard Gong utter such impolite words? Mister Meng was defending himself!”

“Defending?” Gong Chen snorted: “Defending himself by spending a few billions? Forcing the Security Bureau to not dare step out of their door is called defending himself? Could it be that Miss Ling thinks that Mister Meng is as frail as a flower?”

Everyone around started to laugh.

Tang Tian did not understand anything, he had not met Gong Chen before. Why is he so hostile with me? Although Tang Tian was not a bright person, but he had extremely sharp intuition, and could feel the intense hostility coming out from Gong Chen.

Ling Xia wanted to refute, but Tang Tian stood up feeling annoyed: “Hey, you want to fight?”

Gong Chen was startled. Ling Xia was also startled. Everyone around was also startled. People who could enter the banquet were all people with positions, why would they meddle with someone

from the streets?

Seeing the other party standing there as still as a tree, Tang Tian continued with a look of disdain: “So you are just a big mouth!”

Gong Chen’s face flushed red, how could he bear the humiliation in front of so many people? His eyes were turning red, and he immediately sought permission from Continent Lord: “Mister Meng is issuing a challenge, how can I, a White Sands citizen, refuse? This subordinate seeks to accept the challenge!”

The Continent Lord muttered: “The person is a guest, but since the two of you wish to exchange some pointers, then do it, but no injuring and be polite.”

“Yes!” Gong Chen bowed, he raised his head and looked at Tang Tian with killing intent: “Mister Meng, please!”

He flew into the air above the lake, the place was big enough and could sustain a battle between individuals and not affect the rest. He feigned a look of humiliation and anger, but his heart and mind was ice cold.

Qin Yu Ran had visited Meng Nan’s residence for many times, that was not new news. Gong Chen felt that wherever he went, he would hear such gossip and rumors. He had wanted to visit Yu Ran for a meet, and felt that she would give him some face.

But who knew when he had requested to meet Qin Yu Ran, he

was rejected by her every single time.

When he first saw Meng Nan, the unquenchable anger in his heart surfaced up. He had purposely spoke with such a tone, wanting to incite such a situation. To others, he was the one being humiliated and attacked. But he was a cunning and vicious man, he had sought out Meng Nan's personality, since the White Sands citizens naturally huddled together in face of a common enemy, he made out what kind of person Meng Nan was.

His plan was a success, the other party was much stupider than he thought, and had been lured into his trap. And almost everyone present all stood at his side, and if he were to "accidentally" kill Meng Nan, no one would blame him.

The corner of Gong Chen's mouth came up a sinister smile, and, when he thought about what He Ying had promised, his mind flew into a rage of passion.

Tang Tian flew into the sky indifferently with his unique "Adaptive Eclipse".

The entire place sounded out with ridicules. Gong Chen flew up into the sky with a confident and graceful posture, while Tang Tian's posture, to them, was extremely ugly. And to the sharper ones, they immediately noticed that Meng Nan did not use energy at all, but compressed vacuum, and immediately suspected that he was a person with Energy Impediment.

When the two of them flew above the lake, it attracted

everyone's attention.

Qin Yu Ran had joined into the banquet earlier on, but she was at the other side of the garden with a group of noble ladies. She did not like to mix with men, as all of them had lustful looks at her in which she detested. When she saw Gong Chen and Meng Nan in the air, her face immediately changed.

The ladies beside her had long erupted into excitement.

“Wa! Imperial Guard Gong is so suave!”

“We can finally see Imperial Guard Gong in action, I can't wait!”

Although Qin Yu Ran did not like Gong Chen as a person, but she knew that he was powerful, to be able to become Continent Lord's most trusted guard, how could he be weak?

Big Brother Meng.....

At another side of the banquet, the Bai uncle and nephew had worried looks.

Bai Yue sighed: “Meng Nan is still too young, and has been duped. Seems like I have to work tonight, I believe my old face can still be a bit of use.”

Bai Xiao’s expression turned gloomy, he stared at the two figures in the air and shook his head: “Second Uncle, your words sounds as if you believe that brother Meng will lose, But I think otherwise.”

Bai Yue was startled, his nephew might appear modest externally, but he was proud to the bones, and Bai Yue never expected that Bai Xiao would have so much faith in Meng Nan.

Noticing his uncle’s gaze, Bai Xiao spoke softly: “You cannot forget, he was the one who pushed Lian Bo Jun back.”

With their Bai Family’s intelligence, they had long found out about the background of the pirates. Lian Bo Jun was a big name in the Pirates’ circle, and such a character was someone that even the Bai Family was not willing to provoke.

“That is true.” Bai Yue nodded his head, Bai Xiao had sound reasoning.

Bai Xiao laughed bitterly: “My faith in Meng Nan not only stems from that. Out of everyone I met, brother Meng’s diligence is something that no one can compare to. Think about it, on the second day after defeating Lian Bo Jun, do you know where I found him?”

“Where?” Bai Yue asked.

“In the training area.” Bai Xiao looked at Tang Tian and muttered: “One can only imagine how difficult that battle was. Even the warship weapons were not able to bear the energy charge burden and were destroyed, and all of us were celebrating, but Brother Meng and his guards were actually training in the training area perspiring as though they were under the rain. In truth, at that time i had no other thoughts, only shame and respect.”

Bai Yue was moved, he was fluent in military campaigns and war, and after a bitter battle, what people needed the most was to relax their minds. To actually persevere and continue training, that willpower and tenacity is rarely seen.

“Do you know, he said two sentences to me that left a deep impression.” Bai Xiao muttered: “The first sentence was, perspiration never lies. The second sentence was, he still has many things to do. No matter how strong Gong Chen is, i do not believe that Brother Meng will lose.”

Bai Yue who was initially in shock suddenly laugh: “For you to say that, I am truly excited for this battle now.”

In the air, Tang Tian’s eyes were fixated on Gong Chen. He did not have many thoughts, he was lazy to think about why the other party was hostile towards him.

His intuition was extremely sharp. Gong Chen's gaze was sinister and cold, killing intent emitting from his entire body, making him look like a venomous snake in the shadows. Tang Tian was not afraid at all, he was extremely eager to fight.

After bitterly training for and crossing hands with Qiao Yi An, it made him extremely eager to fight. And now, the aura that Gong Chen was giving off was not inferior to Qiao Yi An.

Tang Tian had already forgotten about the cake, fighting intent soaring from his body, he was fully focused on the fight.

Gong Chen was extremely calm, opposite him, Meng Nan was like a wild beast brimming with an oppressive aura. He squinted his eyes, his hand reaching for the sword hilt at his waist. For the battle, he had secretly made arrangements and even secretly sought Qiao Yi An for a discussion. He was completely prepared for Meng Nan's attacks.

You will die here today!

A cold glint flashed past Gong Chen's eyes, he slowly unsheathed his sword. Zzzi zzzzi zzzzi, the sword blade rubbing against the sheath produced a friction that made a sound like countless worms crawling.

Eh, Tang Tian shivered, his mind sensed a danger, the zzzi zzzi sound was strange. Without hesitation, adaptive eclipse appeared beneath his feet. He disappeared in the air like lightning.

Gong Chen lowered his body, his eyes staring ahead of him.

So fast!

He had heard from Qiao Yi An that Meng Nan's method of changing location was extremely unique. He was fast like lightning, so he was prepared for it, but he never expected that Meng Nan's speed was actually so fast.

Qiu Yi An was present as well, watching from below. He was shocked, That man's speed is faster than the last time! Was he holding back the last time? He felt that he was not, but if it was not, then to have such substantial improvements in just a few days of time, this made him feel even more worried.

Tang Tian was like a bolt of lightning, colliding in the air non stop, ricocheting. The astonishing speed became an immense pressure on Gong Chen.

Gong Chen controlled the shock in his mind, his state of mind became calm as water, and he continued to slowly unsheath his sword.

Tang Tian who was shooting around Gong Chen was also cautious. Gong Chen did not reveal any weakness, and regardless of what angle he came from, it was within radius of Gong Chen's unsheathing of his sword.

It was the first time Tang Tian had witnessed such a situation,

and his expression turned gloomy.

The worms wriggling sound continued to increase, and the sense of danger in Tang Tian's heart continued to increase.

Tang Tian knew, he had to attack!

He took a deep breath, ~since you don't have any weakness, then I will force you to reveal one!

His ten fingers started to claw, forming sparks that blossomed from nowhere. They continued to grow at an astonishing rate. The display of sparks and lanterns was a spectacular sight.

The flying shattered auras floated in the sky, like fireflies occupying the vast midsummer fields, it was like a dream. The fireflies surrounded Tang Tian without any killing intent, with an unspeakable calmness and stillness.

Many people had heard about Meng Nan's martial techniques which was exquisite and magnificent, but to personally witness it, all of them had their mouths wide opened as they stared at the sky.

Gong Chen's sword was completely unsheath. Tang Tian then saw that on his sword, there were countless of tiny transparent bugs gathering.

Gong Chen's sword trembled, the sword blade transformed into a rain of bugs, bringing forth a bone chilling zzzzi zzzzi sound that

pounced towards Tang Tian.

Tang Tian's gaze turned stern. He gently waved his hand, and the fireflies dancing in the sky flew towards the rain of bugs.

Chapter 619 – Enlightenment On The Demon King Blazing Firefly

One after another, the balls of light rose out of the stronghold at an astonishing rate, forming a glorious arc, the whistling sound shooting towards the incoming troops like shooting stars.

Bu Zi Fei's army were all elites and did not panic at all, they were like a nimble hive of bees, they flew around the fortification of strongholds, and continued to attack the defensive barrier of the stronghold.

The balls of light had difficulty hitting the agile enemies, but the attacks from them, to the gigantic fortification of strongholds, were like tickles, they did not even produce any ripples on the energy barrier.

“Our offense is not strong enough, the enemy's defense has no weak spots, the person who built this fortification of stronghold must be an expert, when we break through, we must study it well.”

The adjutant frowned, the scene before him proved to be an even thornier problem.

This was their fifth wave of probing attacks, the first four probes were not successful at all, so they increased their power.

With a total of 300 men, they were still unable to shake the strongholds.

“Hmmmm, we need to try out different ways, and see which martial techniques will be most effective.” Bu Zi Fei said with a calm face, he did not find it strange, to be able to defeat Sun Jie, how could the opponents be weak?

But the strange cluster of strongholds had surprised him. He had seen many strongholds before, but for this stronghold that was seemingly untouchable, was a first for him.

He asked: “How much longer before the sieging boats arrive?”

“Two days.” The adjutant immediately replied.

The most suitable weapons to siege strongholds were warships, as the might of the weapons on board were tremendous, but as the Estuary into Shang Continent was too small, their warship was unable to enter. He did not anticipate such a thing before, Sun Jie fell in a battle, but he never expected himself to be sieging a fortification of strongholds. He had no choice but to request for sieging boats from the back end.

Sieging boats were frigates meant for sieging, they came in many sizes, bearing weapons that required either an individual or a team to control, it possessed outstanding agility and average defense, and were the bane of strongholds.

Bu Zi Fei calmed down, but just at that moment, a loud whistling sound came from the air. He immediately raised his head, and his face instantly changed.

From the fortification of strongholds came a large quantity of light balls, numbering three times as many as before.

Boom!

The low sounding explosion was like a giant hammer that struck their hearts.

The light balls that were flying in the sky exploded at the same time, all of the light balls exploded into condensed and fine light needles. The sky was filled with light needles, and in that instant, it enveloped the entire fortification of stronghold.

The change was too sudden. The teams flying around in the vicinity were not able to defend and were engulfed by the light needles in the sky.

The barriers around the teams all undulated, but could only be sustained for a second before they disintegrated.

Chi chi chi!

The sharp light needles pierced into the soldiers' bodies, and in the sky, blood flowers blossomed one after another.

A few luckier members were coincidentally further away from the strongholds and escaped the danger, but the scene before their

eyes shocked them.

Bu Zi Fei's eyes were immediately blood red, he bellowed: "Retreat!"

But it was already too late, like a torrential tornado, it came and disappeared quickly. A few seconds later, the sky full of light auras dissipated, and at the same time, so did Bu Zi Fei's soldiers.

The 7th Army were in dead silence, all of them were stunned.

Bu Zi Fei's face was pale white, he bit on his lips, to the point that he bled, but he could not feel a thing.

We were duped!

The enemies are as crafty as foxes, facing our continuous probing, they waited until we became overconfident, and at that time, they took action. It was too big a hit, Bu Zi Fei was hurting inside, it was a total of 200 deaths, and to date the largest setback the 7th Army had suffered.

The remaining survivors all returned back to formation without their spirit. Their morale had fallen.

Inside the Sword Forest Stronghold, everyone were rejoicing.

The attack had greatly devastated their enemy, and morale was boosted. The Precious Bright Village Regiment were the lowest level of soldiers, and at the start, they were trembling with fear. After the course of a few days, they have finally fitted themselves into the tempo of the battle.

The three people watching the battle also heaved a sigh of relief.

“Treacherous people.” Ling Xu said, he had decided to maintain a distance from Pokerface, who knew when he would sell out his own beliefs by being influenced by Bing.

Crane praised: “Truly a rewarding wait!”

Jing Hao was also full of praise: “The bearing of a famous general is truly outstanding, his control aura is magnificent, and at a great height.”

Looking at the soldiers rejoicing, Bing did not pour ice water over their heads. The short victory was a great help to the amateurs. But he knew that the war had just begun. The next battle was deemed to be even more cruel, and there would be no more chances like this.

These pathetic amateurs’ synchronization.....

If not, we would be able to swallow the remaining 100 people, what a pity.....

It was luck that the opponent's general was a cautious person, and thus Bing rejoiced. At the start, the Precious Bright Village Regiment's display of strength was truly pathetic, their synchronization was only at 30%, half of their original training. Luckily for them, after the continuous hands on practise, they started to become more accustomed to battle, and their synchronization started to rise steadily.

A synchronization rate of 60% was the bare minimum for the technique.

Our luck is good Bing puffed out a smoke ring and looked at the enemies outside the city walls. They should stop for two days.

“Let's take a half day break.”

The order made the celebration even more rowdy.

Behind the smoke, Bing sneered in his mind, amateurs, the main course is coming soon.

He then thought about another group of amateurs, the mechanical army. What about them? Upon thinking of them being under Tang Chou's charge, he became even more delighted.

He then thought about Ah Xin, I wonder where Ah Xin is now, that asshole is the same as last time, undependable. He then thought about Screw, and decided that after the battle, he would return to Three Spirits City and check up on the research, the

recovery of Screw depended on them.

“It truly is tiring, and no way to be worry free.” Bing mumbled, drawing an arc with his cigarette, he quietly left.

In the sky above the lake, the condense explosion sounds and continuous flickering of light dots continued to display a show, they were the fireflies and worms colliding, and every time they collided, it would induce sparks of shattered auras. Against the night back drop and beautiful lake, the thousands of shattered sparks fell like rain, forming a beautiful scene that stunned all the audience.

Two figures continued to flicker about in the rain of light, with astonishing speed they kept on clashing and fighting, it was so intense that people forgot to breath.

Gong Chen stared intently at Meng Nan, his handsome face revealing an indescribable sinister killing intent.

A feeling of being caught in a perilous situation arose from his mind.

This man's strength is far stronger than the reports!

Although Meng Nan had took down Qiu Yi An's sword, he was still in a bad situation. Gong Chen and Qiu YI An had secretly

discussed about Meng Nan's strength, and the conclusion was that he was half step into the Silver Saint realm. Qiu Yi An's conclusion gained the recognition from the rest, the fighting techniques of a Silver Saint might be spectacular, but he did not have any enlightenment on Energy Transmutation, so he was naturally considered as half step into the Silver Saints.

Gong Chen was full of confidence, a half step Silver Saint and a Silver Saint were just two words difference, but the disparity of strength was like heaven and earth.

Very quickly, Qiu Yi An's judgement was confirmed.

That's right, this man is truly a half step Silver Saint. The fireflies in the sky are actually combusting energy regiments, and these energy combustions are already close to Energy Transmutation, but they are still lacking.

He truly is a half step Silver Saint.

Gong Chen had to admit that Meng Nan's fighting ability was truly outstanding, to be able to produce such exquisite martial techniques at half step Silver Saint, it was unprecedented. But, it was impossible to overcome the disparity in strength with just that. It was a dream of fools.

But, as the battle continued, Gong Chen's logic and reasoning were completely toppled.

Other than the fireflies, his enemy was actually not using energy!

The compressed vacuum movements required astonishing and terrifying physical power, could he be from the Savage Continent?

Gong Chen stared at Tang Tian's fists, the grey flames revolving around. The strange flame was something that was unheard of in the Savage Continent.

As long as any energy touches the flames, they would be disintegrated!

Damn it!

Wait a minute. Gong Chen suddenly shook, his eyes landed on the surroundings of Tang Tian, and his face changed.

He had suddenly realized that as time gradually passed, the fireflies in the sky were actually increasing in numbers, and they were expanding!

Impossible!

The blood in Gong Chen's face was immediately swept clean.

Tang Tian looked coldly at Gong Chen, the quiet null flames had already spread past his wrists and extended about three inches onto his forearm. Due to his bitter training everyday, he had

completely absorbed and assimilated the black gold into his blood meridians, and thus the null flames had become stronger.

The opponent was bewildered, as time slowly crept past, it was leaning towards Tang Tian's favor.

The Demon King Blazing Firefly that had not completely gone through Energy Transmutation was definitely not able to beat the worms of the opponent. Although there were a lesser number of worms, but the worms still held an advantage.

But, How much time did Tang Tian spend on the Demon King Blazing Firefly?

In the initial stages of Fire Scythe Ghost Claw, he had combusted the energy in the air, which then led to him finding out that combusting the energy in his body would form the Demon King Blazing Firefly. And after obtaining the Zero Energy Body, the Demon King Blazing Firefly had once again returned to combusting the energy in the air.

And today, Tang Tian had brought the combustion to a brand new level.

The energy in the air was like never ending fuel, the fireflies continued to combust on them.

The Demon King Blazing Firefly that could expand and spread

That was the true enlightenment!

The volume of the Demon King Blazing Firefly that was continuously expanding silently could cover the entire lake. What scared the people even more was that the fireflies were still growing and expanding quickly, like a wild beast growing frantically.

The reflection of the fireflies on the lake made them look like stars, and as the number of fireflies grew, the temperature of the air rose, the heatwave caused the lake to produce a mist of steam.

The grass, trees and flowers in the garden quickly dried up and withered.

Everyone could no longer clearly see Tang Tian and Gong Chen, the fireflies in the sky were no more beautiful to them, but caused them to feel fear and choke.

It was like a regiment of fire clouds slowly wiggling.

The light aura of the fireflies were no longer weak, but able to light up the entire dark sky, causing the faces of the audiences to turn pale white.

Not a sound was heard.

Chapter 620 – The Arrival Of The Army

Inside the dense sea of fireflies, Tang Tian's mind was in a state of tranquility.

After today, this technique will thus be called the [Firefly Expanse].

Suddenly, Tang Tian thought about a stooped and small figure, and thought about the frail withered claws, about the proud and unyielding look, and thought about silent arrogance that would never admit defeat.

Hey, Ghost Claw, I told you so.

I will bring the Fire Scythe Ghost Claw to fame. The Fire Scythe Ghost Claw's light aura, will definitely burn the eyes of the world!

Hey, Ghost Claw, I told you so.

Don't you look down on me, I am so strong now, to the point that I am in a complete mess, you handing over your Fire Scythe Ghost Claw to me was definitely not the wrong idea!

Hey, Ghost Claw, can you see this?

Ghost Claw, are you doing well in Heaven?

As though the fireflies could hear the voice in Tang Tian's heart, they started to tremble slightly and release buzzing sounds.

The millions of converging vibratos suddenly erupted. The invisible sound wave swept across the entire White Sands City at an unspeakable speed.

The sound wave swept through everything, shattering all the glasses of the homes, and all the wooden houses floating in the sky all started to sway.

All the citizens of White Sands City were jolted and rushed out of their homes, flying up into the sky. When they saw the terrifying fire clouds gathering and expanding, the blood in their faces disappeared.

“Oh my god, what is that?”

“Demons! Oh my god, Demons are here!”

“Damn it! Does he want to destroy the city?”

.....

Everyone's faces were filled with fear, even when watching from afar, they could feel the beast inside the fire clouds, growing with energy.

Gong Chen who was inside the fire clouds trembled, he could no longer see Meng Nan's figure, he moved forward, backwards, left and right, but all he could see were the densely packed fireflies.

What exactly is this martial technique?

His white worms were crawling frantically around him, trying to sweep away the fireflies. But the fireflies were still growing, and the white worms were continuously being suppressed. He felt himself going crazy, he was like a beast trapped in a cage, and the cage was becoming smaller and smaller.

The fear in his heart continued to grow, buzzz, the fireflies around him trembled, and Gong Chen who was right at the center immediately turned sluggish. At that moment, the surface of his body formed countless of cut wounds, and blood started to flow out. The white worms that were frantically struggling around him were shattered like glass.

The excruciating pain on his body jolted him awake.

Although his body was weak and not comparable to the Savage Continent, but he was still a Silver Saint, and compared to the ordinary saints in Sacred Saint Galaxy, his willpower was much higher. In the critical situation, all of his potential was released, and the will to live overcame his fear.

Bellowing out loud, Gong Chen used Energy Transmutation for all the remaining energy in his body, his face distorting with anger.

Bang!

The white blaze of energy soared out from all of his wounds, and the air around him started to distort due to the energy, becoming extremely unstable.

The sword hilt in his hand started to grow, and then shattered, becoming a long white worm.

The originally grain sized white worms were currently the size of beans, their bodies like jade, translucent and sparkling white. They formed a white mist and flew around Gong Chen. All the fireflies that passed through it were transformed into shattered auras.

The white worms on Gong Chen's body grew more and more, and the white worms started to expand out in a radius of 15m. The surging white blaze energy flames started to dim, but his mouth twitched, and he revealed a fanatical laughter.

“Go and die!”

Gong Chen raised the sword up high in the air.

Sssiii, the worms suddenly transformed into countless threads and surged towards the sword.

A gigantic light sword over the size of 30m formed above Gong

Chen's head.

The light sword slashed downwards.

A dazzling light aura fell into the fire clouds.

The fire clouds that were formed by the fireflies had no resistance against the sword. Gong Chen also knew that if he wanted to survive, it would depend on this technique, he suppressed the pain coming from the wounds on his body and rushed towards the direction of the sword aura.

The sword aura broke up. Gong Chen felt relieved, for in that instant, he had 1km worth of space to move.

This made him calm again.

The fireflies continued to smash against the sword aura, sparks flew everywhere and exploding sounds continued to arise, the entire place was booming with explosions. Gong Chen did not dare to be distracted, and hid himself inside the sword aura as he continued to burst forward.

2km, 3km.....

The sword aura that was surging forward started to become slow. Gong Chen began to feel uneasy, What is going on? Why am I not out yet?

He felt that he had flew for a distance of 5km, but he was still surrounded by the vast fireflies, How is that possible?

This brat is not even in the silver realm, how can he form such a scale of attack?

How is this possible!

Could it be an illusion?

Pa pa pa!

The sword aura's speed turned sluggish, while the fireflies became more and more, they were like rain drops hitting onto the sword aura, the sparks produced by the collision surrounded the sword aura, causing it to flicker unsteadily.

The sword aura became slower and slower, and finally, it stopped. The unending fireflies had already surrounded it, and then exploded!

The ripple caused by the explosion immediately sent Gong Chen flying.

Gong Chen looked at the endless fireflies blankly, his mind going blank.

He had already moved for over 7km, but he was still unable to escape the fireflies, How vast have the fireflies covered.....

He did not know that at the moment, the Fireflies Expanse had already swelled up to the size of the Continent Lord's garden. The spectators could only look at the dancing fireflies above their heads blankly, the black fire clouds hanging above their heads had a pressure like Mt. Tai, choking them, causing them to be silent.

All the powerful saints had stood up, and formed a barrier beneath the fireflies, forming a protection against the heat.

Inside the fire clouds, explosions continued to occur, light kept on flickering. Everyone had guessed that it was Gong Chen struggling.

But at that moment, no one thought that Gong Chen could win.

“Mister Meng, please be lenient with your hands!” The Continent Lord shouted out with a pale face.

The fire clouds finally became silent.

Everyone's hearts were heavy, they all looked at each other, with fear and unease in their eyes.

The fire clouds dissipated, like ice thawing at an astonishing speed.

In just a minute, the fire clouds disappeared without a trace, and two figures appeared in the sky. Gong Chen was covered with blood, but Meng Nan who was near him did not sustain any injuries.

Gong Chen fell head first.

An Xuan's face changed, she soared upwards and caught Gong Chen. She looked and checked him, to find that he was not breathing and was dead. An Xuan's face turned green, she looked at Tang Tian and clenched her teeth and spoke out: "Good! Good! Your sire is actually so cruel and ruthless!"

Tang Tian could not be bothered by her, he was still immersed in the enlightenment.

He did not wish to waste time with the people. He turned and flew towards White Sands Hotel. Everyone looked at each other, no one dared to stop him.

The Continent Lord knew that Gong Chen was dead, his face was as black as a wok, and he turned and left the scene. Everyone at the banquet no longer had any mood, and left.

The Bai Uncle and nephew looked at each other, both revealing bitter smiles.

"We are still underestimating him." Bai Yue laughed bitterly, the

battle had completely shook him, there were still traces of disbelief: “What exactly is that martial technique? I have never heard of it, It is too terrifying! Such a martial technique is completely perfect to fight against an army. I am truly curious, what family could produce such a freak.”

Bai Xiao laughed with him: “I have never heard of such a terrifying martial technique before. It seems that I have still not grasped his background.”

“And, he was truly ferocious!” Bai Yue continued: “To dare act so rampantly in other people’s territory! I still thought that he was just going to teach Gong Chen a lesson, I never expected him to instantly kill Gong Chen. Is he not afraid of offending the White Sands?”

“Who knows?” Bai Xiao did not care: “The White Sands tried to find trouble with him, who can prevent him from counterattacking?”

“That is true.” Bai Yue shrugged his shoulder: “In any case, we don’t have to worry about it. Eh, seems like he has a bright future ahead of him, that’s good, Little Xie will have a good life ahead of him by following Meng Nan.”

Bai Xiao was startled, but immediately regained himself: “Second Uncle, the army you bought for him, could it be Xie Yu An’s army?”

“That’s him.” Bai Yue nodded his head: “Little Xie has talent, but

a pity he hasn't met a good boss. In the past, I owed him a favor, and we can consider it paid from this."

Bai Yue's last sentence revealed a crafty personality of his.

"Dual Wing Swallow, Xie Yu An." Bai Xiao could not hold back and praised: "Brother Meng has earned big this time! He could be one of the top 100 generals in the entire South Region."

"Top 100?" Bai Yue shook his head: "His talent does not stop there. But, his life has not been good, born from a poor and small family, although he has outstanding talent, he could only reach where he is now. But it is a good chance, he is not willing to decline just like that."

Bai Xiao understood what his uncle meant. Xie Yu An's Swift Army was at the peak of the bronze army, and advancing higher was extremely difficult. A silver army is not something any small continent could groom. Even the big continents with wealth might not be able to keep them, silver armies were considered the most important armies, and at times the most important was not talent, but loyalty.

Bai Xiao suddenly became curious: "What army did Xu Jin buy?"

Bai Yue snorted: "Who cares what army he buys, I don't believe he can buy an army stronger than the Dual Wing Swallow, Xie Yu An's army."

Bai Xiao thought so too. Because of his Uncle's relation, Bai Xiao had deep knowledge and understanding of the Swift Army, and it was definitely an army that was being underestimated.

At that same time, on top of Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce's transport ship, a group of people that resembled refugees were squeezing in the available space, being extremely rowdy.

Everyone was in disorder, and no one looked the same. There were people sleeping, gambling, seated down in a daze, drawing, or sharpening their blades.....

“Kill that pig who is snoring! He's so noisy!”

“Cough cough, who's smoking? You want to smoke this old one to death?”

“Who the fuck took off their shoes?”

“Stop blocking the light, light is the source of art. Understand?”

.....

“Leader, our boss, how is he like?” The one who spoke was a big sturdy man with a bald and shiny head, his face was fierce looking and he had a healthy and robust body, like a small mountain.

“That’s right, can he pay us?” A midget with triangular eyes was using a dagger to trim his nails asked, and snorted.

“If he don’t, we can just kill him.” A lazy voice came out, and the people around nodded their heads.

A red haired girl had her face covered with cucumber slices.

“Little Three, bring a few more cucumber slices.”

“Leader, your face is completely covered already, you still want to paste more?” The triangular midget asked.

The red haired girl said weakly: “I’m slightly hungry.”

Chapter 621 – Historical Remains

Tang Tian's battle shook the entire White Sands City.

Everyone on the streets were talking about the battle, their faces either filled with fear or reveration. Although many did not know the true meaning behind the battle, but just by relying on the fire clouds, it was enough for their imaginations to run wild.

Gong Chen was dead, but compared to the shocking battle, no one seemed to care about him. Everyone were discussing Meng Nan's mysterious background and the fire clouds that stretched across the entire sky, if it had truly landed on them, what would had happened? The fire clouds that could grow by itself, what exactly was that mysterious martial technique?

In the area around the Ling Family's courtyard, all the scouts and informants, in one night, had disappeared. It was not only that, even the citizens staying near the area were so scared they moved away.

With the Ling Family courtyard as a center, within a radius of 3km, there was nobody.

In the market, all the condemnations on Tang Tian had disappeared. No one dared to provoke such a devil, that's right, in the eyes of the officials in White Sands, Meng Nan was being labelled as the devil that was savage and tyrannical, with just a small quarrel, he would kill the other party. In front of Continent Lord, he had ignored Continent Lord's plea, and brutally killed

Gong Chen, to the point that even the Continent Lord dared not say anything, if he was not a devil, what was he?

The fearsome devil was someone whom even Lady Rou or Master He Ying would dare say anything, for a time, everyone in White Sands City were afraid for themselves.

Even the people who claimed they would teach Meng Nan a lesson, they were immediately held back by their close friends and families and chided and intervened. The devil was someone not to be provoked, if not he could devastate White Sands with his fire clouds.

The security bureau Tian Qi Guang was scared out of his wits, he made small movements in the shadows, and stopped everything. The security of White Sands City was once again working in order.

Who knew that the Eldest Young Noble and the others who initially wanted to make an alliance with Tang Tian actually dare not act blindly without thinking. They did not know if joining with Tang Tian was a good or bad thing.

But, all this did not matter to Tang Tian.

He stayed in the Ling Family courtyard for the whole day, immersed in his new enlightenment.

[Fireflies Expanse]'s might far exceeded his expectations, even Tang Tian was very surprised, causing him to have a realization.

Another thing that he was enlightened with was Gong Chen's final counterattack by combusting energy.

Energy Transmutation!

Tang Tian's fireflies already had a hint of Energy Transmutation, but it was still far from the true Transmutation. Gong Chen's final combustion gave him the considerations for it. If he was able to grasp it clearly and completely be enlightened on Energy Transmutation, his strength would undoubtedly reach a new high.

The anticipation for the complete Energy Transmuted [Fireflies Expanse], made Tang Tian excited.

At that time, the godlike young lad will definitely be extremely powerful!

If the crucial point for the change of the Fireflies Expanse was Energy Transmutation, then the Null Flame was a natural gift for close quarter combat martial artists. Although the Zero Energy Body was a type of powerful flesh body, but compared to the other blood meridians of Heaven's Road, the ability it displayed could not be considered outstanding. That led to Tang Tian's initial inability to display the strongest power in terms of close quarters combat. But currently, the Null Flame formed by the awakening of the Zero Energy Body actually increased his close quarters combat powers.

The Null Flame was the best weapon for a close quarters combat martial artist.

It was just that the current Null Flame had only extended around Tang Tian's hands, it was extremely far from enveloping his entire body. Tang Tian's road as a closed quarters combat expert was extremely slow and arduous.

Young lad Tang did not think so much, even with the Null Flames only at his fists, the Fireflies Expanse that had not completely gone through Energy Transmutation had already caused his strength to take a huge leap. More importantly, his path as a martial artist had become extremely clear.

Almost everything had a direction for expansion, and thus the only thing that he worried about was Qian Hui.

The two of them had initially set a date of every month to talk, but every time Tang Tian activated the bronze star door, there were no reply, thus making him worried.

“What sort of broken place is this?” Ah Xin mumbled to himself.

It was a barren empty land, where not an inch of grass was present no matter how far he looked. They had been walking for a few months, but the night sky had never changed, fortunately for the bright stars in the sky, the faint light allowed the barren land to not be in complete darkness.

They had entered the barren land from a star door, and after a few days they noticed that something was amiss, and when they retraced their steps, the star door had disappeared.

Xiao Ran held onto her big blade and carefully protected Qian Hui by her side, her face filled with caution, she snorted: “Stay alert, this place is reeking of evil.”

After advancing for another 100km, Qian Hui said: “Let’s take a break.”

“Yes!” Xiao Ran and Ah Xin complied, and set up camp, sending out a dozen sentries who disappeared across the horizon. Their task was to check and investigate the surroundings to see if there were anything suspicious.

Qian Hui tried to activate the bronze star door, but there were no reaction. She felt disappointed, but did not reveal it on her face.

“It’s still not working?” Xiao Ran asked in concern.

“Yea.” Qian Hui steadied her voice: “Don’t worry, this planet is not big, we will be able to find it soon enough.”

Xiao Ran nodded her head, not long after they entered the planet, they realized something strange. The planet had a strange and mysterious energy which cut off the connection of the bronze star doors, so Qian Hui and Tang Tian lost their means of communication.

Fortunately, the planet was not considered big, so they were looking for the star door to get out, and the source of the mysterious energy. But at the moment, they did not realize that the planet was an extremely ordinary planet, cold and barren, deserted and void of any signs of life.

Ah Xin stayed by Xiao Ran's side, and sneakily took a look at Xiao Ran's large and voluptuous breasts, and his face turned slightly red.

Xiao Ran stretched her back, this movement causing Ah Xin's eyes to widen. Ah Xin unconsciously stretched his hand out, his ten fingers subconsciously bending.

Bang!

Xiao Ran used her large broad blade like a flyswatter and fiercely smashed Ah Xin's face. Ah Xin flew out like a ball.

“Scoundrel!”

Xiao Ran snorted, she stabbed her large broad blade into the ground and showed a look of disdain.

Suddenly, rapid hooves sounds came out, causing Xiao Ran to raise her head to look at the sprinting sentry.

“Reporting to Master, We found a castle ahead!”

Qian Hui stood up: “Prepare the army.”

Xiao Ran roused herself up and immediately lifted up her large broad blade, stepping onto the horse back. After searching for so many days, they did not find anything, she was someone who quickly became anxious, and would become extremely tensed. She was not afraid of having enemies or battles, but was more afraid of finding nothing.

Ah Xin struggled out from the ground and coughed: “Why does this T-rex have such a good body!”

Xiao Ran snorted, she arrogantly walked past Ah Xin, her mind feeling extremely pleased, So my body is actually very nice.

The army moved out.

After advancing about 10km, Qian Hui finally saw the castle which the sentry was talking about.

A lonely castle stood atop the high mountain peak, it was a pitch black castle on the top of the desolate and quiet mountain peak. If there were no light, even a person with good eye power would have difficulty finding the castle.

Everyone immediately focused.

It was the first sign of life they have detected after so many days.

The entire army immediately raised its speed and headed towards the castle. Upon nearing the castle, they realised that the state of it was queer.

“It doesn’t seem like a castle.” Ah Xin frowned, his expression turning serious.

It truly did not look like a castle, there were no tall spires, no offensive structures, only layers of tall and erect buildings. But they could tell that it was a historical remains, and no one had been inside for a long time, the windows and walls were all dilapidated.

Xiao Ran looked at him, when the scoundrel was serious, he had a bit of bearing. She asked: “Then what does it look like?”

“Like a high-rise building.” The one who spoke was Qian Hui, her delicate face looked upwards, gazing at the structure: “That is a high-rise building.”

With that guess, even Xiao Ran felt like it was a high-rise building, but she did not understand: “Who built a high-rise building here?”

“We will know when we go up.” Qian Hui retracted her gaze and said indifferently.

Very quickly, they reached the top of the mountain. It truly was a majestic and modern high-rise building, 13 floors high without many decorations, such a structure could be seen in any academy.

Everyone became cautious, no one knew what dangers lied inside the building. Ah Xin and Xiao Ran stayed to the left and right of Qian Hui, protecting her.

Walking to the front of the building, a grey and dusty big door greeted them.

Xiao Ran did not say anything, she carried her blade and walked to the door. Suddenly, she noticed that there were writings on the door. She extended her hand and wiped the dust off the door, and the shiny metal luster beneath was revealed, along with a line of words.

“Paying respects to Hai Na Fan Sen Te.”

Xiao Ran muttered, and turned to ask: “Young miss, who is [Hai Na Fan Sen Te](#)?”

(the last name would be Hai Na, and the name would be Fan Sen Te. China has all sorts of names.)

“Hai Na Fan Sen Te?” Qian Hui thought about it, then shook her head: “Never heard of him.”

Xiao Ran turned to look at Ah Xin, who waved his hand: “Seems

like some important figure.”

Ah Xin’s languid expression made Xiao Ran snort, she casually stabbed her blade into the mud beside her. The metal door did not have any mechanism to open the door, so she placed both her hands on the door, bent her waist and bellowed, using her strength to push.

Ka ka ka!

The awful friction sound came out, dust fell from the big door, revealing the glossy metal surface, even after the flow of time, the door did not have any trace of wear and tear.

Ah Xin rubbed his chin: “As expected of the T-rex! This door looks like it was made from some good materials, who knows if it is a good thing or not, oh, when we go, we must definitely take it along, it shouldn’t be wasted....”

The metal door was pushed open by Xiao Ran, and the smell of dust engulfed them, it was obvious that no one had stayed in there for a long time.

A few spirit generals raised up their light crystal rods and entered the building. The light crystal rods released light auras that immediately lit up the interior of the building.

There were no living things.

Everyone was somewhat disappointed, but heaved sighs of relief.

Inside the building was a thick layer of dust, it was obvious that the building had gone through the wearing of time, and no living things had come across the building.

Xiao Ran did not dare to be careless, she instructed a few spirit generals to investigate the place. After a while, they confirmed that the location was safe.

Qian Hui took a deep breath, she had a strong feeling that this historical remains definitely hid a special secret.

Chapter 622 – Hello, I Am Xie Yu An!

“Yu An!” Bai Yue saw Xie Yu An, and a warm look surfaced from deep within his eyes, his face revealing a smile: “Everything is set?”

The two of them were fellow schoolmates, and even had respect towards each other, but their destiny were completely different. Bai Yue was already the number 1 famous general, and Xie Yu An was stuck in a desolate corner with a small army, responsible for keeping the place safe.

Bai Yue had respect for this fellow schoolmate, in the academy, Xie Yu An’s results were more outstanding than his, and 90% of his school work was copied from Xie Yu An. If Bai Yue’s last year was too terrible, he would have had his legs broken by his father, so he made an effort for the entire year and persevered to graduate.

If Bai Xiao knew that his second uncle was not that great in the past, he would definitely be shocked.

It was not that Bai Yue did not think about helping Xie Yu An, but the Bai Family had too many people, and even for him, it was impossible to obtain a core commander position for the army. Bai Yue knew that although Xie Yu An was a warm and kind person, he was proud inside, and he would never dared to ask Xie Yu An to be his adjutant.

In truth, every time Bai Yue saw Xie Yu An, he would have some regret in his mind, Could I have coped too much when I was in

school?

He clumsily poured a cup of tea for Xie Yu An: “Come come come, come and try this, it is the new tea for this year.”

“Everything is ready.” Xie Yu An sat beside Bai Yue and took the tea, gulping it down with one mouth, he placed the cup down and looked at Bai Yue, his gaze burning: “Alright, tell me about it.”

Xie Yu An had an outstanding and handsome appearance, dressed simply yet with a graceful bearing, one look and anyone could tell that he was a warm person.

Bai Yue was somewhat astounded, he coughed lightly: “I did not cheat you, the other party is truly a rich man.”

“I believe you.” Xie Yu An replied without hesitating: “To directly buy an army, he definitely has money.”

“That’s right.” Bai Yue became focused: “He is also my partner....”

“You? It’s still the Bai Family?” Xie Yu An asked.

“Meng Family.” Bai Yue explained: “His family deals in the mining business, and found a brand new metal element called the Black Gold, which is extremely suitable to make warship weapons. It is stronger than Jade, and only somewhat inferior to Energium Jade, the crucial point is that its output is astonishing. So he is a

big fish, and definitely not lacking in money. What they are more worried about is whether or not they can protect the wealth, so he had the thought of buying an army.”

Xie Yu An was pleased, he knew the value of Black Gold, and from that he could tell that the other party was truly extremely rich and powerful.

Bai Yue continued: “I am not worried about you or your Swift Army. I have talked and interacted with Xiao Meng before too, and he is not a petty person, but instead, extremely generous. He has a group of Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts that are not big in number. Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is also a partner, and their equipment are not lacking. Money and equipment are no problems. What I am worried about is Xiao Meng’s family, from what I saw, Xiao Meng is not from some huge family, so you will have a lot of pressure.”

“I understand what you mean.” Xie Yu An relaxed, and stretched his back: “You have all been busy, to the point that you want to have a break. I have taken too long a break, and feel extremely lethargic, I so badly want to be busy right now.”

He understood the hidden meaning behind Bai Yue’s words, although his boss had money, but he had no backing. The value of Black Gold was known to every high ranking officer and officials. And many people would be vying for the wealth, and would have thoughts about stealing it or making a move on it, so the Swift Army would be in a dangerous situation.

But his words were also not a joke. To any officer, no war and no

enemies, drinking tea in the corner was even more cruel to them.

“Then I can rest easy!” Bai Yue laughed, and patted Xie Yu An’s shoulder: “When the time comes, they will know how powerful you are!”

Xie Yu An’s military achievements were rather outstanding, if not, he would not be famous in the South Region. But Xie Yu An’s military achievements were all in an awkward location, just like where he was. His Continent Lord was good to him, but a pity the Continent Lord had limited power as well, and thus those who recruited him were those who had money but not willing to treat them as a proper army, or it would be those who would promise them but could not fulfil it.

The old Continent Lord had a lot of trust in him, as long as the financial resources permitted it, whatever suggestions that Xie Yu An gave would usually be implemented. His old Continent Lord’s kindness was the reason why he stayed.

After so many years, he never moved. If not for the recent passing of the old Continent Lord and a new one succeeding him, he would not had left.

The new Continent Lord initially hoped to promote his own trusted aide, just that Xie Yu An’s name was too prestigious, so if he made too huge a movement, it would easily cause unrest. So when Xie Yu An asked to tender, it made the new Continent Lord relax, he did not stop Xie Yu An, and even gave him a farewell bonus.

He was definitely not sad about the army.

The Swift Army was personally built up by Xie Yu An, and were his sworn brothers, so managing them would prove a difficulty, so having them leave with Xie Yu An was the best choice.

Understanding that the challenges in the future they were undertaking would be rigorous, Xie Yu An thought that they had limited time, so he was not willing to waste it, he stood up: “Bring me to see my new boss.”

“Alright, I will arrange for it now.” Bai Yue also stood up: “We do not need to see him, he will directly head to the barracks.”

“Good!” Xie Yu An knew that the man wanted to see the Swift Army, it was a natural request, and he was full of confidence for his unit.

They were rather relaxed on a daily basis, but when it comes to training, he had never once slackened, and conducted training with the standards of the silver grade armies. Although there were many standards, but due to the lack of resources, medicine and goods, they were unable to train in those aspects. But many of them far exceeded the standards of a bronze grade army.

“Let’s go and see my army.” Xie Yu An laughed and said.

Bai Yue gladly took the lead, he was also extremely curious

about the army that his schoolmate had brought.

Although it was a temporary barracks, but Xie Yu An's strict personality still displayed itself. There were sentries located everywhere, laws and rules were set in the barracks. Inside, although the soldiers did not have armors or equipment, but they were all still extremely fierce.

The training grounds that had been cleaned up, were filled with hubbub, all sorts of training and drills were executed like wildfire, even at such a time, the training of the army were never relaxed.

“Brother Yu An is a genius!” Bai Yue could not help but praise: “An iron army, Xiao Meng has truly profited! As long as you are all equipped and have been replenished with medicine and supplies, you will become a silver grade army in no time.”

Seeing the figures that were perspiring as though they were drenched in rain, Xie Yu An was also brimming with pride, this was the army that he had slowly built up from scratch, and had taken him a lot of blood, sweat, and tears. He had racked his brains so much trying to think of ideas to even earn a bit of resources for the army, to have arrived to their present state.

From the corner of his eyes, Bai Yue noticed Tang Tian's arrival, and he smiled: “Your new boss is here.”

Xie Yu An's mind was stirred, he immediately followed the gaze of Bai Yue. He was curious as of how his new boss would be like. When he saw Tang Tian's figure clearly, he was greatly

disappointed.

He had never thought that his boss would actually be a kid!

Calling him a kid would be too exaggerated, but Tang Tian's age was still too young.

Bai Yue immediately caught onto Xie Yu An's disappointment, he immediately rejoiced, it was because everyone had looked down on Meng Nan because of his age that everyone had regretted. Bai Yue never expected his old friend to also make the same mistake. He had completely forgotten his own expression when he first saw Tang Tian, it was nowhere different from Xie Yu An.

"Xiao Meng!" Bai Yue waved: "Come come come, let me introduce you, this is Xie Yu An, the commander and military general of the Swift Army, how is it? You're here to inspect them right? Your Uncle Bai can vouch for them, the Swift Army is definitely an elite army, even Uncle Bai is convinced by them."

Xie Yu An was extremely polite, with no disdain or scorn: "Hello, I am Xie Yu An."

"Hello, I am Meng Nan!" Tang Tian returned the greeting.

Xie Yu An nodded his head, although Tang Tian was young, but he seemed to be a man of manners.

Tang Tian turned to Bai Yue: "Uncle Bai, I do not know much

about armies.”

Xie Yu An never expected Tang Tian to honestly declare that he had no knowledge, Oh, that’s not too bad, at least you are not someone who acts like he knows everything. Those sorts of people will destroy the army, but it seems like, my taskings will be even heavier.....

They never expected Tang Tian to continue speaking: “So I specially brought someone who does.”

He turned his body, and revealed the cold looking Tang Chou standing behind him.

When Bai Yue and Xie Yu An saw Tang Chou, they were both startled, Spirit Dyad! Furthermore, it was not an ordinary Spirit Dyad. the two of them looked at each other, both seeing the shock in their eyes. What caused them to be stirred was not because of the appearance of the Spirit Dyad, but the familiar aura that the Spirit Dyad was emitting.

Immediately, the both of them judged that the Spirit Dyad was an expert general as well!

The two of them were feeling extremely shocked, Spirit Dyads are rarely seen occurrences in Sacred Saint Galaxy, and a general spirit dyad was much less heard of.

Bai Yue looked at Tang Tian blankly, This brat is a freak, could it

be that the people around him are freaks as well?

Tang Chou completely ignored the shock in their eyes, he spoke in a cold, unkind and arrogant manner: “I am Tang Chou, I am Master’s current temporary 3rd Commander-in-chief, Let me be the one to conduct the test for your army.”

As a famous general that would soon surpass Master Bing, Tang Chou had formulated a crazy Ursa Major Constellation Army reorganization plan.

All the armies in Ursa Major Constellation were under his command, and were tormented to the point that they wished they were dead, under his crazy reorganization plan, in which he had passionately placed all his efforts into. He was suddenly pulled over by Tang Tian to evaluate the standard of an army that was completely unheard of, and what’s more, bought!

Could it be that Master had become so bored?

Tang Chou was enraged in his heart, but he had no way of disobeying Tang Tian’s orders, so since he was here, his mood was extremely terrible.

As the Third Commander-in-Chief, even if Tang Chou firmly believed his future would not be under Master Bing, he would never dare to quarrel with the boss, because, even Master Bing would not dare to!

Xie Yu An and Bai Yue looked at each other.

Chapter 623 – Perverse Tang Chou

Tang Chou remained expressionless, his eyes revealed no emotion.

In an unknown ground, Xie Yu An was nervous, as though he was back at the academy, about to undertake a big exam, Behind him, the Swift Army was extremely quiet.

Tang Chou did not care about Xie Yu An's thoughts, he so badly wanted to sweep the army for hire out of the door, Humph, Master's Future is definitely the Ursa Major Army led by the Famous General Master Tang Chou!

Regardless of how unwilling or angry he was, To Tang Chou, Tang Tian's orders was the highest command, and he could never disobey it.

My mood is my mood, my work is my work.

Tang Chou was serious in all of his work, so he was amply prepared.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy Armies methods and uniqueness was earlier reported and consolidated by Bing, the goal was to provide the armies of Ursa Major Constellation as a source of reference. Tang Chou who admired and idolized Master Bing would never let go of the report. He had repeatedly flipped through the report to the point of memorizing it word by word, and even made countless of analysis and calculations, which was his expertise.

His understanding towards the Sacred Saint Galaxy armies had reached a profound level.

To an experienced and well versed leader, given enough time, he would naturally form his own understanding towards a completely brand new method of fighting, and that was the strength of a famous general.

Tang Chou opened up a small book hung by his waist expressionlessly.

“The first test will be on synchronization.”

Xie Yu An heaved a sigh of relief, as a person who came out from a real academy, he naturally knew that the synchronization was the life of an army, and in all of his daily training, he viewed synchronization as the most important training.

But Tang Chou’s following words caused his face to change.

“This test will be conducted in the harshest conditions, the environment for the test is an energy fluctuation of the seventh grade.”

Tang Chou announced the test environment with his expressionless face, but the Swift Army flew into a hoorah.

Xie Yu An's adjutant could not resist but to ridicule: "Are you deliberately making this difficult? Energy fluctuation of the seventh grade, do you understand how hard that is?"

Xie Yu An's complexion was equally ugly, an energy fluctuation of the seventh grade occurs after large scale explosions, the energy fluctuation would be extremely chaotic and violent, and in that situation, to want to complete energy synchronization frequency was extremely difficult.

Bai Yue opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but then he heard Tang Chou's ice cold emotionless voice: "According to the report I have, If I did not understand it wrongly, we purchased an elite army, am I right?"

Bai Yue kept quiet.

Tang Chou's words were not wrong on paper, Bai Yue himself had patted his chest and confidently told Meng Nan, that he would get a powerful army for him. After spending more money on equipment for them, they would have the standard of a silver grade army, and even added that they were chosen under the harshest criterias. He had said everything he had to say.

Just that.....

Bai Yue could not help but look at Tang Tian, Xiao Meng's background, is truly not as simple as I thought! Anyone could tell when an expert undertakes a task; Tang Chou's display of minimal standard was definitely not any ordinary leader's standard.

Xie Yu An stopped his adjutant, and said calmly: “Fine!”

People who truly wanted to purchase armies would be so severe and fussy, Xie Yu An initially held worries about the pledge that his buyer had said. But after seeing their genuine want for a real army, he was completely convinced of their good faith. And Tang Chou was right, if they were not elites, how could they have the qualifications to enjoy the promised treatment?

The Sacred Saint Galaxy Army’s methods had been long established, and they had passed all sorts of various tests in the past, so Tang Chou had long prepared the equipment to produce an environment with a grade seven energy fluctuation.

Four energy pillars were imbedded 30m into the ground, and the army was placed in the middle of the four pillars, in which shot out four light pillars that connected to form a barrier of light. The sealed square barrier of light trapped the army within.

Inside the barrier of light, the energy started to fluctuate, even the air became visibly unstable, fluctuating at a very high rate, as though a storm was occurring inside.

“Begin!”

Tang Chou announced the start of the test emotionlessly.

Xie Yu An began to engage to synchronise the energy frequency

of the army, the Swift Army soldiers were unable to synchronize themselves inside the torrential environment, they felt as if they were being pushed and pulled, many of them were also obviously unstable.

Tang Chou started taking down on his notes with no expressions.

Bai Yue's complexion became ugly, Xie Yu An's performance was terrible, their synchronization had only reached 30%, but when he thought about it, if it was he himself inside, to suddenly face such a test, his result would be nowhere better.

He could only say that Tang Chou was truly too perverted!

Enduring 30% of synchronization was truly a tragic sight, it meant that in terms of battle ability, Swift Army's highest display of might would be 30%. You have to know, this is just a theoretical highest value, in a real battle, the true display of battle ability would always be lower than the theoretical value.

Just at that moment, suddenly, a group of people barged in, and Bai Yue saw Xu Jin with one look.

Behind Xu Jin was a group of ugly people. Bai Yue immediately knew that that was the army that Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce had bought. But it was an extremely disorganized group, causing Bai Yue to look down on them. Xu Jin is usually a dependable person, how could he bring a group of misfits?

Bai Yue's gaze landed on the leader, a red haired young lady. She had fire red hair, a slender body, holding a Claymore, she looked suave and valiant. Suddenly, a name entered Bai Yue's mind, his eyes revealed a light aura, and the look on his face changed.

Could it be.....

Xu Jin eagerly greeted Tang Tian, while the red haired lady and her group watched the test, and the looks on their faces became slightly unhappy.

Triangle eyes swallowed saliva, and said: "Leader, the tests seems quite perverted!"

The others nodded their heads.

The red haired lady snorted: "No backbone!"

But she herself was having an ominous premonition.

Tang Chou did not even bother the people who arrived, he was completely focused on the Swift Army. The terrible result did not surprise him, but he did not stop them. He had prepared the harsh test, but it was not to see the Swift Army's strength, he had another use for it, and that was to see their toughness and their ability to reassess and harmonize themselves.

To any elite, the latter was the most important.

Seeing Xie Yu An and the rest persevering bitterly, Tang Chou did not feel any pity, instead, he closed the small book in his hand and walked forward, and said coldly: “30% energy synchronization frequency, such a terrible result, and you call yourselves elites? Do not shame the name of elites. This is just the first test, the following eight tests are harsher and stricter than its predecessor. If you think you can’t do it, then give up, it’s nothing shameful, knowing your own strength is vital in wars, to be able to preserve your own lives.”

The sturdy men beside the red haired lady all turned pale. What the hell is going on, t-t-this perverse test, is the first test? And there are eight more even more perverted tests? What the hell is going on, how can this pervert be so perverted?

Tang Chou’s shame caused Xie Yu An’s eyes to become red, he had a gentle temper but was a proud person inside, and filled with confidence with his own army.

Is it not enough for you to sit at the side and be cold? Now you need to come here and rub salt to us, are you not done? To give up in silence, to fail in silence, no one knows what we went through, no one cared, all of us lived days as our last, and you think this can make us quit?

Xie Yu An’s mind and heart started to ignite like a blaze.

“Do not resist the energy fluctuation!”

“Relax your bodies, trust your buddies!”

“Focus on the rhythm to synchronize, the rhythm!”

“Do it like how we do it normally, one two three, just like that!”

“Well done!”

.....

Bai Yue looked at the stranger's figure in the barrier of light. Xie Yu An's roars, the neat hair that became messy, mud covered all over his body, giving it his all and waving his arms, the energy fluctuation causing his body to sway around in the chaos.

Bang, the airflows caused Xie Yu An to fiercely smash into the mud.

Xie Yu An did not even groan, he struggled to stand up and continued waving his arms, roaring in anger, continuing to lead his soldiers.

Bai Yue was greatly alarmed, he had never seen Xie Yu An like that, in his heart, Xie Yu An was always graceful, always warm and gentle.

Bai Yue looked towards Tang Chou, who was still expressionless, without any trace of emotion.

“40%, a terrible value! After thirty minutes, after spending thirty minutes, you can only raise by 10%? Do you know what can happen in that time in a war? Enough for you to die 300 times! And after dying 300 times, you only raised your synchronization frequency by 10%, that is such a bad sacrifice. 55% is the bare minimum, something that you are all far from. And, pay attention, the bare minimum of elites is 70%. Are you beginning to feel desperation?”

His extremely cold and emotionless voice formed an impulse in Bai Yue's mind, he wanted to punch that man in the face!

Damn pervert!

Xie Yu An ignored his words, and continued to roar and lead his soldiers.

Xie Yu An's constant training started to display its effects, their synchronization frequency started to rise. The soldiers started to get used to the intense energy fluctuation environment, Xie Yu An gradually found the key, but because he was constantly shouting, his throat was already coarse.

Who in Swift Army had ever seen their Master giving his all? All of their eyes turned red, and they ignored everything else.

The intense energy fluctuation, the chaotic airflow, caused the ground inside of the barrier of light to become extremely mushy and soft, and the barrier of light was covered with dirt and mud, tumblings, crashings, groanings.....

The scene was intense, and everyone watching were completely stupefied.

Xu Jin's face turned pale white, upon thinking that his own army would be going through the same test, his skin turned numb.

After two hours, their synchronization frequency reached 56%.

Tang Chou's eyes flashed with a number, and he wrote it down in his book.

Pa, he closed his book.

“The test is over, I am sorry, in the future, please do not shame the word elite.” Tang Chou's voice contained a tone of coldness: “The lucky thing is, you guys have passed, as you have reached the qualifications for the next test.

The barrier of light dimmed, the intense energy fluctuation disappeared, and the mud and dirt all dropped to the ground.

Inside the mud rain, everyone of the Swift Army were tattered and torn as they laid on the ground, none of them could stand. They were gasping for breath, all of them were extremely dirty, perspiration mixed with mud, but no one cared. They had struggled in the torrential storm of energy fluctuation for two hours, and their stamina was wiped clean, not one bit was left remaining.

Even Xie Yu An was lying in the mud, perspiration trickling down his body into the mud.

On the contrary, beside the red haired lady, there were countless of pale white faces.

Chapter 624 – Pink Skull

“Trash!”

“Rubbish!”

“Unorganized soldiers!”

“Trash mob!”

In the past few days, to the Swift Army, it was nightmare after nightmare. There were tests in the day and night, and all sorts of weird content, causing the Swift Army to be completely battered and exhausted. Curses of rage were constantly spilled, all sorts of mock and ridicule tortured their mental state, but no one in the Swift Army backed down.

In their hearts, a flame was burning.

Xie Yu An had personally built up his army, and he had deeply influenced all of them. From any angle, the Swift Army's qualities were no different from Xie Yu An. They were compliant, disciplined and strict, they were honest and no nonsense people. But Xie Yu An's arrogance had also become a part of the army.

They could not accept it, none of them could, since when did they lose to anyone in terms of training?

For days and nights, they continued to be tested.

They held back their emotions with their black faces, completely ignoring all the spectators. Their thoughts were simple, if they could not pass the test, it was fine, but they could not reveal their cowardice, they could not retreat, and could not let that pervert have his way.

They hated Tang Chou to the core.

Other than Xie Yu An.

Looking at Tang Chou, Xie Yu An had had a heartfelt reveration towards him. This revere did not stem from Tang Chou having the power to decide his life, but was from the strength displayed by him.

Each phase of tests were constructed through meticulous planning, revealing all of the Swift Army's shortcomings and weaknesses through the strict test, causing Xie Yu An to be completely convinced.

Nine tests, not only did the Swift Army fail to achieve the standard for elites in any of them, they even only managed to pass four, the worst results the Swift Army had ever received. If they were not chosen, Xie Yu An did not harbor any grievances, he himself was an outstanding individual, and in the past few days, he had gradually realized that the perverse tests all had more profound intentions than meets the eye.

If there is any army that can complete all these tests.....

How terrifying would that army be!

Xie Yu An had already decided, even if they were not hired this time, he would use the tests as their norm for training. He was slightly out of his senses, but he was pulled back by Tang Chou's voice, who was at the moment reporting back to Tang Tian.

"The results from the tests are terrible." Tang Chou said coldly: "This army is definitely not worthy to be called an elite army, I believe there is a large discrepancy to what is written on the report on them."

Although he had already anticipated such an outcome, Xie Yu An still had a bitter feeling in his heart. Standing by the side, Bai Yue had his mouth opened, he wanted to speak up, that the perverse tests were not something that even his army could complete. But when the words were at his mouth, he could not say anything.

Bai Yue's eyes were red, Tang Chou's performance had shook him, Tang Chou was definitely a famed general grade. Initially, he thought that although Meng Nan was rich, but he was just an ordinary nouveau riche, and his family should not have much background. To be able to recruit Xie Yu An and his army would be considered benefiting him.

But now, he realized that Meng Nan's family was so powerful, far more than what he had anticipated.

Such a strong famed general, and he is actually only the third in command, that meant that there are two more famed general grades in front of him.....

Bai Yue's skin went numb, This Family of his, how strong are they, truly?

What could he say? He could not say anything. To a wanderer that was close to starvation and death, a hot steamed bun would be the most delicious food under the heavens, but to those rich and powerful people who ate exotic delicacies daily, what was a steamed bun?

“But, they have the space to grow, with more grinding, they can be exploited and be of some use.”

Tang Chou's words caused Xie Yu An's dim eyes to suddenly light up, but he laughed bitterly, Since when did my army fall to the 'exploited and be of some use' place? But he did not refute those words, he did not reject them, but actually felt a dim joy in his heart.....

Tang Chou remained expressionless, but Xie Yu An's emotions were completely captured by him. Out of the tests, many of them were purposely placed, since they were armies for hire, he had decided to get rid of the arrogance in their hearts for his Master. He chose to do it in the most honest way, he wanted them to be dumbfounded and completely convinced.

It seems that what I did was effective.

In truth, Tang Chou had a good assessment of Xie Yu An in his heart, to him, Xie Yu An had a good character, he had high perception, was tough and a careful man. His only flaw was that his foresight was limited, but thinking about his lengthened stay in a desolate area, he did not have direct contact and experience with high intensity wars.

But they have the qualifications to escort Master's convoy.

"You guys are hired." Tang Tian said straightforwardly, he had complete trust in Tang Chou, he himself was rather satisfied by the Swift Army's performance and tenacity in the past few days, and laughed: "It had been hard on all of you for the past few days. For your equipments, you guys can make a list, I will get the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce to prep you guys."

Xie Yu An heaved a sigh of relief: "Yes!"

"Then let us test the other army." Tang Tian said indifferently.

Standing by the side, Xu Jin's face turned pale, he laughed awkwardly: "About that, Xiao Meng ah, this army is different from Swift Army. But Old Xu I promise that they are elites and are definitely not an average army, they are the Pink Skull Army."

"They sound like pirates." Tang Chou said coldly.

"They are an army for hire." Xu Jin immediately corrected, if he

made Tang Tian think that he found pirates for him, then with his explosive temper, Xu Jin would not have it well either. Xu Jin was still relying on Tang Tian to earn big bucks, how could he dare to offend him? Of course, he also did not dare to offend Tang Chou, he had personally witnessed how crazy the pervert could become, so he knew that Tang Chou was not one to be provoked as well.

“They are a real army for hire who comes from the Bullou Continent. The armies for hire in the Bullou Continent are rather famous, and the Pink Skull is an army for hire with a history, created 200 years ago. They have expanded and developed till today, and this is the third generation. Aya is the current in charge of the Pink Skulls, and in the past few years, regardless of their public reputation, they have completed countless of missions and tasks, and is rather outstanding.”

Xu Jin wanted to prove his words so badly: “I will definitely not dare to cause trouble for Master, if Master doesn’t believe me, you can ask Master Xie and Brother Bai.”

Seeing that Tang Tian was looking at him, Xie Yu An spoke cautiously: “If you are talking about the Pink Skull, they truly have quite a reputation.”

“I have heard of the name Pink Skull too.” Bai Yue scratched his chin, but his tone changed: “But it was just a passing of the ear, we still have to witness their strength to truly know them.”

If looks could kill, Xu Jin would have pierced Bai Yue’s body a thousand times.

Bai Yue remained calm, What a joke, Xie Yu An was already tortured to the point of death, if the Pink Skull doesn't get a bit of dirt on them, that will not be fair.

Tang Tian agreed: "Tang Chou, test them."

Woosh, the faces of the soldiers in Pink Skull Army all changed.

Xu Jin's face was bitter: "They are an army for hire, their expertise are different from Swift Army."

Bai Yue did not miss this chance to push Xu Jin to the light, and started praising Xu Jin: "Old Xu, what you said is right, armies for hire are indeed completely different from regular armies. They are more proficient in small scale infiltration, protecting important people, and eliminating key installations."

He sneered in his heart, You think that just by giving that reason, the pervert will not test them? Old Xu, you are too naive!

You will quickly know what a true pervert he is!

"Army for hire?" Tang Chou remained expressionless, but deep in his eyes, a light started to glow. People who were familiar with him would know that Master Tang Chou had definitely found something he was interested in.

That's right, Tang Chou had found something he was interested in. Army for hire were something he had never interacted with before, he was a product of the Southern Cross Army, and he followed the Southern Cross Army system very tightly.

Armies for hire were extremely foreign to Tang Chou.

"Since they are an army for hire, then I will not test them on this."

Tang Chou's words caused the entire Pink Skull to rejoice. YES! We don't have to try out that painful tests!

Even Aya who portrayed herself as the most calm, her fingers were holding onto her sword hilt extremely tightly, finally relaxed her fingers.

"Please show me your drills that you are most proficient in." Tang Chou said.

Everyone in Pink Skull could not help but smile, What the hell, this pervert is actually saying some good words! Maybe that man with last name Xie had offended him somehow, that's why the pervert man actually used such perverse methods to torture them.

Aya started to smile, drills was what they could do the best. As an army for hire, employers would usually request to watch their drills. To display the power of an army, they would always portray drills that they were extremely familiar with to move the

employers.

“Alright!”

Aya spoke out loud and clear, and then led the troops into the field.

The large scale drill performance quickly started, the dazzling small scale coordinations displayed their extreme professionalism in ambushes, the seemingly relaxed formations reeking of killing intent and multiple killing opportunities, the seemingly disorganized soldiers seemed to have transformed into different people, portraying their skills and finesse.

The entire drills were filled with countless of vigor and beautiful displays of movements.

Seeing Tang Chou nodding once in awhile, seemingly showing a satisfied expression, Aya was ecstatic. The contents of their drills were arranged through meticulous planning and thought process, and people who watched would definitely be stunned.

Who knew that there would be a day that it would be useful.

To attain the best results, Aya and the rest put in their all, many killing techniques that they would not normally display were all shown to them.

Even Bai Yue and Xie Yu An were nodding their heads as they

watched, they were people with the apt knowledge to obtain approval from. To be able to passed down for 200 years, the Pink Skull was definitely able to portray a few moves. In terms of a head on clash battle, the Pink Skull was definitely not able to compare to Swift Army, but in terms of street fights, pursuit and chase, traps and disruptions, Pink Skull could definitely use all these to win over Swift Army.

But, the two of them came from academies that taught traditional warfare, watching the army for hire, they naturally objected to their methods.

But Tang Chou was not biased, he watched with enjoyment, head on clashing in the battlefield could truly be devastating, but if he was able to use and have these meticulous small scale attacks, their power would definitely increase.

Oh, this can be a new way of research, it can greatly improve the current system that we have.

And, there can even be experiments....

The look that Tang Chou was looking at Pink Skull, was like a hungry wolf staring at a hot steamed bun, his eyes revealing a strange moss green light.

Chapter 625 – Bing's Backup Plan

To be subjected as experiments by Tang Chou was definitely not a happy thing.

“Slow, you guys are too slow! Did you guys even eat? Is this the best that you're giving? You're so slow, are all of you old men?”

“Hold back a bit! Hold back a bit! Why are you leaping to your death? Time yourself, you need to time yourself, you, red haired woman, as the leader, you can't even grasp the timing, are you an idiot?”

.....

Aya held onto her sword hilt tightly, she so badly wanted to slice the lunatic to pieces. By her side, the other people were also angered, but dared not speak a word, all of them were being tortured to their maximum threshold, but still no one dared to retaliate.

Because Xie Yu An had brought his Swift Army, glaring like tigers watching their prey by the side, a few of the Pink Skull people who disobeyed and tried to rebel were pulled out and beaten up, and were left hanging on poles.

The people from the Pink Skull were all old soldiers, and were experts at taking advantage of situations. Being surrounded by a true blue army that were fully equipped, how could they dare to do anything reckless? The first set of equipment had been sent over

by Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, and thus the Swift Army had changed their weaponry, and morale was sky high.

The Swift Army watched as the Pink Skull army for hire were tortured to death by Master Tang Chou, and were secretly pleased. Thinking about when they were the ones in that place and the Pink Skulls watched them, the switch of position made them extremely happy and overflowing with spirits.

Master Tang Chou had given them a mission, and that was to suppress, in which they wanted more of the Pink Skull people to be rebel. But the Pink Skull were wilful, after seeing what had happened to those who rebelled, they toughened up and clenched their teeth and struggled on.

The Pink Skull naturally saw the situation, since they had to suffer, they would rather suffer under Master Tang Chou, as they could still benefit from it. If they landed in the Swift Army hands, the beating would be for nothing.

Aya who had a violent temper also did not dare to do anything towards Master Tang Chou.

This lunatic's requests are too perverse!

She had never thought that Pink Skull's most familiar drills matching, under the lunatic hands, would actually become a brand new thing. Just that, his requests were too overboard, causing people to go numb.

Asshole! Does he think that we are robots?!

The difference between each person in the drills had to be a split second difference, even the steps, distance, the speed of advancement, there were ridiculous and harsh rules, the slightest mistake would inevitably lead to the lunatic screaming.

Aya had never thought that there would be a day that their most familiarised fighting method would change beyond recognition.

What made her want to vomit blood was that he was using them to experiment.

“Oh, I had a miscalculation on this part, and thus it did not reach the best potential.”

“This part is my mistake, do it again, this time we will....”

“On this part, I have added something in, we need to test it again, every small group, do it 20 times....”

“Once again!”

.....

But, if it had to be said, the phrase that was the most capricious to Aya, would definitely be

“I can make mistakes, but you cannot goof off.”

When Tang Chou said those words confidently, everyone was shocked. It was not only the Pink Skulls, even Xie Yu And and the Swift Army were completely stupefied by Tang Chou's shamelessness.

We are watching here.....

The Swift Army who were initially celebrating in their misfortune started to lose their excitement watching, and started to pity the Pink Skull, especially when they thought that they would have to mix with the lunatic's crazy subordinates in the future, thinking about their bleak future made them sad.

The world is that cruel and dark.

The army matters were handed over to Tang Chou. Tang Tian did not bother about them anymore, and he had no time to waste, he still had to train.

Shang Continent.

One after another of sieging frigates surrounded the Sword Forest Stronghold, continuously shooting out dazzling light pillars. The light pillars struck the defensive barrier of the Sword Forest Stronghold, causing ripples on the light barrier.

Sword Forest Stronghold continued to shoot out balls of light like rain.

Frequently, there would be sieging frigates that were destroyed, forming fire regiments to blossom in the sky, resembling beautiful flowers.

Bu Zi Fei's complexion was ugly, this type of battle was the most bitter, facing a defensive stronghold, other than going all out to attack, there were no other ways. Such head on clashes would lead to countless of lives taken, even if it was him, he had no other ways.

Every famed general, were not willing to do such a method of fighting unless they had no other way.

But, war was cruel, and at many times, you will have no other choice to take.

"In three more hours, the enemy's energy barrier should be destroyed." The adjutant gave a precise answer.

Bu Zi Fei admired his own adjutant, although he was very old fashioned, but his cautiousness, seemed to be innate. Bu Zi Fei never doubted his adjutant's numbers.

It was just that.....

He raised his head and looked at the chaos from the war, and sighed: “What’s the casualty count today?”

“Over 600 men, the 12th and 15th army.”

Bu Zi Fei had requested for reinforcements back at the Vast Star Continent, and knowing of the enemy’s stronghold, the Continent Lord personally sent the order, for sieging frigates to move out, and at the same time, the 12th and 15th Army. The Continent Lord also knew that sending out the elite 7th Army was squandering them away, and would result in a huge loss.

In a long drawn war that they required to fill numbers to siege a stronghold, cannon fodder armies were more suitable. Grooming over a thousand soldiers, to use at such a time, isn’t that why the Vast Star Continent groomed such Cannon Fodder armies?

With the two cannon fodder armies, it immediately allowed the 7th Army to bitterly withdraw from the siege. Under the death order of the Continent Lord, the 12th and 15th Army did not dare to disobey and had no choice but to send themselves up.

As for the casualties, as long as they won the war, their armies would not be annihilated, and the Continent Lord would not treat them unfairly, and would replenish their ranks. If they were to cower and not advance, what awaited them would be the fury of their Continent Lord, and at that time, even their families would not escape the calamity.

But the 12th and 15th army were much weaker than the 7th

Army, and thus their death toll became extremely high.

“To break through the enemy’s defensive barrier, how high would our death count reach?” Bu Zi Fei asked.

“At least 1200 men, and could reach 1500 men.” The adjutant replied.

“The two armies would be crippled.” Bu Zi Fei sighed.

“This is their mission.” The adjutant remained calm, the use of cannon fodder was as such. If not, why would the Continent Lord spend so much money every year to maintain the cannon fodder armies? The cannon fodder armies were used do the filthy and dirty work.

The one to truly obtain the victory would always be for elites like the 7th Army, the elites that were formed by spending countless of money, that was the true king of the warzone.

Bu Zi Fei did not have any questions, and asked: “How’s everyone resting?”

“We are all completely recovered!” The adjutant was roused: “We have already discussed our route of advancement, as long as the defensive perimeter is breached, we can take the chance to enter, and seize the stronghold back for the Lord.”

“Oh, how did you guys come up with your route of

advancement?” Bu Zi Fei laughed, regarding such details, he would always leave it to his officers, in one way it could absolve him from the trivial matters, another was that such a method was good to temper his middle ranking officers.

“We monitored and calculated the firepower of the strongholds, and finally made out their arrangement of weaponry, and realized that they have three places where their firepower is the weakest. And, we have also repeatedly uncovered that the might of the fortification of strongholds cannot reach 60%. And, there is a special discovery, that is their fighting ability is gradually rising. According to this, we have a few speculations, firstly, inside the fortification of strongholds, there is possibly a group of amateurs, in other words, part of them are new soldiers. Secondly, they have insufficient people, and with these statistics we calculated the places where they attack the most, and obtained our plan.”

The adjutant's face was filled with excitement, the 7th Army had suffered great losses, and thus they were all holding back their emotions. For the sake of finding their enemy's flaws, they used an extremely stupid plan, and arranged people in every area to calculate the statistics.

“Well done.” Bu Zi Fei patted his adjutant's shoulder, showing a gratified look. They have all grown.

He had already figured out their two speculations earlier. The enemy had many amateurs, when he was probing them in the second wave, he had already faintly sensed that, and in the third probing, he had already confirmed it. Regarding the issue of insufficient manpower, he had deduced it when he was studying

the fortifications of strongholds, it was obvious, the might that they were displaying, compared the the theoretical might the fortification of strongholds could produce was too distant.

He could roughly guess the situation inside the strongholds, there was an outstanding leader leading a group of amateurs.

Bang bang bang!

Another wave of attack, with various types of light auras bombarded the energy barrier, the dazzling light aura blossomed regiment of fires in the sky, lighting up the place.

The setting sun dyed the place blood red.

The battle had reached the most intense phase, the defensive barrier of the strongholds were thin like paper, the originally dense packed sieging frigates had numbered down to only a few.

Both sides had martial artists that were covered in blood, you slash me once, I pierce you once, there was no retreat, no withdrawal, only blood flying and flowing everywhere.

After 9 hours of continuous battling, both sides were spent.

Everyone in the 7th Army who were spectating were shocked by the brutality of the war.

“We only have 200 men left.” The adjutant’s throat was dry, the death count far exceeded his anticipation. Watching the lonely 4 siege frigates left floating in the sky, wavering as though they could fall at any moment.

A light bomb landed weakly on the barrier.

Bang!

The defensive barrier of the fortification of strongholds crumbled, and after the short silence, exclamation of joys sounded out.

“7th Army, move out!”

Bu Zi Fei ordered without hesitation, behind him, the entire army soared forward without holding anything back!

Inside the Sword Forest Stronghold, the Precious Bright Village Regiment had fallen all over, after the long drawn out battle, all of them had fainted.

“It’s your turn now!” Bing who was floating in the air puffed out a smoke ring, his face revealing a slight fatigue.

“We will win!” Jing Hao raised Drunk in Saint Blood and bowed respectfully at Bing. A bright colored flame suddenly shot out from a spire, and soared into Jing Hao, forming an arc of blaze in the sky, suddenly transforming into a scarlet armor, with his sword

matched with the blazing armor, he looked outstanding, Stoic, Heroic.

“Don’t worry.” Crane laughed, a black smoke flying out from another spire and revolved around Crane’s body, transforming into a graceful black feathered armor, the lingering black mist flew behind Crane, transforming into a black cape, fluttering with the wind. The black clothes matched with his sword making him look like a noble of the night.

“I’ll spear them to death!” Ling Xu snorted, and a silver light soared from the sky, striking his body, the silver liquid in his body started to transform, in a moment becoming a silver armor. The silver armor and silver spear, made him look extremely majestic.

Their voices resounding in the sky, the three of them flew forward.

Chapter 626 – Diary

Bing who was in the sky was smoking without a care in the world, the battle beneath him that blew up smoke and fire did not make him blink even an eye.

He had purposely revealed the three loopholes, which was space for the three of them to battle. The Sword Forest Stronghold had become a Treasure City, the armor had been through tempering through the energy for the entire time, and had been strengthened.

Around the Treasure City, all the energy was controlled by the Sword Forest Stronghold, and thus its defense had been greatly improved.

The reason why the 12 Ecliptic Palaces had rarely gone through any war was because of the formation of Treasure Cities.

This was the first time that the defense system of Heaven's Road was clashing head on with the Armies of Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Upon barging into the Sword Forest Stronghold, Bu Zi Fei sensed that something was strange, the energy flow inside was weird. It seems that this stronghold still has some weird things. He planned to study it properly after taking over the stronghold.

He was extremely curious about the fortification of strongholds.

Although there was something amiss, but Bu Zi Fei did not think that the enemy could make a comeback, their manpower was already swept clean. It was like a chef, he had used up all of his ingredients to create dishes, the famed general would be a more powerful chef, he can make plenty of delicious dishes, and he would have a touch with all sorts of ingredients, but if there were no ingredients, he could only stand there and do nothing.

After sacrificing the two cannon fodder armies, the opponent's energy had been exhausted, if they still had any preparations, they would definitely not watch the barrier be destroyed. The destruction of the barrier meant that the enemy's had reached the end of their line.

Bu Zi Fei admired the leader of the stronghold, he had such trashy cards to play, but to able to do what he did, could already be said to be perfectly done. If it was he himself, he would be in a much more terrible state.

They did not meet with any resistance. Bu Zi Fei did not tangle much with the stronghold, but ordered his troops to head directly to the main stronghold. The center of this fortifications must definitely be the main stronghold, as long as we conquer that, we will completely subdue this fortifications. And the enemy must definitely have their last bit of power concentrated at the main stronghold, and their last struggle.

Suddenly, a rumble came up in front of them, and the speed of their troops instantly slowed down.

Ahead, a tall and sturdy red figure stood right in the center of the

path.

The flaming armor, matched with the enchanting sword, resembled a lofty mountain.

For some reason, a string of words surfaced in Bu Zi Fei's mind: One man can hold out against ten thousand.

But he could not help but laugh involuntarily, he did not why he had such a bad thought. That man should be their last card to play. But in Bu Zi Fei's eyes, the scene before him was filled with the scent of a battle with a beast.

Bu Zi Fei had never looked down on the use of experts, if not, he would not had spent so much effort building up his vanguard battalion. All of the proud and untamable experts, were like thin yet sharp daggers, when used well, they proved to be extremely powerful, but in a head on clash, they were so weak that they could immediately shatter into pieces.

“Rush through him!”

Bu Zi Fei decided, where they were, time was the most important, and they could not give the opponent time to regain their power. The opponents had sent out experts, the goal was to delay their advancements, and give the soldiers inside the stronghold time to recover.

The opponent raised the big sword in his hand.

In the next moment, Bu Zi Fei's face changed, the surging energy gushed in like a huge tide, suddenly surging towards the heavy sword that was raised high up.

Drunk on Saint Blood trembled, the dim sword blade lighting up with a bewitching red light aura, the energy that was at the tip of the sword suddenly dyed red, and revolved around Jing Hao, transforming into a gigantic red whirlpool. The energy around Jing Hao was truly too terrifying, as the concentration of the energy was too high, it had transformed into a molten lava like state, the bizarre blood energy storm caused everyone's hair to stand.

“Be careful!”

Bu Zi Fei's who had a strange look on his face had just spoke, when Jing Hao's raised Drunk on Saint Blood suddenly slashed down!

The bewitching red energy was like a dam that burst and flood that gushed forward, the surging red tide engulfing the screams of the people, flowing along the road, completely crushing everything in its path!

At the first second, Bu Zi Fei had raised his energy barrier, but it was one step too late, the first few soldiers at the front were immediately swallowed by the red tide.

The remaining red tide clashed onto the army's energy barrier.

Clang!

Bu Zi Fei's face turned red, the surrounding soldiers around him all swayed, as though they were all drunk.

The energy barrier shattered, the red tide smashing their bones like a rolling boulder.

Bu Zi Fei was overwhelmed with shock, How is that possible.....how can one man be so powerful?

Countless of energy threads flew from the top of the spires, making it look like there were rivers floating in the sky, endlessly flowing.

Bu Zi Fei suddenly thought about the strange sense he felt, and his face turned pale white. Energy, this fortification of strongholds can control the energy!

Bang!

Two explosive sounds came out, in the other two directions, dazzling light auras flew out, and wails and screams pervaded the air, causing Bu Zi Fei's heart to fall even further.

He did not know who designed the fortification of strongholds, but it confirmed his guess, the fortification was bound to topple

the current stronghold systems.

To be able to control energy, the energy in its a region, this was the best trait that any defensive structure could have.

But, if this stronghold can control the energy in a region, then the stronghold should be impregnable, and definitely not something that two cannon fodder armies could break through.

A brazen guess flashed past his mind all of a sudden, and the bone chilling cold swept down his entire spine.

Unless.....unless the enemy's goal from the very start was not to stop them from advancing, but to destroy the 7th Army!

Impossible.....

How crazy is their general, to be able to think up of such a plan?

Above the main stronghold, Bing sat down cross legged, his mouth biting on the cigarette that flickered with the wind, a hand supporting his chin as he gaze out far and wide, as though he was in a daze. He never placed the battles below in his heart, the goal from the start was to devastate and destroy the 7th Army. You could say that the 8th army was the first fulcrum of the Vast Star Continent, and the 7th Army the second.

To lose two of their main pivotal armies, the Vast Star Continent would soon be in huge trouble, their strength to defend themselves

had greatly fallen, and thus their big wealth would naturally attract the eyes of others, the Vast Star Continent would soon plunge into an unspeakable state.

After using the Precious Bright Village Regiment to fake fight for so long, Sigh, my acting skills are still not too bad. The limit of the Precious Bright Village Regiment was completely broken by Bing. He could foresee that after going through this tempering, the Precious Bright Village Regiment's strength would soar greatly.

And for the three, it was equally a chance that was hard to come by. The energy that was currently converging around Sword Forest Stronghold was far more concentrated than what Tang Tian had, it was far more than any Treasure City of the Twelve Ecliptic Palaces.

They were controlling the torrential energy, and with the unprecedented power of the energy, this was definitely an important experience.

To be able to temper the troops, and obtain victory, I have perfectly achieved all my goals, I should be happy.

But for some reason, an unspeakable loneliness crept up his heart.

Am I lonely?

Bing laughed in ridicule at himself, It was just an easy win, and I

am actually feeling emotional about it, Oh my god, come to think of it, this solitary state of mind that seeks for defeat, this state of mind, is perfectly right for a famed general such as myself, if Captain saw this, he would definitely be surprised.

Bing tilted his head and thought, he felt that his thought was rather optimistic, More like he would slap me, and then teach me a lesson... “Brat, you’re proud with this mere achievement? You truly have put my reputation down!” All that nonsense.

A shallow smile remained plastered on Bing’s face.

If I could hear his lessons, that would be great....

Bing puffed out a smoke ring, still in a daze.

Qian Hui was quietly reading aloud. The building did not have anything but some scraps of diaries.

“.....Hai Na Fan Sen Te represented the archaic sects card system, and basked in the glory for 300 years before disappearing without a trace. The person who took over next was the one who created the current card system, Chen Mu. It stems from the even more ancient Luo Sen Bo Ge, and even obtained further nourishment and back up from the archaic sects. It was more effective, more powerful, and the application of cards after that pushed it to the apex. The current card system, is like a greedy

gigantic beast, tyrannically lording over it's position till this day. Generation after generation, no one can remember the ancient glory, Hai Na Fan Sen Te, and the ancient Heavenly Institutions. Chen Mu's influence was far greater than any grandmaster in history, his back is like a gigantic shadow, shadowing over every generation of new card masters. He is the glory, but spent his next 200 years in sorrow, there were no more new world shattering advancements or creations for the cards, and all the card manufacturing masters all had a suspicion, the card system, has it already reached its apex?"

".....Teacher and I quarreled today, I found a glimmer of hope in the archaic sects today. Teacher thinks that I have gone crazy, He is a believer of Chen Mu, so we quarreled rather badly, and thus, I was expelled from the card manufacturing facility...."

"I have decided to once again search for the true meaning of the Archaic sects, I firmly believe that I will find my answer there. I will follow Hai Na Fan Sen Te's footsteps, and search for everything that he left behind....:

"I need a variable, I just need one variable, and I can change everything....."

".....what the hell is this place? It is completely terrible...."

".....hahaha, my new student has helped me find the variable! It is too miraculous! Spirits, it's actually spirits, there are actually spirits here...."

“.....yes, it is a brand new type of card, completely different from the traditional cards, it does not need any medium, does not require energy cards, it does not need anything, it is a body by itself, unique and not the same to another, it is like a new life, something worth revering....”

“.....both of us quarreled intensely today, the same like how I did with my teacher in the past. Spirit cards, yes, they are great, but, it is not what I want. It is the power from life and faith, and not an art of the card, I am a card manufacturing master, I was one, I am one, I will die as one....”

“The Star Door is sealed, I know it must definitely be him. He wants to be the ruler of that world, like Chen Mu, but a pity, he does not understand how powerful Chen Mu is.”

“My body is getting weaker day by day, I am going to die. I dreamt of the card manufacturing facility, and dreamt about teacher, but a pity, I have already lost my way home.”

Qian Hui's heart was filled with shock, she never thought that the history of spirit cards would actually come from another mysterious place. She had just read about the life of an obstinate and stubborn old man.

On the last page of the diary, wrote a few crooked words.

“The Archaic shall never die!”

Chapter 627 – A Sudden Change

“Yesterday night, the Xu Family Business stumbled onto pirates, where they were left with half a day back to White Sands, and only six of them managed to get out alive. Master Suo Bi’s first army have already moved out through the night, but before leaving, Master Suo Bi hopes that you can protect Eldest Young Noble for this period of time.”

Ling Xia spoke respectfully, she was currently representing Master Suo Bi, and naturally would not act like how she would be normally. Eldest Young Noble who was standing by the side immediately bowed towards Tang Tian.

“Me?” Tang Tian was flabbergasted, and pointed at Eldest Young Noble: “Protect him?”

“Yes.” Ling Xia then proceeded to explain: “I have only received the 5th Army recently, And I need time to be able to completely have them completely under me. But Master, you have two armies, and Xie Yu An who is an outstanding leader, Master Suo Bi believes that you, Master, have the ability to protect Eldest Young Noble.”

Tang Tian was put in a spot where he did not know whether to laugh or cry, from the absurdity of the words: “I am very busy, where will I get the time to take care of him?”

“That’s not a problem, Mister Meng, wherever you go, I will follow you.” Eldest Young Noble immediately proposed.

Tang Tian stared at the two for half a day, and after thinking that the two of them were not toying with him, he slapped his thigh: “Alright!”

Eldest Young Noble and Ling Xia both became joyous.

But they never expected Tang Tian to change the topic: “Then let us talk about the reward.”

Seeing their shocked faces, Tang Tian’s expression became unkind: “Don’t tell me, you want me to help you for free?”

Eldest Young Noble reacted quickly and immediately replied: “Mister Meng, if you have any suggestions, do tell us.”

Tang Tian was instantly satisfied by Eldest Young Noble’s words, and coughed slightly: “Eldest Young Noble is also a person of importance, to protect you, the price will definitely not be low. We are among friends here, so we do not need to hide, the people who dares to take action against you, will most probably be He Ying and Lady Rou, because of you, I will have to be their enemies, so tell me, aren’t I taking a huge sacrifice?”

Ling Xia could not resist but said: “You were already enemies with them!”

Tang Tian scoffed: “Little Ling Xia, we are familiar with each other, but with Eldest Young Noble, it is a business, so business should strictly stick to business. You say that He Ying and the rest

do not like me, I admit it is so, but if I were to volunteer to leave White Sands Continent now, He Ying and the rest would definitely not find me for trouble, and maybe they might even give me something good.”

Ling Xia’s complexion became ugly.

But on the contrary, Eldest Young Noble revealed a look of appreciation: “I like Mister Meng Nan’s attitude! Friendship should stick with friendship, but business is business, that is right! But Mister Meng, you should know of my situation as well, my daily expenses are not cheap, and reach hundred of millions. Compared to Mister Meng, I am too poor. Other than the identity as the successor, I have nothing else that is worth anything.”

Eldest Young Noble’s honest and self ridicule bearing could truly cause people to be emotional.

Tang Tian agreed, the Eldest Young Noble only had the position as a successor, but for the past few years, he was completely suppressed by He Ying and Lady Rou, and thus he lived very tragically, with no money, no backers. If not for the Ling family and Suo Bi’s support, he would had died long ago.

Tang Tian was caught in a pinch, it was difficult to squeeze anything out of the poor man.

“Since your most valuable part is your identity as a successor, we can only go along with that point.” Tang Tian suddenly felt that White Sands was a good ally. It was not far from the Shang

Continent, and they had a thriving business. And furthermore, the White Sands Continent's location allowed it to have an advantage in defense, unlike the Vast Star Continent, which was open at all sides.

In White Sands, regardless of what was bought or sold, everything was convenient. To the Shang Continent, it would be a great help. The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce only sold weapons, and he needed to have other channels to purchase other things. The White Sands Continent held an influential and important position in the Southern Region, compared to the Vast Star Continent, the White Sands Continent's influence was stronger.

His opponent was the powerful Honorable Martial Continent, he needed a few helping hands.

Tang Tian had never truly placed He Ying and Lady Rou in his eyes, they were unimportant to him. His words earlier were just blindly spoken, how could a godlike young lad lower his head to He Ying?

That was worse than killing Tang Tian.

Tang Tian thought for a while, and then spoke righteously: "If Eldest Young Noble becomes the new Continent Lord, I hope that I can obtain White Sand's friendship."

The smile on Eldest Young Noble's face disappeared, he became serious: "But it has to be on the condition that it will not affect the White Sand's interests, regardless of whether I am the future

White Sands Continent Lord or a corpse, I will never harm the White Sand's interests."

Tang Tian stared at Eldest Young Noble, who did not cower back, but just stared back at Tang Tian.

A look of admiration flashed past Tang Tian's eyes, in truth, when he looked at Eldest Young Noble, he never had any thoughts about him. But at the moment, he could not help but reassess this seemingly non-existent Eldest Young Noble.

Eldest Young Noble's gaze was clear, appearing to be very refined, like a teacher, and not the successor of a Continent. Tang Tian scratched his chin, If this guy does not have a tummy full of evil tricks like Crane or Bing, he definitely will lose to He Ying and Lady Rou.

"Allies, allies in the Southern Region, that simple." Tang Tian thought for a while: "Maybe I will sell a few things to you, maybe I will buy a few things from you."

Eldest Young Noble heaved a sigh of relief, he was worried that Meng Nan would take the chance to set conditions that he could not accept. Master Suo Bi had talked to him prior already, and what surprised him was that Master Suo Bi had confidence in Meng Nan.

Allies and helping White Sands Continent's business channel, that condition was not high, but instead too low.

“That’s all?” Eldest Young Noble dare not believe his own ears.

Tang Tian glanced at him: “You have no power or authority, you can’t even fulfil these right now.”

Eldest Young Noble was immediately embarrassed.

Ling Xia had also heaved a sigh of relief, she could not see through Meng Nan anymore, everything he did was weird, and coming up with strange requests, she would always be surprised.

He is truly an oddball.

Suddenly, a voice came out from outside: “Who is it? Come out!”

Following that, the sound of intense battling came from the courtyard, causing everyone’s faces to change, they looked at each other, Tang Tian stood up and shouted: “Let’s go take a look!”

When Tang Tian arrived, the battle had already ended, with a few corpses on the floor with blood all over.

Tang Tian listened to the report from his subordinate, his face emotionless.

A group of people had suddenly appeared, and without any signs they started fighting with the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts. But luckily, the people staying nearby had already moved

away, and the Demonic Mounts were extremely cautious, so when the group of people had just arrived, they already sensed them.

“How’s your wounds? How strong are they?” Tang Tian asked.

“We have two injured. If it was one against one, it would be an equal fight.” The one who replied was Ah Leng, he was temporary in charge, and his complexion was not good: “I think they are hired, they are veterans.”

He was somewhat rejoicing in his heart, due to his cautiousness, the Ling Family courtyard’s defense was extremely tight, completely following the standard requirement of a battleground camp defense. His meticulous positioned sentries were fully utilized, if not, what they had to pay would not be limited to just two injuries.

Explosion sounds came out from nearby, and black smoke started to rise. The White Sands City was in chaos, causing Eldest Young Noble’s face to turn green: “What are they trying to do? What’s their end game?”

Tang Tian looked at Eldest Young Noble with pity, What are they trying to do, they’re trying to kill you, that’s all.

But at the moment, he did not provoke him, and immediately spoke out: “We will leave the city and head to the barracks!”

Anyone could tell that it had become dangerous, all of them had

serious looks on their faces, they had thought that the other party would make small movements, but no one would have expected that He Ying would actually be so audacious.

The Moon Manor was Qin Yu Ran's lodging, and had currently become the most famous place in the White Sands Continent, as countless of upper class young ladies would come over to take a look at Qin Yu Ran. All of the ladies with powerful backgrounds would even stay in the guest rooms.

Luckily, the Moon Manor was White Sands City's most expensive and biggest manor, with sufficient guest rooms. Everyday, there would be countless of activities and karaoke, it was a heaven for the ladies, a land forbidden for men.

People had even joked, whoever took over Moon Manor would be able to take down the entire White Sands Continent without drawing blood.

Qin Yu Ran who was currently leading the ladies to sing suddenly noticed the uproar outside. She ran out to the great hall and arrived at the courtyard, to see that countless of wooden houses that were in the air were in flames, forming black smoke.

The upper class ladies were all lost, Qin Yu Ran's heart jumped, she immediately retrieved her communication plate, but it could not work at all.

She could sense that it was a conspiracy.

She immediately called for her most trusted bodyguard and said quietly: “You need to go to the Ling Family courtyard right now, and seek help from Master Meng Nan.”

Seeing the bodyguard leave, Qin Yu Ran was surprised at herself, she had never thought that in the most dangerous of times, the first person she would think of would actually be Big Brother Meng.

“What’s going on?” Auntie Qiu asked.

The weaker ladies around were already crying, panicking without restraint.

Qin Yu Ran took a deep breath, and shouted: “Everyone into the great hall! Everyone go into the great hall!”

It was as though the ladies found their backbone, and like a group of frightened chickens, they ran into the great hall.

Qin Yu Ran called for the leader of the bodyguards, and said: “From now on, you will lead all the servants and bodyguards in this place. Regardless of their families, you will be in charge. You only have one task, to guard the outside, and make sure no one gets in! Kill anyone who tries to enter without permission.”

The leader’s face changed: “Yes!”

Qin Yu Ran’s tone was filled with killing intent: “Everything now

bodes ill, but, you have to tell everyone, whoever dies in their battle, their family will be taken care of by me!”

The leader of the bodyguard had followed Qin Yu Ran for years, and knew that although the young miss was a lady, but her words were of enormous weight and viewed strongly. Everyone had received her kindness before. He himself had been injured in battle, and wandered the streets but was saved by her. Qin Yu Ran had an eye for talent, and thus allowed him to lead her bodyguards.

“If they want to enter, they can only step over this subordinate’s dead body.”

The leader of the bodyguards solemnly said to Qin Yu Ran, then turned and went outside, and begun to lead his troops for defense.

Qin Yu Ran bit her lips tightly, she knew, if it was a conspiracy, then the schemer would not let Moon Manor go. To use the ladies, who were part of the big families of White Sands Continent, was the best bargaining chips.

To her, the White Sands Continent was extremely foreign, she did not know who to trust.

Her only hope left, was Big Brother Meng.

Big Brother Meng, you must come here quickly!

Qin Yu Ran's was extremely anxious.

Chapter 628 – Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts

The soldiers who were giving their all to train in the barracks noticed the White Sands City that was in flames and giving out black smoke, and they all stopped.

The barracks were outside of the city, and would require an hour worth of time to travel between the barracks and the city. It used to be a warehouse of the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, which was then changed into a temporary barracks.

The White Sands City was now only a visible silhouette.

But the dense smoke shocked everybody. They were all people who had been through battles, and knew what it meant.

~What's going on? What happened to White Sands City?? Is there a riot?

“Gather!”

Tang Chou's cold voice, layered with killing intent came up. He looked at White Sands City emotionlessly, ~Master is still in the city!~

Xie Yu An and Aya looked at each other, a bad premonition birthing in their minds. Xie Yu An asked hesitatingly: “Master, are

we going to send out sentries to gather information?”

Aya nodded her head, she agreed that Xie Yu An’s method was through experience and wisdom, now that the situation in White Sands City was unclear, for two armies to suddenly barge in would lead to an unknown result. White Sands City was not any small continent, rashly intervening was courting disaster.

Xie Yu An’s Swift Army was just a quasi-silver grade army, while Aya’s Pink Skull was just an army for hire. With their strength, to barge into the seemingly huge whirlpool would devastate them. Even any silver grade armies would not dare to rush in at such a time.

Tang Chou stared at Xie Yu An emotionlessly: “You want to disobey me?”

Xie Yu An was quick witted, he knew that his own hesitance had caused Master Tang Chou to become unhappy. The trust between them was still weak, and if he were to hesitate at such a time, it would only be sending Swift Army’s future down the drain. Xie Yu An immediately knew that he had made a grave mistake. The Swift Army had already pledged their loyalty to Master Meng Nan, and in some sense, the Swift Army no longer belonged to him, and not only that, he and the Swift Army already belonged to Master Meng Nan.

My excessive personal feelings will prove to be detrimental to my soldiers.

“This subordinate knows he’s wrong!” Xie Yu An immediately admitted his mistake, and immediately sprinted to gather his army.

The expression on Aya’s face changed, in the next moment, she clenched her teeth: “Yes!”

Tang Chou remained expressionless, but he heaved a sigh of relief in his mind, it had only been a short time since they bought the two armies, so he naturally lacked confidence and trust in them. If the two of them were to reject his orders, he could not do anything. But he knew, if he showed any signs of hesitations or suspicions, he would not be able to command the two armies.

He raised his head and stared at the White Sands City that was enveloped with black smoke, his gaze becoming colder and colder.

He did not care about Xie Yu An’s worries, What was the White Sands Continent to him? If anyone provoked Tang Chou, even if he could not destroy White Sands City, he could at least pillage White Sands once.

The barrack’s bugle horn sounded out, killing intent soaring through the skies.

“Our target, White Sands City, move out in full speed!”

Tang Tian's travel was like sweet honey, although they had attracted countless of hunters, but when they saw Tang Tian, they would always reveal a trace of hesitation and fear. But very quickly, that trace of hesitation and fear were quickly replaced by greed and craziness.

They pounced like a pack of wolves.

Very quickly, the group started to have injuries, mainly on the bodyguards of the Ling Family and Eldest Young Noble.

Eldest Young Noble's face was ashen, and only by looking at the Demonic Mounts by Tang Tian's side would a trace of fervent flash past his eyes.

His bodyguards were strong on any ordinary days, they were sturdy with powerful techniques, while the Demonic Mounts beside Tang Tian looked ordinary, some of them were old, and in no way look as elite as his own bodyguards.

Nothing could prove better than a real better, his bodyguards had already sustained injuries, and 20% of them were incapable of fighting. But the group of old men never sustained any injuries. After scrutinizing their fights, he was even more surprised, the group of old men were all efficient and ruthless, and extremely familiar with each other.

Their advancement, withdrawal, alternations, tilts, were all calmly executed in the midst of the chaos, breaking down their enemies, it was a delightful scene watching them, as though they

were doing some sort of art.

They never fought with their enemies alone, or clashed head on with the opponents, they just acted as if they were black liquid metal that kept changing, only protecting Tang Tian.

The bodyguards continued to take care of the injured enemies, in times of war, everyone would just focus on killing. Everywhere they passed, corpses littered the streets and blood covered the walls and floors.

At this time, flying in the sky was not a good idea.

Suddenly, Tang Tian stopped. Noticing his abrupt movement, the Demonic Mounts immediately became extremely cautious.

Compared to them, the reaction of the bodyguards were slower.

“Get them to come back.” Tang Tian stared at the empty road ahead, and said without turning back.

Ling Xia seem to have understood something, her expression becoming dark, she immediately ordered the bodyguards to come back.

They returned in puzzlement.

“Protect Eldest Young Noble.”

With that said, Tang Tian walked forward, and at the other end of the street, a group of people appeared.

Tang Tian immediately recognized them, the few people at the front were the group of people that he and Shi Sen had met at the Mercenary Center.

“Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts.”

Tang Tian called their name, causing Eldest Young Noble, Ling Xia, and their bodyguard’s faces to change. The prestige of Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts was like the noon sun, they were currently the strongest elites.

But the Demonic Mounts beside Tang Tian all suddenly released cold killing intent. The current Demonic Mounts were not just a group of old men anymore, all of them releasing extremely terrifying killing intent, like a sharp sword that had been unsheathed, glistening with extremely cold sharp auras.

This was an opponent that was of the same grade as them, oh no, the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts had declined for a long time, while the Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts are currently the strongest under the Heavens!

Around a 100 of the Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts walked along the street, gradually closing in, an unspeakable pressure surging towards them.

The faces of Ling Xia and the other people changed, it was just a 100 people, but their aura was actually so overbearing.

Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts, too tyrannical!

The leader, short haired man walked out, and bowed towards Tang Tian, and spoke neither servilely nor overbearingly: "We greet Mister Meng Nan, I am Ah Sang, Master's bearing and manner from the last time we met was difficult to forget. I have no enmity with Master or do I want to form any grievances with you, could Master give me some face? So long as you do not interfere, we are willing to present you with a warship, and with the warship, we will present you with 100 elites of the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts."

Ling Xia and Eldest Young Noble's face flushed white.

Any ordinary warship would cost over 10 billion, but the even more precious thing were the 100 Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts. Following their prestige, they were a faction that was hard to obtain. A warship could be bought, but a Tyrannical Mount could not. 100 of them, that would truly cost a lot.

Eldest Young Noble laughed bitterly, It seems that this is my final point. But he was actually very calm, the enemy's strength far exceeded his expectations, even their initial offer was something that he could never even offer. Compared to that, the promise he had given Tang Tian was too cheaply priced and shameful.

The other party was willing to give Tang Tian face, and the 200 Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts had the ability to bring them all down.

Ling Xia's face was as white as paper, she herself could not think of a reason for Meng Nan to reject that offer.

"I'm sorry, I have already promised to protect Eldest Young Noble."

When he said that, it caused Eldest Young Noble and Ling Xia to become stupefied, they even thought they had heard wrongly.

Ah Sang never thought that Tang Tian would reject him, he was stumped for a moment, then said: "If Master is not satisfied with the conditions, we can still discuss about it!"

Tang Tian shook his head: "There is no need to discuss anything."

Ah Sang stared at Tang Tian blankly, Is his brain broken? He had never thought that Tang Tian would reject him, and furthermore it was an instant rejection.

"Since Mister Meng Nan wishes to be pulled into the currents, then apologies for the offense." Ah Sang said emotionlessly, his eyes becoming cold.

This was his second time being overwhelmed, the last time being

Meng Nan making such a big hoorah at the banquet. That was also the reason why he was willing to submit to Tang Tian. Tang Tian was a powerful martial artist, even if they obtained victory, the cost for it would not be small.

But that did not mean that he was afraid of Meng Nan, in the current generation, the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts had already stepped up the food chain and was the king, with 200 of them, he had the confidence of defeating Meng Nan.

Since they could not afford to retreat, they would have to pay the price, as long as they win, they would be willing to pay anything.

“Retreat!”

Tang Tian commanded the Demonic Mounts.

Ah Leng and the rest looked at Tang Tian in shock: “Master....”

“Retreat!” Tang Tian snorted.

Ah Leng and the rest stared at Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts with unwillingness in their eyes, and slowly retreated.

The boiling fighting intent in Tang Tian's chest did not dissipate, Ah Leng and the Demonic Mounts were the true elite soldiers. They were Shi Sen's future Demonic Mount barracks' backbone officers, and it would not be worth it if they died in the struggle. Without Shi Sen, the Demonic Mount's strength was greatly cut.

30 Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, facing 200 Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts who had their general with them, they had no chance of winning.

Such a sacrifice has no meaning.

Furthermore.....

Tang Tian stared at the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts, his blood boiling. The Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts are powerful enemies, ones that I don't meet often!

The stronger the enemies, the more ruthless the battles to polish this young lad to become even stronger!

Godlike young lad, this was destined to be your battle! After perspiring for days and nights, isn't it to prepare for the enemies like the ones you are facing right now?

A voice seemed to be screaming in Tang Tian's mind: Defeat them, defeat them.....

Excitement, Unprecedented excitement.

There was nothing else more exciting than an enemy stronger than himself.

“Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts, hehehe.....”

The wind blew on his face, but it did not calm him at all, but instead fanned the fire, the flames in his chest suddenly became even bigger, burning his entire body!

The Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts ahead moved.

When they stood still, they were like unmovable mountains, and when they moved, they were like thunder.

200 figures moved together, glowing with light aura, forming into one like raging flames, spewing in great quantities as they resonated with each other. The airflow around them became rapid, and trembling sounds came out as the ground started to shake, causing the floor, houses and streets to tremble. It was as though a thunder was exploding out right above them, causing the earth to tremble.

The thunderous might released a pressure like Mt Tai, causing everyone’s face to change.

Only Tang Tian’s face held an unspeakable calmness.

Countless of fireflies appeared out of nowhere, and in the blink of an eye they had covered the entire street, smoke pervading and scattering across the whole street, under the light of the fireflies, it had a sense of tranquility and gentleness.

Come, let's fight!

Chapter 629 – Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear

If you want to embrace the world, you cannot forget the stars.

The red fireflies brought about a strange sense of berserk tranquility that pervaded everywhere. The houses along the streets started to form holes, and quickly, the densely packed holes made them look like beehives.

If one placed himself in the sea of red, he would find himself becoming lost and absorbed.

Inside the vast expanse, the young lad's concealed persistent face reflected the fireflies and sea of light aura, his body moved as in a line as straight as a spear, his serene eyes seemed to be able to see through the boundless sea.

Countless of fireflies surged forth, the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts charged with lightning speed, shaking the ground beneath them, the structures that were already covered with holes, all started to crumble.

The spewing light aura caused the fireflies to be unable to inch forward.

It was like a wild beast going against a big tide, both not moving an inch. It was just one assault, but The Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts let Tang Tian know that they had the ability to

shake the world, and their tyrannical name did not come from nothing!

Every single Tyrannical Mount's method of combusting energy was extremely tyrannical, and what was even scarier was that even in their reckless combustion, their energy synchronization were matchless!

The surging blazing light aura transformed into a light green color.

It was Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mount's unique "Heavenly Green Flames"!

Ah Sang who was most commonly seen smiling and extremely calm, was at the moment spewing fire from his eyes, his most intense green flame was being followed by the other green flames, at his beck and call.

His body was arched like a bow, taking strides towards Tang Tian,

His empty hand were like a vortex, the green light was frantically surging towards his palm. Ssssi, the congealed energy flowed and released a sound that was like a blade cutting across water, the green light of his team suddenly darkened.

The dark green light spear, with its tyrannical qi, swept across everything like a shockwave.

Pa pa pa!

The surrounding fireflies started to erupt like fireworks.

The Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear, grew to a length of 10m.

Tang Tian stood behind his fireflies, his eyes suddenly erupting with a cold glint, the fearsome qi in front of him suddenly churned irregularly, the fierce qi suddenly become reserved, in the blink of an eye, all the hair on Tang Tian's body stood stiff, the Firefly Expanse that was in front of him, became like an ancient fierce beast, quietly crouching down.

An intense sense of danger and death qi surrounded Tang Tian, and the instinct to live kicked in, causing Tang Tian to completely forget about thinking, and allow his intuition to take over.

His legs widened, lowering his waist, the grey null flames silently growing.

Null Flame suddenly started to revolve extremely quickly.

The fireflies floating all around entered the Null Flames, and very quickly, the grey null flames started to corrode the fireflies. More and more fireflies started to be attracted, and if looking down from a bird's eye view, the entire fire clouds were surging towards Tang Tian's location, as though there was a huge pit there.

Countless fireflies formed into a pretty flame, the flame enveloped Tang Tian's fist, like a spiralling vortex, it spiralled at an extremely fast speed. The long flaming tail that trailed behind extended to a distance of 20m, it was a spectacular sight, just like the long flaming tail of a phoenix. And amidst this beautiful flames was mixed with an almost undetectable grey mark.

Spiralling Energy!

Using Spiralling Energy, he had merged the Null Flame and the Firefly Expanse into a killing technique.

If it was any other saint, to be at the same realm, they would give up on a low level technique like Spiralling Energy. But to Tang Tian, he never cared about whether the technique was profound or shallow, he only cared if they were suitable or not. Maybe it was a habit formed by training in fundamental martial techniques for so many years.

Completely different from him, Jing Hao represented a different dao path, what he chased was the understanding of the heaven and earth, he chased for the most basic laws of the world.

Countless of fireflies formed into a red flow of flames, spiralling around and spewing out unstably.

A green light spear struck the middle of the fireflies heavily all of a sudden.

There was no sound, no whistling through the air, it was completely silent, like a green wild beast stealthily pouncing on its prey, all of it's aura completely kept in. Ah Sang's [Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear] came from his attainments from the perfection of the fire, there was no energy that leaked out, showing his perfect control.

Tang Tian's eyes constricted to the size of a needle!

But his face did not change in the slightest, the countless battles had refined his state of mind to become extremely tough, and his competitive nature made him filled with fighting intent, like the flaming tail that fluttered recklessly.

He was clearly in the air, but it looked as if he was stepping on some surface, power flowing from his legs to his waist, moving upwards. Tang Tian's body was like a stiff whip, his fist being the whip's tip, when the power reached his fist, it suddenly broke out like a powerful current.

There were no fancy moves, it was a simple and plain punch. When he released it, a formless ripple exploded out.

The ripple distorted the air. The might of the fist was something that caused even the space to tremble.

The transparent ripple formed a thin layer of membrane, enveloping Tang Tian's fist and red flames. Every time the long flaming tail moved, hidden qi would be quietly released, and the

fireflies would become sluggish.

The green light spear clashed head on with Tang Tian's fist.

The reserved qi inside the [Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear] suddenly erupted.

Bang!

Dazzling light exploded in front of Tang Tian like a wild beast that had stealthily approached its prey, and at the last moment exploded forth with its sharp teeth and claws, a cunning yet effective method.

From the tail of the spear, there were consecutive explosions, and every explosion would increase its power by a level. When the spear head exploded, the power of the spear had reached its maximum, the moss green light containing a tyrannical qi like a heavy hammer smashing straight into Tang Tian.

Ah Sang revealed a sneer, without personally experiencing the power of the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear, no one was capable of knowing its true power. Meng Nan had taken it head on, and from the looks of it, it was practically the same as throwing his life away.

The Heavenly Green Flames were by itself overpowering, like a ruthless beast, and after using a unique technique, it was congealed into the Heavenly Green Spear. Like a net that trapped a group of

beasts, preventing them from moving, and when the net had been destroyed, the group of beasts would become even more agitated.

Furthermore, after every successive explosion from the spear, there would be even more combustions!

This was the true power of the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear, it's overbearingness and ferocity was unstoppable.

Any head on clash would only reaffirm its prestige!

But just at that moment, the sneer on his mouth suddenly froze.

The Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear's might was far stronger than what Tang Tian had imagined, the sudden increase in offense caused Tang Tian to feel as if he was facing a horde of fierce beasts. Under the immense pressure, Tang Tian's state of mind was actually extremely calm, and he roared.

“Break!”

The red spiralling flames around Tang Tian's fists started to have an inconceivable change, like a red umbrella, it started to open up!

The long flaming tail opened up, forming a red screen.

The green light entered the flaming screen, which started to entangle like a red cloth, covering up the ball of green light.

The ball of green light looked like it was about to explode, when the grey threads inside the flame started to brighten, like a grey net, they tightly suppressed the ball of green light.

But the power of the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear that was wrapped with Tang Tian's flames, continued to strike Tang Tian.

Not good!

Tang Tian realized that he was still underestimating the power of the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear, it instantly struck onto his body, and in that panic, he ignored everything and retracted his right fist, and then slammed out with his left palm. Bang, he blocked the flames, and borrowing the momentum, his right hand turned from a fist to a palm and grabbed onto the ball of flames.

The grey threaded fire screen's energy rippled out, causing Tang Tian's face to change as he started to perspire in cold sweat.

Light came from energy undulation, Tang Tian knew that if the ball exploded, he would definitely cease to exist. The grey threaded fire screen was quickly weakening due to the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear's oppression, and furthermore, after his punch, he had no more strength in him. Just as he had consumed all of his remaining strength, he had not recovered any.

Damn it!

Tang Tian was unable to deal with the cold feeling that was raising from his spine, he was like a cat that got shocked from its tail being stepped on, his senses stretched taut.

The fire threaded fire screen quickly subsided, the energy undulation inside started to grow more berserk. It was as though Tang Tian was hugging onto a bomb which could explode at any time.

“Ahhhhhh.....”

He unconsciously roared, giving his all to activate any remaining strength left in him, the initially relaxed muscles were tensed up once again, Strength, I need more strength!

Tang Tian had never felt this way before, being so close to death, he felt as if he could see the face of the Death God.

Pa pa pa!

Crackling sounds came out from inside Tang Tian's body, like frying beans, Tang Tian felt that every inch of his muscles, bones and tendons were all exploding.

Every explosion would bring forth a warm flow. The consecutive exploding sounds caused a gush of warmth to envelop Tang Tian's body.

Tang Tian felt like a desert that finally met rain, frantically

absorbing the warm flow.

Strength! My body is filled with strength!

Tang Tian did not know where the strength came from, but how could he care about it at the moment?

“Ahhhhhhhh.....”

He used all of his strength and slowly pushed the “Bomb”. Bang Bang Bang, his legs were frantically kicking, one after another, the Vacuum Plates beneath his feet were shattered at a very high speed. He was like a rampaging bull, using all of his strength to push the “Bomb” forward.

Tang Tian continued to increase his speed, after pushing for a few meters, he gathered the remaining of his strength and pushed it towards the Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts!

The “Bomb” entered the Firefly Expanse.

The Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear did not explode, causing Ah Sang to be surprised, but he what made him calm down was that the pressure on the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear was greatly weakening. He did not have much strength left as the spear had consumed almost all of his energy.

Meng Nan was truly too fierce!

The volume of the fire clouds had grown to an astonishing rate, it was why Ah Sang was more willing to pay Meng Nan off, hoping that he would retreat from the battle. But it was a pity that his plan to bribe had failed, and upon knowing that he had to face Meng Nan, Ah Sang displayed extremely decisiveness. Facing a powerful martial artist like Meng Nan, he knew that he would not be given mercy. Especially when the fire clouds started to appear, the terrifying scene made Ah Sang release his strongest technique without hesitation!

The longer one stayed inside the fire clouds the worse it was for them, Gong Chen's life was proof.

One thrust of the spear, we only have this chance!

Ah Sang had utmost confidence in his spear!

He firmly believed that even the fierce Meng Nan could not defeat the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear!

But he never expected that Tang Tian could actually suppress it, causing his face to turn gloomy.

Tang Tian's roar came out from inside the Firefly Expanse, Ah Sang's face turned even uglier, he felt that the Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear was heading towards them.

“Move.....”

Before Ah Sang's words had finished, in his vision, a regiment of flames flew out of the Firefly Expanse.

His pupils dilated, his face turned as white as paper.

Chapter 630 – He Ying’s Wild Dreams

“When will Suo Bi come back?”

Beside He Ying stood a pale white skinny man with a gloomy expression on his face. If Lei Er Fu was present, he would definitely be able to hear that the person who was speaking was the same mysterious man in the shadows.

But a pity, Lei Er Fu was dead.

“Come back?” He Ying laughed out loud: “He still wants to come back? Suo Bi was always against me, how can I give him that chance? He has talent, but a pity his temper is bad, I will just kill him to save time.”

“You must also do something to the 5th Army.” The skinny tall man said indifferently.

“In the end, you’re the one who understands me, all these are just the minor parlor tricks.” He Ying sneered: “Ling Xia that brat, she is too soft. I only gave her some sand to play with, and she thinks she wants to reorganize them, I wonder how long that will take, but she has no chance. This time, I do not plan to let the Ling Family alive.”

Standing beside He Ying, Qiao Yi An’s heart trembled.

“When solving problems, dig at the roots. What you’re doing is

right.” The skinny man nodded his head: “What about Meng Nan? He is an external variable, you must pay attention to him.”

“Pay attention?” He Ying’s eyes turned dark: “I have prepared a large gift for him. 200 Qing Continent’s Tyrannical elites, and the general is Ah Sang. Humph, I don’t believe I cannot take him down!”

“Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts?” The skinny man was surprised.

“The elites of Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mount.” He Ying corrected, and said with a bit of pain: “I have spent a large sum of money to be able to get them to come here. I hid them inside the Mercenary Center, humph, the Qing Continent’s Tyrannical mounts are not the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts. That fellow is dead for sure!”

Qiao Yi An who stood by the side remained quiet, but a look of pity flashed past his eyes. Meng Nan was strong, a martial artist that was hard to come by, but they were currently in the generation where armies dominated, and strong martial artists were unable to win wars. Even for Tang Tian, in front of the elite Qing Continent’s Tyrannical Mounts, he had no way to outshine and beat them.

“That explains your confidence.” The tall and skinny man nodded his head, a look of admiration flashed past his eyes: “You do things cautiously and well, it seems that you have improved greatly through the years.”

200 Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts, with General Ah Sang who is a prominent leader. That power was not something that any martial artist could contend with.

"I cannot just let all of your investments turn to nothing." He Ying said somewhat arrogantly.

"That's good." The tall and skinny man expressed satisfaction.

Bang!

Suddenly, in the distance, a dazzling light aura shot up into the sky. A loud explosion caused the entire White Sands City to tremble.

He Ying was caught in a surprise, but he immediately laughed: "Hahahaha! Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear! Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts' Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear, what about that? Isn't it a beauty! With that power, which elite would dare to stop me!"

Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear!

The skinny tall man's face changed, his eyes gazing towards the light aura that was dimming down, the energy undulation possessed a tremendous might, causing even his mind to be moved.

Heavenly Green Tyrannical Spear was the Tyrannical Mount's most famous killing technique, its reputation was known worldwide. Only after finally witnessing it, did he know that it was truly worthy of its reputation. He was suddenly moved, ~If I could bring that technique into my own continent, wouldn't that be.....

From the start, he had always aimed for the top, all the consummate techniques of the other continents were unworthy to him, but at the moment, he was feeling excited.

Qiao Yi An's face was pale white, the terrifying energy undulation, even if it was him fighting against it, his bones would melt into nothing as well.

~What a pity~, he was feeling remorseful for the loss of an expert.

“After Suo Bi dies, lend me the pirates for a while.” The tall and skinny man said.

He Ying frowned: “I don't know why you guys are afraid of those families, I have investigated them a few times, and did not find out anything interesting about them.”

The tall skinny man's eyes turned cold when he heard that: “You investigated them?”

He Ying was not afraid, and sneered: “I have to know what am I getting myself into, if I am not careful, I could be caught in a trap.”

The tall skinny man's eyes turned extremely cold, his face revealing a mocking look: "It isn't always a good thing to be too clever, no one is irreplaceable. Don't forget, we are the ones who brought you up, and naturally can bring you down as well."

He Ying's face turned slightly ugly, and laughed out loud: "You're too anxious! Such a small matter, there's no problem! After Suo Bi is removed, I will withdraw the 3rd and 4th army, that way, the pirates can enter and get rid of those families. It'll be to your discretion if they are to live or die. But this can only happen after Suo Bi is definitely dead, if not, if those two armies disappear and Suo Bi comes back, we are in deep trouble."

The tall skinny man's expression calmed down, and he nodded: "At the moment, our collaboration is going well, I hope that this can continue. When this is all over, the White Sands Continent will be yours."

Hearing that last sentence, a fervent of passion flashed past He Ying's eyes, he laughed: "Rest easy! Now let us go take a look at the beautiful Miss Qin Yu Ran, her overbearing beauty really puts everyone to shame."

The tall skinny man also revealed a smile: "Especially with all the other giveaways."

"Giveaways?" He Ying laughed happily: "I like that! But, all those giveaways are priceless treasures. Your plan is truly too miraculous! The result is spectacular! Haha, with all those other

important ladies in hand, I do not believe anyone would dare to go against me!”

“That is the charm of Miss Yu Ran.” The tall skinny man chuckled: “But from now on, she belongs to you. If you do not like her, I believe that you can use her to get anyone, only that that person must be a man!:

“Maybe some women as well.” He Ying laughed sinisterly: “But I will definitely not give her away, to lie with such a beauty and have the world in my hands, that is the life.”

The tall skinny man laughed: “That’s right!”

He Ying was high spirited: “Let’s go! It is extremely chaotic right now, we must protect those beauties and prevent them from being harassed.”

The tall skinny man praised: “I like this righteousness of yours.”

The two of them laughed.

Tang Tian sat down on the ground, his whole body covered in mud, his entire body felt soft, as if all the air had been drained out from him. At the end of the street, there was a humongous pit that was over 1 km in diameter, dense smoke rising in spirals.

Within the range of 5km, all of the buildings were transformed into dust.

From a bird's eye view, the large pit in the ground was a ghastly sight.

Thinking about what had just happened, Tang Tian still had lingering fear inside of him, it was extremely dangerous. If he was a second late, he would most probably be caught and buried in the terrifying explosion. Although he had escaped the instant he threw the “bomb”, but the aftermath of the explosion had instantly flung him out over 300m.

The other people were nowhere as well, scattered all over on the ground, their bodies were covered in blood, even Eldest Young Noble was bleeding from his mouth and nose. For the sake of protecting him, two bodyguards had used the energy barrier to block the incoming explosion, resulting in one of them dying, but they managed to save his life.

After the calamity, everyone were grieving.

Right in the center of the explosion, the Tyrannical Mounts were completely wiped out, not even leaving a trace of them.

Everyone struggled to stand up, all of them feeling giddy and dizzy.

Just at that moment, the sound of flying at a speed that broke the sound barrier came up, causing Tang Tian and everyone else's face to change. At the moment, all of them were completely powerless, and even a small group of hoodlums would be enough to kill them.

When Tang Tian looked at the people incoming properly, he heaved a sigh of relief.

It was Tang Chou!

When Tang Chou saw Tang Tian's terrible state, he was frightened: "Master, what happened?"

"We met with 200 Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts." Tang Tian rubbed his cheeks, his smile appeared to be more miserable than happy: "They were truly fearsome! Lucky that this young lad's luck is good, oh my, come support me..."

Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts, Xie Yu An and Aya's face changed, they looked at each other, both of them able to see the shock in each other's eyes.

Aya could not resist but ask: "Master, did all of you wipe out the 200 Tyrannical Mounts?"

"Master did it single handedly!" Ah Leng who was equally injured snorted: "The general of the Tyrannical Mount elites was Ah Sang!"

He was completely and utterly convinced and revered Tang Tian, even if Tang Tian ordered him to die, he would do so without hesitation. He alone actually wiped out the 200 Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts led by Ah Sang, that monstrous strength was completely unheard of!

It was as if Xie Yu An and Aya were struck with a curse, both of them became completely still.

To be hailed as elites were definitely not something easily earned, to be hailed as the elite of the elites, naturally the Qing Continent Tyrannical Mounts were at an even higher level. And the General Ah Sang was a famed general, and was definitely a true warrior.

“Godlike young lad is just that powerful, oh my.....”

Tang Tian who had a pleased look on his face pulled his injury, causing him to whine and take in cold air.

Xie Yu And and Aya were completely stupefied, but Tang Chou was already used to Tang Tian’s ways, he asked: “Master, where do we go now?”

Tang Tian thought for a moment: “Let’s go, we are going to Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce to activate our warship, and go home!”

Ling Xia and Eldest Young Noble’s face changed, Eldest Young Noble immediately said: “Mister Meng Nan, our established agreement.....”

“There’s no problem.” Tang Tian said as a matter of factly: “I said to ensure your safety, but we did not specify it to be within the White Sands Continent.”

Eldest Young Noble and Ling Xia were stunned.

“And, what do you guys have in White Sand Continent?” Tang Tian became serious: “You guys have no cards left to play, and are incapable of fighting the enemies. Also, do not even think of using my two armies, they have not completed their training yet. But at He Ying’s side, they have three silver grade armies.”

Eldest Young Noble was at a loss, every single word Meng Nan said were like swords that pierced his heart.

But he knew that Meng Nan was right.

A figure carefully flew over the astonishing huge pit, and when he got over, he saw a mass of people huddled at one side, his face changed.

Suddenly, he noticed Tang Tian that was within the group and instantly became joyous, and ran over clumsily.

“Master Meng! Master Meng! Quickly save Young Miss! I beg you, quickly save young miss!”

Tang Tian was startled. He turned and saw that it was Qin Yu Ran's bodyguard, a bad omen suddenly falling into his mind, Is Yu Ran in danger?

Damn it!

His face immediately darkened.

Chapter 631 – Man Of Steel, Li Ran

“Hold the position, there are three more incoming!”

“Ay Xiang, stay there, leave the right flank to Xiao Lin!”

.....

Li Ran dragged his somewhat lame leg back and forth. He had sustained an injury on his right leg in battle when he was young, which he did not receive treatment on in time, thus leaving his right leg crippled. Losing his ability to fight, Li Ran was forced out of the army, left to wander in the streets until Qin Yu Ran saved him. Qin Yu Ran had joke about it, that they both had the name Ran in their names, so how could she leave him be.

Li Ran shouted loudly, his face that was covered in sweat and mud, which usually had no expression, was actually radiating with a peculiar light.

In truth, many of the bodyguards disliked Li Ran, in a world where the strong was respected, how could a cripple obtain respect? But the young miss was persistent, and although Li Ran could not personally lead in battles, but his skills in day to day management was good, and after long, no one said anything about him.

In everyone’s heart, Li Ran was just a logistics officer, to aid and improve everyone’s daily life.

Until now.

Seeing Li Ran drag his lame leg running up and down and shouting with his coarse voice, continuously giving orders, made people feel some respect for him. After being in the family for so long, everyone knew of Li Ran's leg. As long as he stood for a long period of time on his right leg, there would be a piercing pain, and in an even more serious case, it would swell.

Li Ran's leg was swollen like a carrot, the arteries and veins looked like earthworms, it was a horrid sight. He ignored the pain, and continued to limp around. The gazes that everyone gave Li Ran were filled with respect.

Strength would earn fear, but bravery and faith could win respect.

He truly is giving his all.....

Everyone only had that thought, no one had any refute towards Li Ran's commands. Such a man of steel was worth fighting for.

But after the continuous waves of enemies coming in, everyone started to respect Li Ran even more. The rumors were that Li Ran was a true officer of an army, but Li Ran had never spoken about it, so everyone treated it as a hearsay. But now, everyone realized that it was not just some rumor.

Li Ran's orders possessed movement artistry.

Although Qin Yu Ran was not a rich tyrant, but she was famous, enough for her to live amply, and the bodyguards by her side were rather strong as well. Many of them were bestowed to her by the Continent Lords that she had performed for before, and thus they were not weak.

They knew what was what, after a few bouts, they realized that the enemies that were attacking the Moon Manor did not pose too much of a threat, and only left behind a huge pile of corpses, their losses were extremely heavy.

Li Ran was powerful!

This conclusion surprised many people, but more so of joy. After travelling for so many years, all of them had their ample experience, and they knew that what they were experiencing was not easy.

An expert tactician overseeing things was more useful than anything else. Although each of their personal strengths were not weak, they came from all sorts of places, and were more proficient in individual battles. Facing such a scale of defense and protection, they were not that experienced.

With their belief in Li Ran, they became more stable. At the moment, Li Ran was also testing on letting the bodyguards and servants to do more, and started to make simple plans.

He remained calm, giving everyone a sort of calm sense, everyone believed that the outcome rest in Li Ran's hands.

In truth Li Ran's heart was not as calm as what he was portraying, instead, he was extremely worried and anxious. The assault was continuously growing stronger. It started with a group of three to five thieves or bandits, but as it went on, it became a small scale mercenary team.

The Moon Manor was not suited to be guarded, as its land was too big and open. And as it was inside White Sands City, so its construction did not have any thought for defense, giving Li Ran huge trouble.

Without any defensive layout, and a group of different and wandering soldiers, adding a officer that was crippled and unable to battle, Li Ran laughed bitterly, such odds, to be able to fight to where they were, it was considered good.

Why isn't Master Meng Nan here yet?

Li Ran's only hope was that Master Meng Nan would arrive quickly, so he could stop. He had completely lost feeling in his entire right leg, But it's good, at least I don't feel the pain.

Suddenly, small black dots appeared in the sky.

Li Ran's state of mind was roused, he immediately shouted: "Prepare for incoming enemy!"

All of the bodyguards became roused as they prepared for the enemies. But when they landed in formation, the manor flew into an uproar.

In the center was a person that everyone recognized, he was the man with the most power in White Sands Continent, 2nd Army Commander He Ying.

He Ying arrogantly waved his hand, when one of the captains rushed out and shouted: “From now on, the defense of this location will be handled by the 2nd Army! Everyone, disarm yourselves, if anyone disobeys, you will be killed on the spot!”

Li Ran’s face turned pale, he suddenly realized that He Ying was the true enemy. He had initially thought that the movement were just a few bandits or pirates, but he then realized that all the chaos and mess was for a reason! Everything was planned by a hand in the shadows, and that was most probably He Ying.

Bang Bang Bang, weapons started to fall, all of the servants and bodyguards were ecstatic.

“That’s great!”

“Master He is here, we are all safe!”

“We are saved!”

.....

Qin Yu Ran's bodyguards looked at each other, then looked at Li Ran.

Li Ran's throat was dry, but he knew they were at the crossroad of life or death. He thought about the wives and ladies in the manor, but then thought about the young miss, He Ying would definitely not let the Young Miss go, if she were to land in He Ying's demonic arms, she would only become his plaything.

No!

Li Ran became agitated, he would never agree to that! All of the fear were immediately flung to the back of his head. This crap of a body was saved by young miss, I will die than let anything happen to her.

After being agitated, Li Ran calmed himself.

He retrieved the saber from his waist, it was a simple saber. He raised it high like a flag.

"Everyone, touch your hearts, how does Young Miss treat us daily? She groomed the army, it is for this day! I have received the grace of Young Miss, and It is time to repay the grace. Anyone who dares to plot against Young Miss, will have to step over our dead bodies!"

The faces of the bodyguards gradually turned serious, all of them revealing resilience. They were all old veterans with experience, and upon seeing the situation, they knew that the day would be unkind.

“Fuck, those pigheads, they dare to do anything to young miss?”

“Head Li is right, We all know how Young Miss treats us, our lives for young miss, it is worth it!”

.....

Hearing all the bodyguards spewing anger and unkind words, He Ying's face darkened. The main force of the 2nd Army was not by his side, they were the vanguard unit.

But, against these fishes, the vanguard unit is more than enough.

“Qiao An, I will leave this to you, kill everyone.” He Ying said indifferently. The skinny tall man revealed a look of mockery in his eyes, causing He Ying to become enraged, and his will to kill soar.

As for the affection of the beauty, would that affect him? He Ying did not care.

Qiao Yi An's mind shivered, but he replied: “yes!”

With that, he leaped gently and soared into the air, his speed was not fast nor slow, but in the blink of an eye he arrived in front of the formation, and unsheathed his sword in midair, his radiance spewing across the whole place.

All the bodyguards brandished their weapons with roars, and unleashed their light barriers.

The light that Qiao Yi An released was not dazzling, but upon touching the light barriers, it was like a sharp knife slicing tofu, chi chi chi, a few heads flew in the sky, and blood spewed out.

The entire process took a breath, and Qiao Yi An's movements were free and easy without a trace of flames or qi, it was a pleasing sight.

Li Ran's face changed, the Silver Winged Swordsman Qiao Yi An was someone he knew, he had seen Qiao Yi An performed many times while following Qin Yu Ran, but to be personally facing it as an enemy, he could feel the difference, the immense pressure on him instead.

The incoming pressure that could not be dodged made people feel despair.

The delightful sword techniques mercilessly took lives, any attempts to defend against the ordinary sword aura were sliced through.

But, they had no way out.

Blood surged into Li Ran's face, he had lost all of his bargaining chips, and was about to engage in a futile struggle.

“Ah Xiang, concentrate on guarding Young Miss!”

“Xiao Lin, use.....”

Chi chi!

Ah Xiang and Xiao Lin's heads flew into the sky, blood spewed, painting a scene behind their falling bodies.

At that moment, he so badly wished that his own men were a trained and seasoned army, he wished that he was back in his youth, able to depend on himself to turn the tides of battle!

He was old, crippled, and about to die.

Li Ran's eyes turned red, he roared: “Formation! Circle!”

If I am to die, then I'll die!”

The bodyguards surrounded Li Ran in the center, Li Ran's eyes were covered with a layer of blood, he was like a wolf, an old wolf on the brink of death.

“As expected of the Silver Winged Swordsman, he is powerful.”
The skinny tall man praised.

He Ying revealed a pleased look: “He is indeed good, and rare that he is obedient. You should know, all the experts these days have bad tempers.”

The tall skinny man nodded: “That is true.”

“Wait till I become White Sands Continent Lord, I will control all of them!” He Ying said happily.

Li Ran did not say a word, he stared intently at Qiao Yi An’s graceful yet fatal moves that took lives. Qiao Yi An’s sword gracefully danced around the circle formation, every time it moved, it would take away a few lives.

Li Ran licked his lips, his heart quietly calculating.

Qiao Yi An continued to move, when Li Ran suddenly spoke softly: “Later when I say a name, everyone will rushed towards that position to attack, do not hold back.”

The remaining people were extremely tensed, what remained were less than 20 people. At this point of time, everyone knew that they would not live, so they became extremely vicious, since it was their last attack.

Li Ran stared intently at Qiao Yi An's floating figure, Qiao Yi An's movements were extremely crafty, but Li Ran had a lot of battle experience, and knew about habits. Habits would often reveal themselves in battle, especially when there were no pressure, where the ones holding advantage would frequently reveal more of their habits.

And with him using names as a position locator, it was an ingenious method, they were all familiar with each other, but Qiao Yi An did not know them.

Qiao Yi An moved left and right, his movements difficult to predict.

Afterimages formed one after another, reflecting in the eyes of the weary.

Li Ran suddenly bellowed: "Dong Bo!"

The bodyguards who were long ready, without any hesitation, gathered all of their energy and struck out!

Qiao Yi An's eyes suddenly dilated, the extremely chaotic light aura surged right in front of him like a multi-colored wall.

Shit!

The opponent's actually predicted and saw through his movements, he was not in time to defend, and could only put

strength to draw his sword!

The sword auras continuously released seven to eight rays of light auras, before failing to do anymore.

Qiao Yi An's body lit up with a light barrier, he extended his left palm and moaned, his body flew out over 60m, he landed on the ground, his hair had become messy, the corner of his mouth revealed a trace of blood.

He stared intently at the cunning group, he could not believe that he was hurt by them.

The bodyguards were celebrating crazily, it was their first time becoming a threat to Qiao Yi An.

But Li Ran's eyes flashed with a look of disappointment, he knew, they had no more chance left.

Suddenly, his body shook, his eyes staring straight behind He Ying, a black group of figure were rushing towards them like a black tide.

That is...

Rumble rumble.

The ground was shaking, the houses were shaking, the air was

shaking.

Chapter 632 – Tactic Number 5

He Ying stared at the black tide in shock.

Where did that army come from? How can there be an army inside White Sands City that I do not know of? He Ying started to panic, it was the first time that he was experiencing a sense of losing control.

“Who are you?” He Ying bellowed: “This is the 2nd Army’s land, Trespassers will be persecuted!”

The vanguard unit beside him finally reacted, all of them facing the incoming enemy. Qiao Yi An no longer cared about Li Ran and his unit, and floated to stand beside He Ying.

Tang Chou looked at Tang Tian, he was not clear on the situation, and did not know if the He Ying was Tang Tian’s friend or foe.

Tang Tian who was long pissed with He Ying waved his hand: “Enemy.”

Enemy, that definition, to Tang Chou, meant that there were no place for discussion. To Tang Chou, enemies only had one ending, that was extermination!

Confirming their position, Tang Chou immediately went into character.

His eyes blazed, his entire body releasing a cold killing intent, he became extremely focused. He looked around, everything before him became clear as day.

The vanguard unit's cautious posture, Qiao Yi An's sword.....

He immediately judged that they were a group of standalone fighters. He had studied Bing's report on the Sacred Saint Galaxy army meticulously, and knew that the small units had a specific name, vanguard units.

Tang Chou who was specialized in analyzing had already started planning out right from the start after reading the reports, on how to deal with the Sacred Saint Galaxy armies. So how could he forget about the vanguard units?

“Skull Regiment, Tactic Number 5!”

Tang Chou said without hesitation, Pink Skull's name was completely ridiculous and disgraceful to a rigid and stubborn military general like Tang Chou. Even the name Skull Regiment, to Tang Chou, was equally obnoxious. How was it like a proper army? But Aya did not back away from that point, it was the group that her ancestors had created, if they were to completely change the name to something else, she will never accept it.

This truth proved that when women were dead set on something, even famed generals could not do anything.

Hearing Tactic number 5, Aya's heart tensed. This tactic was formed from Pink Skull's "Spring Loop Blade" Tactic, Tang Chou had reinvented its plan with an extreme parameter.

Because of this tactic, the entire army had suffered.

In the past, Aya had always been proud with the Pink Skull's training. One must know, the majority of the armies for hire trained relatively less, but on the contrary, for Pink Skull to be able to span through three generations, it was due to them being persistent with maintaining a harsh regime of training.

Every employer praised their trainings, and many of them even praised that the Pink Skull's training was even more outstanding compared to the true armies.

Aya had always thought so too, until she met Tang Chou.

The damned training!

It was the first time she hated training so badly. It was not only her, every single person in the Pink Skull all felt that that they had entered the lowest level of hell. So training can actually be so fearsome!

If not for the Swift Army's training being equally demanding and harsh, Aya would have thought that Tang Chou had some hatred with Pink Skull. Either Pink Skull had offended an extremely

powerful character, and thus their situation was so bleak. Otherwise.....

But Aya and the rest still persisted.

Tactic Number 5!

As though it was instinctive, all the soldiers of the Skull regiment loosened up like springs and rushed forward.

The sudden change shocked everyone. In that shock, He Ying could not help but sneer. The task of the 2nd Army's captain was not not obtained by connections, his standard of leading and commanding was outstanding. So upon seeing the messy movement, he started to laugh, so they were just [paper tigers](#).

(Paper tigers means to look strong but are actually weak.)

Any movement of an army needed close attention, how they moved, how they collaborated, the energy synchronization etc etc, but most importantly, the general. The general was the backbone and in control of every movement of the army, it was apparent that the army in front of them, the woman did not have any intuition as a general.

No proper coordination could be a pretense, but if the general did not know what they were doing, that would simply make the army cannon fodder.

Cannon fodder!

He Ying sneered, although his vanguard unit did not have the numbers, but they were all experts, their fighting ability was not inferior to a real army, handling such cannon fodder was the same as chopping vegetables.

“Kill them!”

He Ying roared, causing the entire vanguard unit to become extremely excited, and they roared as they pounced towards their enemy.

The enemy was truly cannon fodder. When both parties were about to clash, they actually retreated.

So weak!

He Ying could not help but mock, his vanguard unit were all fierce and powerful individuals, it would be fine if the enemy did not retreat, but once they did, those fearsome soldiers would immediately become even more fired up.

As expected, the vanguard unit's morale was greatly boosted, as though they were on drugs, their eyes were fixated on the enemy as though they could already smell blood.

Aya clenched her teeth tightly, her face revealing a smear of red, she was leading the team to retreat anxiously. She had only then realized, the movements that the tactic training encompassed, was

always about running!

She was ashamed and angry, she wanted to break out in a rage. It was the first time in her war history that she would drop her head to run. From her grandfather to her father, they had always thought her to be brave as a soldier, to lead her soldiers by the front....

If they were to know that I am actually leading in an escape, would they crawl out of their coffins in anger?

This is too humiliating!

Tears kept rolling in Aya's eyes, she had always been at the forefront to fight and kill.

That lunatic, to actually transform the Spring Loop Blade into something so messy....

Regardless of how ashamed she felt, the training for the past few days had been deeply engraved in her mind. Her group was the most important part of the formation tactic, and she was the nucleus of the group. That's right, she was now just the nucleus of the group, the lunatic said that she was not a qualified general, and that almost incited the mutiny of the Skull Unit. Aya had led the Pink Skull for so many years, and everyone trusted her.

Although Aya was angered by it, but she stopped the rest. Because she noticed that, the Skull Unit did not have a general, and

she thought that the lunatic was blindlessly controlling them. But they were in a problematic situation, and did not have the leeway to be fussy.

She was counting down the seconds.

.....Four, Five.....

Seven, eight!

Now!

Brake, turn, close the formation!

The 100 of them did the same movement at the same time, everyone's pace had halted at the same time, the entire process being very natural.

Aya raised her head and looked at the sinister smiles on the enemy faces, at that moment, everyone's energy synchronization was complete!

The congealed energy barrier surged forth from their formation, protecting them in the center.

From their view, the enemies were pouncing towards them, their weapons brandishing out long tails of light, while Aya controlled her group's energy. There was one thing she had to admit, the

lunatic made sense, although she could control the entire Skull Unit, but her control ability was not considered good. But under the situation of 100 men, she could do it well.

Bang bang bang!

The opponent's attack struck on their energy barrier like a tide, the energy barrier rippled out intensely, everyone could feel a pain in their chest as the energy in their bodies were affected. The attack was intense, far stronger than what Aya anticipated, causing her to be shocked. ~Experts! They are all experts! Every one of their attack were tyrannical and fearsome.

She had never met with such experts in her life.

Aya bitterly persevered, using all of her strength to control all the energy, although the ripple on the energy barrier was powerful, but it did not break the barrier.

In the midst of the explosion, the energy barrier transmitted an intense attack that caused her to go numb.

She was shocked, the enemies were unstoppable, and out of every two persons was a silver grade expert. She did not understand why there were so many experts, it was too horrifying. They were enemies that they could handle.

After the shock, Aya's heart was overwhelmed with despair. All the members beside her were flushed red from their neck up, all of

them were putting out all their strength.

After about 10 seconds, the protection barrier would shatter.

Are we going to die here?

Aya who was being completely suppressed did not notice that there were two other smaller teams that were sweeping across and merging their attacks.

They had completed the encirclement!

The two small teams were like two extremely sharp blades that suddenly appeared in the center and slashed the vanguard unit by their waist.

Following that, six other small groups swept forward once again at an oblique angle.

In just 10 seconds, the vanguard unit was completely dismembered.

Aya only regained her senses after another 10 seconds, because the attack on the protection barrier had lessened tremendously. With her renewed life, Aya immediately raised her head. Assessing the situation caused her to be taken aback.

There were already many enemy bodies on the floor.

Seeing that the situation was unfavourable, the enemy started to pounce on Aya again. Aya was prepared to welcome the enemy, when a small team suddenly struck again, sweeping out from among the enemies.

Another two of the enemies were bleeding on the floor, the lucky survivors immediately started to retreat.

“Leader, don’t be dazed!” Triangle Eyes shouted, and continued to sprint along while with the small team.

Aya was invigorated, at this time her task was not to be caught in a daze, but to complete a small roundabout and enter the fray to complete the assault.

Tang Chou’s black face appeared in Aya’s mind, she immediately trembled and shouted in panic: “GO!”

Damn it!

~When this ends, I will definitely be punished with more training....~

He Ying stared at the battlefield in shock, the continuous dismemberment and cutting down of the vanguard unit shook him. The opponent’s were like a swift knife, all of their blades were extremely accurate like precise mechanisms without emotions.

The unstoppable vanguard unit were at the moment unable to put up any resistance. Their proud individual strength could not be displayed at all.

He Ying knew why they were unable to display their strength, the opponent had maintained an advantage in terms of strength right from the start, their formation was extremely flexible, accurate and fast like mechanical cutters. Even when the vanguard unit was left with three to five men, the opponent's were still engaging with their movements, slicing them down, without any pauses, like a perfect robot mechanism.

The stiff battle tactic caused He Ying's entire body to turn cold.

He finally understood why the opponent did not have the aura of a general, because the formation did not even need one.

How can there be such a weird tactic in this world.....

It was not only He Ying whose body had turned cold, everyone who were watching could feel the shiver crawling up their spine. They felt as if they were watching a gigantic meat dicer, continuously slicing and slicing emotionlessly, no mercy, tediously, dryly, without any enthusiasm.

Outside the Moon Manor, the shouts lessened, the wails and howls gradually stopped.

Chapter 633 – The Reveal

Hoo, Hooo, hooo!

Aya gasped for breath, the continuous assaults and killings had consumed every bit of her physical strength. Compared to training, the consumption during a real war was 30% more. Blood and body parts flew everywhere, in that situation, it was extremely difficult to maintain focus.

She was not the only one to be affected, everyone else was also seemingly affected, as their synchronization frequency had dropped greatly. If this happened during training, Tang Chou would scold, curse and berate them, and even punished them with even more training.

The people around her were also gasping for breath desperately, and some were even bending down with their hands on their knees. The entire Skull Unit was panting, it was their first time to use such a tactic in battle, but in truth, there was no need for such huge consumption, they had too many flaws. But quickly, they stopped panting, no one cared about it anymore, all of them stared at the scene before them.

They had even forgotten about their fatigue.

The empty circle area within them was completely drenched with blood and pieces of body parts, and not a single person alive.

In the dead silence, suddenly, someone started to retch. Very

quickly, it caused a chain reaction. Many people started to become uncomfortable and all started to vomit.

Aya's face was as pale as paper, the breath and blood in her chest started to surge, but she resisted the urge to retch. She had been through so many battles and killed countless of people, but the scene before her was something that actually made her uncomfortable.

Is this war?

Aya was still in shock, but soon enough she regained her senses. She suddenly realized that the most important truth was that they had obliterated the Vanguard Unit of the 2nd Army!

Impossible!

The shocked expression stuck on her face. The Pink Skull was known and famous in the circle of armies for hire, as they were widely praised by employers, but she knew of Pink Skull's strength. They could be able to contend against a bronze grade army, but facing a silver grade army, they never stood a chance in winning, even if it was just their vanguard unit.

Looking from this aspect, the Swift Army's potential was larger, because Xie Yu An built up the army using the regime and system of a real army from the start.

Although Aya never conceded, but she was extremely sharp.

When Tang Chou invested more time into Skull Unit, Aya initially did not understand, but she knew it was a good thing. Although the lunatic was crazy, but he was definitely a famed general grade. His time was much more precious than all of the armies for hire's time added altogether. He would not waste his time to torture them, it was just training that looked like torture.

The lunatic must definitely have used the Skull Unit to be test subjects and found something, that would be more plausible for a famed general. No matter how many ideas he has, he never tells us what they are for, no matter how bitter the training is, I will complete the training.

Since we are lab rats, then we will do what lab rats do. Aya had her own philosophy to survive, and that was the philosophy of armies for hire. She actually believed that the Skull Unit's position was lower than Swift Army.

But.....

After going through the battle, she still had not grasped and understood the situation, but from it she knew, that her guesses and thoughts were not accurate.

Tang Chou was one of those who acted extremely calm, but in truth, he truly was calm, and never feigned it.

Ever since he saw the tactic that Skull Unit was proficient in, Tang Chou immediately knew that he could use Skull Unit in a

completely different way from the Swift Army.

The Swift Army was a regular army, they wielded weapons and could engage in large scale battles.

But the Skull Unit was unorthodox, and were skilled in small scale coordinations, and even more proficient in protection, disruption and pursuit, which is naturally prepared to be used in cities. There were many limitations inside cities, with many structures floating in the sky, an army would have difficulty manoeuvring, and that was where the Skull Unit could perform.

But Skull Unit's own tactics were too naive and shallow, and being exploratory, Tang Chou made a brand new tactic for them. But Tang Chou had never touched such tactics before, and thus needed more probings.

But it seemed that the result had proven itself.

Tang Chou who was watching the outcome was satisfied. The Vanguard Unit was powerful, but it was a pity that they were not coordinated, they had truly wasted a good help, and thus Tang Chou felt slightly dejected.

With regards to the victory, Tang Chou was not very joyous. As their opponent was not a famed general, they were never a threat to them. What's more, Tang Chou thought that the enemy was not strong enough. In the entire process, the Vanguard Unit did not form a pressure strong enough for the Skull Unit. In other words, Tang Chou felt that the enemy was too weak, and that the victory

was nothing more than a test to prove whether or not his tactic had passed.

Tang Chou was one who had set his goal to surpass Master Bing, so how could he let such a small victory make him feel happy?

Tang Chou's expression remained cold, as though it was not them who won but the enemies.

“Xie Yu An, occupy the manor and begin defense!”

Xie Yu An trembled but complied. The Swift Army surged in like a tide and occupied the streets. If we were to say that Skull Unit circuitous alternates tactic was dazzling, than the Swift Army portrayed a totally different sense of aura.

The awe-inspiring formation caused people's hair to stand.

Woosh woosh.

Other than the sounds of the armors clanking with their movements, there were no other sounds, as though the army was like a silent beast, all of their footwork were in unison, as though they were one person.

Such solemn strictness was a show of their immense power.

He Ying's face turned as white as paper, he looked at the army in

terror, he did not dare believe that White Sands Continent would actually have such an elite army!

In the distance, the Bai uncle and nephew were dumbstruck.

Bai Yue sighed lightly: “I still don’t know, recommending Xie Yu An to them is right or wrong. In just a few days, the Swift Army has become an entirely new army. Even I cannot do something like that.”

Bai Xiao was equally speechless, in his eyes, Meng Nan was becoming increasingly more mysterious. In the past, he respected the strength that Meng Nan displayed, and that also made him become extremely motivated. At that time, the two of them were on equal grounds, as Bai Xiao had confidence in his own talents. He also felt that as long as he worked hard, he would definitely be able to surpass Meng Nan.

But as time passed, he would always realize that the distance between Meng Nan and him kept becoming bigger and bigger. Meng Nan was a perverse man that kept on improving at an extremely fast pace.

And then, with Tang Chou’s appearance, it revealed the tip of Meng Nan’s background. This tip of the iceberg was enough to shock everyone.

But when he personally witnessed the battle, when he saw how the Swift Army and the Pink Skull shredded their mortal bodies into some heavenly army, in which even He Ying, the man with

the most authority in White Sands Continent became completely suppressed, he immediately understood the distance that was pulled far once again.

Will such perverts always make people feel despair?

Bai Xiao laughed bitterly in his mind, with less competitiveness, his state of mind also relaxed greatly, he laughed bitterly: “At least he is still our friend, and not our enemy.”

The words buried Bai Yue’s shock, he nodded his head: “That’s right! It is fortunate that he is our friend and not an enemy! Whoever wants to provoke him would definitely not rest and eat in peace. This time, He Ying is the unlucky one.”

Qiao Yi An’s gaze swept across the Swift army soldiers in front of him, his mind trembling, he supported Master He Ying’s arm, and could clearly feel the tremble from his Master. He was extremely shocked, although Master’s temper was not good, but he was extremely good at running his armed forces.

The Swift Army soldiers did not even look at them and rushed past them like a tide and surrounded the manor.

Qiao Yi An squinted his eyes.

When the last soldier past them, Qiao Yi An was ecstatic, A chance!

He grabbed onto Master He Ying's arm tightly, and with a roar, he soared into the sky.

With that sudden movement, no one was able to block him.

“Stop him!” Ling Xia was the first to react as she screamed.

The Silver Winged Swordsman was someone with absolute strength, his sword blade swayed, zheng zheng zheng! Countless of silver sword appeared on his back as wings, his speed increased greatly, like a silver light arc that swooped through the sky.

Xie Yu An also reacted, his expression changed as he bellowed: “KILL!”

“KILL!”

Although the shouts of “Kill” was very sudden, but due to their long trainings, it still displayed a powerful might. All of the soldiers instinctively activated their energy, light auras suddenly lighting up.

Qiao Yi An's face became ugly, all of the hairs on his body was erected, he was locked down!

Damn it!

A clear crisp cry, a silver light shot out from the formation,

shooting out like a vigorous arrow. In the silver light was a transparent Swift. At that moment, Qiao Yi An had a profound admiration for the swift, the unprecedented danger enveloped him, inside the small swift's body held an extremely terrifying energy.

The Swift's wings were like scissors, both suddenly igniting with a silver flame, the swift's speed increased exponentially!

Qiao Yi An emitted an aura of a dead man. Just to escape, he had used all the energy that he had. But the speed of the swift was much faster than his silver wings!

The distance between the two closed in.

I'm finished!

Qiao Yi An knew that he was dead, when suddenly, a blurred figure appeared between him and the swift. It was the tall and skinny man.

"I Command, let there be light!"

The deep and severe voice resonated out towards the entire White Sands City.

A warm light shield appeared in front of the Swift.

The Swift clashed with the light shield, but there were no explosions, the light shield and swift popped like bubbles quietly, and dissipated.

The tall skinny man spat out a mouth full of blood and was flung back, but caught by Qiao Yi An.

In the blink of an eye, the two of them disappeared.

Everyone's faces became extremely ugly. If He Ying escaped, the circumstances would turn instantly. Especially for Ling Xia and Eldest Young Noble, seeing the cooked duck fly away, they became extremely vexed.

“Why did you not capture him? Do you know if you let him go...” Eldest Young Noble could not resist and shouted in question.

“Shut your mouth!” Tang Chou snorted, he looked at Eldest Young Noble unkindly. Eldest Young Noble was surprised, it was as though a bucket of cold water had flushed down on him, causing his heart to turn cold, and instantly reminding him that Meng Nan was not one to be provoked.

Tang Chou retracted his gaze. He ignored Eldest Young Noble, he did not recognize He Ying, and his main task was to pick Qin Yu Ran up. And, he believed that Master never bothered about He Ying.

He looked at Tang Tian.

It was not only him, the rest also looked at Tang Tian. But when they saw Tang Tian's expression, they were overwhelmed with shock, they had never seen Tang Tian's face being so dark and terrible.

Tang Tian clenched his teeth and growled: "Honorable Martial Group!"

As expected

Tang Chou's eyes lit up in flames, Finally, has it truly begun?

Chapter 634 – Finally, It Has Begun

“Success!”

“We have finally succeeded!”

Old Man Fei was beyond joy, the Blood Meridians Laboratory was in a fanatical joy, some of the odd tempered old men were seated on the ground, laughing foolishly, and even more were hugging each other, either crying, laughing, or jumping.

The Blood Meridians Laboratory had always spent a large amount of wealth, but had never truly made any substantial successful results. Compared to them, the Mechanic Laboratory had already become the backbone of Ursa Major Constellation. Inside the core department of Ursa Major Constellation, the Blood Meridians Laboratory always had little say, if not for Tang Tian’s support, the funds for the Blood Meridians Laboratory would have been cut again and again.

The entire Blood Meridians Laboratory was under immense pressure, but now they had finally researched out the most important results. That’s right, this most important result would become the greatest success for Ursa Major Constellation!

Spirit Light Eggs!

In the current system of Ursa Major Constellation, spirit generals were extremely important and could not be lacked. The entire war and fighting systems of Ursa Major Constellation were built by

Bing and Tang Chou, who were the most core and important members of Ursa Major Constellation. As spirit generals, upon being injured, they would not be able to receive treatment, and to Ursa Major Constellation, it was the biggest threat.

But the Master had discovered a mystical light egg, it accumulated rich Spirit Origins, and Spirit Origins could treat spirits.

They had thus called these light eggs as spirit light eggs, and for the entire period, they started to engage in a large scale research and study on it. Very quickly, they realized that although the spirit light eggs could heal and treat spirit wounds, but the spirit origin contained inside each spirit light eggs was too little. And when the egg matures, the Spirit Origin would disappear.

At once, the Blood Meridians Laboratory started to look for a method to groom the spirit light eggs, this process was extremely bumpy. A creature that they had never seen before, but not difficult to groom. But after taking care of them for a period of time, they realized that the black worms were not ovulating.

To look for a method to make the black worms ovulate, Old Man Fei became extremely fierce, all of them took a few black worms and used different methods to experiment. It was fortunate that the life force of the black worms were extremely tough, and there were no worries of torturing them to death.

Everyone tried their own ways but there were no prominent results. Until one day, when Lady Mu accidentally sprayed her perfume onto the black worms, resulting in the black worm

ovulating on the second day. Everyone then saw a glimmer of hope, they deconstructed the composition of the perfume and very quickly found the most efficient way.

In the end, everyone quickly realized that the light eggs spawned from these black worms did not have Spirit Origin, causing everyone to feel despair. Could it be that artificially bred light worms could not produce light eggs with Spirit Origins?

But they did not give up. They clenched their teeth and continued, after a lot of persistence and hard work, they finally found the reason. After the sixth day of laying the eggs, they had to use shattered spirits to nourish the eggs from the seventh to maximum twelfth day, leading to the formation of Spirit Origins.

After that, they found another way to stimulate the black worms to lay more eggs.

It was their first large scale grooming of Spirit Light Eggs, and when the rows of light eggs started to release a dim light that flooded the room, which was an indicator for the Spirit origins, all of them became extremely ecstatic.

When everyone finished celebrating, Old Man Fei stood up and clapped his hands, gathering everyone's attention, and the room gradually calmed down.

Old man Fei spoke loudly: "Does everyone still remember what Master Bing said?"

Everyone was stumped for a while.

“I remember it, The big ice coffin!” Someone suddenly shouted.

With that reminder, everyone started to remember.

“That’s right that’s right! The big ice coffin!”

“If I remember correctly, he used to be Master Bing’s old comrade, I wonder what Bing’s comrade looks like.”

“Revive him!” Someone shouted.

“Revive him!” Many more people repeated.

“Will we destroy him?” Some asked .

“Impossible, the Spirit Origins is harmless towards spirit generals.” Immediately, another person refuted.

“Furthermore, it was Master Bing who said it himself.” This answer dispelled all doubts.

“Go go go, bring out the ice coffin!”

Everyone immediately took action.

To be able to revive Screw, Bing had specially left the ice coffin inside the Blood Meridians Laboratory.

When everyone opened the Freezer, they saw Screw still inside the ice coffin muttering words as though he was in spasming. They all calmed down.

Everyone had heard of Screw's story. But, when they faced Screw directly, the shock they received was much greater. Especially when they heard him screaming the words "Southern Cross Army, advance!" that resonated in the entire lab, everyone's eyes turned red.

"No, we must definitely save him!" Lady Mu wiped the tears off her face and spoke.

Such a warrior was worthy of their respect.

"That's right! We must definitely help him recover to the fullest!"

That was everyone's thoughts, they all looked at each other, and could see the earnesty and determination in their eyes.

"I will be responsible for the Spirit Origins Tests!" Someone raised their hand and shouted.

“I’ll take charge for the shattered spirits tests!” Another person raised his hand and shouted.

“I will take charge of constructing the plans!” Someone else shouted.

“I will follow up with the medicine!”

“I will be responsible for strengthening the light eggs!”

.....

One after another, their hands were raised, making them look like a forest of hands. Emotions surged in their hearts, all of their faces were filled with determination and willpower. Their respective tasks were quickly delegated, and the true strength of the blood meridians laboratory were utilised.

“For Screw!” Someone shouted.

“For Screw!” Everyone else shouted back in unison.

Inside the Ice Coffin, Screw’s body shuddered, as though inside the insanity of ten thousand years, he heard someone calling his name.

Old Man Fei’s heart was trembling with excitement.

Finally, it has begun!

Under the grey sky, the tall building behind them gradually got further. The entire building had changed beyond recognition, the big door had disappeared without a trace, even the frame of the windows were forcefully taken apart, the entire building was swept clean to the point that not even a piece of paper remained.

Xiao Ran was filled with disdain: “I never expected you to be such a person! You did not even let go of those broken things! It seems like the Southern Cross Army is that rude, I bet all of you used to do all the petty things.”

Ah Xin was not ashamed of it, but instead extremely proud, as he spoke with please: “Xiao Ran, although your breasts are huge, but when talking about foresight, you need to look up to me. The door is an extremely good thing, after so many years, it did not even rust. I tried to cut in, hehe, but there were no trace of my blade at all. Such a good thing, How can I leave it there.”

“Then what about the window frames? You pulled them out as well! If not for Young Miss stopping you, I bet you will even take down the bricks!” Xiao Ran said with disdain.

“It is not a good habit to waste things, ke ke ke!” Ah Xin coughed lightly, and then changed the subject immediately: “Young Miss and Xiao Ran, both of you think I am like that for nothing? Think about it, Who am I doing this for?”

“Who?” Xiao Ran looked at Ah Xin suspiciously.

Ah Xin immediately patted his chest: “Of course for you, Xiao Ran!”

Xiao Ran immediately lifted up her huge Zanbato, and sneered: “Do you think great aunt, me is so easily taken advantage of? Taste my blade!”

When Ah Xin saw the cold glint of the Zanbato, his expression changed: “Hold up hold up! I have something here!”

With that, he immediately threw out the object, bang, it struck the ground and caused the dust and sand to be riled up, obviously it was the big door that he had taken down.

Xiao Ran’s face was extremely cold: “So it turns out that you’re trying to make sport of me?”

The Zanbato flashed down, and the blade tip was pointed straight at Ah Xin’s nose.

Ah Xin stared at the blade tip, his entire body became stiff, he raised his hand, and said: “You can give me ten times my guts, I will never dare to make sport of the beautiful and intellectual Xiao Ran.”

Xiao Ran's eyes flashed with a light, although her face was gloomy, but the cold intent had lessened by a great deal. Ah Xin relaxed, and immediately said: "I have spent a great amount of effort to change this big door, to make it suitable for Xiao Ran. Look, this big door cannot be harmed by blade or swords, isn't it an absolute shield? Although it is slightly too big and heavy, but to Xiao Ran, will it be a problem? It definitely won't!"

The color on Xiao Ran's face became better, she felt that Ah Xin was reasonable, the big door was truly a good shield.

It was just that dragging the big door to fight would make her somewhat embarrassed.

"Xiao Ran, you are now only able to unleash half of your true strength. You come from the Ophiuchus Army, without a shield, that's all you can do. If you have this indestructible shield, then you are like a tiger with wings, and can better protect Young Miss!"

Better protect young miss, these words shook Xiao Ran, she hesitated for a while, and then walked over to grab the large door.

The heavy metal door seemed weightless in Xiao Ran's hands.

Ah Xin swallowed his saliva with difficulty, just to pull out the large door, he had spent a tremendous lot of strength, and naturally knew how heavy the door was, but in Xiao Ran's hand, it seemed that it was weightless.

But he knew it was not the time to be in a daze, he spoke with a natural glib tongue: “Take a look, I have specially added a handle at the back. Although it is rather squarish, but they are rare. See this big shield, It is truly born to belong to Xiao Ran you, big breasts with a big shield, keke....”

Xiao Ran lifted the metal door, it truly felt good to the hand, and she immediately adored it, but upon seeing the line of words on the door, she asked: “What do we do about the words?”

“We leave it there!” Ah Xin said without hesitation: “We must leave it there! Think about it, the owner of this door is the creator of Spirit Cards. This is an extremely major and important character, but even he has to be respectful to Hai Na Fan Sen Te. A legend! That is a true legend! This big door, oh no, this square shield, is a legendary treasure. Hai Na Fan Sen Te is also an archaic grandmaster, so I even thought of a name for the shield, called [Archaic Immortal]! This name sounds so imposing, with the air of an aristocratic family, it will naturally be our family’s treasure.....”

“Our home?” Xiao Ran’s face darkened.

Ah Xin laughed out loud: “Ah hahaha, the barracks is my home, so we are one big family..... Oh no oh no, you’re really hitting me, I gave you a treasure and you’re still hitting me...”

“If I don’t test the might of this square shield, wouldn’t I waste your hard work?” Xiao Ran smiled

Beautifully, revealing her dimples, the square shield in her hands

danced with the wind.

“Aiyah.....damn it! I surrender! Heroine, spare me! Ahhhhh, I have already surrendered but you are still hitting me....”

“It is for your own good, to prepare you for a real battle! What are you doing? Kneeling down upon losing?”

“My knees hurt!”

“A man’s kneel is worth golds! How can you have no backbone! I have misjudged you!”

“With backbone comes more beatings....”

Hehe, without a backbone calls for even more beating....”

“Ahhhh.....”

Hearing the wailing and chase, Qian Hui who was at the front thinking and calculating could not help but smile.

Three days later, they arrived at a ravine, walking to the end of the ravine, a crack of blue light was revealed.

“The seal has already loosened, once we open this, we can get out!”

The young lady's face was filled with determination, she stared at the light crack and muttered to herself.

“Finally, it has begun.”

Chapter 635 – Bing's Plans

Bu Zi Fei never ever thought that he would be someone else's captive. Only after three days did he finally come back to his senses, trapped in his fear.

Are they going to kill me? Or torture me?

When he was truly in such a situation, he realized that he was not as brave as he thought himself to be.

“Master wants to see you.” The soldier that was responsible for watching over him opened the door.

The eye piercing sunlight flooded the room, and shone on his face. He became somewhat uncomfortable after being trapped in the room for the past few days. But at the moment, the fear in him gradually disappeared, and a tranquil calmness filled him.

Have they finally made their judgement?

He was feeling extremely calm. He was not unhappy about the loss, for the opponent was far stronger than him. Disregarding all the strangeness, in terms of individual strength, he had lost the initiative advantage right from the start. And what followed on after that, was that they landed in the opponent's arrangements, the opponent's general displayed extremely refine and high level commanding abilities, far more than him.

He was completely convinced of his loss, he was also brimming with curiosity to the mysterious general. Especially when he heard that the general was a Spirit Dyad, he became even more curious.

When Bu Zi Fei saw Bing, he was truly surprised, a Spirit Dyad that smoked.....

Bing did not seem to notice, he puffed out smoke rings and said casually: "Please sit, I wonder how has Mister Bu been for the past few days?"

"Not bad." Bu Zi Fei said calmly: "Although I had to adapt."

"What does Mister Bu have for your future plans?" Bing puffed another smoke ring and asked casually.

Bu Zi Fei's heart trembled, he knew that the time to determine his fate had arrived. He could die, he could live, even though he had gradually calmed down for the past few days, but the thought made him afraid. He steadied himself: "The defeated general does not have the authority to choose."

"It seems that Mister Bu, you did not think about it much." Bing thought for a moment: "I wonder if I have the fortune of engaging Mister Bu to take up the job of being my officer?"

Bu Zi Fei heaved a sigh of relief in his mind, Seems that my life will be kept. But straight after, a surge of complicated emotions surged, I will actually be the assistant of a Spirit Dyad He laughed.

It had always been Spirit Dyads being assistants to humans, But I might not be the first to be an assistant to one, but I am definitely the first as a silver grade general to be an assistant.

The pair of eyes behind the smoke seemed to be able to see into Bu Zi Fei's thoughts. Bing said indifferently: "Since time immemorial, the loser will submit to the winner, I defeated you, I am stronger than you, is it not right and proper that you be serve me?"

Bu Zi Fei's mind shook, and a bright light seemed to envelop his mind, That's right, I was defeated by him, what does the arrogance and boasts mean anymore? Upon thinking clearly, his eyes became clear: "This subordinate is willing!"

Upon saying that, he felt his entire body relax, as though he felt an indescribable anticipation for the future.

He was extremely curious about everything inside the stronghold. The strange fortification of strongholds, the strangely strong martial artists, and everything inside, everything was made to fruition under the hands of his superior, he had never heard of any spirit dyad that had freedom and responsibility.

"You have made the right choice." Bing said: "Your task now is to advise the rest to surrender."

"Yes!" Bu Zi Fei complied, upon accepting the reality, he did not have any distracting thoughts: "If they do not want to surrender,

how should I handle them? They have many people, and the majority of their families in Vast Star Continent.”

“If they do not surrender, lock them up, oh, you can make them do some manual labor.” Bing thought about it: “Do not advise those with families to surrender yet. Wait for a while, then send people to Vast Star Continent and bring their families over.”

Bu Zi Fei hesitated for a while, then said: “Are we not preparing to guard against Vast Star Continent’s attack? They will not give up so easily.”

“No, they will.” Bing scoffed: “The news of Vast Star Continent’s Three Armies decimation has already spread to the other continents. Now what they should be worrying about is whether or not they can hold their ground, and not find trouble with us. Oh no, what they should worry about is whether or not we will bring trouble to them.”

Bu Zi Fei’s heart trembled, He had planned for it long ago.

He has clear-cut objectives, but the Vast Star Continent doesn’t, another reason why we lost. But what made him feel shocked was that Bing had such confidence that they could beat the strong Vast Star Continent?

Such a person was truly befitting a supernatural deity!

Wait a minute..... Did Master just say, bring trouble to Vast Star

Continent?

Bu Zi Fei was somewhat shocked: “Could it be that we have other armies?”

The Precious Bright Village Regiment could only defend and definitely were unable to attack. And with the three powerful martial artists that need the support of the stronghold, with their limited fighting ability, they would not be able to launch attacks.

Bing smoked out a smoke ring, his eyes gleaming with a cold glint.

“It is about time it began.”

Inside the Blue world.

Song Didi looked at the war report and scratched his head with a weird face: “He actually won.”

“Of course!” Barbara said with pride: “Our legendary friend is definitely legendary. When we die, we will be legends too.”

Song Didi seemed to be jolted out to his senses, he finally completely respected the general of Sword Forest Stronghold.

He was finally convinced by Barbara, the two of them thought of methods to gather up an army full of Awakened Blue Dwarves. The excited Barbara immediately sent a letter to Sword Forest Stronghold, and the return letter shocked the two of them. Bing rejected their proposal to send reinforcements, but even requested them to take the time wisely to train, and even gave them a mysterious order.

To find the path to the Pontoon Bridge in the sea of light and await orders there.

When Song Didi received the order, he thought that the brains of the general of Sword Forest Stronghold was broken. Could it be that he thought he could rely on some village army to fight against a silver grade army? Song Didi was a Blue Dwarf that had received the military education and knew the disparity between the human village armies and silver grade armies.

If not for him suggesting training for the Blue Dwarves, in the eyes of Song Didi, he would definitely think that the other party was ignorant and incompetent.

The Blue Dwarves have short statures and had weak strength, and did not have any unique features with energy. But they were extremely fast, and after training, their speed could become even faster. They were good in throwing all sorts of spears and javelins accurately, and all of the strange type of spears and javelins produced by the Blue World were powerful.

Song Didi could see through it, the other party had referenced the human light cavalry, but he had to admit it was the best road

for the Blue Dwarves to expand on.

Song Didi continued to train the unit according to Bing's suggestion. In the Blue World, there had never been such a training for any unit, the Blue Dwarves war tactics were mediocre, and other than the tactic of numbers, there were nothing praiseworthy about them.

A brand new war tactic caused all the Awakened Blue Dwarves to become excited, their morale was sky high. What could be more exciting than being pioneers? Especially to the Blue Dwarves that awakened and rebelled.

Song Didi then realized that the Forest Sword Stronghold had long believed in themselves, and the task given to the Blue Dwarves was the harvest from the victory.

“Army, gather, prepare to set out!”

The first battle was about to begin, and Song Didi was excited.

Yang Zi Qing felt as though he was dreaming for the past few days, the war reports were like nightmares that came in one after another. He never had thought that Bu Zi Fei's Seventh Army would be defeated. Sun Jie's defeat could be said that they were underestimating the enemy, but Bu Zi Fei was a cautious man, and to still be defeated, that was not something that could be explained

with underestimating the enemy.

Their opponents were powerful, far more powerful than what they had imagined!

“What? The other continents have also received the information?” Yang Zi Qing’s voice was trembling.

“Yes!” The subordinate swallowed his saliva and said: “We have sent out a few spies, Qin Continent, Flower Rock Continent, Li Continent and the Meng Continent have received news.”

Yang Zi Qing felt as if he was struck in the brain by a punch, and was stunned. All of the continents reported were the neighbouring continents of Vast Star Continent. He only composed himself after a long time. All of the continents had sent people out, meaning that they had received the information earlier than him. He had only received the war reports three days ago, and he realized.

The enemy had long prepared for this!

They knew that they would win!

The consecutive defeats of two silver grade army caused Vast Star Continent to be placed in extreme danger. And when the other continents got wind of it, it was the start of a downturn.

Suddenly, a subordinate rushed in in panic.

Yang Zi Qing suddenly had a bad premonition, Is it more bad news.....

“Master, the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light was ambushed by Blue Dwarves, the 22nd Army was severely injured!”

Yang Zi Qing’s eyes darkened, he almost fell.

After a moment, he regained his senses and asked: “What happened? Why is there a Blue Tide all of a sudden?”

The Pontoon Bridge also had Blue Dwarves, but on much smaller scale. As long as they were few in numbers, the Blue Dwarves would become weak. That was also why the army sent to protect the Pontoon Bridge was an ordinary army.

“Reporting to Master, It was not a Blue Tide, There were only 1000 Blue Dwarves. But they were extremely cunning, they suddenly rushed out of the Sea of light and threw their spears, the 22nd Army were not in time to defend and suffered huge losses. After doing that, the Blue Dwarves disappeared.”

Just at that moment, another subordinate rushed in in panic: “Master, not good! The Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light was struck, there were seven locations that were destroyed.”

Immediately, Yang Zi Qing felt that unstable.

He forced himself to calm down, It was a calculated attack!

His first thought was Sword Forest Stronghold, he could vaguely see the intricate web, an extremely invisible and large web.

If.....if everything was planned completely by the Sword Forest Stronghold.....

Yang Zi Qing shuddered.

He focused and said: “I want to go to the Sword Forest Stronghold.”

Everyone immediately flew into panic.

“Master, no!”

“Master, it is a trap!”

Yang Zi Qing calmed down, with a look of determination: “I have to go!”

He knew that the Vast Star Continent was in the most dangerous crisis, and if the other continents were to confirm the loss of the Vast Star Continent, then what awaited Vast Star Continent would be the threats from the various continents. At that time, with the Sword Forest Stronghold behind them breathing cold air at his back, Vast Star Continent would definitely fall.

“Sword Forest Stronghold.....”

Yang Zi Qing muttered, a curious feeling throbbed in his eyes.

Chapter 636 – Gold Street

Honorable Martial Group has finally appeared.

What the tall skinny man used was spirit techniques, bringing forth the bearing of the Honorable Martial Group, although it was different, but Tang Tian still saw through it.

Honorable Martial Continent, the Tall skinny man was sent by the Honorable Martial Continent, who knew He Ying's backer would be the Honorable Martial Continent.

Tang Tian thought about Charlie, who had not sent any news for the past few days. Thinking about the messy situation, even if Richard wanted to find them, it would not be easy.

He Ying will definitely make counterplans soon.

But Tang Tian also suspected, if the tall skinny man had caught wind of their backgrounds. Honorable Martial Continent and Temple definitely had a unique way of communication, through the Temple, the Honorable Martial Continent could easily obtain information.

But Tang Tian did not think much about it, to ponder on it was useless, and it would be better to think about the upcoming battles.

Honorable Martial Continent's plans are unknown, but He Ying definitely will have no way of retreat. As long as he fails, he will be

dead.

He Ying would not have any way out, so how would they have one?

Tang Tian's fighting intent was soaring, he never thought that he would come into contact with Honorable Martial Continent so soon. Tang Tian who had entered his battle state would become extremely cold, calm and sharp.

He was thinking extremely quickly.

What they would be facing would be He Ying's 2nd Army, a true silver grade army.

Although the Vanguard Unit was destroyed and was a huge blow to the 2nd Army, but the vanguard units would only be considered a sharp weapon for the army, and not the true core.

If they were to fight outside the city, with the Swift Army and Skull Unit against the 2nd Army, they would have no chance at all. Ignoring the fact that the Skull Unit had won beautifully, but the time that the Swift Army and Skull Unit were in Tang Chou's hands was short.

If it was before, He Ying would want them to leave as soon as possible. But now, He Ying would definitely not let them off, they were no longer in the passive situation.

The lucky thing was the 3rd and 4th Armies were gone, if not, their situation would be even more severe.

But there was no news of the 1st Army, which was the variable. Tang Tian suddenly thought about it, Eldest Young Noble's visit was suggested by Suo Bi, that meant that Suo Bi had actually sensed something earlier on.

If they escaped, it would instead give the 2nd Army the chance to destroy them. If they were to stand and defend, they would be able to make up for the disadvantage.

"If we are talking about defense, Master, this place is extremely unsuitable." Tang Chou said directly. He never placed silver grade armies in his eyes, given enough time, he believed that he could transform the two armies into silver grade armies. But now, there was still a large gap, and that was the truth.

Although he had given the order to set up defense, but after knowing that they were about to face off against a silver grade army, he immediately voiced out.

"We will go to Gold Street." Tang Tian who was racking his brain suddenly thought of something. Bing was not by his side, Tang Chou was oblivious to White Sands City, so he had no choice but to be the one planning.

"Gold street?" Tang Chou did not know where it was, but Eldest Young Noble and Ling Xia revealed looks of startlement.

“Gold Street has many tall buildings, the terrain is extremely complicated and more beneficial for us.” Tang Tian who was in his fighting state seemed to have become an entirely different person, his sharp intuition and fighting experience enabled him to be able to take note of details he would not usually take note of.

Following that: “And in order to prevent break ins and thefts, the shops has rather good defenses, if we just change them slightly, they will become extremely good defensive positions.”

“If that is the case, that is a good location.” Tang Chou voiced out.

“But those shops belongs to the Lord.....” Ling Xua was hesitant.

But unexpectedly, it was Eldest Young Noble who spoke: “At this point in time, who cares about that.”

He was determined, after everything that had happened, he completely understood his situation. If not for Tang Tian’s protection, he would had been killed by He Ying without any of his bones remaining.

“What about them?” Ling Xia looked at the ladies inside moon Manor.

Upon hearing that, Qin Yu Ran who had rushed over anxiously spoke up: “Big Brother Meng, you must definitely save them!”

Tang Tian thought for a moment, and said: “Ling Xia, go and talk to them, those who are willing to leave with us can follow us, if not, leave them be. I will give them one minute.”

Ling Xia did not hesitate, although the ladies were burdens, but she knew of their worth. If they were to give up on them, they would most likely go to He Ying, which meant that their families would back He Ying up instead.

“I will go with you.” Qin Yu Ran said.

Very quickly, all of the ladies followed along. Qin Yu Ran’s display of calmness and steadiness made everyone trust in them, more importantly, no one dared to stay. In such a chaotic situation, to separate from the big group would be death. Even the people who aligned themselves with He Ying did not dare to stay. Before He Ying arrived, all of the small hoodlums would most probably find them first.

“Tell them to follow the troops, whoever drops out can just die.”

Tang Tian’s cold tone caused Qin Yu Ran’s heart to shudder, the Big Brother Meng who was in front of her was very foreign, or maybe, this was the real Big Brother Meng.

She knew that Big Brother Meng was not one to scare people, she quickly flew into the group of ladies and reminded them, encouraged them, and from time to time she would help them.

Tang Tian was surprised. Qin Yu Ran was performing much more outstanding compared to other men. But he quickly placed his attention on the incoming battle.

He was using all the time to recover, if not for the battle with the Qing Continent's Tyrannical Mounts that had completely exhausted him, He Ying would not have escaped. The following battle would be even more intense.

For such a huge group of people to move, all of the small bandits that wanted to exploit any opportunities naturally made way.

But they did not hide for long, for they believed that He Ying would arrive soon enough.

The flourishing Gold Street was completely empty, leaving behind a cold and bleak street, occasionally there would be a few people with malicious intents, but upon seeing the huge group of people, they were all so afraid they ran.

The defense of the shops were extremely strong, but the owners had already escaped, with no one left to control the defense, it would only require one to two hours for thieves to break through, so facing any army, the defense would be much weaker.

They clashed head on into shops after shops.

Suddenly, the door of the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce opened, revealing Xu Jin, he immediately waved to Tang Tian: "Over

here!”

Upon seeing Xu Jin, Tang Tian became joyous and ran over.

Xu Jin coughed slightly: “How can all of you barge into my shop? Our Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is an honest business! You can use everything here, but you must ensure the safety of my shop members, our Xu Ji Worldwide commerce is not related to your battles.”

Tang Tian was startled, Isn’t the shop still doing well? There doesn’t even seem to be any cracks anywhere....

Eldest Young Noble reacted the fastest, he immediately laughed out loud: “Of course, of course! Our grievances is with He Ying, we will only borrow your shop temporarily. It has no relation to the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce.”

Xu Jin laughed, and then spoke to Tang Tian softly: “You guys came at the right time, there are still a batch of things in the warehouse that were not sent out, there are good things in there. Oh right, your warship is here too.”

Tang Tian’s face immediately became elated: “Warship!”

“How can we casually touch our customer’s goods?” Xu Jin started to act upright and honest, and then said: “Everything has been installed.”

He then continued: “The next door shop, the Sun Family, and the Rong Family opposite all have good things there. Their shelves might be empty, but every family definitely has a warehouse, with no time to move their things, there should still be things there. Be fast.”

Tang Chou looked at Aya, who happily sprinted out.

All of the bad things were what the Skull Unit were proficient in. Aya was extremely excited, it was her first time to be able to outrightly steal and plunder.

Tang Chou brought Xie Yu An to the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce’s warehouse, they wanted to check and see what could be used.

When the warehouse opened, the luster and glossiness of mountains after mountains of weapons dazzled everyone.

They were all dumbstruck.

Tang Chou’s eyes suddenly became so bright that no one could look at him. All the weapons could transform Gold Street into a fort!

Tang Tian’s gaze landed on the warship that was placed quietly in the corner.

Lady Rou drank her tea quietly.

“I suspect that they come from Heaven’s Road.” The tall and skinny man said.

Lady Rou just listened and did not speak.

“I want you to mobilize everyone.” The tall and skinny man’s expression turned cold: “If they truly come from Heaven’s Road, then they are the real threat!”

“You do not have the authority.” Lady Rou’s voice was gentle and charming: “Furthermore, you were just guessing.”

The tall skinny man was speechless.

“My task is to seize White Sands, and cause chaos in the Southern Region.” Lady Rou said gently: “Even if they come from Heaven’s Road, what does that have to do with me?”

“You!” The tall and skinny man was enraged.

“You are too anxious.” Lady Rou spoke casually, her beautiful face was composed, she continued to sip on her tea: “So what if they come from Heaven’s Road, these soldiers that cross the river are all lonely orphans. The differentiated Southern Region is a big power, with it in hand, all of those lonely orphans are just ants.

That lonely orphan in the past, where is he now?”

The tall skinny man’s heart trembled, he knew that he had lost the verbal conversation, he was still inferior to her.

He took a deep breath: “You’re right. But you are linked to He Ying, if he loses, then you lose too.”

“You are right about that.” Lady Rou chuckled, and placed her cup down: “That is why my men have already left.”

The tall skinny man heaved a sigh of relief: “You could had said that earlier.”

Lady Rou said indifferently: “I just want to remind you not to forget your mission. Those families are the real trouble.”

The tall skinny man nodded: “I know the severity of the matter.”

“Have you thought about what happens if He Ying fails?” Lady Rou suddenly asked.

“If He Ying fails? How can he fail?” The tall and skinny man was surprised, his face was of disbelief, although they had just lost, but they still had He Ying who had three silver grade armies, and that was already an absolute advantage.

How can we lose?

“I said if.” Lady Rou chuckled, her bone chilling voice was extremely intoxicating: “If he loses, then let the pirates in.”

The tall and skinny man’s heart shuddered, his face overwhelmed with shock.

“If we cannot obtain White Sands Continent, then we will let it become a wreck.” Lady Rou chuckled: “With the multiple wars dispute, it will be enough.”

Looking at the beauty in front of him, the tall skinny man only felt his body turn cold.

Chapter 637 – Sneak Attack

“Go through there and make a path.”

“Pay attention to not break the energy barrier, place a Honeycomb Sword Cannon here, drag it out from the warehouse and construct the defense.”

“Reinforce it! Reinforce it further!”

.....

Xie Yu An walked up and down and gave orders loudly, his face absent of any panic. He was not panicking at all, he was about to fight with a silver grade army, wasn't it what he had always wanted?

Maybe when fighting outside cities, or maybe when commanding and leading in battles, Xie Yu An was not He Ying's match. But in terms of laying and arrangement of defense, he had absolute confidence in himself. In school, his academics had obtained first place for three full years, and until now, all of his thesis papers remained to be case studies.

With abundant resources and manpower, the complicated terrain, he had the perfect conditions.

Come at me!

The battle intent in Xie Yu An's heart was soaring, he sprinted everywhere, not knowing what fatigue was, screaming and shouting.

Tang Chou did not disturb him, Xie Yu An's arrangement and formations were relatively outstanding and tight. There were a few places that he did not understand, where it was most likely the difference in systems. What made him feel even more praiseworthy was that Xie Yu An did not show fear in the face of the huge battle, but instead was even more determined, that was an extremely hard to find quality, and was also one of the most important.

It meant that Xie Yu An had the qualities to become a famed general.

Wars were irreversible, and there are many uncontrollable factors, and brave generals who led their armies were more likely to obtain fortune and good graces from others. And the leaders that had great morale during battle, could also inspire others, causing them to be sharper, more determined and braver.

Such a quality was not one that could be obtained from practise, and had no relevance to self cultivation or war tactics. Such leaders would be revered, trusted, and more reliable.

In the last test, Xie Yu An had displayed such qualities, but even more so of his tenacity. To have tenacity and bravery, and even have outstanding achievements, his future was bright.

Tang Chou did not step in, Xie Yu An's talent and qualities were outstanding, but if he truly wanted to achieve the level of a famed general, he needed more polishing in real battles. And the incoming battle would undoubtedly be an extremely good place to polish himself.

The people that Tang Chou had to guide was the Skull Unit, they had gathered a large amount of supplies. The supplies would last them for at least two weeks. But to Aya and the rest, the upcoming battle was a foreign land. Only genuine armies would engage in defense formation related trainings.

But Tang Chou did not see it that way.

The Skull Unit were more proficient in small scale coordinations, upon entering the battle, it would become heated extremely quickly. At that time, the power of Skull Unit would be displayed.

Suddenly, intense fighting sounds could be heard from one of the shops.

Tang Chou's gaze turned cold, Intruders.

He quickly found the enemies, a few black figures that were extremely fast bringing about afterimages, like ghosts, were infiltrating the formation. As they were in too close a proximity, the Swift Army soldiers did not know what to do. All of the black figures were extremely powerful, and a few soldiers had already fallen.

Experts!

Are they finally here?

Tang Tian was at the moment learning about the warship, he adored the warship, and the members of Skull Unit who were the most proficient in controlling warships were pulled over by him.

With Tang Chou around, he was completely absolved of the worries for defense, as Tang Tian was blind in large scale army wars.

A lady rushed over anxiously, with a look of worry: “Mister Meng, Miss Yu Ran is not feeling well, can you go take a look?”

Qin Yu Ran is not feeling well?

Tang Tian was startled, then stood up: “Alright.”

Tang Tian followed the lady, suddenly, a sense of danger suddenly arose. This dangerous sensation was extremely sudden, without any omen, and it seemed to flickered in and out, but Tang Tian had been through a hundred battles, and he trusted his own intuition more than anything else.

In that moment, he secretly became cautious.

“Mister Meng, please follow me!”

The lady who was ahead suddenly struck a pose, she turned and her body suddenly became indistinct.

Tang Tian’s eyes was dazzled, in that faded afterimage, a slender finger moved ever so slightly, bringing forth a white light halo, it was extremely faint without a hint of qi.

That seemingly flickering sense of danger suddenly rose to its maximum, causing the hair on Tang Tian’s body to erect, that slender and white finger, accumulated a destructive energy.

Without thinking, Tang Tian shot his right fist out, Null Flames whistling along with it!

Chi!

There were no intense explosions, Tang Tian only felt his fist in pain, the finger had easily broke through the Null Flames, causing Tang Tian’s fist to bleed.

Tang Tian was shocked, ever since he had learned the Null Flames, it seemed to be almost invincible. Its characteristic to destroy energy, allowed the Null Flames to become Tang Tian’s strongest killing technique.

In a panic, Tang Tian's left leg suddenly kicked the ground, borrowing the momentum, his body retreated!

Who knew that his opponent was even faster than him, the scene before him dazzled again, a finger suddenly emerged quickly before him.

Damn it!

The terrifying qi struck towards the space between Tang Tian's eyebrows, causing him to groan, his body turned in a bizarre manner, he suddenly contracted himself, and like a like a fried dough twist, his right leg shot out like a blade.

When his life was in danger, Tang Tian did not reserve any strength, and used all his might in his leg.

The opponent could see that it was powerful, and did not dare to contend against it. The opponent's body flickered, and a finger struck towards Tang Tian's leg.

Bang!

The two of them were flung in opposite directions.

Tang Tian's leg had a hole that flowed with blood. He was oblivious to it, and stared at the opponent, and said: "Honorable Martial Continent!"

“Good eyes.” The lady was surprised: “To be able to recognize that I am from Honorable Martial Continent, it seems that Mister Meng Nan’s background is not so simple.”

Tang Tian never expected that even before he went to find Honorable Martial Continent, they would find him first.

The lady in front of him was powerful, and the strange finger was her spirit technique, and Tang Tian sensed the familiar qi that belonged to Honorable Martial Temple. But its might far exceeded the spirit techniques of Temple.

One of them mixed with the ladies.

“You are Lady Rou’s man.” Tang Tian suddenly understood.

“The rumors say that Mister Meng Nan is naive and dumb, but it seems that rumors cannot be trusted.” The lady said.

Tang Tian’s heart dropped, Lady Rou had arranged people to be kept inside Moon Manor, and had plotted it earlier. The lady in front of him was powerful, and was the strongest opponent that Tang Tian had met ever since entering the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and was even stronger than Qiao Yi An.

He did not know that the lady was even more surprised than he was.

Xie Fei was one of Honorable Martial Continent's Shadow Division's trump cards, and only because the mission was extremely important to Lady Rou, was Xie Fei sent out.

When there was light, there would be shadow, and the Shadow Division was the strongest division of the Honorable Martial Continent, the members were usually sent out for professional assassinations. And having ladies among them, made them even more obscure. If not for He Ying's failure, whether or not the mission was a success or failure, Xie Fei would not even need to take action.

Xie Fei was actually overwhelmed with shock, her sneak attack had actually failed.

It was her first time encountering such a situation.

Honorable Martial Continent's armies were not necessary the strongest armies, but their development in their systems far surpassed other continents. The Honorable Martial Continent was the sole place that had spirit techniques, and had a completely different training system, its might was far stronger than the rest. Xie Fei believed that all the strong martial artists in the Shadow Division were stronger than all the powerful martial artists of other continents combined.

Lady Rou had arranged her to be mixed in with the ladies, but she was rather disapproving of it.

To her, He Ying did not have any reason to fail, and Lady Rou's

arrangement was unnecessary. But she still complied. All of them were more or less familiar about it, Honorable Martial Continent's annexing of the other continents in the Western Region, the majority of them were due to the Shadow Division.

When He Ying appeared outside Moon Manor, she thought that it was over. But who knew that Meng Nan would suddenly appear, and almost took He Ying's life. But what truly shook her was the Skull Unit's robotic and accurate murder. That was the scene that overwhelmed her.

Compared to the numerous successes of the Shadow Division, the Honorable Martial Army still needed to prove themselves.

Xie Fei was ranked 23 in the Shadow Division, and had never failed in her missions.

When Xie Fei received the command to kill Meng Nan, she did not hesitate at all, from what she saw, Meng Nan had the potential to become Honorable Martial Continent's enemy. She did ample preparations for her mission, and did not underestimate her targets.

The sky of fire clouds at the banquet had left a deep impression on her, so she chose to fight in closed quarters combat, so he would not release the fire clouds.

To her, it should have been a perfect sneak attack. She did not hold back at all, but she only managed to inflict light injuries on him. She had abundant battle experiences as well, and knew that

although the injuries on him looked terrifying, but in truth, it was not much.

And, the grey flames just now, was strange....

Fighting sounds came up from above them.

“Mister Meng’s elite army are all being massacred.” Xie Fei laughed: “I did not come alone.”

Tang Tian’s heart tensed up, but at the same time, Xie Fei’s figure disappeared.

A glimmer of light aura, like stars lit up in the sky, suddenly emerged.

Tang Tian suddenly laughed: “Idiot!”

He did not dodge at all, and welcomed the finger of light, fiercely smashing his fist into it!

Fists after fists!

Grey fist images appeared like rain, smashing on the finger of light.

Xie Fei did not think that Tang Tian would actually chose to clash

head on without regards for his own life, and was not in time to react. Tang Tian had already released a few fists. She knew that she could not retreat, if someone were to retreat during a head on clash, they would be in more danger.

Meeting face to face, only the brave will win!

She used all the energy in her body, the slender finger erupting in another burst of light.

Chi chi chi!

Blood spewed all over, Tang Tian did not feel anything, and crazily smashed onto Xie Fei's finger.

Xie Fei's body shuddered, the energy congealed on her sharp fingertip, could hold no longer and erupted, she spat out a mouth full of blood and was flung out.

Tang Tian gasped for breath, his fists were drenched in blood, his flesh was visible and razed, blood flowed onto the ground. The grey flames that enveloped his fists, were much dimmer. His face was sinister, Xie Fei's finger aura had entered his body and wrecked his body.

But, Xie Fei was no better.

The destructive capabilities of the Null Flames.....

Tang Tian sneered, looking extremely bloodthirsty. Although he was slightly more injured, but his confidence soared to a sky high.

The biggest mistake of the opponent was to choose to fight him at close quarters!

Chapter 638 – Close Quarters Combat

Since ancient times, Intuition had always been the most mysterious force of all. For example, a veteran would always be able to sense danger, for example when something was about to happen, humans would always have a bad feeling in their hearts.

This mysterious yet powerful force had always been the target that humans pursued. Many distinguished people of the past had spent their lifetime worth of blood, sweat and tears, hoping to pry into this mystery, but up till now, no one had completely grasped this force.

Xie Fei was feeling extremely bad.

Meng Nan's closed quarters strength surprised her. She had initially thought that Meng Nan was not proficient in fighting closed quarters, but who knew that Meng Nan's closed quarters combat was equally fierce.

His strikes were powerful and fast, they were direct and efficient without any hesitation, filled with aggression, brimming with intimidation. If not for her personally witnessing the terrifying fire clouds, Xie Fei would have thought that she was fighting against a close quarters combat expert.

But, Xie Fei still had confidence in her own abilities, her expertise was close quarters assassination. She was not like those who enjoyed laying in ambush, using long distanced spirit techniques, she enjoyed to be close to her targets in disguise to take them

down, thus wrestling was what she was best at.

Close Quarters Saints' most remarkable traits were that they were as fast as lightning, and were different from long distance fighting saints, Close Quarters Saints could reach an astronomical speed in a small area. They were difficult to catch with the naked eye, and there were some experts who were so fast that even energy undulations were unable to catch them.

It was not only that, they could release techniques at an even quicker rate, in the time it takes for a match to light, they could finish over 10 attacks. While for the long distance saints, they would not have even finished preparing for their spirit techniques.

As long as Long Distance Saints were forced to fight at close quarters, the outcome would usually be miserable.

This was also Xie Fei's plan, Meng Nan had displayed his powerful fighting ability, and that was long distance battle. There were some saints who would lie between long distance and close quarters combat, like a swordsman, but there was never a person who could display proficiency in both. Although it looked like Meng Nan had some of his own tricks with close quarters combat, but Xie Fei firmly believed that as long as the pressure on him was large enough, he would reveal his flaws.

A human's energy also had limits.

The two of them brought forth two paths of afterimages, interlocking with each other.

Tang Tian's fist fiercely smashed onto an energy shield, bang, the energy shield crumbled to pieces, and the shattered aura flew everywhere, when three finger auras suddenly shot out from behind the shattered aura.

Tang Tian seemed to have sensed it, and when the three finger auras passed through, he used his momentum and kicked out with his right leg, smashing onto Xie Fei.

Xie Fei was not panicked at all, she withdrew her hand, and formed another energy barrier and blocked.

Under Tang Tian's leg, the energy shield shattered, but in that instant, Xie Fei disappeared.

Xie Fei had snuck behind Tang Tian, but before she could attack, a transparent blade made out of vacuum suddenly appeared in her vision along with Tang Tian's hand afterimage.

Her pupils constricted, she twisted her waist in mid air, and her head dodged to the side.

Ssssi!

The sharp air swept past her cheeks forming a sharp cut that made her feel pain.

So fast!

Xie Lei was in a difficult situation, Meng Nan's movements were just slightly faster than her, and once again he had guessed her location, causing her to almost die.

She started to doubt her own judgements. Her opponent was far more difficult than she had imagined, Meng Nan seemed to be able to attack positions before she had even arrived there, and she barely dodged in time. Her powerful spirit techniques did not seem to affect him. And there were a few times when she thought she had struck him, but to realize that it was his afterimage, he was actually able to dodge in outrageous situations.

It was her first time meeting an enemy that could so eerily make judgements so quickly, matched along with his efficiency, there were no movements that delayed, and his wounding power was also adequate.

Could my own judgement of him truly be wrong?

After exchanging 10 blows, Xie Ren finally admitted that her judgement was wrong. Meng Nan was definitely an expert at close quarters combat, and after the initial clumsiness, she slowly started to see Meng Nan's dao.

Meng Nan's close quarters combat techniques were extremely strange, other than the bizarre grey flames, there was not a bit of energy undulations, his attacks were purely relying on the strength of his muscles and body.

Strange, Xie Fei's heart jumped, she had found his weakness!

Attacking from a distance!

She suddenly increased the distance between them, of about 21m. This distance was not close nor far, but sufficient for close quarters combat experts to be unable to effective. And her spirit techniques were still able to attack him.

As expected, upon pulling the distance, she immediately felt the pressure lessen.

Light enveloped her ten fingers, lightly sprinkling the light, she formed finger auras that numbered like raindrops, surrounding Tang Tian!

Facing the countless of finger auras, Tan Tian's complexion became serious, all of the finger auras were releasing soft whistling sounds, but whoever looked down on them would definitely die tragically. The degree of congelation of the finger auras were far higher than Heaven Road's spirit techniques. The energy in the saints of Sacred Saint Galaxy far exceeded the saints of Heaven's Road.

Xie Fei was a Silver Grade Saint, and was a Silver Grade Saint that had enlightened on Energy Transmutation, a Silver Saint that was an expert in spirit techniques.

The spirit techniques that consumed a large amount of energy were easily released in her hands, flinging them out as if they were free, and her techniques were even stronger than that of Heaven's Road.

But, Tang Tian did not have any intention to retreat, with two regiment of flames in his eyes that continued to combust. If we had to say that Tang Tian made Xie Fei surprised, then Xie Fei was making Tang Tian excited!

Facing such a powerful opponent, Gong Chen was like a baby compared to her.

Sacred Saint Galaxy was ruled by armies, and in terms of individual cultivation, they were far lacking compared to Heaven's Road. Heaven Road's training was undoubtedly more effective, but the saints of Honorable Martial Continent who had both Sacred Saint Galaxy energy and Heaven's Road spirit techniques, were definitely the strongest saints!

Even Tang Tian had to admit that it was the most perfect match.

But, so what? They were Honorable Martial Continent, his arch nemesis! The arch nemesis of the entire Heaven's Road!

He had to win, he had to defeat his enemies, for he had no other ways left!

“KILL!”

Tang Tian roared, and rushed towards the finger auras.

Xie Fei was stunned, Is he trying to die?

But she was an experienced martial artist, as she determined that Tang Tian had made a mistake, that's right, to her, the enemy had finally made a mistake! At such a time, the most important thing was to grab the opportunity.

A clear sound came out, her entire body suddenly erupted with faint white flames, it was the energy in her body that was going through Energy Transmutation.

Her flexible hands were enveloped by the faint white flames, sprinkling out the countless faint white flames that flew out and formed finger auras, containing hints of the white flames.

Welcoming the countless finger auras that contained intense killing intent, Tang Tian, whose intuition was extremely sharp, could feel that they were sharp as blades, and were being pierced and cut by them.

But, how can I retreat? How can I run?

We got through that sea of blue with so much difficulty, and I finally got myself here, and finally found you!

~This young lad's determination, this young lad's resolve, this young lad's vow, hasd never swayed!

~Since you are destined to be the enemies of this young lad, then you are all destined to be defeated by this young lad!~

Come, show me what you got!

Come, let us fight with all our hearts!

Countless of images surfaced in Tang Tian's mind, all the images about the Close Quarters Combat expert that he had seen before. His personal strength had long surpassed all of them, but when the images of them surfaced, all of their attacks seemed to ignite his fighting intent.

Advancing without slowing down the slightest bit, but instead picking up his speed, at the same time, his hands that were covered with the grey flames, with a frequency that could not be caught with the naked eyes, he crazily unleashed his hands without restraint.

Fundamental martial techniques that were crude and simple, aside from being fast, it can only be faster!

His goal was the extremely dangerous finger auras!

Xie Fei could not believe her own eyes, Has he gone mad? She initially thought that Meng Nan would use his outstanding

judgement to dodge the finger auras, but who knew that he did not even have the intention to dodge, but instead use the most direct method!

Barging in from the front!

Under that intense danger, Tang Tian's attention was completely placed in front of him, his intuition raised to a terrifying level. The world in front of him seemed to suddenly slow.

Every muscle in his body, every tendon, was clear to him, he could control them on a whim. He could clearly see the trajectories of the light auras, and could clearly see the white flames that were inside it.

Pa, his palm that was covered in the Null Flames smacked onto one of the finger aura.

The finger aura was instantly destroyed.

But, following that, another finger aura touched Tang Tian's left rib. Tang Tian's left fist smashed down, accurately smashing the finger aura, Bang, it was destroyed.

Borrowing that force, Tang Tian continued.

Bang bang bang!

Tang Tian's hands moved extremely quickly without restraint, borrowing the force from the explosions, he continued to adjust himself. Viewing from a side, Tang Tian seemed to advancing inside the finger auras by brushing their sides.

Tie Da!

In the images in his mind, the Close Quarters Combat expert was using the Tie Da technique against his opponent to shorten the distance between them, it was extremely tyrannical!

Tang Tian unleashed his extremely powerful intuition to its maximum.

The finger auras and Null Flames touched each other, but did not stop Tang Tian.

Tang Tian seemed to be untouchable, his body flew forward like an arrow!

Not good, not good at all!

Xie Fei was shocked, she then noticed that Tang Tian's movements were not random and based on luck, his hands would sometimes be fists that smashed down, sometimes would be palms that smacked down.

Every movement was extremely fast!

Tang Tian's attacks were extremely accurate, in the blink of an eye, he could strike a finger aura accurately. What shocked Xie Fei even further was that he was actually borrowing the small force brought from explosion from the finger auras.

To even be able to use the minute force, who is he?

It was the first time that Xie Fei was feeling aghast, Meng Nan was releasing an aura that resembled a sharp blade, piercing her heart. Matched with his unreasonable and brutally direct manner of fighting, he finally broke through Xie Fei's calm state of mind, it was the first time that she was feeling helpless.

But she was still the trump card of the Shadow Division, her methods were not natural, she steadied her determination, after that short panic, she knew that she was at the junction of life and death, and if she hesitated, she would die.

Facing the threat of death, it also allowed her potential to completely be revealed, all of the complicated thoughts and hesitation were flung to the back of her mind.

The ten fingers on her hands lit up with a powerful light aura, and her fingers disappeared.

Bang!

Countless of finger auras blossomed out a white storm of light!

When Xie Fei's fingers suddenly lit up, Tang Tian already sensed the danger.

And the moment the white storm of light erupted, Tang Tian's face changed.

His astonishing intuition allowed him to sense that the storm of light was so condensed that it far exceeded his attack frequency. That also meant that Tang Tian's fundamental martial techniques were not fast enough!

It was the first time Tang Tian had encountered something that not even his fundamental martial techniques could be fast enough to match.....

When Tang Tian realized that point, he suddenly changed his posture, and his body suddenly froze in the air.

Chapter 639 – Predicament

Out of all the martial techniques that Tang Tian had trained in, his fundamental martial techniques were the fastest. Although he knew many martial techniques that could be added into his repertoire, which increased the speed at which he released techniques, but to Tang Tian, he felt that they were superfluous.

Tang Tian had trained his fundamental martial techniques to an extremely profound level, it could be said that it was at an unprecedented profoundness that no one else would ever reach due to the time invested in it.

Fundamental martial techniques lacked variations, and required almost negligible True Power to produce weak power, and was almost useless in battle. But it was because there were no variations, no True Power usage that made it extremely powerful.

Tang Tian's attacking frequency was extremely fast, and even Ling Xu paled in comparison to him. In battle, Tang Tian had encountered all sorts of situations, but it was his first time to realize that his attacking frequency was not high enough.

The shock that Tang Tian was facing was extremely big. Any saint, to find that their strongest point was broken by the opponent, that hit was undoubtedly extremely destructive.

Even for Tang Tian, who was a very persistent person, also revealed a thread of hopelessness in that moment.

What should I do?

The finger auras that were condensed like rain flooded his vision, there were too many of them, and so condensed that he had no place to dodge.

Chi chi chi!

At that time, time seemed to slow down even further, almost to a stop.

The finger auras entered the walls, ground and warship behind him, easily cutting through them like slicing tofu, leaving behind countless holes, making the place look like a beehive. Even the warship with its powerful defense, in front of the finger auras, did not even have the ability to block them off, the planks were sent flying, the deck filled with holes. And the finger auras that penetrated the ground left behind extremely deep pits.

Inside the light, Tang Tian's figure drifted like a withered leaf, helpless and weak.

Xie Fei's entire body was covered in a layer of dim white light, her cold might seemed to be bestowed by the gods. Her eyes revealed no emotions, indifferent and sharp, giving her all, she seemed to have entered a new realm.

The finger auras gradually got closer and closer, Tang Tian who was in a bizarre state of mind, was extremely clear of his situation,

and by the seventh ray of finger aura, he could no longer catch up with their speed, and was struck.

Tang Tian was forcibly shook to senses, for some reason, an anger was rising from his chest.

Could it be that I have spent so much effort, and have gone through so much danger, to end up and fall here?

No!

I said i will never give up, I said I will fight to the end, I said I will never give up any bit of hope, no, Even If I have no hope! I said I will get there! Even If I am beaten black and blue, even If I cannot be cured, Even if I am struggling at death's door, even If I have to crawl, even if I have to die!

I can only die at my end point!

All of a sudden, the blood in his body seemed to be boiling like lava, the intense burning sensation caused every corner of his body to combust. It was as if something was burning inside of him, something that was struggling to spew out, it felt like there was something roaring in anger, recklessly showing its determination, its pride!

I can be faster than this!

I definitely can!

The flames of faith blazed and tempered Tang Tian's steel like body, he was like a metal man jumping out of a stove, his entire body was flushed red, he attacked crazily without holding back, without any desire to retreat, the fundamental martial techniques mixed with his burning willpower ignited and exploded in the sky.

After training in the fundamental martial techniques countless of times, he was extremely familiar with every movement that he could not get any more familiar with them, they had become instinct. Not enough! This isn't enough! There must be a way to become even faster!

There must be a way....

Tang Tian was like a fish on the brink of choking, frantically trying to find the hope and way to live.

There is definitely a way!

He was screaming in his mind, screaming out loud, shouting to himself in hysteria. All of his senses, all of his intuition, all of his consciousness, all of his emotions, everything of everything, all of them were in the fundamental martial techniques in his hands.

Every detail, every variation, was unprecedentedly clear, unprecedentedly enlarged.

The sense of familiarity after training for so long was like a thick

ice block that was slowly thawing, all the foreign and unfamiliar details started to appear.

But, there was not enough time.....

Pa pa pa!

After breaking the ninth finger aura, Tang Tian was finally struck by one, chi, blood spurted out everywhere, and there was a new hole in his thigh.

Xie Fei heaved a sigh of relief, the opponent was finally injured, and was about to die!

But when her gaze landed on Tang Tian's face, she was stunned, H-he.....is actually smiling.....

Tang Tian produced a laugh.

The ninth ray of finger aura, compared to his previously sustained seventh ray, it was an additional two, he had destroyed two additional finger auras, that gave him a ray of hope, the hope of victory!

His attention was gathered to his hands, to his fundamental martial techniques, and totally ignored the sky full of finger auras. He continued to destroy three rays of finger auras, and seeing that he was unable to dodge the fourth, he ignored it, and allowed it to pierce his body.

Chi!

His chest was pierced, and left a deep hole.

Tang Tian did not even groan, he continued to expose his pure white teeth, the injury had given him the time to win.

Bang bang bang..... chi.....

The continuous sounds of explosions coming from the shattered finger auras, mixed in with the sound of being pierced by the finger auras, and the scene filled of shattered aura lights and blood drops that floated along. The young lad's face was so focused that he resembled a statue.

Even If I die, I should die at my final destination!

Tang Tian was persistent, far more than what Xie Fei had imagined, he was already struck by 12 finger auras, although they were not fatal, but the blood kept on flowing, making him a completely bloodied person.

Truly a tough man.

Xie Fei's mind was filled with respect, but she quickly cooled down, her opponent was severely injured, and was obviously spent.

Time to end, you are a brave soldier, I will use another way to end this.

Xie Fei's entire body lit flowed with light like a tide, flowing to her palms. Her expression became severe, she gradually raised both palms, and in between them, a warm ball of light formed above her head.

“Light, obliterate all!”

She muttered gently, and the sound of thunder boomed, all the energy in the surroundings suddenly jumped.

An extremely fine light ray shot out from the ball of light, and a needle size ray appeared on Tang Tian's forehead.

Tang Tian was locked down.

The battle on the ground was equally intense.

One after another of the black robed figures flickered around in the structures, they were extremely quick in their movements, like spirits in the night, taking lives after lives. Xie Fei did not lie, her task was to kill Meng Nan, while the elite assassins were meant to disrupt and create chaos, and not give Tang Chou the opportunity

to arrange for the defense formations.

In front of the real elites, the Swift Army soldiers were completely defenseless, and in a short span of 10 seconds, they had lost over 20 men.

Tang Chou snorted loudly and expressionlessly: “Swift Army, do not engage with the enemy, Skull Unit, it is your turn!”

Tang Chou’s command was immediately executed, the Swift Army quickly dispersed from the formation, while Skull Unit rushed forward.

“Tactic Number 7!”

Tang Chou’s ice cold order resonated in the night.

The Skull Unit crumbled like snow, and quickly formed groups of seven, they were like many small snakes, closing in on the elite assassins from all directions.

It was the most common method of armies for hire that encountered experts. Seven to a group, although their fighting ability was not strong, they were able to ensure that they were not easily killed, and their mobility increased greatly.

But the opponent were Honorable Martial Continent elites, they were powerful with plenty of experience as well.

They changed from fighting individually into a group where they covered each other.

Injuries and deaths quickly ensued, from the Skull Unit.

Tang Chou knew that the battle would not end so early, he turned and spoke to Xie Yu An: “Take this time now to prepare the defense formation.”

Xie Yu An nodded his head with a serious expression, and turned and flew out. He had also saw through the enemy’s intent, if the 2nd Army arrived before the formation was set in place, they would not have any chance at all.

And furthermore, the time they had obtained were exchanged from the lives of the soldiers of Skull Unit.

Xie Yu An secretly clenched his fists.

Aya lifted up her Claymore and rushed over, she was used to leading her soldiers by the front. She was the strongest member of the Skull Unit, and was naturally the backbone of the unit.

Every sacrifice of her comrade caused Aya’s heart to bleed. She now understood that the warzone was a completely different world, and was much more cruel and ruthless than the ordinary battlezones!

The terrain provided them a higher advantage. They could not invest in anymore members to fight, as the battle was determined to be small scale, but the entire battle was extremely gruesome, and the faces of spectators were extremely ugly.

The skull Unit had already lost over 60 men, but they had killed 6 of their enemies. Although Aya and her men held the advantage in numbers, on average every elite assassin they killed required an exchange of 10 of their soldiers.

Aya and the Skull Unit were angered.

More importantly, she had successfully pressed them out to the streets.

It was extremely crucial, because the shops were the important part for the formation. As long as they could push the assassins out from the shadows, Xie Yu An could then easily set up the formation.

After giving up 80 men's lives, Aya finally sliced the last assassin's hand off.

Blood flowed down, and the assassin coughed out blood.

Just at that moment, a thunderous voice boomed and spread across the sky.

“Light, obliterate all!”

All the energy in the entire street shook, shocking Aya and everyone else. The assassin that was bloodied suddenly released a fanatical light aura, and the craziness remained on his face, void of life.

Not good!

Boss!

Aya and Xie Yu An's mind shuddered at the same time, the blood from their faces were swept clean, if something happened to the Boss, then all of their hard work would go to waste, and that would be a complete loss.

While they were still thinking, Tang Chou suddenly ordered: "Skull Unit, return to formation, everyone prepare for battle!"

Xie Yu An and Aya were startled, the two of them looked towards the sky at the same time.

In the distance, one after another of light dots lit up the dark sky.

The 2nd Army!

"Enter the formation!"

"Everyone into the formation now!"

Xie Yu An roared resonated out into the entire Gold Street, he knew that the most crucial moment had come. The following battle was deemed to be intense. All of the defensive formations were guarded by the Swift Army. That also meant that the Swift Army needed to go against the onslaught of the 2nd Army by themselves.

Time was tight, their positions were not completely intact, much less invulnerable.

The 2nd Army were soaring closer and closer, and when Xie Yu An saw frigates after frigates, his face finally had a change in expression.

Frigates! The 2nd Army actually brought frigates!

Chapter 640 – We Can Only Fight!

The needle sharp light landed on Tang Tian's forehead.

Tang Tian suddenly laughed. This laugh, to Xie Fei, was extremely bizarre. Xie Fei's heart jumped, she suddenly opened her eyes wide, and looked at Meng Nan, he was incredibly brave and fierce, if not, how could he reveal such a bizarre laugh?

The slender light bore its way into Tang Tian's forehead.

Xie Fei's heart sunk, but she did not feel a bit of joy, she did not feel anything from the small ray of light. This made her feel extremely uncomfortable, but her [Light Obliteration] had never missed, could it be her own imagination?"

In the Honorable Martial Continent, [Light Obliteration] was an extremely powerful spirit technique, it referenced Heaven's Road's spirit techniques, but it was greatly strengthened.

Wait a minute!

From the corner of her eyes, Xie Fei seemed to saw something that flashed past, her body froze, that was....

Tang Tian's figure suddenly appeared at the right of her.

Blink!

Blink, Meng Nan is.....

Xie Fei panicked, Blink was a type of spirit technique, and the only place that would have it in Sacred Saint Galaxy was the Honorable Martial Continent. Meng Nan is definitely not from Honorable Martial Continent, that means he comes from Heaven's Road! Because Honorable Martial Continent's Blink also came from there!

Meng Nan came from Heaven's Road, that made her panic.

~But, Meng Nan doesn't even have a bit of energy undulation from him, how can he use spirit techniques?

She then noticed that on Meng Nan's shoulder, unknowingly had a childlike spirit Dyad. It was dressed in blue clothes, and with an expressionless face that resembled Meng Nan, it was extremely adorable. But it was just that the adorable face that made people want to pinch it was expressionless.

~I never thought that upon waking up, It will be like this....~

This idiot truly knows how to mess things up....

Such an eyesore!

Little Fool stared at the lady in front of him, she was emitting a

loathsome qi.

The darkness naturally dislikes the light.....

The blood stench pervading in the air, comes from this idiot, I never thought that Xie Fei would be able to force Tang Tian to this extent. Little Fool was secretly surprised. But after the surprise, he was filled with a dense killing aura.

If the idiot dies, then I die too.

He remained expressionless, doing hand seals, he then drew an arc in the sky.

Countless light rays lit up around him and crossed each other, forming a horizontal chessboard, with Little Fool at the center, it started to expand outwards.

[Graceful Sword]!

Xie Fei sensed danger, and the light ball in her hands immediately shot out a ray of light towards Little Fool.

Little Fool's body flickered, and he disappeared, causing the ray of light to miss. Little Fool appeared in one of the corner of the chessboard without any signs, his right palm grabbing into the air, zzzzi zzzzi zzzzi, sparks were conjured, and the black saint sword Ocean Prison was drawn from the void, the Void Dark Flames flickered in and out. Little Fool turned his hand and stabbed Ocean

Prison into the chessboard.

Upon entering the chessboard, the light rays trembled.

Wooosh!

The black Void Dark Flames swam like black wriggling snakes, all across the lines of the chessboard. If one looked carefully, one would realize that along the sides of the Void Dark Flames was a translucent flame that enveloped the Void Dark Flames, that flame was the Spirit Devouring Flame.

The light rays of the chessboard formed a large net.

Xie Fei's expression finally changed, the intense sense of danger flooded her mind. It was the first time she had such a sensation, and without hesitation she turned and escaped.

She threw the light ball towards Little Fool and ran.

Little Fool's face changed, the light ball accumulated a terrifying amount of energy. He took out a bead in his other hand, it was the Forceful Subjugating Bead!

With his pure white hands holding onto the Forceful Subjugating Bead, he looked like he was playing with a chess piece. He dropped it.

The moment the Forceful Subjugating Bead touched the chessboard, the flames of the entire chessboard appeared to stop. But in the next moment, the flames roared. It seemed as though the chessboard came alive, layered with a bizarre energy.

Wooosh!

The chessboard rose up from its horizontal position, and like a fire net, it pounced towards the ball of light.

The fire net was extremely nimble, upon touching the ball of light, it started to wrap around it tightly.

Xie Fei who turned tail and sprinted away was actually pleased when she saw that, and roared: “Explode!”

The light inside the fire net jumped, but the fire net’s light aura was too strong, and held the light ball in place.

Xie Fei was shocked, the last bit of happiness dissipated, she did not care about the enemies behind her any longer, and sprinted away at full speed.

Suddenly, a bloodied figure appeared in her vision.

Tang Tian sneered, and revealed his snow white teeth: “I was waiting for you!”

One punch.

It was plain and crude, without any fancy movements, just one punch, a fundamental fist technique.

Xie Fei was horrified, all the energy in the air was shaken by the punch.

Law!

~This punch contains the power of laws....

Tang Tian's fist lit up with an indistinct light aura, it was a light aura that was different from energy combustion, every part of it was throbbing, and the energy around them in the air was throbbing along.

The indistinct fist aura shot out, without leaving any scars of light in the air, but suddenly appeared in front of Xie Fei, and entered her body.

Xie Fei who was moving quickly seemed to be struck by some voodoo spell and was stuck in the same spot.

She widened her eyes, she could not move or do anything.

Little Fool stared at Tang Tian blankly, he could not believe his eyes. When Tang Tian released the punch, the Forceful

Subjugating Bead suddenly lit up. Laws, Tang Tian's fists actually contained the power of laws!

What shocked Little Fool even further was that he could not make out what kind of law it was!

The Forceful Subjugating Bead had a vast sea of laws, and Little Fool had immersed himself in it day and night, and had developed a profound understanding on all sorts of laws. But he was unable to make out what kind of laws was imbued in Tang Tian's punch.

~Fundamental martial techniques can actually be enlightened to the point of touching upon laws....~

Little Fool felt that all of his knowledge and experience were being toppled upside down, his mouth formed a bitter smile. What kind of freak is this idiot truly, to actually enlighten on laws based on his fundamental martial techniques.

I am still looking down on him....

Little Fool's mind was in a mess. The two of them were one body and were inseparable, but Little Fool never saw any good in Tang Tian, although he would occasionally admire his bravery and perseverance, but in terms of talent, Little Fool always thought that he was still stronger.

But.....

This idiot is a freak that actually enlightened on laws through fundamental martial techniques, and laws that I do not know about!

And, although it was for a short moment, but Little Fool knew that this unknown law was definitely not a law grade law!

Tang Tian's body flickered, and he started to sway as if on the verge of collapse.

He was completely covered in blood, looking extremely terrifying.

Little Fool stopped himself from being shocked and frowned: "What're you doing?"

"Fighting." Tang Tian swayed towards the warship.

Little Fool sneered: "You're injured to this extent, and you want to continue fighting?"

Tang Tian did not even turn back: "I still have strength."

Little Fool waved his hand, and the ball of energy that was wrapped in the fire net flew into his hand. Xie Fei had lost control of the energy, and it was thus congealed into a fist size white crystal.

“Don’t give other people trouble.” Little Fool said blatantly and coldly: “What you need to do now is recuperate.”

“I still have strength.” Tang Tian turned his face and stared fiercely at Little Fool.

With that, he turned back and headed towards the warship, leaving behind bloodied footprints. He clenched his fists, allowing the blood to continue flowing, the fire in his chest was still burning, still calling out for him.

The split second in front of death and failure, that unprecedented feeling of being defeated, that unprecedented feeling of despair.....

NO

No way!

What can injuries amount to? What can fatigue amount to? What can pain amount to?

In that moment, he had a great enlightenment.

In the face of true despair is where you don’t even have the chance to fight when you wish to, when you don’t even have to chance to risk your life when you want to!

You’re injured and tired, so in pain that you don’t want to live,

but you are still alive, still breathing, still imagining, still calling out, you hold the most precious things that all the dead people and all the dying people want, chance, the chance to fight!

No matter how badly worn out you are, at least you can still fight.

Maybe you will die tomorrow, and all your dreams and goals will completely die in the flames of death.

For what reason should you not fight? Because of all the lame excuses, all the lame remorse?

No, you, young lad, wants to fight, only knows how to fight, and will fight to your last breath.

The last breath of yours, must have the taste of smoke, the taste of dreams, the taste of greatness!

Tang Tian's unbending bloodied figure staggered towards the warship.

Heh, godlike young lad, go go go!

He Ying's roar seemed to have covered the sky and clouds, resonating across the entire sky.

“Kill them!”

“Leave no one alive!!”

“I want their bones to turn into ashes!”

“I want them to die without proper burials! HAHAAHA!”

The sky full of light, the frigate’s rumbles sounded like the cry of birds. Gold Street was filled with a myriad of unstable light barriers. Although they were created with a huge amount of wealth, but their initial construction were never for wars.

Boom, one of the shop’s light barrier was finally destroyed, a light grenade shot into it like a shooting star, the intense explosion razed the entire shop.

This caused the 2nd Army to boom with thunderous cheers, boosting their morale. They frantically activated all of their energy, focusing all of their attacks down on the formerly flourishing land.

“Master, if we do not attack soon...” The adjutant was extremely agitated.

“Wait for a bit more!” Xie Yu An said sternly.

“Master....” The adjutant was about to cry, the soldiers inside the shop were all buried alive. He had brought out all the soldiers of

Swift Army. He was responsible for their daily lives, and had thus formed close relationship with all of them, seeing the tragic sight made his eyes bawl.

“Wait for a while more!” Xie Yu An’s tone was as hard as steel.

The adjutant was stunned.

“Tell everyone to wait for my orders, and when they attack, do not hold back!”

Xie Yu An spoke softly, as though his throat was lost.

The adjutant clenched his teeth: “Yes!”

He quickly turned and flew off.

He did not notice that Xie Yu An’s fists were clenched so tightly that they were white.

His gaze never left the silhouettes in the sky, he stared straight at the enemies, calculating the distance. Tang Chou stood by his side without saying a word like a puppet.

The earth shattering attacks launched by the enemies seemed to have no end as they lit up the entire night sky of White Sands City.

Chapter 641 – Shi Sen's Movements

“The path towards the White Sands Continent has been locked down.” The businessman who spoke had a worried look on his face: “I do not know where did that big group of pirates came from, but the entire vicinity of White Sands Continent is filled with pirates. There are already a few caravans that have been destroyed, so listen to my words of advise, do not go near the White Sands for now, wait until this blows over. Sigh, business will be bad this year.”

Seeing that the other party did not have any interesting things to say, Shi Sen excused himself.

“Boss, what do we do now? Should we change our path to Shang Continent....”

Shi Sen's face was gloomy, he never thought that the path back to the White Sands Continent would be sealed. He had filled up his ranks of Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, and excitedly wanted to return to White Sands Continent, but he did not expect the path ahead to be locked down, and many business caravans were also stopped.

“What do we do at the Shang Continent?” Shi Sen said unhappily: “Master and the rest are definitely still in the White Sands Continent, you want me to sit by the sidelines and ignore Master?”

He muttered to himself: “What exactly is going on at the White

Sands Continent?”

Shi Sen was a veteran with plenty of experience, for such a large scale gathering of pirates was definitely done by someone pulling the strings. If not there was some attractive prize for the pirates at the other side.

Everyone looked at Shi Sen, waiting for him to decide.

“We have to go back to Master!” Shi Sen said: “Master is waiting for us now, if Master is trapped in a dangerous situation now, and we avoid the problem by walking away, we should just kill ourselves!”

“Boss is right!”

“That’s right! This life is for Master!”

The veterans beside Shi Sen all shouted as well, while all the newly recruited Demonic Mounts looked at each other. If not for Shi Sen’s reputation, they would have all left.

Shi Sen stared at the newcomers, and spoke: “All of you are clearer than me on how the reputation of us Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts are. In the past few years, who has looked at you as an equal? Now, this is a god sent chance for us to redeem ourselves, to give the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts a chance to correct its name. I think that all of you have suffered the humiliation long enough.”

One of the young man bowed earnestly, and said: “Boss, tell me what to do! I have come out this time with no intention of coming back alive. We will never smear the name of the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts.”

This man was called Huo Qing, and was the strongest out of the newcomers, and was the strongest Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts of the past few years, and had the highest prestige out of the newcomers.

Shi Sen also admired Huo Qing, as the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts had finally produced a genius.

“Then, tell me about your thoughts?” Shi Sen said.

“We need some equipment.” Huo Qing remained calm: “This way, we have the ability to preserve our lives.”

“Right, I still have money on hand, and can buy some equipment.” Shi Sen nodded his head.

Huo Qing unexpectedly shook his head: “Maybe it’ll be better to snatch them.”

“Snatch?” Shi Sen frowned, he hated banditry and repulsed bandits, hearing what Huo Qing say, he became unhappy, ~Have the new Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts fallen to such a state?”

“This subordinate does not covet all these small things.” Huo Qing immediately explained: “If we can rob or snatch a few equipment, this way, we can pass ourselves off as pirates. We can then borrow the cover of our opponents and go closer to the White Sands Continent.”

Shi Sen’s frown started to ease up.

Huo Qing continued: “There are many pirates in the White Sands Continent, I believe there are definitely those small time pirates trying to mix in. And there is someone pulling the strings from the shadows, but there are so many pirates that between them, no one would recognize each other. Pirates are usually competitive, even though they have agreements, but as long as the opportunity opens up to them, they will never let it go. I think that the area around the White Sands City now is a mess. To us, that is a good opportunity!”

“Well thought.” Shi Sen nodded his head, then said: “We will do just that!”

One day later.

A somewhat dilapidated frigate appeared in the sea of energy. In the night before, Shi Sen and the rest suddenly snuck onto an anchored frigate, and seized it for themselves. This frigate belonged to a trading group, and was part of the protection frigates.

There were some accidents during the seizing, and both sides erupted into an intense battle.

In the end, Shi Sen and his men managed to seize the frigate without any mishap, but the frigate had suffered from damage, and thus looked to be dilapidated. But luckily, there were many supplies on the frigate. With a large quantity of equipment, although they were only ordinary supplies, but it was enough to equip them.

Compared to that, the escape was even more thrilling.

Their attack had caused too loud of a movement, and thus seven to eight other frigates chased after them, if not for Shi Sen's experience, and their use of the complicated terrain of the Sea of Energy they would not have been able to break away from the pursuers, they would have sunk inside the Sea of Energy.

But through the battle, Shi Sen was convinced of Huo Qing's proud and arrogant nature. Although Huo Qing and the others were not weak, they had zero experience in battles, they were extremely new amateurs, something that Shi Sen and all the other old timers were shocked with.

Shi Sen used the time to train them.

New soldiers could not be trusted in wars, but these newcomers' training was tough enough, and soldiers who had earned the real name of Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, all of their individual abilities did not have any doubts.

As long as they went through a few battles and saw blood, these adequately strong amateurs would quickly become qualified soldiers.

As for outstanding soldiers, they would require even more time and fights.

The chaotic Sea of Energy was a perfect training grounds. There were pirates everywhere, and occasionally they would encounter danger.

Three frigates ahead rushed towards them.

The three frigates were pirates, definitely small time pirates, but a small fish would consume shrimps, seeing the lone frigate, the pirates immediately became greedy.

Three against one, no matter how they saw it, they held the advantage.

Seeing the incoming pirates, Shi Sen sneered, he ignored Huo Qing who was beside him being extremely eager, and turned the frigate to escape.

After fleeing, he successfully created distance between them and the enemy, and immediately ordered the frigate to rush towards the closest frigate.

The battle after that had no suspense.

Although Huo Qing and the newcomers were initially rather panicky, but under Shi Sen's leadership, they started to become more adept. Weak fights were the best opportunity to train amateurs.

After overcoming the initial mental barrier, the newcomers started to become better.

Defeating two frigates, the remaining frigate saw that the situation had turned, and immediately turned tail and ran. Shi Sen did not give the order to chase, but instead kept the loot, the pirates had far better equipment.

They advanced on a route of massacre, whichever small pirates they met, they rushed at them, upon seeing a large group of pirates, they would slip away. As they were only one frigate, all the large groups of pirates did not even have the interest to attack them. A large fish would eat smaller fishes, but shrimps were unable to entice them.

Along the route of murder, it allowed the new Demonic Mounts to become more experienced. They started to understand how to use their strength, learning how to coordinate with each other, and how to use whatever they had trained in.

Their battle achievements were rather pleasing, along with their spoils of war., Unknowingly, they had replaced their bird guns with cannons, their equipment became stronger and better.

Compared to the small scale pirates, their equipment were of the elite grade.

Shi Sen was extremely smooth like a loach, he slipped through the cracks of the pirates quietly and continued to advance.

As they got closer and closer to the White Sands Continent, Shi Sen became more cautious, as he could sense that the security had become even more stringent. Shi Sen had reaffirmed his suspicion that there were some agreement between the pirates.

There were many large pirate groups, all of their positions were rather set, they did not loiter elsewhere. He realised that every pirate group had their own area to guard and defend.

It was as though they had completely locked down the White Sands Continent.

No army could break through this pirate defense.

Shi Sen was secretly surprised, what kind of person would have so much money to control so many pirates. All of the pirate groups responsible for the inner circle, all of them were famous large pirate groups, all of them with famous people.

To be able to gather such forces, the person behind the scenes must be terrifying!

But Shi Sen was efficient, even though the security was tight, but

that was for all the larger scale armies, and thus there were still a few loopholes. Shi Sen went to the outer circle and killed another group of small group of pirates, and then chose an extremely ordinary looking small size frigate.

This small size frigate could only sit 40 men.

But Shi Sen had squeezed everyone inside, causing the small size frigate to be packed. Shi Sen then controlled the small size frigate and quietly slipped into the inner circle.

At this point, Huo Qing and the rest then realised that Shi Sen was actually very intelligent!

Shi Sen was able to sense enemy's presence from afar, and then when they had not found them out yet, he would hide. The Sea of Energy seemed to be his home, all of the dangerous vortices, chaotic flows, regiment of energy all became his best protection.

Once, they hide under a gigantic energy vortex, causing everyone to be extremely alarmed.

The energy vortex above them released an extremely bone chilling scream, causing the hairs on their bodies to erect. A big frigate would hide from such a vortex, needless to say a small size frigate, for fear of being sucked in.

But Shi Sen could actually find a calm location right under the torrential energy vortex.

After travelling over 10 li under the gigantic energy vortex, Shi Sen became calm again and started to eat and joke. This atmosphere made Huo Qing and the rest completely convinced of his methods. Shi Sen's talent was not only limited to that, he allowed Huo Qing and the rest to watch and learn how the patrol ships move and taught them to plan against the patrols.

They astonishingly got through the enemy's patrol lines, and Huo Qing and the other newcomers immediately viewed Shi Sen as a god.

But occasionally when they spoke about Master Bing, they would see that Master Shi Sen's face would be filled with reverence, if even the senior would respect that person so much, Huo Qing and the rest were extremely curious about Master Bing.

To them, Master Shi Sen was already so powerful, if Master Bing was even more powerful than Master Shi Sen, then how powerful was Master Bing?

A famed grade general?

~We can't wait to see him!~

Under Shi Sen's leadership, the seemingly ordinary little frigate finally went through the different layers of defense and reached the White Sands Continent.

Chapter 642 – Counterattack

Bang!

Another shop was demolished into pieces. All of the soldiers inside already had experience with it, and thus before the energy barrier had shattered, they had retreated. But still, 10 of the soldiers were unable to make it, and were buried alive.

Many of the shops were in pieces, and the remaining few were left swaying from the explosions. All these remaining shops belonged to the large family businesses on Gold Street. For example Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, their business were always flourishing, and the goods inside the shop were expensive, and thus the structure of the shop was not sloppy.

He Ying sneered sinisterly, his heart was brimming with a crushing delight, which was stronger than the humiliation he had suffered in Moon Manor. As one after another of the shops were being shattered into pieces, it made him extremely excited. All of you ants, go and die, all of you must die!

“Go up!”

“Pressure them down!”

“Trample this street for me!”

He Ying’s roar sounded out in the vicinity.

The frigates and soldiers were high on adrenaline, fighting with all their might. Until now, the opponents had not even attacked once. It was said that there were two armies below that were recently purchased. They had never heard of armies that could be bought. In the entire 2nd Army, they were brimming with disdain and disgust towards such an enemy.

The situation of the battle was going along with their conjecture.

In the face of absolute power, the enemy below are just a bunch of ants.

To fight ants, why the need for tactics? Just crush them. Crushing them is enough!

Seeing the approaching enemies, and a frigate that was less than a 100m away from them, Xie Yu An could even see the enemies on the frigates pointing their middle fingers and laughing. The dense mass of frigates and crowd circled around them.

We have waited for so long, and the time has finally come....

It is finally time for all of you to taste our power!

Xie Yu An used all the energy in his body and roared: "ATTACK!"

The Swift Army who were long prepared, poured all of their rage

out. Countless dazzling light pillars shot up into the sky like light bullets, the densely packed rain of swords shot out without warning towards the densely packed enemies.

The change was too sudden.

Everyone, including He Ying thought that the enemies had lost the power to resist, and did not expect for such a terrifying sneak attack.

At the start they were still extremely cautious, since their vanguard unit was destroyed, causing He Ying to be extremely careful. But with the overwhelming advantage, and the anger from the humiliation, he had finally lost his cautiousness, wanting to trample on all the ants. The soldiers of the 2nd Army were a group of arrogant soldiers, the entire Gold Street was mostly destroyed by them, and the enemies were still hiding in their shells, so they started to look down on the enemy. The seemingly battle, was just a performance, a beautiful performance in White Sands City.

Some of the frigates had even removed their energy barriers, showing off their bravery.

And when the powerful attack suddenly came out, they were completely stupefied.

Bang bang bang!

A few of the lower flying frigates were immediately engulfed by

fire, resulting in intense explosions. Countless planks and broken ship parts flew everywhere and the dense sword lights brought forth hissing sounds, which filled up the entire sky. Under the intense attacks, all the martial artists who were flying by themselves were immediately pierced by the swords, blood splattering everywhere, the sounds of their screams drowned by the roars of the sword lights.

Every soldier of the Swift Army roared fanatically, their ears could not hear anything else but their screams. They did not hold back in forcing the energy from their bodies into the warship weapons. All of the warship weapons were installed into the formation, and had become extremely powerful killing machines.

They used to be a bronze army in a small area, no matter how strict their daily trainings were, they had never gone through a real war. In front of any silver grade army, they had no power to fight. Even the intense attacks from their enemies had made most of them choke with fear.

If not for them having no way to retreat, if not for the daily strict trainings under Tang Chou that made their techniques instinctive, if not for their deep respect to their master and their close relationships, they would have crumbled earlier.

But at the moment, when Xie Yu An gave the order to attack, all of their fears transformed into fanatical battle intent.

Either you die, or I perish!

Boom!

Explosions formed fire in the formation, as one of the warship weapons was unable to handle the immense pressure and thus exploded, the explosion affected the soldiers inside, but luckily the degree of the explosion was not too powerful, and thus the soldiers were not injured. But after losing their weapon, the soldiers were at a loss, they had not exited out of their fanatical battle state.

Boom boom boom!

Explosions continued to ring out from the sky, as regiment after regiments of fires and light auras lit up the sky.

Tang Chou looked at Xie Yu An, Xie Yu An who was usually calm and peaceful was at the moment looking extremely deranged, but Tang Chou did not mock him at all, but instead had a look of appreciation.

Xie Yu An was a leader with outstanding talent, Tang Chou did not understand how an outstanding leader would end up being in an army that could be bought. Comparing the standard of leadership, Xie Yu An was many more times stronger than Aya.

Xie Yu An had arranged the formations extremely well, even Tang Chou who was a fussy person could not find anything wrong with it. Even with the tight timeframe, Xie Yu An had meticulously prepared the formation well. He did not directly use the shops as the main parts of the formations, but the warehouses beneath the shops, and the shops on the surface as a front.

All of these underground warehouses, hidden rooms, were the most important place for every family businesses, as they were used to store precious goods.

The shops on the surface were smashed into pieces, but the main part of the formations did not suffer many losses. And the warship weapons were positioned at even more stringent locations, making the formation so tight that no water could leak in. It was through meticulous planning and precision, that the light pillars, light bullets, and light swords in the sky interweaved to form an inescapable large net, a true death net.

Other than that, what Tang Chou admired the most was Xie Yu An's steadiness.

To ensure that their enemies did not realise their true intentions, the fake formations on the surface of the ground had soldiers garrisoned in them. The intense offense launched by the 2nd Army caused the soldiers on the surface to die, but Xie Yu An maintained his calm, and waited for the best opportunity to arrive.

His adjutant had urged him to execute the plan many times, but Xie Yu An remained persistent and did not sway.

An outstanding leader!

Tang Chou remained expressionless, the individual strength of the Swift Army soldiers were not strong, there were too few Silver Saints in the unit, and thus they could not sustain the fervent and

intense attack for too long.

But, Xie Yu An had performed far better than he anticipated, and the battle after that, would belong to him.

Tang Chou's eyes flashed with a glint of cold, the Skull Unit was already gathered and prepared for their counterattack.

Within his expectations, in a short span of 5 minutes, the offense launched by the Swift Army quickly dwindled down. The soldiers of the Swift Army were still lacking in experience, and did not know how to sustain in a long drawn battle. And the temporary defensive formations could not compare to the frigates.

Frigates needed an energy supply, and thus soldiers were required to calculate and plan how much energy was left aside for offense, but the warship weapons installed in the formations had depleted all of their energy.

But in the short span of 5 minutes, the result was remarkable.

The frigates in the air were swept clean, as the frigates were big in volume, upon being struck by the enemies, they were swept clean. As for the soldiers in the sky, a third of them were killed.

The destroyed frigates had earned the soldiers a lot of time, as they had attracted the most damage.

He Ying stared at the battlefield blankly, he never thought that

the situation would suddenly become like that. Out of his 2nd Army, he had lost almost half of them, and this loss had never happened before.

Impossible.....

He Ying could not believe his eyes, I was caught in a trap?

He looked at the street that resembled ruins blankly, his mind was buzzing, he was actually bitten by the ants!

He did not notice that a group had suddenly rushed out.

After resting, the Skull Unit had recovered their fighting ability, with Aya personally leading at the front. They had formed groups of 15, like many sharp poisonous thorns, their targets were the soldiers of the 2nd Army in the sky who were at a loss.

The figures swept past his vision, causing He Ying to be startled and regain his senses.

When he saw the situation clearly, his blood boiled straight up to his face.

These ants actually dare to assault me!

They actually have the gall to!

An army for hire actually has the gall to attack a silver army.....

He Ying had never felt such humiliation in his life, they were the 2nd Army, other than Suo Bi in the White Sands Continent, no one was stronger than him!

The 2nd Army are elites!

An army for hire actually dares to raise their weapons at us?

He Ying was so angry that he was trembling: “Kill them all!”

The 2nd Army soldiers all regained their senses, all of them flew into a rage, their eyes turned red, and without hesitation they rushed towards their enemies, they wanted to slash all of them to pieces.

But who knew that when the army for hire saw that the situation was bad, they started to turn and run.

Run? Where are they running to?

The 2nd Army soldiers chased after their enemies frantically, all of their chests holding onto flames of rage. They were experienced soldiers, and immediately knew that the soldiers in the formations had completely exhausted their energy, so as long as they got rid of all the runners, they would win!

No, at this time, no one was thinking about winning, they just wanted to slaughter, only by slaughtering their enemies would they appease the rage in their chests.

He Ying felt the same way to, seeing his own soldiers chasing after the enemies like ravenous tigers and wolves, The killing intent in He Ying's mind soared.

In the blink of an eye, He Ying suddenly realised that all around him, it was empty.

He lowered his head to look, his own soldiers had chased to a great distance.

Not good!

He Ying's face flushed white, all around him, there were only 20 bodyguards!

“Gather....”

He Ying's anxious scream had not finished, when the street beneath him suddenly produced cracks like a spiderweb.

The spiderweb ground suddenly split opened.

The entire sky was filled with dust, stones flew out like rain, a warship suddenly broke out through the ground.

Chapter 643 – Fight Side By Side

The appearance of the warship shocked everyone. No one would have thought that there would be a warship hidden underground.

He Ying's face instantly changed.

The 2nd Army also had warships, but they were medium size or higher warships, and such large warships were incapable of fighting inside cities, so he chose to use frigates. Furthermore, small size warships were extremely expensive, and their usage in battles could not compete with large or medium size warships, and if they were to fight in cities, good quality and cheap frigates were the better choice.

“Black Arrow Warship!”

“Damn it!”

You get what you pay for, the Black Arrow Warship was just a small size warship, its price was around the value of 10 frigates, and how could the 2nd Army not know of its strengths? A warship like the Black Arrow Warship was extremely expensive, and not even the 2nd Army could buy one. The Black Arrow Warship was most commonly bought by the rich tyrants to buff up their personal bodyguards.

Wait a minute..... A rich tyrant.....

The soldiers of the 2nd Army suddenly remembered, they were facing a real rich tyrant! He was a rich tyrant that used money to wipe out the Golden Rose in one night! A rich tyrant that used cloud coins to purchase two armies!

Everyone immediately came to their senses.

It was nothing out of the ordinary for a rich tyrant to purchase a Black Arrow Warship, but it would be weird if one did not.

And when they saw the position of the Black Arrow Warship, every single soldier of the 2nd Army started to perspire in cold sweat.

“Protect Master!”

“Stop it! Quickly stop it!”

Anxious and panicked shouts started to fill the air.

After the fervent attacks made by the Swift Army, almost all of the frigates owned by the 2nd Army were destroyed. When the 2nd Army realised that the opponent’s warship was a threat to He Ying’s safety, they realised that they had no more warships or frigates for reinforcements.

Their first instinct was to turn back in an attempt to save He Ying.

But who they encountered was Tang Chou. But the moment the warship appeared, Tang Chou's reaction was different from the rest, he secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

Master has finally appeared.

He was aware of the battle occurring underground, but right from the beginning, he did not try to bide for time, because he held absolute confidence in Tang Tian. In all of his battles, Tang Tian had come across a few almost undefeatable enemies, but the victor had always been Tang Tian. No matter how dangerous the situation, he would undoubtedly choose Tang Tian as the winner, always!

This was the only way to obtain victory,

His bet was right!

Tang Chou who heaved a sigh of relief was the first to react. Tang Chou's bearing as a famed general was displayed to full saturation. No matter how intense the battle, it only took one second to determine the victor.

“Everyone, attack!”

Unexpectedly, Tang Chou chose what appeared to be an untimely opportunity to give his command. If it was an outstanding general like Xie Yu An, at such a time, there would always be hesitation.

Because, there would always be their own judgement on the situation, Tang Chou's order that was seemingly beyond normal reasoning gave them all a chance to struggle.

But the Skull Unit led by Aya would not allow it. At times, being weak had its advantage. Aya and her team had not regained their senses, or even made their own judgement on the situation, they did not even have any understanding of the situation. So when they heard Tang Chou's order to attack, without any thoughts, they made their moves.

The soldiers of the 2nd Army who were preparing to turn, never expected the Skull Unit to turn to attack as well, in that panic, everyone became clumsy.

Due to their thoughts not being aligned, some of the soldiers stood in their original positions, some of them were anxious, some wanted to back the general up, and because of the different states of mind, their coordination became even more chaotic. What was worse was that the Skull Unit had rushed towards them without any thought, and all of the soldiers who were turning back to support He Ying were unable to react, leading to a loss of lives.

The Skull Unit, which did not hold superiority in strength, was actually not at a disadvantage.

Tang Chou was pleased. Even if the 2nd Army was cut by half, in a head on clash, the Skull Unit was still not their opponents. The Swift Army was only able to obtain such a feat because of the enemy underestimating them, and by relying on the formation and warship weapons.

Tang Chou knew that the Skull Unit's full force attack could not last for long.

But Tang Chou did not care about it, when the Black Arrow Warship had appeared, he knew that the one to decide the outcome of the battle was not the Skull Unit, but Tang Tian.

Without any hesitation, he once again placed the hope of victory on Tang Tian.

As long as Tang Tian could kill He Ying before the Skull Unit gave in, then they would win. If not, they lose.

All of Tang Chou's focus landed on the Black Arrow Warship.

Master.....

Tang Tian sat his bloodied body on the seat of the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, he was rejoicing in his heart, lucky for him, he had chose 10 soldiers of the Skull Unit to control the warship, if not the warship would had never been able to start. The Black Arrow Warship was a small size warship, and did not need many soldiers to control.

The battle between Tang Tian and Xie Fei had shocked them completely, they did not dare to leave the ship, if anyone was unlucky, they would be instantly killed by Xie Fei's finger aura.

The battle between the two experts were too fast for them to capture, furthermore try to escape.

When Tang Tian beat Xie Fei, they all rejoiced crazily.

But upon seeing Tang Tian completely bloodied, leaving behind footprints of blood, walking one step at a time towards the warship, they looked on with their mouths wide opened, Does Master want to carry on fighting even though he is so severely injured?

“You’re acting rashly, there’s no meaning to this.” Little Fool said coldly.

Tang Tian sat himself down on the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, his bloodied hands held onto the handle, and said with displeasure: “I feel that there is meaning to it, that’s all that matters.”

Seeing his stubborn gaze, Little Fool was helpless: “I’ll fight for you.”

Bang, Tang Tian leaned into the seat, he portrayed a smile, his face that was covered in blood revealed a smile uglier than a cry. Little Fool thought that he had convinced Tang Tian, but who knew that Tang Tian would laugh weirdly: “Hehehe, we shall fight side by side!”

With that, he turned his head, his face instantly becoming sinister, he stretched his neck and roared: “Forward! We’ll kill

them!”

The soldiers awoke from their stupor, and immediately sunk into a fervent state. There was nothing that could make them as excited, as their leader leading them into battle.

It was as though they were high on drugs, they placed all their attention on controlling the Black Arrow Warship, which sped out of the ground quickly.

“Godlike young lad, Go go go!”

His thunderous roar resonated throughout the warship.

Little Fool observed the enraged Tang Tian, the fool did not seem to have any feeling to the blood loss, his energetic muscles were red like boiled steel, emitting an astonishing amount of steam, he was burning hot, causing the entire warship to have the stench of blood.

True madness!

Fight side by side....

Little Fool shook his head, he kept Saint Sword Ocean Prison, and floated to a seat of the Honeycomb Sword Cannon and sat down. Little Fool’s adorable size, seated atop a huge chair, it was an unspeakable comical and cute scene.

Little Fool did not care, but curiously touched the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, his statue like small face was extremely adorable.

Rumble rumble rumble!

The warship directly struck the boulders ahead of them.

This crude and direct manner of appearing on the battlefield made Tang Tian instantly excited, and he started to shout: “Go go go!”

Idiot!

Little Fool could not even be bothered to roll his eyes, As long as this fool appears, peace and quiet will never happen.

But, this Honeycomb Sword Cannon is rather interesting.....

The thick rocks were broken apart by the Black Arrow Warship, the entire hull shook intensely, causing Tang Tian to become even more excited.

The first thing that Tang Tian saw the moment he rose out of the ground was He Ying.

If we were to say that Tang Chou possessed an astonishing eye for judgement, then Tang Tian had an equally terrifying intuition like

a wild beast. Without thinking, he launched an attack on He Ying.

He Ying was not able to react from the sudden turn of events, and thus was an extremely rare opportunity.

Chance!

The Sword behind Tang Tian's chair suddenly lit up.

Xiu!

A sword ray shot out, but Tang Tian suffered the backlash and spat out blood, and lost control of the sword aura the instant it flew out.

Tang Tian's face changed, trouble!

Although the Black Arrow Warship was a small size warship, but was a genuine silver grade warship, atop it were all silver grade warship weapons. Tang Tian's request for the change of warship weapons were also all silver grade.

The power of silver grade warship weapons were immense, but the criteria to use them were extremely tight. For example the "Heaven Devastating Blade", when used by a group of men, it required 20 elite blade wielding soldiers, with synchronization frequency of at least 75% to be able to attain its actual power, and if the synchronization frequency dropped to 70%, it would not work.

And for it to be used by a single person, it required a Silver Saint.

That's right, a Silver Saint.

Damn it!

The Honeycomb Sword Cannon was a grade higher than the Honeycomb Sword Cannon on board Qin Yu Ran's warship, that also meant that the backlash would be even more intense. Tang Tian who was severely injured could not guard against it, and thus receiving the shock.

What Tang Tian felt unhappy about was not because of him spitting out blood, but because he did not grab hold of the opportunity!

The sword aura barely missed He Ying, causing him to break out in cold sweat.

"Draw close to me!"

He Ying roared, the 20 elites around him instantly flew closer to him. Very quickly, their aura merged as one. The synchronization frequency within them was extremely high.

Xie Yu An's complexion became ugly, the energy synchronization frequency between the 21 men had reached an astonishing high of

92%!

He Ying was using this to show Xie Yu An the power of a silver army.

The astonishingly high synchronization frequency brought forth a powerful aura, it was just 21 men, but the power released from them made it feel like a small army.

So powerful....

Xie Yu An clenched his teeth tightly, his eyes were filled with worry, it was a pity that all of the Swift Army were on the ground, and he could not retaliate.

A blazing red blade aura shot out from the 21 men formation, fiercely slashing on the Black Arrow Warship.

Bang!

The light aura splashed, lighting up the night sky. The energy barrier of the Black Arrow Warship trembled intensely, the sound from the collision of both sides could be heard throughout the city.

Tang Tian held onto the handle tightly, his face twitching slightly, the warship's violent swaying caused his wounds to open again, causing blood to flow.

Tang Tian's expression became increasingly sinister and ferocious, meeting you face to face right now, only the braver one will win, at this time, it's either you or me!

Energy surged into the Honeycomb Sword Cannon frantically, the sword floating beside him became extremely bright.

Buzz buzz buzz

100 Swords in unison!

“KILL!”

100 sword light auras shot forth like rain.

Chapter 644 – Victory

He Ying was experienced in battle, and was extremely familiar with the popular warships. Upon seeing that only one of the seat of the Black Arrow Warship had lit up, he heaved a sigh of relief.

He had heard of Meng Nan purchasing a warship before, so it did not surprise him that much. But because Meng Nan did not have sufficient manpower, just buy purchasing a warship, he could not display the true fighting capability of a warship.

The warship weapons demanded a high synchronization frequency, and not any person could operate them. Rich tyrants enjoyed buying good equipment, but all that equipment would barely be used to their fullest potential, and would most likely be left to rust and collect dust in warehouses. He Ying knew such a degrading and rotten style all too well.

Seeing that only one of the seat was being lit up, it reaffirmed He Ying's guess, Meng Nan did not have sufficient men.

One seat required about 20 soldiers, this number tallied with the reports He Ying had received.

The Black Arrow Warship was a good warship, but with insufficient manpower, it was just a block of wood.

He Ying only had 20 men by his side, but they were all ironclad soldiers who had followed him for years, all of them were the elites of the army, and were extremely familiar with battle formations.

For them, they could handle 10 men with ease.

He Ying had confidence in himself.

Xiu!

The densely clustered sword auras flew forward, bringing forth whistling sounds towards He Ying.

Bai Xiao who was watching the battle muttered: “It’s coming.”

“It’s coming?” Bai Yue was confused and subconsciously asked.

“The Honeycomb Sword Cannon!” Bai Xiao replied, he was excited, recalling the scene from the last time, he felt as though it was all a dream.

Bai Yue then thought about the incident with the pirates, in that battle, it was said that Meng Nan was the one controlling the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, which was extremely out of the ordinary.

He was also brimming with curiosity.

A light flickered in He Ying’s eyes, the Honeycomb Sword Cannon!

It is of some standard, for this degree of concentration, the opponent's standard is not too bad. But with just this, you think you can kill a silver general, you're belittling me.

He Ying revealed a sneer, under his control, the synchronised energy quickly formed a red tempest which protected them in the center.

If looked at carefully, one would realize that the high speed red tempest had countless of dark red granules inside, which were formed by energy, causing the tempest to become even stronger.

The Honeycomb Sword Auras struck the wall of tempest, causing countless of chaotic flows, but the tempest wall stood majestically.

The Honeycomb Sword Cannon was mostly used to fight loose and disorganized soldiers, it was not overly powerful, but it could shoot many sword auras per time, and the radius covered a rather large area.

He Ying had full confidence in his [Red Granule Tempest], its defensive properties were much stronger than ordinary energy barriers, its inspiration stemmed from sandstorms in the desert. The high revolving airflows could disperse enemy attacks, and at the same time increase its defense. And the large quantity of strong and heavy sand granules mixed in the tempest allowed the tempest to become denser and harder to break through.

Even powerful destructive attacks were unable to sway the [Red Granule Tempest], let alone the Honeycomb Sword Cannon.

Furthermore, although the Honeycomb Sword Cannon could shoot out many sword auras at once, it's offensive frequency was not too great. After every wave of attacks, it would require a stoppage, which would be overcome by having many ship crews alternate. But currently, his opponent only had one Honeycomb Sword Cannon, and thus its limitations were very prevailing.

To He Ying, a silver grade general, as long as there was a flaw, he could completely overturn the situation. Furthermore, it was a fatal flaw.

The sword auras that struck the Red Granule Tempest were all shattered.

Time for a counterattack!

Just as He Ying was about to counterattack, in the next moment, his expression froze.

Xiu!

Yet another ear numbing whistling sound came out, and another torrent of sword auras struck the Red Granule Tempest.

He Ying almost jumped up, Impossible.....

The Honeycomb Sword Cannon's energy impact was relatively

large, and no one was able to ignore the backlash, he had never seen a team that could continuously fire off the Honeycomb Sword Cannon before, it was not reasonable!

Xiu xiu xiu!

The condensed whistling sounds cut through the night sky, wave after wave of sword aura poured, as though a rain of light was descending from the Black Arrow Warship onto the Red Granule Tempest.

Boom boom boom!

The sword auras continued to strike the tempest, countless of light aura flew everywhere, the tempest blew the sword auras into pieces, but maintained extremely stable.

He Ying, revealing a look of shock, forced himself to calm down, and continued to channel the [Red Granule Tempest]. The powerful defensive capability of Red Granule Tempest was displayed to saturation, the pouring of sword auras did not do much to the Tempest.

“God!”

Bai Yue had his hands holding onto the top of his head, his face full of disbelief, he had heard from Bai Xiao how Meng Nan used the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, but to personally witness how the weapon was used without any pause, the continuous onslaught of

sword auras spraying out, he felt as if his logical reasoning was being overturned.

Wait a minute!

He suddenly trembled, as a famed general, he had sharply and immediately captured the important point, if such a scene were to occur in a war.....

If it was just one warship, and all of the weapons could do the same.....

He trembled, he knew that if the freak of a warship truly appeared in the battlefield, who could stop it? No, no one could stop it, if every warship of a convoy could be like that, then no one in the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy could stop them!

Bai Yue dare not think further, just thought of the outcome caused his hands to turn cold. He stared intently at the battlefield, afraid to miss any minute details.

That loud and noisy person, how many secrets is he truly hiding?

The countless of sword auras formed a flow, continuously hitting onto the red tempest.

It was just a short span of 10 seconds, but He Ying felt as if he was dragged to a year. The Red Granule Tempest had remarkable defense, but the sword auras were too numerous, and with the

continuous onslaught, He Ying was placed under an immense pressure. The energy in their bodies were quickly depleting.

Other than holding on, He Ying did not have any other ideas. The Red Granule Tempest started to sway, and if it continued, they would be swallowed by the sword auras, and even their bones will be wiped out.

“Everyone, hold on!” He Ying roared: “The enemy cannot last for so long!”

All of his bodyguards clenched their teeth and bitterly held on, they had absolute trust in He Ying, and, they also believed that the enemies could not hold on any longer, such a crazy attack was something that no one could keep releasing!

It was a battle of will, whoever revealed their flaw first would be the loser.

Little Fool held the handle of the Honeycomb Sword Cannon, the screams of Tang Tian beside him drilled into his ears. He remained aloof, as though he could not hear anything. Until now, he had not even attacked once, the expression on his face remained normal, as though the situation in front of him did not concern him at all.

Sssi!

Tang Tian’s roar suddenly stopped, the overheated Honeycomb Sword Cannon exploded and shattered into pieces and dust, the

dust covering the entire place, and Tang Tian sat there without reaction.

There was only a thought in his mind, how could the Honeycomb Sword Cannon be so weak?

Chance!

He Ying who was stubbornly holding on rejoiced, that's right, even if the enemy soldiers could bear the terrifying backlash, the Honeycomb Sword Cannon itself was unable to bear the burden.

No one knew that, the moment that Tang Tian's Honeycomb Sword Cannon exploded, the emotionless and ignorant Little Fool's eyes suddenly lit up with a cold glint.

The long sword floating behind him lit up at the same time.

A burst of sword aura shot towards He Ying.

He Ying who was just about to counterattack suddenly heard the whistle, and was shocked yet again, the enemies actually still had people! What made him feel even more unease was that he did not even notice the enemy attacking. It was too sudden.

But it was just a burst of sword auras, and not like the flow of sword aura, causing He Ying to feel slightly more at ease.

Even before he could rejoice, the whistling sound in the air changed, the initially low resounding whistle suddenly became extremely sharp, like a needle piercing into the brain.

He Ying's face became ugly, he raised his head to look, the burst of sword rain had actually merged into a dazzling sword aura!

He Ying's heart trembled, it was only one sword aura, but the tail of light that was dragged behind released an imposing might and aura, compared to the burst of sword rain, it was many times stronger!

A Swordsman!

He Ying suddenly reacted, only a swordsman that had a profound understanding of the sword, could be able to produce such a terrifying attack with the Honeycomb Sword Cannon!

He then understood why the opponent had managed to attack without any warning.

Little Fool who was enlightened on sword laws was ahead of Tang Tian in terms of understanding and using the Honeycomb Sword Cannon. He had simply got in touch with it for a moment, and Little Fool already understood the weapon. Tang Tian's brute way of attacking made Little Fool scoff in his mind, but luckily for Tang Tian, it was effective, thus Little Fool did not do anything, and simply waited for the opportunity to arise.

Little Fool who had a profound comprehension of sword laws was able to use the Honeycomb Sword Cannon to an incredibly powerful degree.

Damn it!

He Ying's whose face was flushed white shouted: "Be careful!"

Before he could finish his words, the dazzling sword aura, bringing along a straight and dazzling light trace struck heavily onto the Red Granule Tempest.

Boom!

The Red Granule Tempest trembled, He Ying and the others inside felt their throats turning sweet, the corners of their mouths had traces of blood, their faces overwhelmed with shock.

But they knew it was not time to panic. The terrifying attack must have caused the operator to feel a huge energy charge, and a swordsman's body had never been their strongest suit.

A chessboard floated beneath Little Fool's legs, the intense backlash surged into Little Fool's body, but the chessboard suddenly lit up, Bang, it shattered.

Little Fool's body trembled, although majority of the energy charge backlash had been tolerated by the chessboard, but the remaining backlash was not light either, and he was too weak to

attack again.

Warship weapons are not suitable for spirit generals at all.....

Blood leaked out from the corner of his mouth, causing the cold smile on his face to become even more terrifying. His task was completed, his attack had given Tang Tian the chance to jump aboard another Honeycomb Sword Cannon.

The floating sword behind the seat lit up once again. Amidst Tang Tian's roar, the terrifying flow of sword auras spewed out once again!

Wave after wave of terrifying energy backlash surged into Tang Tian's body, his body trembled like a sieve as the blood in his body continue to surge in pain.

He remained oblivious to his body, the rage in his eyes spewing fire, he roared like a tiger!

The violent surging flow of sword auras struck the Red Granule Tempest in the most brute way, the violent tempest had met with an even more violent enemy.

He Ying's face was flushed as white as paper, after the heavy sword attack, although they had managed to block it, but the Red Granule Tempest was equally damaged.

Boom!

The red granule tempest shattered completely.

No.....

He wanted to roar out loud, but he could not find his voice, his vision turned a pure white.

The flow of sword auras that had lost control shot forth everywhere, destroying everything in its wake.

Chapter 645 – The Five Southern Island Families

“Ouch, sssiiiiii....”

Tang Tian's wails came out of the house, he laid on the bed, his entire body wrapped in bloodied bandages, only revealing his eyes. He could not even move a finger. He had went overboard fighting He Ying. In a short span of time, his body had to bear the intense energy charge backlash, causing him to feel as though his entire body was being struck by a heavy hammer countless of times, causing him to feel numb all over.

And the pain was actually from the blood that was still bleeding out.

When Tang Tian was pulled out of the warship, everyone was shocked, every inch of his skin was bleeding, as though he was dragged out of a blood pool, and many of his wounds were still overflowing with blood.

Everyone thought that Tang Tian was weak due to the loss of blood, but after a check by the doctor, they realised that Tang Tian was still strong. Tang Tian's pain did not come from being weak, but because he was overflowing with blood, causing his veins and arteries to be in excruciating pain.

This result shocked everyone, all of them could only laugh awkwardly, As expected of a perverse man, after losing so much blood, he was actually still in vigorous and healthy shape.

Amidst Tang Tian's screams, Shi Sen respectfully reported his battle reports, while Huo Qing stood by the side, curiously taking a few glances at their boss, who was overly young.

The battle did not stop because of He Ying's death. Seeing that the situation had gone awry, Lady Rou had given the order for the pirates to attack. Seeing that White Sands Continent was about to be flooded with pirates, Eldest Young Noble had appeared in the barracks of the 2nd and 3rd Army. He Ying and the Continent Lord was dead, Lady Rou had disappeared without a trace, the two commanders of the armies hesitated for a moment, before choosing to surrender.

But Eldest Young Noble decided to give them a chance to redeem themselves, and requested to to defend against the Pirates. The two large armies who initially thought they would be sentenced to death were beyond joyous, they resisted the pirates with all their might, clashing and stopping the pirates.

The 1st Army that had disappeared for many days appeared behind the pirates, and launched an immense attack.

The pirates were immediately caught in a chaotic situation.

Lian Bo Jun's Black Mountain Pirates turncoat against the pirates became the final straw, the alliance between the pirates completely crumbled, and the 2nd and 3rd Army took the chance and killed countless of them.

Shi Sen had just snuck into the White Sands Continent, and coincidentally saw the 1st Army launching their attack, he immediately took the chance and assaulted the pirates as well.

After the battle, another piece of good news was received, they found Richard.

The Continent Lord Manor, Eldest Young Noble, no, he should be hailed as White Sands Continent Lord, looked at Suo Bi in gratitude.

“If not for you, this time....”

Suo Bi shook his head: “Protecting White Sands has always been Suo Bi’s responsibility.”

Beside him, the 2nd Army and 3rd Army Commanders had looks of shame on their faces.

Ling Xia asked curiously: “Master Suo Bi, how did you know about He Ying’s plan?”

With the sudden disappearance of the 1st Army, prior to leaving, Suo Bi had Ling Xia bring Eldest Young Noble to Meng Nan for protection, and right before the pirates had launched their attack, they suddenly appeared behind the Pirate Alliance, this series of planning was truly unimaginable.

Suo Bi revealed his secret: “It was Lei Er Fu.”

“The head of the Golden Ross, Slit Eyes Snake Lei Er Fu?” Ling Xia cried out in alarm, the others were equally shocked.

Suo Bi nodded his head: “Three days after his death, I received a letter. It was Lei Er Fu’s preplanned contingency just in case he died, which was for the letter to be sent to me. If he was not dead, the letter would had never been sent. That man was truly too cunning. This letter contained many secrets, one of which was that Lady Rou is from the Honorable Martial Continent.”

Those words were like a heavy bomb that dropped into all of their hearts.

“Honorable Martial Continent? How can it be them?”

“We do not have any grievances with the Honorable Martial Continent!”

.....

Even the Commander of the 2nd and 3rd Army were in disbelief, they had thought of all the possible backgrounds of Lady Rou, but they had never thought that she would be connected to the Honorable Martial Continent.

“Ambitious, the Honorable Martial Continent is too ambitious.”
Suo Bi said coldly: “Our White Sands stands in the center of the Southern Region, as long as it becomes chaotic, they would be able

to spread to the Eastern Region. Their plan was extremely ingenious, to use Miss Yu Ran's influence, not only on our White Sands but even the surrounding aristocratic families, and capture all of us. Using the ladies as a ransom, and using the pirates, no one will think that all the chaos in the Southern Region would be linked to the Honorable Martial Continent."

"But what good is there for them?" Ling Xia did not understand.

"They have already taken control of the entire Western Region." Suo Bi said indifferently: "Their next goal, is the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy."

"Entire, the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy!"

Everyone was shocked by Master Suo Bi's words. There were over tens of thousands of continents in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, that would mean warring for a long time, that had never happened before. If there truly was a person who wanted to unify the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, how could it not stump others?

It was dead silent.

If this theory was not spoken by Master Suo Bi, no one would have believed the words at all.

After a long time, the new Continent Lord broke the silence, and muttered: "Who knew that Honorable Martial Continent's ambition would be so huge." He had a look of loss, and suddenly

raised his head: “Master Suo Bi, why did you believe that Meng Nan could protect me?”

“Because Meng Nan is the Honorable Martial Continent’s enemy.” Suo Bi asked.

“The Honorable Martial Continent’s enemy?” Ling Xia asked: “Could it be that Meng Nan used to be a continent lord of one of the continents in the Western Region?”

Everyone suddenly realised, what Ling Xia said might be true. In the current Western Region, there were over thousands of continents that were either annexed or destroyed by Honorable Martial Continent. If Meng Nan truly was a successor of one of the continents, their hatred for Honorable Martial Continent would be very deep.

But unexpectedly, Suo Bi shook his head: “I do not think so.”

“He isn’t.” The new Continent Lord spoke: “All the continents that were destroyed by Honorable Martial Continent are struggling by themselves, how could they have the strength to protect me?”

The new Continent Lord had personally witnessed Meng Nan’s strength, and the way he acted showed that he was not any successor of any continent. He never retreated and was unreasonably fierce, with his head on clashes, how was that the bearing of a successor on the run? And Meng Nan subordinates were all fearsome people as well, and the scary spirit dyad, if they truly came from the Western Region, the Honorable Martial

Continent would not be able to destroy them that easily.

Everyone's gaze landed on Suo Bi.

Suo Bi spoke: "That is why I asked the Continent Lord to seek shelter under Meng Nan, one of the reasons is that we have nowhere to go, and there is no other support. On the other hand, it was Lei Er Fu's letter that mentioned something that caught my attention. Lei Er Fu said that the mysterious person behind him had an extremely important goal, which was to seek out a few families."

"What families?"

Everyone became attentive, to make such a huge movement for a few families, it showed their great importance to the Honorable Martial Continent, and yet everyone was oblivious to it.

"The Five Southern Island Families."

Everyone was startled, they all knew of the Five Southern Island Families. About a 100 years ago, the five families travelled from afar to White Sands, and coincidentally arrived when Pirates were attacking White Sands. The five families immediately aided White Sands, and obtained victory for them. The Continent Lord at that time, to reward the five families for their service, gave them each a territory in the Southern Islands of White Sands Continent for them to reside, and from then on, they were hailed as the Five Southern Island Families.

The five families gradually reproduced and grew in the Southern Islands, but they rarely revealed themselves, and never got involved with matters with other families, to the point that people thought that they stood aloof from worldly affairs. So when everyone heard Master Suo Bi speak about them, they were surprised.

“Yes. Lei Er Fu spent some time investigating a few families, resulting in leads that linked to the Five Southern Island Families.” Suo Bi said: “I kept this in my heart, but never had the intention to investigate, as we are limited on manpower. But after that, I accidentally stumbled upon Meng Nan’s subordinate who was also investigating on the five families, so I could guess the relationship between Meng Nan and the Honorable Martial Continent.”

“Meng Nan’s background is extremely mysterious and not ordinary.” Suo Bi’s face darkened: “We have watched him with his affairs, and can claim that he is very daring, without any fear. Everytime we see that the situation is bad, he would instead obtain victory, and no one knows what trump cards he still has left to play. Furthermore, that Spirit Dyad is definitely of a famed general grade, to have such a standard of spirit dyad, the power behind Meng Nan is definitely not ordinary. We can only make friends with him, and not be enemies.”

His words obtained the approval of everyone.

The new Continent Lord immediately spoke: “He saved our lives. Furthermore, he does not seem to care about the White Sands, he said he has a condition for us, when I asked him what it was, he said he only needed the help of our trading channels.”

Everyone was somewhat suspicious, the condition was too low.

Ling Xia reinforced his words: “Mister Meng did say that.”

“It seems that he does not care about our estate and wealth.” Suo Bi heaved a sigh of relief, he was somewhat relieved. He always believed that Meng Nan’s strength was far stronger than the White Sands Continent. And it was the most reasonable guess, a guess that made everyone feel at ease, the current White Sands Continent was suffering too much, there was a plethora of things to tackle, and they could not afford to tussle with anyone else.

“Then what about the matter of the five families?” The new Continent Lord asked Suo Bi, he knew that his wealth was very shallow, and without experience. He could only rely on Suo Bi.

Suo Bi spoke: “He is our most important ally, if we are able to help him, we should do so with all our might. They can go to the five families, but they might not be granted access, why don’t we openly send our guides there, and establish communication between both parties. But we will not be involved with their matters.”

The new Continent Lord’s eyes lit up: “Good idea.”

“Continent Lord, the most urgent task now is to call in all the patriarchs of the families, and appease the people.” Suo Bi rationalised: “Everyone is unstable right now, they are hoping for peace.”

“Good!” The new Continent Lord nodded, but he was slightly doubtful: “I am only afraid I do not have sufficient prestige.”

“Continent Lord, rest easy, it will come in time.” Suo Bi remained cool and calm: “Right now, we have to deal with the people who colluded with the pirates and plotted rebellions. These people are truly wicked beyond redemption. When the time comes, we need to weed out all the spies of the Honorable Martial Continent and clean up our continent. If not, we cannot sleep in peace.”

Everyone nodded their heads.

Ling Xia did not speak, she knew that Master Suo Bi’s words meant that after the night had ended, many heads would roll, and many families would be destroyed.

She raised her head: “This subordinate is willing to be the guide for Mister Meng to seek out the Southern Islands.”

Chapter 646 – Heading To The Southern Islands

The Southern Islands.

Richard was by Tang Tian's side, carefully reporting all the details of his investigations, he knew that the boss viewed such things extremely heavily. He was also very interested in all of the history that was covered in dust, and spent all his effort to investigate to finally find many clues. All of these clues might not be understandable by common people, but Richard had a feeling that concealed behind these clues was a big secret.

Richard had guessed that the boss definitely knew about the secret, but he never dared to ask about it. Behind the Five Southern Island Families, the Honorable Martial Continent's hands were faintly discernible. As the current strongest tyrants, the Honorable Martial Continent practically had control over the entire Western Region.

“The Five Southern Island Families, 200 years ago, they migrated here. It is said that at that time, 13 families migrated, but there was a great divergence. 7 families chose to migrate to the Eastern Region, 1 moved to the northern region, and the remaining five, as they did not want to move far, chose the Southern Region.”

Seeing that Tang Tian was listening so intently, Richard became even more excited.

“Ever since The Five Southern Island Families migrated, they

had remained incognito and cut off from the rest of the world. The Southern Islands have extremely terrible environments, living in the inhospitable natural environment, wild beasts rampage the lands, and there are poison mists all over. It is said that when the Continent Lord asked what the five families wanted for their reward, they initiated that they wanted the horrible lands to the south, and rejected fertile land. Seeing that the five families were so insistent about it, the Continent Lord then gave the Southern Islands to the five families, since prior to it, no one owned the lands. The five families spent countless of manpower and effort, after three generations, they started to see results. Outsiders who accidentally stumble into the Southern Islands would most likely die. The harsh environment has become the natural defense for the five families, and thus the Southern Islands have been hailed as the most secretive place of White Sands. But every 10 years, the five families would send their own disciples to the Continent Lord Manor, and offer all sorts of rare treasures. Even the Continent Lord has difficulty controlling the five families, and thus the Southern Islands have formed their own system, and outsiders know little of them.”

Richard looked at Tang Tian carefully, who was listening very happily. But Richard was worried, because this time they were not going to fight, they did not bring any armies, and only Shi Sen’s two small units.

The Five Southern Island Families hated strangers, and no one had heard of the Southern Islands receiving guests. The Continent Lord had even tried to request to visit the Southern Islands for sightseeing, but the five families mercilessly rejected all of the requests. At that time, the Continent Lord could not do anything but leave it as that.

Although they had caused shame to him, the White Sands Continent Lord never thought of attacking the five families.

For 200 years, the Southern Islands were guarded by the 5 families extremely tightly. Adding their natural defense, silver armies were unable to enter. The warriors of the 5 families are all valiant and strong, to be able to fight against the pirates at that time, the majority of the effort was due to them.

After going through the grinding of the harsh environment, the current warriors of the 5 families were not people White Sands Continent dared to provoke. Luckily the disciples rarely ventured out, and thus rarely fought with others.

“What are the five families?” Tang Tian suddenly asked.

“Ye, Li, Wei, Yu, Zhang, the 5 families, their insignias are also very interesting. The Ye Family’s Insignia is a Scale. The Li Family’s Insignia is a Crab. The Wei Family’s Insignia is an archer. The Yu Family’s Insignia is a white ram, while the Zhang Family’s Insignia is a vase.”

Richard’s report was extremely in depth, he had spent a lot of effort searching on them.

Tang Tian laughed.

[Libra Constellation, Cancer Constellation, Sagittarius Constellation, Aries Constellation and Aquarius Constellation.](#)

(Ye Family is Libra, Li Family is Cancer, Wei Family is Sagittarius, Yu Family is Aries, Zhang Family is Aquarius.)

They are truly the 12 Ecliptic Palaces.

Furthermore, Crane and Sagittarius Constellation have a deep connection, while Ling Xu had obtained the legacy of Aries Constellation.

Interesting.

Tang Tian did not immediately send for Crane or Ling Xu, but decided to see how it went.

“How do we get in contact with them?” Tang Tian asked.

Richard scratched his head: “That I do not know....”

“Maybe I have an idea.” Ling Xia finally grabbed the chance and spoke. This time, she was the one who initiated to be Tang Tian’s guide, and wanted to avoid the cleansing of White Sands City. but that did not mean her task is relaxed, before she left White Sands City, the Continent Lord and Master Suo Bi had specially summoned her and told her to take care and aid Mister Meng Nan the best she could. Even her father had specially came to meet her.

On the road, she did not manage to find any opportunity, Richard’s investigation was truly too concise and detailed, not leaving out any gaps, and he was also a learned scholar, all of the

seemingly ordinary matters could not escape his grasp, he could always find a link or connection.

Ling Xia had deep respect for him, even as an outsider, listening to Richard was extremely exciting.

Tang Tian's gaze landed on Ling Xia.

Ling Xia immediately felt a formless pressure on her, her mind trembled. Mister Meng Nan's aura was truly getting stronger and stronger! In the past, she and Meng Nan were equals as friends, but currently, standing in front of him, she felt the same as standing in front of Master Suo Bi.

“Around 5 years ago, which was also the 10 year date, the disciples from the 5 families paid respects to the Continent Lord. Because there was a lady present, Ling Xia was the one responsible to take care of her. After interacting with her for a few months, our relationship is not too bad, and before she left, she gave Ling Xia an item, and told me if I were to go to the Southern Islands, I could go to her home to be a guest. I am sure we can ask her for a meet.”

Ling Xia looked at Tang Tian, waiting for him to decide.

Tang Tian nodded his head: “We can do that.”

The warship halted, quickly slowing down. Everyone knew they had reached the Southern Islands.

Flying out of the warship, the legendary Southern Islands greeted everyone, but their expressions were not too good.

A dark green sea of mist covered the entire place with no end.

“This is the Green Sea of Mist.” Ling Xia explained: “The poison in it is extremely toxic, and can even corrode energy, we must be careful.”

Roar!

Suddenly. A beast roar came out from deep inside the Green Sea of Mist, the intense energy undulation formed was like a hurricane, the green sea of mist instantly became violent and churned about.

Everyone's face changed, the energy undulation was extremely powerful. It was like two silver saints fighting all out.

The churning Green Sea of Mist continued to churn up with all sorts of things.

Black thorned organisms with bodies over the length of 600m would churn about with the Green Sea of Mist, causing everyone's heart to jump. As long as anything touched the organism, it would quickly coil around the object and quickly choke it. The black thorns would pierce deeply into the intruders.

There was another type of organism the size of a fist, it had red eyes, and terrifying sharp white teeth that resembled saws, its body leaked with some black substance that upon dropping into the mist would transform into black smoke. This organism travelled in groups, but separated at very large distances, and clenched their teeth towards Tang Tian and his group. They would gather and form a dense black cloud, but they were unable to leave the Green Sea of Mist, allowing everyone to relax.

There would always be bones churning out of the mist, causing everyone to be alarmed.

Tang Tian finally understood why no one had the intention of attacking the Southern Islands. The Green Sea of Mist was truly a natural defense. To barge in without any guide, other than throwing away their lives, no one could achieve anything.

But very quickly, Tang Tian seemed to have thought about something, he had a blood meridians laboratory under him, and he knew some things about poison.

“In the past, the Green Sea of Mist of the Southern Islands was rather famous, but it was not so large. People say that the 5 families had purposely tampered with it, disallowing people to enter.”

Ling Xia’s words confirmed Tang Tian’s guess. The Green Sea of Mist was through generations of hard work to become so vast.

“How do you contact your friend?” Tang Tian suddenly asked

curiously. The Green Sea of Mist had covered the entire Southern Islands.

“She said that there is a pavilion on top of a cliff, and there is a streamlet beside it, as long as I throw the item in, She would receive it.” Ling Xia replied.

Tang Tian quickly found the pavilion, and between the two peaks, there was a bare cliff with a dilapidated pavilion, as though it could crumble at any time. Beside the pavilion was a small streamlet that flowed with water.

But what surprised them was the flow of the streamlet. It flowed up the ravine from inside the Green Sea of Mist, up to the cliff, and continued to another mountain peak, which was shrouded by the Green Sea of mMist.

The item in Ling Xia’s hand was a green jade bamboo clapper, with a vase engraving carved on it.

Aquarius Constellation!

In Heaven’s Road, Aquarius Constellation was the famously rich tyrannical constellation, Aquarius Constellation might not have the strongest martial artists, but they were definitely the wealthiest.

I Wonder if this vase family inside the Green Sea of Mist is rich....

Tang Tian had already forgotten the last name of the Aquarius Constellation, and thus hailed them as the Vase Family. Tang Tian was extremely looking forward to seeing them, as the 12 Ecliptic Palaces were the tyrants of Heaven's Road. Every family's history was long, so he was curious to what their family would be like.

Throwing the bamboo clapper board into the streamlet, they watched it disappear into the Green Sea of Mist.

After about 20 minutes, a figure flew out from the peak that was covered in the Green Sea of Mist, and flowed down along the peak.

“Sister Ling!”

A young lady dressed in green robes looked down excitedly, but seeing Tang Tian and the rest beside Ling Xia, her face immediately became cautious. Especially when she saw the Black Arrow Warship of Tang Tian's, her face changed.

“Ting Ting!” Ling Xia saw her, and immediately revealed a smile while heaving a sigh of relief in her mind.

“Sister Ling, did you bring them to attack my family?” Ting Ting's expression turned cold.

Ling Xia was startled, then immediately shook her head: “Of course not!”

Seeing Ting Ting's expression gradually softening, Ling Xia

immediately explained: “This is Mister Meng Nan, I am accompanying him here today. Mister Meng Nan is the Continent Lord’s noble guests, he hopes to visit the 5 families.”

Ting Ting shook her head: “If Sister Ling is here as a guest, this younger sister will definitely welcome you. But for the other people, I am sorry, you are all not welcome here.”

Ling Xia was speechless, she did not expect the outcome to be like that .

“I am the enemy of the Honorable Martial Continent.”

The sudden voice and words caused Ting Ting to look up, a cold gaze erupting from her eyes. The Honorable Martial Continent! How does this man know the Honorable Martial Continent is our 5 Families’ archnemesis?

Tang Tian remained indifferent, and took out a few objects.

“I will have to trouble you to bring these to your various Family Heads. Whether or not you guys want to meet, I trust the various heads will have an idea. I will be waiting here.”

Ting Ting subconsciously accepted the objects.

Upon seeing the objects, she was instantly stunned.

Chapter 647 – The Five Family Heads

“What do you all say?” The one who spoke was an elderly man with a beard. He was Zhang Ying Ru, Family Head of the Zhangs. In his hand was a silver vase, holding it tightly as though he was afraid that the vase would fly away.

The 5 Family heads were in a hall, all of their expressions solemn. Although the 5 families were close like a family, but there was rarely a gathering of the 5 family heads.

“It is miraculous.” Ye Feng Lie’s eyes flickered with a light, he had a bold and powerful appearance, but in truth was a careful man, as he always had an opinion on everything. In his hand was a silver scale, it was extremely delicate and small, and what was surprising about it was the bizarre ripples it was releasing.

Ye Feng Lie closed his eyes, as though he was immersed in the wonderful ripple.

“If I did not see it with my own eyes, I would never believe that there would be a spirit object that is so compatible with me in this world, it is as though it was made right for me.” Ye Feng Lie looked like he was drunk, yet his voice was as cold as ice.

Li Yue Tao was the only female out of the 5 Family heads, she spoke: “These spirit objects are completely different from the spirit objects of Sacred Saint Galaxy, and have some resemblance to the spirit objects of the Honorable Martial Continent.”

In her hand was a small and delicate silver shield, on it was an engraving of a crab. She used her hand to go along the engravings of the shield, the energy ripple that seemed extremely faint, was resonating with the energy in her body.

“The Honorable Martial Continent?” Wei Da sneered; “Although the spirit objects of Honorable Martial Continent are hailed as the best in Sacred Saint Galaxy, but compared to these spirit objects, they are still lacking.”

The 5 families and Honorable Martial Continent had fought for so many years, but they were not destroyed, and were long familiar with one another. Whatever methods the Honorable Martial Continent had, no one was as clear as them.

In Wei Da’s hand was a silver bow, the Wei Family were experts in bow techniques, and upon landing in his hand, he became excited.

Yu Xian Zhi said slowly: “Look at the insignia on this, the Aries Yu Family, has been passed down for so many generations, this Aries insignia has never appeared at any other place before. The Aries Silver Spear, how can there be such coincidental things in the world.”

He looked at the silver spear in front of him, his eyes filled with a cold glint.

Everyone quieted down. Why was the 13 Families being chased after Honorable Martial Continent? Other people may not know

about it, but how could the people present not?

“Could it be that our 13 ancestors that went missing in the past, did not die, but found another place to spread the legacy?”

Zhang Ying Ru’s voice trembled slightly, the legend of the past had been written in the records of the 13 families. This legend had never been proven, and the 13 families had spent immense effort, even sending people into the internal parts of Honorable Martial Continent, but all the information they had received was always vague, just like the legends.

Wei Da snorted: “If not, why would the assholes from the Honorable Martial Continent want us to die even after so many years? The Honorable Martial Continent is afraid of us receiving this information. Humph, the Honorable Martial Continent had miraculously broke through with their spirit research, most likely it is because of this.”

Wei Da had profound attainments in the dao of the bow, yet he did not have the calmness of Sagittarius, he had a bad temper and harbored grudges, his personality like fire.

Everyone else nodded their heads, Wei Da’s words coincided with what they thought.

“Could it be the Honorable Martial Continent’s trap?” Li Yue Tao asked.

“The Continent Lord does not gain from it.” Ye Feng Lie’s clear and cold voice sounded out: “To casually gift 5 spirit objects, the Honorable Martial Continent is not so free and rich to do this.”

Everyone else laughed, truly, no matter how generous the Honorable Martial Continent was, they would not gift out 5 exquisite spirit objects as bait.

“And we also need these to change our current situation.”

Yu Xian Zhi slowed tone caused everyone to calm down. The recent situation of the Southern Islands have not been good.

“Then we shall take a look!” Zhang Ying Ru said: “Open the gate and welcome the noble guest!”

The other four family heads stood up at the same time.

Outside the Green Sea of Mist.

Richard could not resist but ask: “Boss, are we spending a bit too much for this?”

Ling Xia who stood by the side had a distressed expression.

The two of them were not worried about the Southern Island Five Families rejecting them at the door, but honestly, what kind of joke was Meng Nan playing at, five spirit objects, and they were extremely high grade spirit objects. Luckily, Xu Jin was not present, if not, his eyes would turn green. Richard had seen many spirit objects at his son's lab, they were all given by the boss for his son to research, but the grades of the five spirit objects were far superior to those that he had seen.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy was not Heaven's Road, spirit objects here were rare treasures, and for such high quality spirit objects, they could exchange them for cities.

But the spirit objects were not theirs, so the two of them could only feel envy and sadness.

Richard had long known of the boss' big gestures, but the amount paid out still shocked him.

Ling Xia only felt that the word "Rich Tyrant" had completely changed to a new meaning.

"Is it too much?" Tang Tian asked casually, his expression showing that he did not even care about what Richard said.

"Of course it is!" Richard immediately replied: "You can simply gift 1! Giving 5 of them, that's....that's truly....truly too extravagant!"

“Extravagant?” Tang Tian regained his senses: “It isn’t, each family only has one.”

Each family only has one.....

Tang Tian turned his head and looked at Wei Ting Ting: “Hey, are your family heads coming to meet me or not? If they are not, I’m leaving.”

Tang Tian’s tone was filled with impatience, it seemed as though he was extremely displeased with the current situation.

No one would feel that Tang Tian’s displeasure was wrong, even Wei Ting Ting felt that he was right to be displeased.

“That’s right!” Richard was the first to reinforce, and snorted: “Those 5 spirit objects can buy a continent! And a big continent at that, your side is acting too high and mighty already.”

Ling Xia did not say a word, but the expression on her face also showed her displeasure towards the other party.

Wei Ting Ting was helpless about it, but just at that moment, she suddenly heard a voice coming out from the Green Sea of Mist, and she was instantly roused: “I welcome noble guests to the Southern Islands.”

Rumble rumble rumble, the thunderous sound came out from the sea of green.

After the rumbling, countless of disciples shouted in unison.

“We welcome the noble guests!”

The clamors sounded out like a powerful current, the Green Sea of Mist behind Wei Ting Ting churned about restlessly, being split into two by an immense power, revealing a vast path of clouds that extended into the distance. The white clouds being placed between the dark Green Sea of Mist, made it look spotlessly white.

Disciples dressed in different colors arrived like running water, splitting and standing by the two sides of the path of clouds.

Five figures floated down from the sky, and landed on the path of clouds, their faces covered with smiles. Surprise flashed past their eyes, Tang Tian's age had definitely surprised them.

Zhang Ying Ru raised his white eyebrows, and laughed: “Noble guests you have waited long for us, my apologies my apologies!”

The other four maintained smiles and waved at Tang Tian.

Wei Ting Ting stared at the five family heads in front of her, her entire mind filled with shock. She had thought that the five family heads would agree for Tang Tian to enter the Southern Islands, but never thought that they would perform such a greeting. For the five family heads to appear at the same time to welcome the guest, with the disciples formed long rows beside the path of clouds, it

was the biggest and most supreme welcoming gesture the Southern Islands has ever done.

When was the last time this happened?

Ever since she was born, she had never seen such a thing. Even when the Continent Lord had personally visited, they would definitely not do such a thing.

This guy.....

She instantly turned her head and looked at Tang Tian. She was quick witted and intelligent, although the five spirit objects were worth cities, but they were definitely not sufficient for the five elderlies to come out to greet him.

“Hello granny, hello four grandpas!”

Seeing the appearances of the five family heads, Tang Tian was slightly taken aback, he never thought that they would be so old, and he instantly shouted with manners, since he was still young, Tang Tian did not have to bear any burden. Tang Tian had always been extremely polite towards the elderly.

Standing by the side, Richard's expression froze on his face, in his eyes, his boss was a powerful and tyrannical man that could kill without blinking, and placed anywhere, he was a formidable person.

But the lovable youngster in front of him.....

Richard started to feel himself going deranged.

Ling Xia was equally dumbstruck, she thought she had heard wrongly, t-t-this.....is this the tyrannical lord that killed countless of people, and fought all the way even when he was bleeding entirely?

Shi Sen was stunned, Boss.....

Zhang Ying Ru and the other 4 family heads smiled even wider, they had never met Tang Tian before, and only felt that the child in front of them was lovable and polite, with one look they believed that he was brought up well. The 5 of them were all old, and they extremely loved children.

The five families had long traditions with strict etiquettes, all of their younger generations and disciples were brought up under stringent rules, and as long as they saw the five elders, they would tremble with fear and acted carefully.

The instant Tang Tian greeted them, the five of them instantly became happy.

“Oh my, it is a young kid, how can the family be at ease letting you come out on your own?” Li Yue Tao was the first to be unable to hold back.

“Yes yes!”

“Come in come in, are you hungry, we made you wait so long....”

.....

Seeing Tang Tian being surrounded by the old people, and his naive and harmless face, replying and talking to them obediently and adorably, Richard and the rest were petrified.

They had never thought that, their expressions would be a displeasure to the five elders.

“Truly, it was difficult for this young man to come out, they should had chosen brighter and smarter bodyguards, how dumb and stupid can the family be....”

“It’s alright, we can replenish the ranks with our own people....”

Dumb and stupid.....

Shi sen, Richard and the rest wanted to vomit blood.

Instead, Tang Tian felt good, although he was not very bright, but his intuition was extremely sharp, he could feel the care and concern from the granny and grandpas, causing him to feel the warmth he had not felt in a long time.

This unfamiliar warmth made Tang Tian slightly absent-minded.

For the entire time, majority of it was his strong determination, his rage, his displeasure inner shoutings, his struggles, his battles. Unknowingly, he had gotten used to the nonstop fighting, gotten used to the intense danger, gotten used to the cold blade tips, gotten used to the blood stench and smell.

The sudden care and concern was like a trace of sunlight that punctured through the black clouds.

No matter how much or how less it was, warmth was still a cure for the heart.

Suddenly, Tang Tian thought about his mother, his mother's gentle gaze, his mother's warm hands.

He thought about Ghost Claw, the quiet and stern figure that always cared and had expectations for him.

He felt his nose turning slightly sour, but he allowed his smile to blossom even more splendidly.

In the world, there was not only darkness and blood, not only open struggles and covert maneuvers, not only mutual deception, there was also light and warmth, the simple and honest care and concern, and the desire to take care of others.

Human relations could be as complicated as ten thousand strings

interweaving, or as simple as one line.

Throwing away all thoughts of self interest, Tang Tian's smile became even more sincere.

What 12 Ecliptic Palaces, what benefits and disputes, at the moment, all those thoughts had been tossed unimaginably far away.

Chapter 648 – Lady Rou’s Plans

“They entered the Southern Islands?”

The gentle and soft voice was pleasing to the ears, but the people present were all standing straight up, their expression stern and serious, no one dared to be lax, as though they were inflexible soldiers. Only the monotonous black robes with red skull imprints on their backs showed their identities as pirates.

Lady Rou sat on the black soft chair, her jade and slender arms propped her chin up, with a shallow yet intoxicating smile.

The scout reported: “Yes, Ling Xia served as the guide, She has a good relation with Wei Ting Ting of the Southern Islands. Meng Nan gave them a few items, and not long after, the Five Family Heads welcomed him and brought him in.”

Lady Rou ‘oh’, her eyes twinkling: “To be able to let the five family heads come out and welcome him, what could the items be?”

“We did not dare to approach them in case we alerted them, the distance was too far, so this subordinate was unable to see clearly.” The scout lowered his head, his heart trembling.

“You’ve done well.” Lady Rou said warmly.

Expecting a punishment, the scout heaved a sigh of relief, the

lady's temper was much better than Master Xu.

“Are there any news of Master Xu?” Lady Rou suddenly asked, Master Xu was the tall individual, when she left White Sands, she did not travel with him.

Out of the people that were standing extremely straight up, one person spoke up: “We have just received news that the pirate group that Master Xu was in was annihilated.”

Lady Rou revealed a look of grief, and sighed: “I never thought that Master Xu would actually fall to circumstances, Heaven is truly jealous of heroic geniuses. But his efforts will not go to waste, I will report to the superiors, and ask for the First Class Martyr to be bestowed to him.”

Everyone's mind jolted, First Class Martyr was the highest award given to generals who have sacrificed themselves, more importantly, his family would obtain the greatest amount of care. They were all officers and soldiers of the Honorable Martial Continent, secretly concealed as pirates, and were involved in all the shady businesses in the shadows, but the Honorable Martial Continent would never admit their existence.

After their sacrifices, their families would be taken care of, so they did not have any worries.

Lady Rou stood up and looked at them with a stern face, and said solemnly: “Everyone, rest easy, the higher ups will never forget everybody's sacrifice and work. Everything that we have done is

for the Sacred Saint Galaxy. The fights in the Sacred Saint Galaxy have gone on for too long, with so many heroes existing side by side, the wars will continue. How many innocent people will die in battle, how many families will go up in flames, the blood has flowed on for too long, all of this needs to stop! Only with a powerful ruler, only by the light of the Honorable Martial Continent which shall spread across every corner of Sacred Saint Galaxy, can the world truly obtain peace, and can everyone live in peace and harmony!”

All of the officers and soldiers present revealed fanatical looks, they were the Honorable Martial Continent people to the bone, and were utmost loyal to them.

At the moment, Lady Rou’s image grew even more powerful in their eyes, their faith and conviction becoming stronger.

That’s right, only we can save the world! Only the Honorable Martial Continent can ensure peace in the world!

“Only by baptising the world with blood and fire can we reconstruct for peace! Burn my will, burn my body, with the blood and fire as the sword, pierce through the dark clouds and see the light! For the light can illuminate the world!”

Lady Rou’s expression became worked up, on normal days, she was warm and gentle, but now her voice was resounding and sonorous.

“For the light!”

All of the officers and soldiers roared, all of their faces showing fanaticism.

“Look forward to victory, gentlemen!” Lady Rou’s face was filled with worship, without any trace of arrogance.

“For victory!” All of the men shouted.

A fleet concealed in the shadows moved quietly, looking extremely sinister.

When the last general left the room, Lady Rou sat back in her chair, her face revealing a tinge of fatigue.

“Madam, we will definitely win!” The servant beside her waved her fists excitedly.

Lady Rou pulled her lips but did not say a word, she had done what she needed to do, and the rest was up to fate. She did not understand battle formations and was unable to personally lead and command, and could only rouse the soldiers and gain morale.

“Master Xu is too useless, if not, why would Lady Rou need to clean up after him.” The servant mumbled, her face filled with disdain.

Lady Rou felt helpless, she did not expect that her teammate could not be placed in an important position. She had thought of He Ying's defeat, and thus plotted for him the plan of using pirates to enter the continent. Who knew that Master Xu would leave behind a hidden danger, Lei Er Fu had sent clues to Suo Bi after he died, and at the most crucial time, the Pirate Alliance was broken by Suo Bi. The pirates had formed an alliance to grow in strength, but who knew that Lian Bo Jun would turn against them.

The situation completely changed.

If he was still alive, she would naturally hold him responsible. But who knew that he would have died, consider him lucky. For the sake of appeasing the hearts of the soldiers, Lady Rou had to help him apply for a consolation compensation.

“Don't talk bad about a dead person.” Lady Rou said indifferently.

The servant bit her tongue, she kept quiet, seeing that Lady Rou was tired, she immediately ran over and gently massaged her shoulders.

Lady Rou closed her eyes and pondered.

The Honorable Martial Continent had two goals in the White Sands Continent.

The first goal was to control the White Sands, and allow it to become the location from where the Honorable Martial Continent would enter the Southern Region. If it could not be controlled, then they would destroy it, allow the White Sands to plunge into chaos, and then use the chaos to spread to the entire Southern Region, and then involve all the continents in the Southern Region in a civil war, exhausting their strength.

The second goal was to destroy the Five Southern Island Families.

If the first goal failed, then the only probable thing that could succeed was the second goal.

Master Xu's soldiers had lost their lives, and she knew that the situation was hard to turn around, so she placed her eyes on the Southern Islands. The White Sands Continent still had many complications, Suo Bi's army had placed their attention on rounding up the remaining pirates.

No one would place their attention on the Southern Islands, so it was her chance.

Lady Rou was a key participant in intelligence, and quietly organised the soldiers who had infiltrated the pirates to gather at the Southern Islands, she wanted to take the chance before Suo Bi and the rest could react to take down the Southern Island Families. Although she did not have much time, but she continued to arrange them well and proper. Although the pirates were utterly defeated, but the few that had managed to infiltrate, did not lose much.

All of these pirates had specially picked elites from the Honorable Martial Continent as their backbone, thus their strength far surpassed that of ordinary pirates. Seeing that the situation was going against their favour, they quickly chose to preserve their lives.

When Lady Rou saw the large army that she had summoned, she was inwardly joyous.

Lady Rou, who managed to hide herself heard that Meng Nan also wanted to go to the Southern Islands and brought very few people. She knew that it was her chance! If Meng Nan entered the Southern Islands, doesn't that mean I can get rid of all of them?

Meng Nan was the thorn in Lady Rou's flesh, if not for him suddenly appearing, their first goal would have succeeded! Meng Nan's background was still a mystery, he was powerful and overbearing, with overwhelming wealth and did things recklessly. She had just planned her next move, but Meng Nan had coincidentally joined in, isn't that a heaven sent opportunity?

Although they had lost out previously when tussling with Meng Nan, Lady Rou still felt confident in the upcoming battle.

The Five Southern Island Families were hard to capture, not because of their strength, but because they had operated the Green Sea of Mist for so long that it was currently extremely toxic with an abundance of wild beasts and poisonous insects. But the strongest part about them was that, for the past 200 years, the five

families five strongest martial artists, in their fullest capacity had interlinked their laws.

Five different laws interlinked was able to produce many variations.

For so many years, the Honorable Martial Group had tussled with the Green Sea of Mist many times. But after so much sacrifice, they were unable to find any way to break through the Green Sea of Mist, and thus it had become the number one most important subject of Honorable Martial Continent.

It wasn't until recently, that they finally had a breakthrough.

For the past few days, Tang Tian lived very happily, not hiding anything or concealing anything, he spoke about everything he knew once. After that, the five family heads went into closed door discussions and did not come out for a few days.

Tang Tian could not be bothered, he had already told them everything, and he left them the choice to decide by themselves.

It was just that ever since he had casually gifted Wei Ting Ting a bronze Star Treasure from Sagittarius Constellation, Tang Tian became popular.

“Brother Meng! Come, drink! I obtained this spring water from a

very far away place, it is very sweet!”

Looking at the bulky and big statured man’s glistening eyes, and a face of currying favor, Tang Tian was helpless: “Old Wei, I am not thirsty at all.”

“Not thirsty? Then are you hungry? Are you hungry? I can roast good deer, that is also good!” Wei Hao said flatteringly.

Wei Hao was Wei Ting Ting’s elder brother, ever since he heard that Wei Ting Ting had obtained a spirit object from Tang Tian, he would come by every day to fawn impatiently.

Tang Tian could no longer tolerate his fawning, he had never heard of Sagittarius Constellation being extremely thick skinned, How can this guy have such thick skin. Tang Tian could no longer tolerate it gave Wei Hao a bronze Star Treasure: “Do not find me tomorrow!”

“I definitely will not!” Wei Hai grabbed the bronze Star Treasure and ran away.

Wei Ting Ting’s spirit object had caught everyone’s eyes, but they did not understand the situation. But Wei Hao had managed to grab one, so all the young disciples were immediately jealous, We cannot let the Wei Family get all the benefits!

That is a spirit object!

Tang Tian enjoyed the carefree life he had been living the past few days, it was good and he was able to have a sense of freedom.

“Meng Nan, I dare you to come fight with me!” The sensitive Ye Lao Er decided to change his methods, how could he tolerate it any longer? ~You can flatter Meng Nan, does your father know about it?”

Ye Lao Er stood outside Tang Tian’s house and shouted for an hour, he had a lot of energy, and just with his clamor, he could cause the tiles on the ground to tremble.

Tang Tian who could not win against the annoyance threw out a bronze star treasure: “Get lost!”

Ye Lao Er was elated, he hugged the treasure and left.

He had just left when the four sisters of the Li Family ran over carrying all sorts of steaming hot dim sum, and went into Tang Tian’s room. Not long after, the four sisters came out each with a spirit object, laughing happily as they left.

The dim sum was so delicious that Tang Tian almost swallowed his own tongue.

Since bronze star treasures are not worth much, he could give them one each.

The other disciples were all envious, and also thought of their

own methods. Ye Lao Er's method was no longer doable, Ye Lao Er was rather interesting, after obtaining his spirit object, he started to guard the entrance like a Door God, helping Tang Tian block the other people. Ye Lao Er was powerful too, and very few people could fight against him.

The four Li sisters were good with their dim sum, that was a unique method for themselves.

Yu Qing Yi came over to Tang Tian's door, ignoring Ye Lao Er's furious gaze, he spoke up: "Noble guest, you have severe internal injuries, this subordinate is an expert in medicine, and could try to help you."

An Aries Constellation Bronze Star Treasure flew out.

Yu Qing Yi ran over to Shi Sen, Shi Sen then understood that the person Qing Yi was speaking to was him. Shi Sen was impressed, their old bodies truly had internal injuries, and because they did not have the treatment in the past, they left it alone, but who knew that Yu Qing Yi could see it.

~But, boss is also too easily duped....~

Shi Sen felt that the exchange was too extravagant, but to be able to treat his internal injuries, he was rather happy.

Out of the five families, only the Zhang family was left. Zhang Nan Yan walked up confidently: "This lowly one has some

business....”

Before he could finish his words, a rumble caused everyone’s face to change.

Chapter 649 – Tang Tian's Idea

The ground shook, wild beasts roared angrily, the distant Green Sea of Mist started churning restlessly. An intense energy fluctuation swept like a hurricane. It caused the dust and sand on the ground to rise, the sky suddenly darkened, as though it was not day.

A fiery light exploded out inside the Green Sea of Mist, causing thick smoke to surge.

A shadow the size of mountains crawled out of the Green Sea of Mist, its features already indistinct. Black clouds loomed over their heads, while the Green Sea of Mist barely reached its waist, making it look extremely majestic. It's imposing aura smashed the Green Sea of Mist below, as though tens of thousands of beasts had gathered and roared recklessly.

Ye Lao Er was crying, that was his great grandfather.

He had kept his body in the sea, his spirit meant to protect his future generations.

His sacrifice that year exchanged for 200 years of peace for the five families.

Another giant shadow stood up from inside the Green Sea of Mist, the giant's hand swept at the Green Sea of Mist, causing it to churn, it was like a whale inhaling the rivers, causing the mist to coagulate and form a spear in his hands.

Yu Qing Yi's eyes became wet, he instantly pounced forward and knelt on the ground, he started to kowtow to the giant, who was the ancestor of the Yu Family.

One after another, more giants awoke from their deep slumber and slowly stood up from the Green Sea of Mist.

All of the young disciples all knelt down, the scene before their eyes had completely shocked them. Since young, the adults have told them all that the ancestors had sacrificed, how they used their lives to protect their families, and the difficulty of obtaining their current home. To them, those were all cold records written on books that could cause people to revere, but they were all a distant past.

But at that moment, one after another, all the majestic figures had stood up from within the Green Sea of Mist, blocking at their fronts, protecting them.

All of them had featureless faces, yet they brought about an unspeakable familiarity.

Rumble rumble.

Explosions came out continuously, as fiery lights shone in the sky. In the distance, huge pirate fleets appeared.

Bodies inside the ocean, spirits protect their children.

The brave sacrifice from the cold history, appeared in front of the youngsters. They then realised all the resolution, the yearning and the grief accumulated inside those eight words.

All the Family Heads were equally shocked and changed emotions quickly.

The continuous surge of white light regiments from the fleet, that familiar spirit qi made them immediately recognise their attackers.

Honorable Martial Continent!

“The Green Sea of Mist cannot take it much longer.” Yu Xian Zhi said: “We cannot defend this place any longer.”

White lights cascaded down from the warships onto the Green Sea of Mists, which would explode instantly. The white explosions would sweep across the plains, and the toxic Green Sea of Mist would thaw like snow. The Green Sea of Mist was heavily damaged, and continued to shrink.

The giant ancestor spirits were in an intense battle against the fleet of warships.

A giant hand extended his five fingers and grabbed onto a warship. Inside his palm, the warship was like a useless plank of wood. The weapons on the warship engaged the hand frantically.

The giant roared, his lower body was quickly diminishing, the light aura in his palm was growing intensely brighter.

Crack crack crack!

The warship started to break apart.

Boom, it broke into countless pieces that flew all around.

The Honorable Martial Continent soldiers on the warship lit up with white light and struck towards the giant.

The dazzling white light blossomed at the remnants of the giant's upper body. The giant did not feel a thing, but its body quickly diminished to its chest, and with only its arms left, it congealed with a light aura.

It roared, slamming both palms onto the Green Sea of Mist, causing the mist to surge upwards, like a mountain peak being pulled up from the ground to even taller heights, striking on another warship.

Boom!

A gigantic explosion enveloped the warship. When the light aura dissipated, only half of the warship remained.

“We will hold them back, and allow the young to escape.” Li Yue Tao said without hesitating.

The battle was intense, but they knew that the Honorable Martial Continent had found a way to handle them. Currently, the battle of the giant ancestor spirits was going downhill. As time goes by, they would fall greater and greater. Because the Green Sea of Mist was the power source of the giant ancestor spirits, in which the frigates behind the warships were frantically destroying.

In truth, everyone knew that when the giant ancestor spirits were awakened would be the most dangerous time for the five families.

“Where do they go?” Zhang Ying Ru took a deep breath and said.

“Let them follow Meng Nan from now on!” Ye Feng Lie laughed: “Heh, we don’t need to discuss about this.”

“We will do that!” Wei Da agreed, he looked over to Tang Tian from a distance, Wei Hao and Wei Ting Ting who were beside him, his eyes immediately became extremely warm and gentle.

He turned his head, holding back the discomfort in his heart, he shouted with rage: “Martial artist above the age of 25, follow me out to battle!”

One after another, figures soared into the sky like moths flying into the flames.

On board the warship, Mei Chen Xiu had a steady expression. In the Honorable Martial Continent, he was a nobody. In the past few years, the Honorable Martial Continent had waged wars upon wars with other various smaller continents around, and thus there were many famed grade generals appearing. Mu Zhi Xia, Mo Xin, Qiu Xu Hua, Gou Cheng, Wen Dao, and Jia Ya, were the five most famous generals in Honorable Martial Continent.

Compared to them, Mei Chen Xiu was not as bright, Qiu Xu Hua was the same age as him, but was already in power and had impressive records.

But it was this quiet and unknown Mei Chen Xiu who found the way to breakthrough the Green Sea of Mist. Very few people knew that in the entire tactics planning for the assault on the Southern Region, although he was not the only one planning, but he was the main person. Mei Chen Xiu who was recently promoted volunteered to join in the infiltration amongst the pirates.

Mei Chen Xiu's performance after that had been outstanding and surprising. Amongst the small groups, he was the first to completely infiltrate and control the pirates. After that, he led his pirates to plunder and loot in all locations, time and time again, he earned countless of victories, and from the lowest to the highest, all the pirates were convinced of his abilities. All the plundering seemed to be at random, but they were all chosen specially by him, so he could gather useful information and reports to send back to the Honorable Martial Continent.

The people under Lady Rou who had moved out for the mission consisted of five pirate groups, with Mei Chen Xiu in one of them.

Mei Chen Xiu did not rush to the front, he had a different mindset from the other generals. From the start, he did not think that the crucial part of the battle was whether or not they could defeat the Five Southern Island Families, but whether they could get them all at once.

He equipped and trained his fleet differently from the other generals as well, he trained the pirates to be extremely agile and fast, so they are able to come and go like the wind.

“They want to escape, chase after them.” Mei Chen Xiu said with a look of indifference.

“Master, those are pirates.” Shi Sen said.

Tang Tian had already noticed the pirates.

They had started to retreat when the pirates started to move, they made a roundabout and dodged the main battlefield, they were clearly the targets. Some of the martial artists of the five families wanted to block the pirates, but they were too agile, dodging left and shifting right, they suddenly cut through them, faking their way through the martial artists and going after Tang

Tian.

The Honorable Martial Continent, those are people from the Honorable Martial Continent feigning as pirates.

Tang Tian never thought that Honorable Martial Continent who had just lost in White Sands City would actually still hold so much power and forces. After the drawn out battle, the Honorable Martial Continent gradually held the advantage. Although the Honorable Martial Continent's warships were continuously destroyed by the giant ancestor spirits, and with their people dropping into the Green Sea of Mist and becoming spirits, but the giant ancestor spirits were also disappearing.

The light balls shot by the frigates were specially made to suppress the Green Sea of Mist, causing it to wither.

The Honorable Martial Continent's large army was unstoppable, as they gradually and firmly pushed forward. Even if Suo Bi's 1st Army was present, they would be unable to stop the huge army, furthermore The Five Southern Island Families did not have any armies.

The giant ancestor spirits roared in anger, expressing the end of their path.

Inside the warship, sobbings were endless, all of the youngsters had ashen faces, the boys were tearing, the girls sobbing and wailing.

Tang Tian was so annoyed by the ruckus around him he roared: “Everyone shut up!”

They all looked at Tang Tian in shock.

Tang Tian felt an immense pain in his head, initially when he thought to come, he was trying to look for help and hoped to gain some allies. But he did not expect for himself to not obtain any allies, but instead become a stay-home dad, bringing a group of wimpy brats who were still wet behind their ears to escape.

When he saw Granny Li Yue Tao’s pleading look, Tang Tian who wanted to reject did not know how to say it.

But even if they wanted to escape, it would not be easy.

The Black Arrow Warship was a small sized warship, and it was currently packed to the brim, and thus, the speed of the Black Arrow Warship had dropped tremendously. To someone trying to escape for their life, there was nothing more terrible than to have the pirates behind them to be faster than them.

Damn it!

The opponents were a fleet, but they were just a warship, thus increasing the pressure. Although the Black Arrow Warship was a silver grade warship and enough to hold its own against a few warships, but the fleet behind them had three other silver grade warships.

The Honorable Martial Continent was truly rich and imposing, exactly the same as the Honorable Martial Temple, all of the pirates were actually so powerful!

“This place doesn’t have any garrison to station in?” Tang Tian turned and asked Ling Xia.

Ling Xia’s face turned white, she shook her head : “No, The Southern Islands was a no-man’s land, other than the five families, there are no other cities.”

“At most we fight to the death!”

Ye Lao Er said dryly, he clenched his teeth, his eyes filled with blood veins.

Wei Hao also stood up, his expression turning ugly: “We fight!”

A voice filled completely with disdain broke them.

“Fight to the death? Even fighting to the death requires strength that can fight to the death, and with you all?”

Tang Tian coldly observed all of them.

“You.....” Ye Lao Er looked at Tang Tian in anger, Yu Qing Yi immediately stood in between them, and he spoke to Tang Tian:

“Mister Meng, please forgive us, Ye Er’s temper is bad, he does not have any intention to offend you.”

Tang Tian waved his hand impatiently: “Alright alright. Shi Sen, how much longer till they catch up?”

“In less than half an hour.” Shi Sen gave an accurate figure, and said: “Master, this subordinate will....”

Seeing Shi Sen’s determined look, Tang Tian felt warmth, he patted Shi Sen’s shoulder: “Do not speak of such words, this half an hour is enough for us to think of something.”

Tang Tian’s eyes lit up, he suddenly glanced at the bronze bow in Wei Ting Ting’s hands, it was the gift he gave her.

Wait a minute!

Tang Tian’s mind suddenly worked like lightning, he asked: “Wei Ting Ting, how’s the power of the bow?”

Wei Ting Ting never thought that Tang Tian would actually ask such a question at such a timing, she was startled for a moment: “It is very strong!”

“How strong?” Tang Tian asked.

“It can increase my battle ability by double.” Wei Ting Ting said

with little confidence: “I haven’t tested it out yet....”

Tang Tian suddenly laughed: “I thought of a way! I thought of an idea!”

“What idea?” Shi Sen was the first to react, his eyes lit up.

“That’s it.” Tang Tian pointed at the bronze bow in Wei Ting Ting’s hands.

Everyone could not help but reveal disappointment, what kind of idea was that, although a spirit object is strong, but in such a battle, it could not be of much use.

Tang Tian did not bother explaining, he only shouted: “Make way for me.”

Everyone did not understand, they retreated back a few steps, leaving an empty space.

“Further.”

Everyone could only retreat, the warship was already packed, but everyone still did their best to squeeze.

They did not understand what Tang Tian was doing, and only felt that his expression was extremely bizarre.

That expression of.....arrogance, recklessness, taunt, disdain, complacence, like....like....a rich tyrant!

The Silver Aquarius Cabinet in his hands lit up.

Chapter 650 – Surprise

The small pile of star treasures lit up with dazzling lusters, causing the entire warship to become bright, shining on everyone's sluggish expressions clearly.

In the silence, all of their mouths were opened, they stared at the small pile of treasures in front of Tang Tian. They had never seen so many spirit objects before, all of the energy undulation they were releasing pervaded the air, the energy inside the warship became affected, revealing an extremely strange situation.

Are they all spirit objects.....

How is that possible.....

Ling Xia's expression the most marvelous, her eyes almost dropped to the ground, her breathing halted. Tang Tian's everyday wealth had already shocked her to the point of lunacy, but everything that she knew, the knowledge that she encompassed, in front of the pile of spirit objects, she had been reduced into an idiot.

The Honorable Martial Continent won't have so many spirit objects.....

Who is he?

Although everyone's expressions made young lad Tang extremely

elated, but he knew that they were still in a predicament, so he did not have time to be pleased. He used strength to clap, causing everyone's attention to be roused.

“From now on, all of your five families will be split into five parts, Wei Family, the Sagittarius Constellation. Li Family, the Cancer Constellation. Yu Family, the Aries Constellation. Ye Family, Libra Constellation. Zhang Family, Aquarius Constellation.”

Tang Tian shamelessly copied and corresponded the five families to their respective Ecliptic Palaces names, this way, it was more convenient for him.

Everyone did not have any objections, but instead felt that the new names given to them were extremely suitable, just that.....

“Wait, what's constellation?” Wei Ting Ting asked.

“Errrrr.” Tang Tian was stunned, the Sacred Saint Galaxy did not use any constellation names, so he had no choice but to vaguely explain: “Similar to continents.”

Everyone was enlightened, some of the more mature youngsters felt moved. Could it be that the Master hoped that each of their families would hold a continent each in the future?

“Alright.” Tang Tian started separating the star treasures, and muttered to himself: “Aquarius, Sagittarius, Cancer, Aries, Libra,

lucky I have many treasures. I still need to obtain more in the future though, alright alright, I still have many 12 Ecliptic Palace treasures, but I still need to get more....”

Although he had many star treasures, he had thrown them all into Ursa Major Constellation’s warehouse, but for the sake of Little Fool to refine more spirit treasures, he had brought a few of them.

“Sagittarius and Aries, offense, Libra for control, Cancer for defense, what can Aquarius do? Eh, how do Aquarius constellation martial artists fight?” Tang Tian picked up one star treasure and muttered to himself.

Little Fool who had just floated up whispered to Tang Tian emotionlessly: “With money.”

Tang Tian’s expression froze, he did not say anything, those words cannot be said. But in Heaven’s Road, it was a fact that they were hailed as the richest martial artists.

After picking out the five treasures of the respective constellations, Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief, it was sufficient. The star treasures were separated into six piles, other than the five families, there was one remaining for the Underworld Continent’s Demonic Mounts. Tang Tian then pointed to each pile and explained.

“That’s for Aquarius, that’s Aries, that’s Cancer, that’s Sagittarius, this is Libra, and this is for the Demonic Mounts. One

person take one.”

Although they could roughly guess what was happening, but for it to truly happen, all of them were immediately filled with joy and disbelief.

After a long while, everyone calmed down.

“What are you guys dilly dallying for? Hurry up!” Tang Tian opened his eyes wide and said impatiently: “Take the time now and familiarize yourself with it.”

They awoke from their daydream and immediately went up.

One treasure per person, the strength of the five families disciples greatly increased, but it would not be easy for them if they truly wanted to display their full potential. Tang Tian was no longer an amateur, especially through Bing’s trainings, he at least know what he was doing. It was impossible for them to form any coordination in such a short time.

The Black Arrow Warship had three silver grade main cannons installed, six Honeycomb Sword Cannons, three silver grade Star Mass Spears and 12 Heaven Devastating Blades.

Shi Sen’s Demonic Mounts nicely fit the 12 Heaven Devastating Blades.

For the silver grade Star Mass Spears, they were handed over to

the Aries Constellation's Yu Family who were experts in Spear techniques.

Tang Tian left the Honeycomb Sword Cannons for himself.

Three sets of silver grade main cannons were unsuitable against the nimble pirate warships, so they were forsaken by Tang Tian and Little Fool.

Suddenly, Tang Tian and Little Fool were surprised by an abrupt flow of light aura, they stopped their discussion, and were completely stunned by the scene in front of them.

Each and every single person were enveloped in lights, the lights were of different colors, causing the warship to become extremely colorful and bright.

But the next thing that happened instantly caused Tang Tian and Little Fool's face to change.

On board the pirate ship.

“How much longer till we catch up?” Mei Chen Xiu asked.

The adjutant beside him quickly gave him a precise timing: “In around 15 minutes. Lucky for us, our warship's speed is good, and

that Meng Nan has too many people onboard, if not, we will have difficulty catching up to the Black Arrow Warships.”

The adjutant was moved, Chen Mei Xiu was no different, the Black Arrow Warship’s performance was absolutely one of the best amongst the small size warships, and of course its price was equally scary. If he was commanding the luxuriously equipped and prepared Honorable Martial Army, Chen Mei Xiu had many ways to chase, but he was currently leading pirates. To not attract attention, there was never any communication between the pirates and the Honorable Martial Continent. Even the communication between Chen Mei Xiu and his family were cut off.

“Get everyone to be prepared for battle, Meng Nan’s fighting abilities are not to be underestimated.” Chen Mei Xiu did not look down on his opponents even if they were a fleet.

Meng Nan had proven his strength time and time again, and to Chen Mei Xiu who had personally proven himself, he would never look down on a person like that.

Suddenly, the adjutant cried out in surprise: “Oh my god, what is that?”

Chen Mei Xiu was startled, he immediately turned to look at his opponent, his eyes constricting.

The Black Arrow Warship ahead of them had lit up with dazzling multicolored light auras, those light auras were actually leaking out of the warship!

What's going on?

The Black Arrow Warship is not known for its defense, but its body was made up of Black Mist Wood. Black Mist Wood had weak transparency, thus keeping light auras from leaking out, but for light aura to be penetrating through it, how bright must the light auras be?

What are those light auras?

A strong intense uneasiness birthed in Chen Mei Xiu's heart, just at that moment, he sensed something, and muttered: "Energy ripples, a powerful energy ripple...."

His adjutant looked to the sky outside, there were sudden torrents appearing in the sky, like blades cutting across water, sweeping at extraordinary speeds.

Ssssi!

The energy torrents swept past their warship, the screeching sound caused the hull to shake.

"Not good!" Chen Mei Xiu's eyes suddenly grew round, his face filled with shock: "They are absorbing energy!"

Ssssi ssssi ssssi!

All of the energy torrents were like transparent arrows, shooting in all directions across the sky, like raindrops flowing towards the Black Arrow Warship.

Chen Mei Xiu and his team watched as an unforgettable scene appeared before them.

Countless energy torrents flocked together, like ten thousand arrows being shot, they entered the warship.

The light aura of the warship became even stronger, as the multicolored light auras becoming even denser.

Ssssi sssssi ssssi!

Energy from even further away started to be pulled, under the intense attractions, the energy torrents gradually curved, until a vortex storm visible to the naked eye started to form in the horizon.

Energy storm!

Chen Mei Xiu never thought that there would be a day where he would witness the complete formation of a storm. The energy storm grew bigger and bigger, quickly exceeding over 1.5km, it was extremely oppressive, the energy contained was enough to choke people's hearts.

The intense and crazy energy surged fanatically into the warship.

With the Black Arrow Warship in the center of the storm, the light auras continued to become brighter. The transparent yet quickly revolving energy storm was like a layer of water, the Black Arrow Warship's light aura was so bright that no one could see the Black Arrow Warship any more.

“Not good! Master, our warship's energy is starting to disperse!” The adjutant's panicked shouts awoke Chen Mei Xiu from his stupor, his face instantly changing.

Every warship held an astronomical amount of energy, that was the source of power for the warship's movements. All of this energy had been sealed with many layers, and was extremely safe.

This was the first time Chen Mei Xiu had encountered the energy of a warship being dispersed.

What a strong suction force!

Chen Mei Xiu looked at the Black Arrow Warship in shock, What's going on inside there?

“Retreat!”

Chen Mei Xiu shouted, everything that was happening was too shocking. Although they could not understand what was happening inside the Black Arrow Warship, but even the slowest

person could sense the intense danger from the Black Arrow Warship.

After retreating over 200 li, the energy dispersal finally disappeared, at the same time, all of the pirate groups that had finished battling had caught up.

Chen Mei Xiu felt more at ease.

Two pirate fleets had took a roundabout, they had avoided the terrifying energy storm by arching around, and blocked the path of the Black Arrow Warship.

This also meant that they had completed surrounding the Black Arrow Warship.

Regardless of what direction the Black Arrow Warship wanted to move, they would be blocked. This caused the Honorable Martial Continent to become even more confident. Although the scene before them were out of their expectations, but they firmly believed they held the advantage. Although the Black Arrow Warship held an advantage in speed, but as long as they were trapped, they would lose that advantage, and be like a fish trapped in a bowl, waiting for people to slaughter it.

The only thing that made them hesitate was the unknown activity happening inside the Black Arrow Warship.

Tang Tian regained his composure, he suddenly felt that the scene before him was extremely familiar, Didn't this happen to the seven sets of armors in the Sword Forest Stronghold?

But, the scale of it was even more terrifying.

The treasures Tang Tian took out were mostly silver grade. But when the silver grade treasures were awakened in the hands of the disciples, the martial spirits inside the treasures immediately sensed the dense energy, the unprecedented dense energy.

The base instinct of absorbing energy instantly strengthened and exploded.

When the hundreds of treasures were giving their all to absorb energy, it produced an effect, far greater than the seven sets of treasures of the Sword Forest Stronghold, and even more terrifyingly.

All the energy in the Southern Islands were being pulled, and poured into all the treasures.

The light auras were the treasures greedily and fanatically absorbing energy.

Tang Tian could clearly feel that the treasures were greatly strengthening at a tremendous speed. The most obvious were the bronze treasures, they quickly silverized, increasing in grade and

becoming silver grade treasures. For the silver treasures, they had already started forming a dim layer of gold.

Suddenly, Tang Tian slapped his own forehead.

I'm truly stupid, this is so simple, why didn't I think of it?

It was as though he had seen a road filled with gold.

Chapter 651 – Returning To The Shang Continent

The energy storm continued for 10 minutes.

Mei Chen Xiu's face was extremely ugly, the energy concentration around them had become extremely thin, far thinner than ever before. It was as though the energy in the entire Southern Islands had been stolen.

What's happening?

Mei Chen Xiu had never heard of such a thing.

“Master, the energy concentration outside is too low.” The adjutant's tone was filled with deep shock: “It has already started to form a negative energy pressure, we need to leave now!”

Ordinarily, the energy concentration inside a warship is much denser than the energy concentration in the air. But, if the energy concentration in the air was too thin, it would result in negative energy pressure. The thin energy in the air would produce an intense suction force, causing the energy in the warship to be lost.

The materials used to make the warships were expensive, and thus this loss of energy would cause permanent damage.

Mei Chen Xiu bit his lips tightly, his face green.

The loss of the warship was the most terrible thing that could happen to them. It must be known that they were still in the White Sands Continent, and the three silver armies of White Sands Continent were still intact.

It was such a huge movement, if White Sands Continent did not have any counter reaction, they were truly idiots.

If the fleet that Mei Chen Xiu was commanding was the Honorable Martial Army, he would not be afraid, and he would not even place Suo Bi's 1st Army in his eyes, but what he was leading were pirates. Even though the backbone of the pirates were the elites of the Honorable Martial Continent, but the standard of the soldiers were too weak compared to silver grade armies.

Once they were to be tangled with silver grade armies, they would be in danger.

But what truly made Mei Chen Xiu choose to surrender was actually the Black Arrow Warship. All the energy in the Southern Islands was absorbed by the Black Arrow Warship. If all the energy in the Sea of Energy was compacted into a warship, what could be happening inside?

Mei Chen Xiu was equally curious and afraid.

In battle, if such a large amount of energy were to converge, it was usually the precedence to an extremely large scale attack.

The other pirate groups had started to retreat. Under the environment of negative energy pressure, the longer they stayed, the more damage would be done to the warships. At that time, even if they wanted to escape, it would be impossible.

Furthermore, they were in truth satisfied with the result. The Five Southern Island Families were completely destroyed, and what remained were a bunch of kids, what could they possibly stir?

Mei Chen Xiu clenched his teeth: "We retreat!"

To ruin the entire operation for a small group would be the most terrible thing, and what made him worry even more was the transformation occurring inside the Black Arrow Warship. For some reason, the surprising transformation made him feel an unprecedented threat.

But he could not find fault with his companions who had chosen to retreat, to preserve their strength and to decide on the next course of action.

Mei Chen Xiu sorted out his emotions and recovered his steadiness. His eyes flashed with a look of cold.

How can White Sands Continent not sense the huge movements in the Southern Islands? After this, the three silver grade armies will definitely chase after us.

Maybe, this is also a good opportunity, they will definitely not think about it, If we ourselves counterattack at this time....

A brazen plan started forming in Mei Chen Xiu's mind.

When the Black Arrow Warship became calm again, all the pirates had disappeared without a trace. All of the five families disciples who had gained their new power, returned back to their Southern Islands which was in ruins, the desolation in their eyes without any life remaining, caused them all to cry.

They teared, and buried the bodies of their families.

In the sky, Shi Sen looked down with a look of sympathy: "Master, do we go and help them?"

The people beside him also revealed the same expressions.

"No!" unexpectedly, Tang Tian rejected instantly, his gaze down at the ruins, he said: "Their lives and their future, were in exchange for their own family and kin. Burying your own kin, no one else can do it for you, it is like their hatred and responsibility, no one has the qualifications to help them with it."

Shi Sen's mouth was wide opened, he wanted to say something, but could not say a word.

"Do you think I am cruel?" Tang Tian did not turn back, he did not divert his gaze, his tone as calm as always: "The dead are dead,

they have already sacrificed themselves, do not let that sacrifice go to waste.”

“Aren’t you saying their future will always hold the hatred? Don’t you think that’s too heavy for them?” Ling Xia could not help but feel unhappy about Tang Tian’s reaction.

Tang Tian looked at Ling Xia: “Yes, it’ll be heavy. They do not have the privilege to choose, regardless of whether or not they think about it, their futures were given with the sacrifice of their families. That last bit of hope and anticipation from their families, they have to take it and live on.”

Ling Xia was mute.

“Master is right!”

It was Wei Hao, Yu Qing Yi and the rest. They had finished burying their family members and their eyes swollen and red. They had just heard Tang Tian’s words, and it pierced their hearts. Their swollen eyes were replaced with a new light, amidst their pain and grief, they found their new goal.

“Bringing the hope, we will live on!”

This phrase resonated in their hearts.

“That’s right!” Tang Tian said courteously: “The hope from their sacrifice are not for the cowards! If you do not even have the heart,

this responsibility and burden will be too heavy for you, you might as well dig a hole for yourself.”

The eyes of Yu Qing Yi and the rest lit up.

“A godlike young lad, needs to be brave.” Tang Tian patted his chest, with a look of arrogance: “Do you know what bravery is to this godlike young lad? It is not being not afraid, no one is ever not afraid, it is being afraid and taking it on! Trash will always make excuses, and cower in their grief and pain. A godlike young lad will only go, go and keep moving forward! If you’re unafraid, go, if you’re afraid, harden your skin and go. If you are grieving, then bring that grief and go. If you’re in despair, then fight and move on with all your might. All those who say they cannot see any hope, or wasting energy, are all making excuses for themselves. If you’re about to die, are you still going to kneel and cry? Even a beast trapped in a cage will keep on struggling, struggle and struggle to get out until it dies. So a godlike young lad, should keep moving and not stop, go go go!”

Everytime Tang Tian said the phrase “Godlike young lad”, his awkward face would portray pride, and reveal a strange and hilarious look. And every time he said the words “go go go”, he would raise his hands high up in the air, with a fierce look, he would roar them out.

But no one laughed, everyone was stunned.

Those naive and hilarious words, those childish and funny actions, struck their hearts.

Tang Tian did not even care if the words struck a chord in their hearts, the words were not even meant for them but for himself! After shouting, he felt the vague haze in his chest disappear, and everything became clear to him.

He clenched his fists tightly, his entire body brimming with strength, the will and fighting intent in his heart was so full it could leak out.

That's right, I am the Godlike young lad! That's right, I will keep fighting like that!

That's right, I am unstoppable!

Tang Tian who had his arms raised suddenly started laughing.

Tang Tian and the rest left the Southern Islands, and very quickly gathered back together with Tang Chou who was leading the Swift Army and Skull Unit. They left straightaway, returning back to the Shang Continent, with Xu Jin who joined up with them.

The reason on why Tang Tian chose to leave was because his residence was overly packed. The women from the aristocratic families that he had saved the last time were all important figures in White Sands Continent and the various nearby continents. Thus, to thank their benefactor Tang Tian, all the families started to arrive and greet him endlessly, causing even the hotels to be filled.

Many of the families held power, and even the new Continent Lord could not stop them, and had to even personally lead them to Tang Tian.

Thinking about that situation, Tang Tian's skin went numb, and without hesitation, he chose to leave.

And thus, Tang Tian threw all the families to Qin Yu Ran, who was experienced in conducting herself, and with the help of Aunt Qiu, Tang Tian was more relaxed. With him as her backing, and adding the relation of the White Sands Continent, he believed no one would do anything to her.

Tang Tian who threw all the responsibilities away happily returned back to the Shang Continent.

I've been out for so long, it's time to go back.

Bing had been living relaxingly for the past few days. After igniting the spark against Vast Star Continent, they finally sensed the impending danger and finally sent people to negotiate.

Bing who could even extract blood from a mosquito, adding the highly intellectual Crane, Vast Star Continent had no choice but to fork out a tremendous price.

The Vast Star Continent was in terrible conditions, they needed to, with the fastest speed, wipe out the spark in their back. Only with that could they focus on handling all the restless continents around them.

In truth, the higher ups of the Vast Star Continent already knew that they would have difficulty protecting the Vast Star Continent by relying on themselves.

The Vast Star Continent was extremely weak with a lot of loopholes. All the various continents around were like ravenous wolves, waiting for the chance to pounce and bite them.

Very quickly, the emissary from the Vast Star Continent reached the Shang Continent for the second time.

The Vast Star Continent needed an ally, a powerful ally, and with this powerful ally could they possibly restrain the wolves around them. It was obvious that the mysterious people of the Shang Continent were the perfect people. Consecutively defeating their two silver grade armies, and their strange Sword Forest Stronghold, their strength was apparent.

The Shang Continent was a poor and desolate continent, and this welcomed a lot of scouts and spies.

The Shang Continent's performance had attracted the eyes of many continents. They were extremely curious about the sudden mysterious powerhouse.

Bing did not care, he knew that their victory came by many lucky chances. In truth, the strength he held was very limited, they looked strong but were weak in reality. Thus he did not care about the scouts and spies, and trained the soldiers under him.

The good news was that there were many relatively strong people that ran in, hoping to join in the Shang Continent's Army.

Bing knew that there were many powerhouses who had sent their scouts and informants into the Shang Continent, but they were all accepted in. How could he not, they were all manpower!

Bing was in need of manpower.

The conditions of the Shang Continent was no longer able to keep up with their development. For example, their estuary was too small, and the bigger boats were unable to enter. In terms of defense, that would be rather advantageous, but in the eyes of business, it was a huge loss.

The future of the Shang Continent was to produce Black Gold and products from Heaven's Road. Everything will go through the Shang Continent.

Other than that, they had to construct a fort near the estuary. An estuary without a proper fort defense would allow enemies to freely enter the Shang Continent, and that was something Bing could not accept.

So all of the work required a huge amount of manpower. The population of the Shang Continent was already extremely pitiful.

Bing who was almost forced crazy kept on shouting in his mind.

Please, all your spies or scouts or whatever, send them all in!

Chapter 652 – Training With The Pervert

“Fuck, are we here to scout or what? What is going on now?” Ji Shan’s face was filled with anger, he had been sent to the Shang Continent for close to half a month to investigate and report.

Upon entering the Shang Continent, they noticed the recruitment notice, causing Ji Shan to be pleased, it was an opportunity for them to enter the internal department of the Shang Continent! After that, everything went smoothly. Entering the army, Ji Shan noticed all the familiar faces and was surprised.

All of them were his old opponents, the scouts and informants from the various families, Ji Shan was secretly shocked, it seemed as though everyone viewed the Shang Continent with great importance. Although he was shocked inwardly, but he remained expressionless on the outside.

All of them were veterans, they looked at each other, and tacitly showed compliance in their eyes, and acted as though nothing was wrong.

But what happened after that completely exceeded their anticipations.

After finishing with the recruitment, this recruited army did not undergo any training and did not even enter the Sword Forest Stronghold. The entire army started to work on various jobs.

Expanding the Estuary, building up strongholds.....

They were like a group of hardworking coolie workers, working day and night. A few of them even wanted to instigate some ruckus, but in the end they were captured before it even began.

Ji Shan remembered the few of them, in that moment, he started to have sympathy towards his old enemies, those who were caught were destined for tragedy. But he was surprised to find that the few of them were not condemned to death, but instead detained to continue with even more manual labor. Even when they were shifted to the most dangerous of positions, there were no rewards or incentives in trade for that.

There was reward in work, and the reward was so great it made the eyes of the soldiers to go red.

This new manual labor army, other than the scouts, the rest were actually rather satisfied. They did not need to fight, there was no danger, and they could still earn money, what could be better? The only downside was that it's tough work, but what work was not tough? Training was equally tough, and to the men who were willing to leave their homes, they did not mind the hard work, so long as they could earn a decent living.

And to those soldiers with high ambitions, there too were things for them to be eager for.

The top three most outstanding in the work, other than getting a high salary, would be able to obtain black gold weapons produced by the Sword Forest Stronghold. This brand new weapon was the

specialty of the Sword Forest Stronghold, where no other places would ever hold such weapons, it was first rate weapons with outstanding power, regardless of what weapon was crafted from the black gold, the feel of them were exceptionally good.

Any of these weapons were worth a lot of money.

All of these weapons made the soldiers go crazy.

All of them worked like crazy through the nights and days. As spies or scouts, the most important thing to do was to blend in and not be outstanding. But they had to, instead, work even harder, as from the looks of it, all the soldiers around them were working extremely hard, trying to outshine each other.

“They want money, what can you do?” The one who spoke was Lei Meng, he was a spy from Dong Qi Continent, and was an experienced spy as well. Lei Meng looked tall and sturdy, and appeared crude, but was in fact a softie.

Ji Shan replied softly: “Don’t you think that the Black Gold and those black stones on the ground look alike?”

A flash of light flashed in Lei Meng’s eyes: “What proof do you have?”

In the period of time they were in the Shang Continent, although they were busy working, they had some harvests as well. For example, they knew that the Shang Continent was wealthy,

extremely wealthy, they were able to fork out astronomical sums of money each day.

But what truly incited the excitement of the spies were the mysterious black gold weapons.

They were all experts of their trade, and were familiar with such type of weapons. They knew that the black gold weapons could not come from anywhere else. Their judgement and senses were sharper than the average person, and many of them secretly guessed that the black gold weapons had a connection to the black rocks.

But the majestic Sword Forest Stronghold made that guess seem like a joke. If the black gold truly came from the black rocks, how extravagant was it for them to be able to use the black rocks to create such an imposing fortification?

Ji Shan took out something from his pocket, it was a piece of black metal.

Lei Meng's eyes grew round: "Where did you get this?"

Ji Shan said indifferently: "I know a bit of refining."

Lei Meng calmed down: "Why are you telling me this?"

He was not a fool, if Ji Shan was able to prove the value of the black gold, it would undoubtedly be extremely valuable intel, and

such an intel had no reason to be shared. Ji Shan was an experienced spy, to do such an illogical action definitely had a reason behind it.

“Don’t you think the security here is a bit too little?” Ji Shan spoke softly, yet filled with enticement: “We only need two armies to hold this place down!”

Lei Meng sneered: “The Vast Star Continent thought so too.”

Ji Shan replied: “The Vast Star Continent underestimated them. If they did not underestimate them from the start, who knows if they would have taken them down.”

“You don’t have to speak about things which are uncertain.” Lei Meng refuted sarcastically.

“Why don’t our two continents work together?” Ji Shan suddenly threw in.

Lei Meng was startled, he suddenly realised that was Ji Shan’s true goal. But he also quickly thought about it, the Black Gold was proven to be from the black rocks, that means the boundless and vast black desert was the boundless and vast wealth.

He had to admit that Ji Shan had thought about it meticulously, the two continents were not adjacent to each other, but at totally different locations to the Shang Continent, if they were to send out their soldiers at the same time and catch the Shang Continent in

between, the probability of them winning was high. And the distance of the two continents was rather far, there were no direct benefits to conflict, so the chances of working together would be more successful.

The only thing that caused them to feel fear was the fortifications of the Sword Forest Strongholds, but as far as the black rock desert was concerned, they could completely avoid the Sword Forest Stronghold.

Lei Meng said cautiously: “I will report this information to my superiors.”

Ji Shan definitely knew that this suggestion was not something Lei Meng could decide on. So he dared to find Lei Meng to report to his superiors.

But regardless of whether or not the alliance would be successful or not, it was a good start, he finally saw hope to leave the bitter work!

Suddenly, there was an uproar ahead of them.

The two of them immediately became cautious, the two of them looked at each other, and tacitly moved forward.

“What’s going on?” Ji Shan pulled a soldier who he saw familiar.

The soldier said excitedly: “The army, our army!”

Army?

Ji Shan and Lei Meng looked at each other, a bad feeling rising in their hearts, since when did the Shang Continent have other armies?

The uproar ahead became even more intense, Ji Shan and Lei Meng followed the human tide and flew out of the Estuary. The stronghold outside of the Estuary was already in its initial stages, they could directly enter the stronghold and not be affected by the corrosion from the Sea of Energy.

In the far end of their vision, there was a small black dot that was quickly becoming bigger. That scale of fleet caused their faces to change.

When the fleet flew closer, the two finally heaved sighs of relief, the fleet looked to be huge, but they were just a bunch of small frigates without any notable warships.

When they were closer, they noticed that there were people around the fleets, many people.

Everyone noticed the people onboard, and were all startled, they did not understand what was happening.

They did not understand why the people were not riding the ships, but flying in the sea of energy and letting the energy inside

the sea of energy corrode their bodies!

For a moment, everyone calmed down.

Xie Yu An's face was covered in dust, he had become much skinnier, but his eyes still sparkled with energy, like lights in the pitch black sky, flickering with a terrifying light aura.

“Maintain your concentration.”

“Do not relax.”

He commanded Swift Army thoroughly, when he saw the estuary, he was still in disbelief, they had truly reached the Shang Continent!

They had just met up with Tang Tian, when Master Tang Chou announced an inconceivable training plan.

Pull the fleet back to the Shang Continent!

Master Tang Chou did not give them any chance to refute, the only thing that let Xie Yu An feel consoled was that it was not only the Swift Army who were participating in the pulling, but everyone had to participate.

The Swift Army, Skull Unit, Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, The Southern Islands Five Constellations, everyone had

to participate. But everyone did not expect that when their Master heard that, he became excited and decided to participate as well.

The distance in the sea of energy was extremely far, and filled with danger and difficulty. There was resistance everywhere, and energy corrosion at all times, and the concealed energy vortices that were dangerous and could randomly appear and engulf them.....

And Master Tang Chou's demands were extremely harsh, even under the dangerous environment, the armies were required to maintain the high synchronization frequency, and in all the daily training, it could not drop.

Even Shi Sen who self proclaimed to be the most familiar with the Sea of Energy, when he heard of Master Tang Chou's demands, his face became ashen. A pity, Shi Sen was under Tang Chou's command.

On the entire journey, everyone suffered to the bones.

If it were the pirates, they would be long dead. But in the Sea of Energy, the pirates were already considered as good existences, the unstable energy was like unstable bombs, they had to be 120% alert at all times without any time to relax.

At the start, everyone was too busy to care about the synchronization frequency, all of their ashen faces revealed their dejectedness and depression, they could not even maintain their formations.

There were always people getting injured, who would be sent to the transport ship. Yu Qing Yi's medical techniques were proficient, and after obtaining star treasures, it was like giving wings to a tiger, injuries were quickly healed, and once again sent to the Sea of Energy to continue participating in the terrifying training.

No one dared to utter any words of anger, because their master was also participating in the training.

If even their master did not harbor any words of anger, how could any of them have the qualifications to do so? Even the master could bear the training, how could they not?

So everyone bit their teeth and bitterly struggled on.

From the start, Xie Yu An and the rest kept on using their Master's figure to incite morale for everyone, but very quickly, no one had the energy to say anything. Because everyone underestimated their master's degree of perverseness.

At the start, their Master was the same as them, struggling with great difficulty. But very quickly, he became like a fish in water, causing everyone to be speechless. But the following action caused them to be even more dumbfounded.

He took it upon himself to run into the raging energy tides to temper his own body, initiated to attract the unstable energy regiments to refine his defensive capability, launched attacks into

the energy vortices.....

While everyone else pulled on quietly, the boss would scream occasionally and run into the energy regiments, and after that, he would roar and rush forward.....

Numb, everyone was numb. The world was cruel not because of perverse creatures, but to place the perverse creature beside you.

Until the phrase “Win and overcome yourself, and not compare with perverse people.” came out, did the all round low morale finally raise once again.

The unthinkable and terrifying training was like a tough and rough grindstone, slowly polishing out the sharpness of Xie Yu An and the rest.

When they saw the Estuary to the Shang Continent, all of them roared for joy, and renewed life birth from their minds again.

What they did not know, was that their towering sharp aura brought about from their dust filled faces gave other people an intense shock.

Chapter 653 – Old General He Si Ji

This was Yang Zi Qing's second time to the Shang Continent. When he arrived, he coincidentally witnessed the strange fleet entering the Shang Continent.

He Si Ji standing beside him stared and observed, He Si Ji was the Vast Star Continent's Military Chancellor, and was the Continent Lord's right hand man alongside Yang Zi Qing. Yang Zi Qing was in charge of the internal affairs, while He Si Ji was well versed with military matters. When he was young, he was a famed general with colorful military successes, and as he grew older, his body became weaker, disallowing him from going back to the front lines, thus he started to guide talented young people in the continent. 75% of the silver grade generals of the Vast Star Continent were groomed by him, the rest all received guidance from him, and thus his reputation is second only to the Continent Lord.

He Si Ji had a pair of blue eyes and a eagle sharp nose that made him look extremely cold. He stood up straight, the military years never escaping his body. He did not portray happiness or sadness, an emotionless expression on his face like a statue.

All of his attention was focused on the approaching fleet.

Yang Zi Qing's expression revealed fatigue, the Vast Star Continent was in a state of unrest, causing him to be both mentally and physically exhausted. His arrival this time was to be able to form an alliance with the Shang Continent. Relying only on the Vast Star Continent's strength itself was unable to shake the eyes

of the wolves around them.

That was the reason of He Si Ji joining him, the Shang Continent's military strength could not be hidden in front of the old general. Their main task this time was for the old general to assess the Shang Continent.

Yang Zi Qing did not disturb him, He Si Ji was much older than him, and even he had to call the old general "Master".

Yang Zi Qing also looked at the fleet curiously.

The fleet did not have anything worth mentioning, but his attention was captured by the soldiers who looked extremely tired. He was somewhat surprised, all of them were extremely skinny, face covered with dirt and dust, their clothes were also tattered and torn, as though they were a troop of beggars going around asking for scraps.

Yang Zi Qing had never seen such poverty-stricken army before.

Could it be that the Vast Star Continent was actually beaten by a group of beggars? Yang Zi Qing was in disbelief, he felt that it might be probable that the fleet was an army recruited by Shan Continent.

But he quickly frowned, he had fought with Bing before, the cunning and crafty man would definitely not make such a mistake. And there was Crane, a quiet and calm young man, who had

nobility flowing in his veins, he was also not one to make such a mistake.

Then what was the reason?

Very quickly, Yang Zi Qing came back to his senses, he self mocked himself, What am I thinking so much for? I have Master He Si Ji by my side, the only one who can see through all of this.

He turned and was about to speak to He Si Ji, but he noticed the surprise on He Si Ji's face.

For some reason, Yang Zi Qing's heart jumped.

Master He Si Ji was a respected old general who complied with tradition, and never showed his expressions. Even in the most dangerous of situations, he would never show fear, Yang Zi Qing had conversed with him so many times and had never seen any fluctuation in the old man's face.

There was even some time where Yang Zi Qing secretly thought that Master he Si Ji had once injured his face, causing his muscles to be crippled and thus unable to portray any emotions.

When Yang Zi Qing saw Master He Si Ji revealing shock, an intense surge of curiosity and unease crept up his heart.

What is it that can make this steel face old man reveal such a look of shock?

Just then, the old man sighed.

Yang ZI Qing sharply sensed the disappointment in the old man's face.

“We were defeated without injustice.” He Si Ji regained his usual expressionless face: “The other party's strength far exceeds ours.”

Yang Zi Qing spoke with caution and curiosity: “Master, I hope you can guide me, Zi Qing is unable to understand, I cannot see any peculiarity amongst that group of people? Their equipment is so terrible, and they looked as though poverty have struck them.”

He Si Ji was extremely familiar with Yang Zi Qing, and was not afraid to speak his mind: “Exactly the opposite. If this old one did not guess wrong, this troops must have definitely just recently gone through a long and difficult journey. No, it should be inside the Sea of Energy, where they underwent training on foot.”

Yang Zi Qing revealed a look of shock: “Master, you are saying they trained in the Sea of Energy on foot?”

He thought that he had heard wrongly, the Vast Star Continent had organised a few trainings in the Sea of Energy before, but that was in ships. How could one train in the Sea of Energy on foot? If not for Yang Zi Qing's respect towards He Si Ji, he would had definitely snorted in disbelief.

What kind of place was the Sea of Energy? A place filled with danger anywhere that could take lives at any time. Energy corrosion occurred everywhere, with the unstable chaotic flows, even warships that travelled in the Sea of Energy could meet with mishap.

Training in the Sea of Energy on foot? Are they tired of living?

Only a few strong martial artists could conduct such training. But even these powerful martial artists could easily lose their lives in the Sea of Energy. It was the first time for Yang Zi Qing to hear that an army would be training in the Sea of Energy, wasn't that seeking death? Won't the soldiers rebel?

He Si Ji noticed Yang Zi Qing's expression, but was not angry. Even his initial reaction to his own guess was "impossible".

He did not explain further, it was only a guess.

"They have three armies." He Si Ji said, he knew that his assessment was extremely important to Yang Zi Qing's judgement, so he decided to explain everything that he saw, to provide clarity to Yang Zi Qing to consider.

"The first army, is a typical standard army. You can see their method of advancement, and, notice the energy flow around them." He Si Ji said.

Yang Zi Qing squinted his eyes, and asked with uncertainty:

“There seems to be a flow around them?”

“Yes, they are training their synchronization frequency.” a light aura flickered in He Si Ji’s eyes: “From the way the energy flows, their synchronization is at an extremely scary level. Seeing the scars on their clothes, there should be a doctor with them. And from the looks of their broken equipment, it seems the time they had spent training in the Sea of Energy is definitely not short. The military general in their ranks is experienced, and has obtained the schooling of the standard military school, and has an extremely solid foundation in it.”

Yang Zi Qing nodded his head, He Si Ji was truly a seasoned old general that has groomed out many silver grade generals. His foresight was far stronger than what Zi Qing could compare to, he could infer many things from even the smallest things.

“The second army should be a hired army.” He Si Ji continued.

“Hired army?” Yang Zi Qing was startled: “What do they want to do with a hired army?”

The strength of a hired army far lacked as compared to a standard army. Comparing equal silver grade armies, a silver grade standard army could easily wipe out a silver grade army for hire. Regardless of quality, training or equipment, an army for hire can never compare to a standard army. Even the famous army for hires have lacking qualities as compared to a standard army.

Why would they have an army for hire? Are they lacking in

manpower? Yang Zi Qing was suspicious.

He Si Ji shook his head: “Don’t look down on them. The things they practise are for special purposes. Their small scale infiltrations and intersecting attacks are extremely sharp. Their commander should be planning to make them into an army proficient in guerilla warfare, it’s an extremely brilliant idea!”

He Si Ji continued to praise.

Yang Zi Qing was still suspicious: “They can do that?”

“They should be able to.” He Si Ji continued: “as long as you train them with specific planning and tactics, and raise their individual strength. This method has many uses. Look at them, they no longer have the slippery aura of mercenaries, but instead giving off the air of elites. They might look scattered, but in truth they are in a profound formation, that should be one of their specialized tactics. Their commander is extremely powerful.”

He Si Ji was extremely sharp to the aura of armies.

Yang Zi Qing then pointed to the group that was obviously smaller: “Who are the ones behind them? They seem to be few in numbers.”

Suddenly, he realised something, and his face immediately became unnatural: “Shi Sen! That’s Shi Sen!”

Shi Sen's betrayal was initially not something huge, he was just a commander of a cannon fodder army. But the silver grade general Sun Jie died because of him, causing an uproar, and thus the first time the name Shi Sen entered the ears of the higher ups in the Vast Star Continent.

He Si Ji's expression became serious: "Those are Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts."

"Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts?" Yang Zi Qing was startled for a moment, but immediately snorted: "No wonder! The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts are not to be trusted, they are all indecisive people!"

The reputation of the Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts was extremely bad, other than being difficult of being distinguished, they also had the bad reputation of murdering their employers, thus Yang Zi Qing revealed the look of disgust.

"No, they are the real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts." He Si Ji revealed a rarely seen look of remorse, the Vast Star Continent actually had the real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts but he himself did not know.

"Real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts?" Yang Zi Qing was once again startled.

He Si Ji knew that Yang Zi Qing was not clear on such matters, and explained: "There are many bogus Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts in the market, overflowing all around. But there

are very few of the real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, because of their extremely strict tests, they are also very powerful. To be able to find up to 500 of the real Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts, that is truly difficult! Do not look down on that number, they have terrifying fighting ability. They should be the last group of Demonic Mounts, and are longing for glory, so you can never underestimate them!"

Hearing He Si Ji's high appraisal of the Demonic Mounts, and knowing it was them who let the big fishes go, Yang Zi Qing felt immense regret.

This subject made him feel uncomfortable, so he continued: "What about those people behind with light auras all around them?"

"They are not any army." It was He Si Ji's first time revealing an unsure tone: "They could be strong martial artists."

"Strong martial artists?" Yang Zi Qing was dumbstruck.

Those extremely densely packed light auras floating around the boats, numbered to a few thousands. A few thousand strong martial artists? Impossible!

Even He Si Ji felt that it was impossible to have so many strong martial artists, and spoke with hesitation: "Their individual strengths are not too bad, but their coordination is terrible, no, they completely have no coordination, like a patch of loose sand, that is why I say that they are not any army. The light around

them is extremely miraculous, and there are so many of them with it.....”

He Si Ji did not know how to continue.

Instead, Yang Zi Qing calmed down: “Seems like they are truly powerful.”

“Very!” He Si Ji confirmed.

The two of them looked at each other, with a look of excitement and worry.

Chapter 654 – Descend Into The Savage Continent

At the extreme north of the Savage Continent, there was a huge war occurring.

Over 100 tribes were clearly separated into two large armies, standing opposite each other on the vast snow plain. In the Savage Continent, the frequency of battles occurring was far more than any other place in the Sacred Saint Galaxy. The general atmosphere of the harsh lands was that they revered strength, causing every tribe inside to participate in never ending battles.

Located in the Aba Mountains of the South was the Steel Mountain King Court, and located in the Vast Snow Plains was the North Blizzard King Court, who were always in conflict. Finally, both parties lost patience and brought all of the tribes that belonged to them to the fight to the death.

This war had greatly influenced the structure of the northern part in the Savage Continent.

At the forefront of both parties, there were many altars of different sizes placed all over. The raging flames caused the pots inside the houses to release fragrant smoke, all sorts of various beast meat cooked in the iron pots, blood mist congealed inside the pots, squirming around.

On the different altars, there were the witch doctors of the various tribes, all of them dancing with the bone staffs in hand,

looking seemingly fanatical as though they were truly insane.

In both King Courts, they had over a hundred tribes, each tribe worshipping different totems, thus their offerings were all different to each other. Worship sacrifice before battle was the most commonly seen tradition of the Savage Continent, as it could greatly increase the strength of the soldiers.

This was why the other continents believed that the Savage Continent were not civilized.

Bizarre power surged out from each other altars, converging in the air above the snow plains.

After half an hour, the Sovereign King of both parties suddenly raised their heads at the same time, a look of surprise flashed past their eyes.

The Savage Continent revered strength the most, and every King Court would be held by what they call Sovereign King. Every Sovereign King was a powerful martial artists. In the desolate land, purely relying on wits and intellect was unable to establish a King Court.

Steel Mountain Sovereign King Tie Ji, North Blizzard Sovereign King Ah Si Ming were such strong martial artists, their sensitivity towards energy far exceeded any ordinary person.

But at that moment, their faces were gloomily watching the sky,

sensing something amiss.

In such big wars, offering sacrifice at the frontlines was extremely common, both parties had their sacrifice ceremonies churning up in the air, or it should be reasonable to say that the power from both sides were fighting in the air, but that was just the prologue to the battle.

But, the sacrificial power from the various tribes were actually gathering and merging in the air, not differing between enemies.

They had never encountered such a strange situation before.

Very quickly, the witch doctors on their altars also sensed that something was wrong. There seemed to be an invisible vortex in the air, frantically absorbing their strength, they could sense that the power from their altars were quickly surging into the air.

Buzzzzzz.

One of the tribal warriors suddenly realized that the weapon in his hands was trembling slightly, as though it was struggling free from his hands.

He was shocked, he immediately turned his head to look, and in his eyes, all the weapons were trembling.

Buzz buzz buzz buzz!

The sudden appearance of the tide of buzzing sounds caused their skins to go numb.

Tie Jie and Ah Si Ming's faces changed, there was a power converging in the sky, and in a short span of time, it had swelled into a terrifying hurricane. The all powerful Sovereign Kings felt their heart jumping.

What's happening?

The sky was suddenly cut by countless of light scars that resembled shooting stars, which was the friction between the high speed energy flow and the air, producing light auras, they were gathering from all angles, rushing towards the invisible vortex above the snow plains.

Tens of thousands of light scars gathered to form a dazzling vortex.

The vortex became increasingly bright, the terrifying undulation was like a humongous wave that rumbled outwards.

The powerful force caused everyone's hearts to tremble, and all of the valiant tribal warriors felt overwhelming shock. Plop, someone's knees went weak and knelt on the ground, as though the ripple had forced him down. In the two large armies that were about to face off, the soldiers started to kneel, all of their faces were buried in the snow, their hearts filled with reverent and fear.

On the snow plains, only the two sovereign kings stood strongly, both of them fighting against the powerful force.

The numbing sound suddenly disappeared, causing the land to become silent.

The bright vortex stopped revolving, forming a light door in the sky.

Suddenly, the eyes of both Sovereign Kings opened widely.

A figure slowly walked out from the light door, followed by another, and then more and more figures walked out, waves after waves of figures walked out.

Heroic Spirits!

There are actually so many heroic spirits!

The two Sovereign Kings watched in shock, blankly looking up at the sky.

Apart from the Savage Continent, everyone else called them Spirit Dyads, but in the land of brute and barbarians, they were hailed as Heroic Spirits. Heroic Spirits were seen as the protection assistance of the ancestors, people who were able to obtain heroic spirits would be able to receive the protection of their ancestors.

Tie Ji and Ah Si Ming were more knowledgeable than the other people, they knew that the Heroic Spirits were in fact strong martial artists that harbored strong emotions before they died, thus forming the Heroic Spirits. Like any other place, Heroic Spirits were like Spirit Dyads and could be bought.

But.....

All the Heroic Spirits had the same attire, with a rigid formation, they were obviously an army.

An army of Heroic Spirits.....

In the Savage Continent, to form Heroic Spirits, there were two criterias. One was to have an intense desire, the other was to be powerful enough when they were alive. In the Savage Continent, only the Sovereign Kings who died had the possibility of forming Heroic Spirits.

An army of Heroic Spirits.....that means if they were alive, wouldn't it be an army of Sovereign Kings?

The Two Sovereign Kings were completely shocked, one after another of Heroic Spirits walked out of the light door quietly, they surged on and on, as if behind the light door, there were an unlimited amount of Heroic Spirits.

The scale of the Heroic Spirits Army before them made the two Sovereign Kings numb.

Suddenly, a dark green figure walked out of the light door, stunning the two Sovereign Kings.

In the air, a young lady dressed in Military attire, Wearing the Perseus Crown, her long black hair fluttered with the wind, she looked down on the great land.

Tang Tian's party's arrival intimidated everyone.

Ji Shan and the other spies all quieted down, all of the soldiers released an intimidating killing aura that caused them to be fearful. When the fleet entered the Shang Continent, the spies discovered warships that had Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce and the Bai Family Emblem, causing their faces to change.

Hearing that Tang Tian was going back, Xu Jin and Bai Yue chased up halfway.

Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce was one of the most powerful weapons business under the sky, while the Bai Family was a powerful family with deep roots in the Southern Region, just a mere Shang Continent actually had relation to the two powerhouses, no one would dare to do anything without thinking.

Ji Shan and Lei Meng tacitly stopped discussing about plans to seize the Shang Continent. At the very second that they could, they

reported all the intell back to their superiors, and with ease they went back to the hard bitter work.

“Master!” Tang Chou greeted Bing.

“Well done!” Bing puffed out a smoke ring and nodded satisfyingly: “If you continue like this, i reckon it will not be long befor you to surpass me!”

Tang Chou remained serious: “This subordinate will surpass Master!”

“Then you must work hard!” Bing laughed out loud, he was not angry at all.

Xie Yu An and the rest did not dare to breath, in their hearts, Tang Chou was already a god of war. They never thought that the seemingly ordinary looking spirit dyad in front of them was called “Master” by Master Tang Chou, this birthed a stifling pressure inside their hearts.

Boss’ power is truly unfathomable.

The Sword Forest Stronghold had undergone a complete change, and was revamped to look completely different.

Crane accompanied Xu Jin and Bai Yue as they toured Sword Forest Stronghold. Born of nobility, Crane was meticulous when meeting people, thus such matters were left to him.

“Unique craftsmanship!” Bai Yue kept on praising: “I have seen many strongholds before, but this is the first time for me to encounter such a uniquely crafted stronghold. I wonder who is the creator of this Stronghold?”

Xu Jin who was standing beside Bai Yue was still in a daze, he had not recovered from the shock when he saw the desert covered in black. The black stones were endless, which meant the amount of wealth was endless. Even though he never lacked in money, he still got enchanted by the sea of Black Gold.

Bai Yue was equally shocked, but he was not shocked because of the amount of black stones, but by the Sword Forest Stronghold.

Crane laughed: “It was by our chief mechanical master.”

Bai Yue thought about it, by saying the word “Chief”, it meant that they did not only have one.

“I wonder if we can meet this person?” Bai Yue said with respect: “Such a high level grandmaster, if I am able to learn a thing or two from him, I can die without regrets.”

“My apologies, she is not here.” Crane said with an apologetic look.

“That is truly a pity.” Bai Yue was filled with remorse, his heart still thinking of all sorts of ways to try and meet with such an

intellectual person.

From the start, Bai Yue saw something in Meng Nan, and thought that he had the potential to become an ally of the Bai Family. But as time went on, Meng Nan kept giving him more and more surprises, and gradually revealing his strength, causing Bai Yue to constantly re-examine the relation between them.

He had also seen the transformation of Xie Yu An and the others.

Bai Yue himself was a famed grade general, but it was still the first time for him to witness such a cruel and harsh training. And what he never thought was that Xie Yu An and the rest would actually persist on.

Meng Nan, was a fearsome tiger, with his teeth and claws fully grown.

Bai Yue suddenly felt pity for the Vast Star Continent, with a tiger right beside them, they would never be able to sleep and eat in peace.

Bai Yue's guess was right, Yang Zi Qing and He Si Ji were already restless, and found out how much they have underestimated the Shang Continent. All the answers that Yang Zi Qing had prepared prior to coming here were all overthrown because old general He Si Ji had clearly told him that the Shang Continent was stronger than the Vast Star Continent.

The Vast Star Continent was like a house with many leaks all over, being pushed and pulled by the wind and rain, while the Shang Continent was full of vitality, soaring with power and momentum.

It was Yang Zi Qing's first time meeting Tang Tian, the true ruler of the Shang Continent.

Too Young!

Yang Zi Qing exclaimed in his mind, but he dare not look down on the other party. To be able to become so tyrannical at such a young age, who had the qualifications to look down on him?

His eyes gleamed with light, as he glanced at Bing who was puffing away beside Tang Tian. In front of him, there were no meaning to try any fancy moves. Yang Zi Qing had experience with him, and knew that Bing was hard to handle.

"We hope to form an alliance with the Shang Continent, I wonder what Continent Lord thinks about it?" Yang Zi Qing did not try to play at any angle, and went straight to the point. To the current Vast Star Continent, time was the most important, to waste time probing here and there would prove to be a huge loss to them.

"Alliance? Sure we can!" Bing puffed smoke rings, and continued: "We have to see what price your continent is willing to pay."

The feeling of cheating rich people was the best feeling.

Yang Zi Qing had made preparations prior, and without hesitation: “We are willing to gift Continent Lord the Pontoon bridge in the Sea of Light.”

Tang Tian and Bing were both startled, they had thought that the Vast Star Continent would be willing to fork out a huge amount, but they never thought that the Vast Star Continent was prepared to fork out such an extravagant price.

That was the Pontoon Bridge of the Sea of Light, the one and only Pontoon Bridge.

Chapter 655 – Respective Plans

If someone had to ask, what was the most valuable thing of the Vast Star Continent, the answer would definitely be the Pontoon Bridge inside the Sea of Light.

In the Sacred Saint Galaxy, to travel from continent to continent, they had to go through the Sea of Energy. Each continent was like a bubble scattered inside the vast Sea of Energy. In some of these “Bubbles”, there existed a unique type of energy belt, these energy belts are extremely stable in nature, and are able to isolate the “water” of energy, and that would be the Pontoon Bridge of the Ssea of Light.

Going inside the Pontoon Bridge was the same as being inside a continent.

Although civilization already knew how to construct warships to travel inside the Sea of Energy, they still had to bear the danger and the high costs. The dangerous Sea of Energy held countless of unknown dangers, and numerous fleets die inside the Sea of Energy every year. To the Sacred Saint Galaxy people, their history had always been fighting against the Sea of Energy.

Going via the Pontoon Bridge not only meant that it was safe, but it was even faster, and the cost was low.

The Southern Region had a total of three Pontoon Bridges in the Sea of Light, which were the main highways for the Southern Region. The Pontoon Bridge that belonged to the Vast Star

Continent was the longest, connecting 24 continents.

Thus it could be said that the Vast Star Continent held the most important bridge, connecting the Ming Continent, Yuan Continent, Li Hai Continent, all of which were in their prime. These three continents were the large continents in the top 20 of the Southern Region, adding the Vast Star Continent, the four continents that were connected, that value was undoubtable.

That Vast Star Continent was able to accumulate its wealth due to the Pontoon Bridge. In other words, the Pontoon Bridge was the foundation of the Vast Star Continent, so when Tang Tian and Bing heard that they were willing to give the bridge as the price, they were stunned. The two of them wanted to make Vast Star Continent feel pain, but did not even dare think about asking for the Pontoon Bridge, but who knew the other party would initiate handing it over to them....

Tang Tian and Bing looked at each other, they could see the suspicions in each others eyes.

When Yang Zi Qing said those words, he somehow felt extremely relaxed, so when he saw the two of them looking at each other, he raised his eyebrow: "Could it be that your Sire thinks that the price is not high enough?"

Bing regained his composure: "We were just surprised."

Yang Zi Qing laughed bitterly: "If we do not give it to you, we will not be able to hold it for ourselves either. Not hiding anything,

recently, the Pontoon Bridge has suffered from a few attacks, and we are soon unable to defend it. If your noble side is willing to form an alliance, then we need to be fast, because we do not know how long we can hold it for. Our conditions are very simple, to exchange the Pontoon Bridge for the Flying Edge Continent.”

“Freely access other continents?” Bing immediately understood the other party’s intentions, and sneered: “Your side did plan it well, give up the bridge that you are already unable to protect, so we have to do the heavy lifting, to withstand the pressure of protecting the bridge, and by using the Flying Edge Continent as a strategic guard post, you will truly be invulnerable to attacks.”

The Vast Star Continent was too open and thus the most difficult part to defend was the area of connection with the Pontoon Bridge. Although the Vast Star Continent had painfully cut off its meat, but because of that, they would obtain protection. Whoever accepted and took over the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light would immediately face the problem of how to guard and protect it, and would not have time to find trouble with the Vast Star Continent.

The Flying Edge Continent is a small continent like the Shang Continent, guarding the other channel into the Vast Star Continent. But as the Vast Star Continent was more reliant on the Pontoon Bridge, they rarely used that channel, thus the Flying Edge Continent had never been regarded as important, and thus it was occupied illegally by a group of pirates.

If anyone seized the entire Flying Edge Continent, they just needed an army to be positioned and stand guard inside Flying

Edge Continent, and attacking Vast Star Continent would become much easier, thus becoming a bigger threat.

Tang Tian then realized, the one who planned it out was smart and powerful, but the Vast Star Continent's Continent Lord, who had his hands tight, decided to firmly go through with it, which made Tang Tian feel respect for him. It was a beautiful piece of meat, but if they wanted to swallow it down, it could choke them instead.

“The Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light is worth the effort.” Yang Zi Qing did not give way, and he spoke honestly: “Although it is bound to be lost, but if not for this alliance, your noble side will definitely not be able to obtain the Pontoon Bridge. To your noble side, this is the one of a lifetime opportunity to obtain the Pontoon Bridge.”

“What do we need the Pontoon Bridge for?” Bing sneered: “For money? Do you think we are lacking in funds?”

Tang Tian glanced at Bing and thought, He truly acts really well, lacking in funds? Who is the first one always asking for money when we meet?

Yang Zi Qing was steadfast: “Although this is the first time I am meeting Continent Lord, but I know that Continent Lord has ambitions and high aims, I believe that Continent Lord will be able to make the right decision.”

“I want the Pontoon Bridge.” Tang Tian suddenly spoke: “But

that continent that you want, you have to take it for yourself. It will not be easy for us to protect and guard the Pontoon Bridge. I believe you will also want us to be able to defend against the other continents as well.”

“Great!” Yang Zi Qing immediately agreed, the Flying Edge Continent was just a small figure, as long as the Vast Star Continent pulled back the army that was protecting the Pontoon Bridge, they would have sufficient power to attack and take over the Flying Edge Continent.

Only after Yang Zi Qing and He Si Ji were satisfied did they leave.

Walking out, Yang Zi Qing was somewhat distracted: “I never thought they would really agree to it.”

“As long as the benefits are sufficient, people will naturally embrace the danger.” He Si Ji said emotionlessly.

The two of them were filled with worry, to the Vast Star Continent, losing the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light meant they would lose their main source of wealth, and in the long run, they would have to live frugally. What made them even sadder was that in the blink of an eye, the strong and glorious Vast Star Continent was on the road to poverty.

Yang Zi Qing took a deep breath: “We made the right choice!”

He Si Ji’s eyes lit up with fire: “It is our only choice. Let Meng

Nan and them go and fight, we will live in seclusion. While we recover, they will be exhausting themselves. And when the time is right, we will once again take back what belongs to us.”

“That’s right!” Yang Zi Qing regained his determination: “We will take back the Pontoon Bridge!”

The two of them looked at each other and laughed.

It was the old general that thought about the plan, after going through his meticulous thought process, he realized that although the Shang Continent was strong, but the long drawn perimeter defense would stretch their army thin, and he foresaw that the battle between the Shang Continent and the other continents would continue for a long time, exhausting both sides.

And by losing the burden of the Pontoon Bridge, drawing back from the perimeter, the Vast Star Continent would instead become more stable. All the years of accumulating their wealth, they would be able to recover to their peak state, and maybe become even stronger. At that time, they would not need to use so much effort to seize back the Pontoon Bridge and trample on the few continents.

In the room, Bing laughed bitterly: “It is truly good meat, but it’s too fat, we cannot swallow it.”

The Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light was not just a means of travel, but a path into the cities, the important and strategic cities, where there were large populations. To the continent now,

manpower was equally as important.

There were many benefits, but there would also be problems, the long defense perimeter is a huge burden to any powerhouse. It would seem as though the Vast Star Continent lost to Tang Tian, but looking from another angle, they were pulled down by the Pontoon Bridge as well.

“What if we don’t swallow it?” Tang Tian asked, surprising Bing.

“Not take it?” Bing was startled.

“What are we doing in the Sacred Saint Galaxy?” Tang Tian asked: “We are not here to make money or gain territory, we are here to defeat our enemy, the Honorable Martial Continent. Since it is so, why should we swallow it for ourselves? We can take it out and share it with everybody, so everyone will be as one, we can even supply treasures and what not, as long as they help us defeat Honorable Martial Continent, since they hate them too.”

Bing looked at Tang Tian in shock, and after a long time, he spoke: “That was what you were thinking?”

“Yea!” Tang Tian said as a matter of factly.

“You are starting to understand things.” Bing praised as he laughed, but he had to admit to himself that it was a good idea. He became alert: “That’s right, an alliance, we need to build up an alliance, this Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light is difficult to

swallow by ourselves, but if we share it with everyone, it would become much easier, that's right, that's right, good idea! But we need to find a mediator with weight, so that other continents can trust them."

"The Bai Family and White Sands Continent." Tang Tian said: "As long as we give them a share, they will definitely agree to it."

Bing looked at Tang Tian as though he had seen a ghost.

"What is the meaning of your expression?" Tang Tian said unhappily.

"Did something possess you?" Bing walked around Tang Tian in a full circle.

"No, I thought for a long time, to finally come to this conclusion." Tang Tian used his fingers to count: "How many men do we have? Even if we pull all the people from Ursa Major Constellation over, they will only be a slighter bigger continent, and still far lacking as compared to the Honorable Martial Continent. So how long must we wait, for us to beat down every continent one by one to strengthen ourselves?"

"So, what do we do?" Bing asked.

"So, we buy everyone." Tang Tian said elatedly: "I spent only a few billions to defeat the Golden Rose in White Sands."

“What?” Bing’s eyes grew round with rage, and he erupted in anger: “A few billion? Here I am, frugally living with poverty, and you actually spent a few billion just to destroy a few hoodlums! You piss me off!”

“You don’t have to care about this small matter.” Tang Tian laughed: “I was thinking, why not use the same method to defeat the Honorable Martial Continent? Many people hate them anyway. If money can’t buy them, we can use other things to bribe them, let’s say the Pontoon Bridge! If we can get everyone on board, the Honorable Martial Continent will not be able to do anything.”

“If we can bribe them, the Honorable Martial Continent can do it too.” Bing said.

“No they won’t.” Tang Tian shook his head: “For example, we can use the Pontoon Bridge, but can Honorable Martial Continent do so? Their ambition is to take over the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy, and thus they are naturally the enemy of all the continents. They have to subdue the others and make them into subordinates or slaves, and take their wealth. But we don’t have to. We do not any ambitions for the Sacred Saint Galaxy, we just want to be their friends. I give my friends some benefits, and I will get help from them. If I give them a bit of benefit and make them into my servants, they would not be willing.”

Seeing Bing’s dumbfounded expression to the point that he had forgotten about smoking, Tang Tian felt extremely good, and said with elation: “So? Don’t you think I am very powerful? You have guided me to improve, but don’t use your old eyes to look at me. Shave off your blockhead to see properly, understand!”

Bing sneered: “This sort of conduct, what are you being proud for? I will shave you first!”

Suddenly, Tang Tian ‘eh-ed’ out loud.

Bing who was about to place the cigarette in his hand back to his mouth asked casually: “What?”

“There’s news from Three Spirits City, Screw is awake.”

Plop, the cigarette in Bing’s hands dropped to the ground.

Chapter 656 – Blank Slate

“Screw.”

“Huh.” Screw subconsciously replied, he raised his head, an unfamiliar face entered his vision, but for some reason, he felt an extreme familiarity with it.

He looked at the other party, while the other party looked at him.

He looked into the eyes of the other party, and saw his own skinny reflection: “Who are you?”

“I’m the small brat.” Bing controlled his own emotions, he puckered his lips, making him look extremely ugly.

Screw shook his head: “You don’t look small.”

Bing felt his nose turning sour, his voice cracked: “Screw, you don’t remember that small brat anymore? You don’t remember Commander? You don’t remember Ah Xin? You don’t remember us anymore?”

Why.....why did it turn out this way.....

“You’ve mistaken me for someone else.” Screw shook his head and stood up: “Please let me leave, they say only you can let me leave.”

“Where will you go to?” Bing looked at the familiar face, all the grey memories becoming alive again, the unspeakable pain and grief flowing through his entire body.

“To the battlefield.” Screw’s scrawny face revealed a bizarre determination.

“The battlefield.....” Bing muttered.

“I want to save my comrades, they are in danger.” Screw walked out without turning back: “I will not let them die.”

Bing could feel his heart being ripped apart. Tears flowed down his face like water, dropping down to the ground. In Bing’s teary eyes, he could only see the silhouette of Screw, the scrawny yet unbending back.

“Wrench, wrench, give me the wrench, quickly quickly, you better quicken the hell up....”

A hoarse voice mixed with sobbing sounded out behind Screw, making him puzzled.

“The joints are severely damaged, give me component three for the joints, everyone move quickly, brace yourselves, don’t fall....”

Screw’s footsteps continued to slow down, the words that

entered his ears were familiar.

“I won’t go! I won’t go! If I go, who will fix all these up for you....”

Screw’s footsteps became even slower.

“Commander, don’t die..... Ah Xin, don’t die..... Little Brat, you better not die.....”

When those words came out from his own mouth, Bing’s voice had already become sobs. It was as though Bing was still standing in the battlefield, surrounded with flames. Screw who was surrounded by piles and piles of broken mechanical weapons, he was too tired, his hands were trembling, his voice was trembling, he was afraid, he was in despair, he was worried for everyone....

He was just a mechanical engineer..

He was in truth a coward, afraid to die.....

Bing hated his cowardice, his tears would not stop, he did not want to cry anymore! Why can’t these tears stop? Bing had to muster up all of his strength just to say each sentence. To witness Screw trapped inside the Ice Coffin first hand, hearing his screams, all those words were deeply embedded into Bing’s mind.

How can you have forgotten?

Screw who was walking out stopped, the puzzlement and confusion continued to thicken, all of those random words, were extremely familiar to him, as though they were from him, it was a strange feeling.....

In Bing's blurred vision, the faint scrawny figure had stopped.

Is it familiar, it must be familiar, right, Screw, you must definitely find it familiar....

~Because, Because these are the words you have been screaming out for ten thousand years!

~Ten thousand years!~

Even if your memories are wiped clean, even if you have come into this world with a blank slate, even if you cannot recognize us anymore, that must be fate. But no matter, it doesn't matter, to be unable to let go of your concerns for ten thousands after death, it must have left something deep in your spirit! Deep in your soul!

It definitely will!

Bing looked upwards, the tears flowing all around his face, he raised his hands up high, and like ten thousand years ago, he roared.

“Southern Cross Army, advance!”

It was like lightning striking down on Screw.

Tang Tian had not been to Three Spirits City for a long time, countless matters surged in immediately, but no one was able to take Tang Tian away from Big Sister Sai Lei.

Sai Lei had an unspeakable excitement, upon seeing Tang Tian, it was as though she had gone into a state of fits.

“What did you bring back this time? What? Huh? Nothing? Then what are you good for? Next time, you have better bring more things back from the Sacred Saint Galaxy, oh, you have already formed an alliance with the weapons business in the Sacred Saint Galaxy? That’s great, you must ask them for a list of materials, and send everything they have, one of each, to me. Oh, you, whether or not you’re here doesn’t matter....”

“Recently, there has been great progress with the research on the Sacred Saint Galaxy materials. Their materials have a distinguishable quality from Heaven’s Road. Do you know what is the most important feature of our materials? Spirits, that’s right, spirits! What about the Sacred Saint Galaxy? No spirits, but they naturally contain some laws. You must be thinking, why? Because they exist in an environment with extremely dense energy. That’s right, laws and energy in truth have no link whatsoever, but in a place where there is an abundance of energy, laws can be obtained

much easily. Energy is like water, whereby laws are the fishes swimming in them....”

“You’re too stupid, you still don’t understand when I have explained it to you? Mechanical spirit weapons, think about it, as long as you put these two materials together, martial spirits that can control laws, how spectacular is that! I, Sai Lei, want to create the strongest mechanical weapons in history, Saint Armor, doesn’t that sound powerful.....”

Tang Tian looked at Sai Lei’s unusual flushed red face with her shrivelled hair, and frowned. He turned and asked Pi Pa: “How long since she last slept?”

Pi Pa looked at Sai Lei, and whispered: “Fifteen days.”

“You haven’t slept in fifteen days?” Tang Tian frowned even deeper.

“Sleep? Why do I need sleep?” Sai Lei waved her hands excitedly: “This is such a huge discovery, this is the grand moment, the strongest and grandest Saint Armor in the history of mechanical weapons, is right in front of me! At such a time, if I were to sleep, it would be squandering! Such a waste.....”

Bang!

A chop struck Sai Lei’s neck, causing her to stop talking abruptly. Tang Tian used a hand to grab the fainted Sai Lei and gently placed

her on the sofa inside the laboratory.

Tang Tian walked out of the room and carefully closed the door, and asked Pi Pa: “Is she always like that?”

“Yes, Big Sister works too hard, we tried to advise her but she doesn’t listen, and no one dares to do anything.” Pi Pa said softly.

Tang Tian also had a headache with her, Big Sister Sai Lei was not a name that was randomly called, she would even quarrel with him, thus no one dared to stop her.

Suddenly, Tang Tian asked: “Who is in charge of the budget now? Hand Towel?”

“Yes.” Pi Pa said awkwardly. Master Jing Shou’s “Hand Towel” nickname had been passed around, but to hear it from Tang Tian, Pi Pa felt pity for Master Jing Shou.

“Haha, that’s great!” Tang Tian said happily: “From today on, the Mechanical Laboratory’s budget, will be directly linked to Sai Lei’s sleep time. Every hour lesser that she sleeps, we will take off 5% off their budget.”

Long Shou Jing is a simple man, he looked to be very stern, but he was in truth a very gentle person. That year, for the sake of convincing Tang Tian, he had to portray out the manner of a “fierce” person, showing his firmness.

After Tang Tian set this rule, Long Shou Jing would do it without giving any chances. Truly, the two were born to be nemesis!

Pi Pa admired Tang Tian's idea: "Master's idea is truly perfect!"

She could imagine, for the sake of the budget, Big Sister could only go to sleep in anger. She covered her mouth and chuckled.

Suddenly, she thought about something, she hesitated, but gathered her courage: "Master, there was an issue once when the people of Taurus Constellation came to find Big Sister."

"Oh." Tang Tian remembered that Sai Lei came from Taurus Constellation.

"They came to pester her, wanting Big Sister to return back to look around, she became angry, and they said a few bad words, causing Big Sister to cry." Pi Pa said with slight anger: "They went too far, initially they apologized to her, then now they are playing such a method. If not for Big Sister, I think everyone would have beaten them up."

Tang Tian's face became cold: "They want Sai Lei to return to Taurus Constellation to look around?"

Pi Pa nodded her head: "Yea! They definitely wanted to detain her given the chance!"

"Alright, Sai Lei has truly left Taurus Constellation for too long,

she should go back to take a look!” Tang Tian’s tone was extremely cold.

“Master!” Pi Pa was shocked, she never thought that Master would actually agree for Big Sister to return to Taurus Constellation, she immediately regretted her words.

Tang Tian waved his hands, and stopped Pi Pa from talking, he laughed sinisterly: “Where are all the armies that have no tasks now? Ask Tang Chou to pick a few units and accompany Sai Lei to tour around Taurus Constellation. No rush, she hasn’t been there for so long, she needs to take a good look there!”

Tang Tian was furious, a little girl that was forced out of her home, and the life she had to live, was definitely not one one could think about.

This debt, must be paid.

Pi Pa was startled, she immediately became happy, and anxiously ran off: “I am going to find Master Tang Chou now!”

That’s right, how can Master bear to watch Big Sister get bullied? But when he was angry just now, it was so scary.....

Tang Chou who had returned to Three Spirits City immediately went into work. His job scope was mainly in Heaven’s Road, Ursa Major Constellation had too many units, and there was no one to oversee everything. With Bing at the Sacred Saint Galaxy, he was

not worried at all.

The first thing Tang Chou did was to check up on the training situation of the army.

The current Three Spirits City had already been developed into one of the biggest city in the Spirit Region. For safety and security, at any time, there were always two armies on guard. The barracks in Three Spirits City had an enormous scale.

The armies guarding Three Spirits City were always different, always in rotation from a duty roster, that was convenient for Tang Chou to observe. Ursa Major Constellation's armies were still young, they held enormous and enviable potential, but they still required a lot of harsh training to raise their fighting strength.

Receiving Tang Tian's commands, Tang Chou then flipped through the recent reports of the armies.

Ursa Major Constellation was thriving tremendously, especially for the young people, countless of talents had started to reveal their outstanding talents. But the one who was the most hardworking, was still Adrian, the academic advisor with the name "Hunter".

Xiao Wu who was greatly adored by Tang Chou, after going through Adrian's teachings, was displaying the aura and manner of a great general. With regards to teaching students, Tang Chou had to admit that he was still lacking as compared to Adrian.

For example, Chen Zi Lin, under Adrian's suggestion, had become the adjutant of Ah Lun. The Brave Ah Lun and calm and the collected Chen Zi Lin, the two of them had become a gold grade group.

Every name on the list made Tang Chou feel proud, but he also felt awkward, Who do I pick?

Chapter 657 – Operation Begins!

The various huge constellations in Heaven's Road were in turmoil.

The war between the Honorable Martial Group and the Leo Constellation still continued, to the point that both sides were bent on killing the other. The war between the two powerhouses had deeply affected the structure of Heaven's Road.

Scorpio Constellation, after welcoming the new Scorpio King, also welcomed in the chance of high speed development, the new Scorpio King had revealed his iron fist and wisdom. Sima Xiao, who was born in the Clan Union had very quickly swallowed the entire Union. Promoting the new people of Clan Union and separating the old timers of Scorpio Constellation, Sima Xiao had Scorpio Constellation in his hands.

Scorpio Constellation managed to profit from both the Leo Constellation and the Honorable Martial Group.

Other than that, there was another war that had attracted countless of eyes as well. The long gone war between Ophiuchus Constellation and Onyx Soul erupted once again.

In all, there were not many surprising changes in the situation, the Sagittarius Empress still stayed in her palace, Cancer Constellation's biggest news was simply obtaining three gold rank treasures, Aquarius Constellation was still earning the largest amount of money in the entire Heaven's Road. Even the tyrannical

Ursa Major Constellation that rose to prominence was extremely quiet.

But people who had the sense, could feel the hidden movements flowing beneath all of these.

Libra Constellation which was near to Ursa Major Constellation was quietly transforming, the internal battle inside Aries Constellation was getting more intense, Pisces Constellation and Capricornus Constellation were secretly establishing contact....

Many people could sense something, maybe, an unprecedented storm was brewing. The calm before the storm.

All of this did not matter to Tang Tian, because he had his most urgent matter, the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of light.

Three Spirits City, Screw watched Bing leave without saying a word.

Bing and him talked about the past of Southern Cross Army, and talked about Ah Xin, talked about the Commander, and that he owed Bing a mechanical weapon. Screw then knew that he used to be a mechanical engineer, and knew that he used to be a chatterbox, that he loved to curry favor people, and even the cigarettes in Bing's hands were his that were used to curry favor from the Commander, and he found out about the days and winds

of the past, and knew that it was the final battle.

Screw listened on quietly, he knew that Bing was not lying to him. The vague familiarity that lingered in his heart, the vague grief and pain, all of those lingering longings, were like strings being pulled and resonated.

Maybe there will be a day that I will remember.

Bing's backview disappeared from his vision, and Screw retracted his gaze. Bing said that he has found Ah Xin. Bing said, they will definitely find Commander. Bing said that everyone will be back together again, fighting alongside each other like how it was in the past.

Although he felt like a stranger to all of them, but Screw could still feel the joy and anticipation in his heart.

He turned and walked.

No one disturbed him, everyone knew of Screw's loss of memories. To the logistics officer that stayed till the end of the battle, everyone felt immense respect for him.

Screw suddenly stopped, his eyes landed onto a pile of waste products in the corner. Those were the broken components of the mechanical spirit weapons, after a period of time, they would all be moved to be melted down again.

The vague familiarity surfaced in Screw's head, he subconsciously walked over.

He knelt down, and inspected all the weird components, the sense of familiarity became even stronger, he hesitated for a moment, and picked up another piece and looked at it.

His movements were clumsy and strange.

Sai Lei who was furious after waking up, was prepared to look for Tang Tian to discuss about the preposterous plan for the link between her sleep and their budget, when she coincidentally walked past the scene of Screw and the components, and could not help but stop.

She was just about to extend her hand out to stop him, but when she thought about his past, she calmed down.

She quietly observed the spirit general that was as clumsy as a child.

You were formerly the chief mechanical engineer of the Southern Cross Army, even if your memories are gone, even after all the destruction, your passion and dreams for mechanical techniques will never die, right?

With regards to the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of light, time was

of the essence. If they do not take the chance before anyone else and assumed control of the Pontoon Bridge, if someone else took it instead, the situation would become extremely complicated.

On that very night, the few armies that had just arrived at Shang Continent were once again assembled. With Bing as the overall commander, with the guidance from the Vast Star Continent, they took over control over the Pontoon Bridge.

It was a race against time.

Before Bing had completely taken control over the entire Pontoon Bridge, there could not be any leak of information. If the Vast Star Continent knew of their true intention, then the plan would burst into bubbles, and the Vast Star Continent would implement the plan for themselves.

What the Vast Star Continent wanted to make use of was Tang Tian's greed.

Bai Yue and Xu Jin ran over to Tang Tian to look for news, it was just a day, but there was such a large scale movement, it was obviously a huge matter.

Tang Tian naturally did not disclose anything, and casually threw out reasons to handle them.

"Do you need to rest?" He Si Ji had a face full of fatigue, it was not easy handling Bing's never ending questions for an old man

like him.

The fleet moved at full speed. But to move at full speed for a long duration would cause distress to the ship's body, but for such a crucial move, they did not care about losing a few ships.

"No." Bing shook his head. From the start, his eyes never left the diagram of the defense plan for the Pontoon Bridge at all.

He Si Ji was filled with admiration towards Bing's foresight. To him, Bing was an extremely outstanding commander, one much better than him. Throughout the road, Bing had continuously bombarded him with questions on every single detail regarding the Pontoon Bridge, many of them, if not for He Si Ji personally guarding the Pontoon Bridge, he would never be able to answer.

After the detailed questioning, Bing broke the Pontoon Bridge into three sections.

The condensed and clustered defensive layout made He Si Ji open his eyes wide, many of the contents in which he did not understand. But Bing's cautiousness left a deep impact in He Si Ji.

If the Vast Star Continent had an equally outstanding commander, maybe the situation would be completely different.

He Si Ji was filled with regret, but he did not blame himself, such a top notch commander could only be met, and not sought after, he was not someone that could be obtained just from grooming.

But He Si Ji did not waste his decades of experience, he quickly found Bing's biggest achilles' heel, and that was this stretched thin military strength!

To the Vast Star Continent, the defense of the Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light was a tremendous burden, and it was the same for the Shang Continent.

It had to be said, the armies of the Shang Continent were very powerful, all of them were hardworking and persistent, and were true elites, leaving deep impressions on He Si Ji. just like now, the soldiers were making use of the time to rest, the long distance training had set fatigue in, and it was not something that a day or two of rest could clear, but no one complained.

The Shang Continent was much stronger than the Vast Star Continent, but it was still not enough to bear the long defense perimeter burden, and it was the large pit that He Si Ji had dug for the Shang Continent, he felt extremely pleased, and was curious, what would the outstanding commander do?

In truth, the situation at the Pontoon Bridge was much more severe than what He Si Ji had painted.

The long Pontoon Bridge had many parts that were in battle.

Waves after waves of pirates, were like sharks that smelt blood and came forward. There were many of the pirates who were in truth other powerhouses in disguise, as long as there was a chance,

they would pounce and take a huge bite.

All these standard armies were much harder to handle than pirates.

When the fleet arrived at the Pontoon Bridge, they encountered a small scale battle. All of the pirates were quickly killed, but it showed that how bad the situation had declined.

The garrisoned armies of the Vast Star Continent had long received the message and were waiting for them.

“These are all the keys for the strongholds, from now on, they belong to you, We wish you good luck.”

He Si Ji did not step onto the Pontoon Bridge, it would bring him more sadness, it was the symbol of the fall of the Vast Star Continent. He brought the few half crippled armies and retreated.

Bing took a deep breath, he knew that their battle had just begun.

You have to know, when Bing obtained the Pontoon Bridge and when the Vast Star Continent armies retreated, Tang Tian immediately took action. He sought out Bai Yue and without hiding anything, he explained the entire proposal for the Pontoon Bridge.

Bai Yue's breathing instantly became rapid, he was faint from the heaven sent biscuit that dropped on his head. It was the Pontoon

Bridge in the Sea of Light, the most important Pontoon Bridge, the most prime area!

To be able to plunge one foot into the unconditional strategic area, it meant influence and wealth. Even for the Bai Family, the undisputed tyrant family in the Southern Region with a rich history, they were unable to withstand such an attraction.

A secret order was sent to the Bai Family at the fastest speed.

The Bai Family's two silver grade armies gathered urgently, and at their fastest speed, they advanced towards the Vast Star Continent.

Without hesitation, Bai Yue had jumped on board. He firmly believed that such an opportunity would never appear again in his life. Bai Yue was smart and witty, and knew that Tang Tian's generous plan would definitely be successful. When the time comes, controlling the Pontoon Bridge will definitely be by an alliance.

It would be the biggest alliance of the Southern Region!

To think about alliance, they needed enough allies, other than the White Sands Continent, the Bai Family needed other allies. He suggested to Tang Tian to invite the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce to the feast.

Tang Tian was fine with the idea, he and Xu Ji Worldwide

Commerce were having a joyous collaboration, and he did not think of the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce previously was because they were a weapons trading business and not a continent powerhouse.

Xu Jin who received the news instantly became excited, he knew that if such a thing was successful, this service to the commerce would be able to push him up to become the next potential Patriarch.

Bai Yue then pushed out all the families he could think of, naturally wanting to help Tang Tian with the proposal with all of his heart. In terms of being familiar with the Southern Region, Tang Tian and Bing were unable to compete with the Bai Family.

Bai Yue quickly chose out the most suitable allies. Ming Continent, Yuan Continent, Li Hai Continent, the three continents that were also connected via the Pontoon Bridge. The Rainbow Continent, although not in direct connection with the Pontoon Bridge, was close enough and could prove to be a threat to the Pontoon Bridge, and with it being powerful, was quickly chosen.

Like so, adding the Shang Continent, White Sands, Bai Family and Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, the alliance was composed of eight counterparts.

Just by looking at this list, Bai Yue dared to confirm that if the alliance was a success, it would definitely become the biggest and strongest alliance in the Southern Region. The White Sands Continent, Ming Continent, Yuan Continent and Li Hai Continent were the top 20 continents of Southern Region, with White Sands

Continent being in the top 10. Adding the tyrannical aristocratic Bai Family that had deep foundation and connections, the top five weapons trader Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, the Shang Continent Fearsome tiger, the strength of the alliance was a definite.

Very quickly, Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce sent news back, they were willing to join!

From the two mediators, they formed three parties in which they would seek other Continent Lords of a few other continents to discuss of the matter.

This was the crucial point to determine success or failure.

Chapter 658 – Bright Symbol Stronghold

The enemies were smashed in all directions, but the expression on Bing's face did not change: "Continue to advance!"

It was already the fourth wave of enemies they had defeated en route, The current Pontoon Bridge was already heavily damaged, and many groups of pirates would enter through the cracks. As the pirates were extremely lively, it caused the Pontoon Bridge to almost become unusable, and no goods caravans dared to use the path.

The Vast Star Continent had previously recruited many citizens to restore the Pontoon Bridge, but as the recovery progress was too slow, it left many gaps. As an energy belt, if it did not have any gaps, it would be difficult to break through.

The Pontoon Bridge had a natural enemy as well, and that was the energy corrosion in the boundless Sea of Energy. The energy corrosion in the Sea of Energy would slowly but gradually harm the Pontoon Bridge, and if stretched long enough, a gap would be corroded out from the pontoon bridge. After every period, Vast Star Continent needed to send people in for restorations.

Currently, all of these gaps had become the best attacking points for the pirates. Bing did not have additional manpower to even do any restorations.

Bing did not bother at all, he did not care about all the gaps, they were just minor inconveniences that would not affect the overall

situation. What he saw as important, were the strongholds constructed by the Vast Star Continent on the Pontoon Bridge. All of these strongholds were situated at major crossroads, and after continuous years of reinforcing them, they had become extremely firm.

As long as they took control of these strongholds, they would stand on undefeated grounds, and the keys were in Bing's hands.

Although they were closed, but strongholds that did not have any soldiers manning it, might be trouble for the smaller pirates, but for the pirates with considerable strength, it was no problem. Even if they did not have any sieging frigates or ships, attacking and breaking through was only a matter of time.

That's right, everything was just a matter of time.

Bing was racing against time.

As long as any strongholds were occupied by the "Pirates", Bing's situation would be terrible. The armies that were with him were already tight, and without any sieging ships, they did not have any power to attack an occupied stronghold.

With the lack of time, Bing wanted to occupy these strongholds and assume true control over the Pontoon Bridge before the pirates or other powerhouses could react.

As the transport ships were too slow, Bing ordered them to go off

the ships, although this would cause the soldiers to be more tired, but every minute counts, and speed was still the most important aspect of the plan.

The only ship left was the Black Arrow Warship, it held powerful speed, and was able to allow their troops to have attacking capabilities.

The results from the training in the Sea of Energy were displayed .

Regardless of whether it was the Swift Army or Skull Unit, their army movement were not slow, and everyone were performing to standard. Compared to the dangerous and harsh environment of the Sea of Energy, the Pontoon Bridge was like heaven.

Other than the Swift Army, Skull Unit and Underworld Continent Demonic Mounts, there was another unique group in Bing's hands, that was the Sacred Saint Galaxy's Sagittarius Constellation led by Crane, and Aries Constellation led by Ling Xu.

In the entire Five Southern Islands Constellations, Sagittarius Constellation and Aries Constellation were the two constellations with the strongest offensive abilities, Cancer was in charge of defense, Aquarius and Libra in charge of control.

In the race against time, they needed to do everything at once, to win swiftly, and thus the two constellations with the strongest offensive abilities were chosen.

Bing knew that, although all five family disciples were strong, but they were definitely still amateurs.

Lucky for them, they had the training that polished them.

The disciples of the five families had great improvements on their usage of their star treasures. And under Tang Chou's request, they learned the fundamental war tactics coordination.

But it was a pity that this fundamental tactics coordination was insufficient for them to become a strong army unit. Bing gave these amateurs to Crane and Ling Xu, since they were unable to form groups, then they should be able to unleash their individual strengths.

Crane and Lin Xu were two powerful martial artists, and could teach them how to fight and use their treasures.

The Pontoon Bridge was not a very wide place, and thus more suitable for the use of individual strengths. Crane and Ling Xu who had tyrannical fighting abilities, displayed their powers multiple times throughout many battles.

“Master Ling, your spear technique, where did you learn it from?”

Yu Qing Yi could no longer hold back, it was not only him, the other disciples of the Yu family all stretched their necks over, their faces filled with curiosity.

It was too alike!

Ling Xu's spear techniques was extremely similar to the Yu Family's spear techniques, the resemblance did not stop at its appearance but even its spirit was similar, the aura given off from his spear techniques were also extremely similar to theirs. What made it even more inconceivable was that Ling Xu's attainments on his spear techniques, which made them dumbstruck.

"My teacher." Ling Xu glanced at them. He knew that all of them were from the Yu Family, and was where the Aries Constellation came from, so he was equally as curious, and did not torment them. But very quickly, he grew disappointed, for the disciples' spear techniques seemed to be inferior to his Aries Spear of Stars.

Currently, Ling Xu's strength and insight was far stronger than what he was in the past, with just a thought, he could clearly see through things. The Aries Spear of Stars that originated from the Yu Family, because of the thin energy in Heaven's Road, became extremely weak. Thus, under the hard work and enlightenment of the martial artists in the past, they walked an entire new dao path, gradually changing and forming into the Aries Spear of Stars that originates from laws.

But as the energy in the Sacred Saint Galaxy was rich, the Spear techniques of the Yu Family were the same as other martial techniques in Sacred Saint Galaxy, they did not need to refine on their techniques and they would already possess considerable might. And the dense energy, was like thick snow, facilitated them but at the same time made their enlightenment on laws even more

difficult.

That was the difference between Heaven's Road and Sacred Saint Galaxy.

The Sacred Saint Galaxy people were born saints, and looked to be much stronger than Heaven's Road people. But the thin energy, instead allowed them to understand laws, so upon stepping into Saint rank, they would be even stronger than Sacred Saint Galaxy people.

One was strong first and weak later, the other was weak first then strong later, these were two different lives formed by two completely different environments, forming two different dao paths.

“Boss Ling, was your teacher named Yu?” Yu Qing Yi blurted out, when he saw Ling Xu's expression that was like a smile yet not a smile, his face flushed red. The other disciples were also embarrassed, Ling Xu's spear techniques attainments were a level that barely anyone could reach in the Yu Family.

“My Teacher did not tell me what his last name was.” Ling Xu's tone turned rather gloomy, upon thinking of his teacher, he would become somewhat sad, but he quickly got out of his sadness, the current him, already had the qualifications to allow his teacher to feel proud!

Seeing all of Yu family disciples in deep thoughts, he gave a direct answer: “Teacher's spear techniques came from Aries

Constellation.”

“Aries Constellation? Eh, this Aries Constellation that we are called?”

“Wait, no, is it the Aries Constellation that our spirit objects are from?”

“Could there truly be a place called Aries Constellation?”

.....

All of the Yu family disciples went into an uproar, they initially thought that the name “Aries Constellation”, was a random nickname their boss had given them. To hear Ling Xu say its name, Could there truly be a place called Aries Constellation?

Ling Xu felt his head in pain, the question would have a complicated explanation, and he hated such things.

He ignored their puzzlement, and said: “From today onwards, I will teach you the Aries Spear of Stars.”

Although they did not get the answer they wanted, but to be able to learn the Aries Spear of Stars made them all excited, they had personally witnessed the strength of the Aries Spear of Stars.

Seeing their excitement, Wei Ting Ting who was nearby could

not help but ask Crane: “Master Crane, is there truly a Sagittarius Constellation?”

Crane: “Yes, there is.”

The Wei family disciples flew into an uproar, they all gathered together. Compared to the bad tempered Ling Xu, Crane who was more gentle and friendly received the adoration of everyone.

Wei Hao asked: “Master Crane, your martial techniques, is it related to Sagittarius Constellation?”

“No.” Crane replied warmly: “My martial techniques comes from Grus Constellation.”

Everyone revealed looks of disappointment.

Crane laughed: “But the Empress of the Sagittarius Constellation is my mother’s elder sister.”

“Wah!”

All of the Wei family disciples revealed looks of shock which turned into joy.

“Master Crane, how are Sagittarius Constellation and these treasures related?”

“Master, why are you not the successor for Sagittarius Constellation?”

.....

Everyone started to ask questions.

Crane could not help but smile, but his heart was somewhat down, his aunt had always hoped that he would inherit Sagittarius Constellation, but he still chose Grus Constellation. In the past, due to the grievances of the past, he did not have any favourable opinion towards Sagittarius Constellation. But currently, after seeing the world, he was no longer like the past, he was more wise and open, and the grudge of the past had been dissipated.

His aunt hoped that he would inherit Sagittarius Constellation, because of their close relation, but the other reason was that Sagittarius Constellation had not been able to produce a young person capable of bearing the responsibility. All of the Wei Family disciples and Sagittarius Constellation came from the same place, Crane started to consider, Maybe I can find a suitable candidate out of all of them.

“Maybe I can teach all of you a few things from Sagittarius Constellation.” Crane’s smile always brought forth a feeling like the spring wind: “I know a thing or two from there.”

“That’s great!”

“Woah! That’s awesome!”

“Are the martial techniques of Sagittarius Constellation the same as our Wei Family?”

Bing noticed the uproar of the two units, but did not stop them. Ling Xu and Crane’s teachings would greatly aid their growths.

Maybe it might not be apparent as of the moment, Bing also did not hope for them to be of much help, as the youths belonged to the future.

Ahead, a stronghold was faintly discernible.

Everyone became tense, the stronghold ahead was the most important stronghold of the Pontoon Bridge, the Bright Symbol Stronghold.

If we were to call the Pontoon Bridge a light belt, then the Bright Symbol Stronghold was like a piece of rock, embedded halfway inside the light belt, located right smack in the middle of the Sea of Energy.

If the army could hold the stronghold, not only would they be able to guard the Pontoon Bridge, but they could enter the Sea of Energy through this other “door”, and launch attacks. If enemies were to attack the Bright Symbol Stronghold from the Sea of

Energy, then the Pontoon Bridge would be a natural logistic route for them to provide a steady flow of replenishment.

The Three most important Strongholds of the Vast Star Continent, were strongholds similar to the Bright Symbol Stronghold, the three of them were able to provide assistance to each other, and were able to exhibit immense uses.

If they could take down Bright Symbol Stronghold, they would have seized the first important point.

Suddenly, Bing's eyes shrunk, he saw traces of energy scars cutting through the walls of light of the Pontoon Bridge, flickering indefinitely.

Someone was attacking the Bright Symbol Stronghold!

He immediately gave the order: "All Armies Advance!"

Chapter 659 – Ambush

Ying Yan's face was flushed red with excitement, the light aura wall of the Bright Symbol Stronghold was wavering, success was right in front of him!

As one of the Honorable Martial Continent's "Pirates" of the Southern Region, there were no room for doubts for Ying Yan's achievements. When the Vast Star Continent had continuously sent their armies to fight with the Shang Continent, he immediately saw his chance. To him, the Vast Star Continent had made a grave military mistake, and that was spreading his units.

To him, the Vast Start Continent should had gathered all of their forces to trample the Shang Continent with one move, thus preventing any further dangers to surface. But the Vast Star Continent was either over cautious or underestimated their enemies, they always sent out insufficient forces in an attempt to destroy their enemies, but instead gave their enemies the chance to create a miraculous turnover.

Victory after victory, they danced around their enemies, the more they fought, the stronger they got, the more they battled, the braver they become. This caused the Vast Star Continent to gradually fall to the losing side.

Ying Yan had specially researched on the large continents of the Southern Region, and knew everything of their current situation and possible threats. The circumstances around the Vast Star Continent was not safe at all, but yet held a vast amount of wealth. As long as the Vast Star Continent revealed any loopholes, the

surrounding continents would definitely pounce to take a bite.

At that time, Ying Yan did not know whether the Shang Continent could win, but he still made the bet. He brought his own pirates and spent a great deal of effort, taking a huge roundabout, and finally arrived at a location of ambush near the Pontoon Bridge. The Vast Star Continent did not have time to take care such small troops around the Pontoon Bridge or have any spare manpower for patrols, thus they were able to close in without anyone knowing.

What was the most valuable thing of the Vast Star Continent?
The Pontoon Bridge in the Sea of Light!

When the Vast Star Continent sunk into decline, the first to suffer would definitely be the Pontoon Bridge. The Honorable Martial Continent had detailed reports on the Pontoon Bridge, after carefully researching, Ying Yan placed his target on the Bright Symbol Stronghold.

By guarding over the stronghold, they could attack and defend at will.

To a pirate, such a stronghold did not hold any meaning. But Ying Yan had his own assessment, if the Vast Star Continent lost control over the Pontoon Bridge, then the Pontoon Bridge would become the target of the various continents, and it would then become the true messy battlefield.

And Ying Yan, who held the opportunity to take over the Bright

Symbol Stronghold, had the bargaining chip to deal with the various continents.

To invoke the Southern Region continents to exhaust themselves was the main task of the “Pirates”.

And when the “Pirates” near the Pontoon Bridge started to increase, Ying Yan immediately knew that the battle of capture had begun! Ying Yan, who held contingency plans, immediately led his subordinates to attack the Bright Symbol Stronghold without hesitation.

When he arrived at the Bright Symbol Stronghold, he was surprised to find that the closed Bright Symbol Stronghold did not have any guards. He initially thought that it was a trap, but after a few probings, he was stunned to realise that there were not a single soul inside. That shock immediately turned to fanatical joy, although he did not understand why, but he knew that it was a heaven sent opportunity! He immediately launched a full force attack on the Bright Symbol Stronghold, as long as he broke through the layer of energy barrier, the important stronghold would be in his hands.

Dazzling spear auras, sword auras, blade auras all continued to strike the energy barrier. Like a withered tree, the energy barrier started to sway as though it could break anytime.

Ying Yan’s face was flushed red with excitement, but his mind was quickly thinking, and he started to calm down to consider his next step.

With the Bright Symbol Stronghold in his hand, he would call on his companions and form a nominal pirate alliance. He had confidence in his own companions.

The Honorable Martial Continent's "Pirate Plan" had been planned for a long time, and each "Pirate" were screened through multiple strict selections. After going through harsh training, all these "Pirate heads" Which had gone through true standard military training all had the qualifications to become the commander of armies of the small continents. All these outstanding "Pirate heads" formed pirate groups with strength far exceeding that of ordinary pirates. If not for attracting Southern Region's continents, these pirates would become even more terrifying.

To the internal department of Honorable Martial Continent, these pirates that they had created with utmost care were hailed as the "White Pirates", White signifying their Honor and Light.

With a few more pirates, Ying Yan had the confidence to contend against other continents, and swallow the delicious Vast Star Continent. At that time, whether or not to use it as a focal point to take over the Southern Region or use it to transform the other continents, he would be spoiled for choices, holding the power of initiation.

The light barrier of the stronghold trembled. Ying Yan retracted from his thought, the stronghold was about to be breached, causing him to be excited: "Everyone, put in your all, the stronghold is about to be breached!"

Bang!

The light barrier of the stronghold finally crumbled, and shattered auras filled the sky.

The morale of the pirates were greatly boosted, and their howls of joy sounded out as they swarmed into Bright Symbol Stronghold.

Ying Yan shook his head as he laughed, all of them were well trained. It was a swarm, how could there be any formations? To Ying Yan, a full fledged general trained in the standard military tactics, such a scene would truly be disastrous. But in the victory, even the terrible performance did not look too bad.

All of his subordinates were still pirates, to wish to train them into a standard army was impossible. Pirates were fugitives on the run, all of them were untamed and rebellious, as long as there were too many rules, they would resist with all their might. Although Ying Yan had put a lot of work into them, their usual day performances were barely satisfactory, but in that joy, all of them had thrown away everything that they had learnt.

Seems like after this battle, I will need to train them well again. Ying Yan secretly decided.

Bing moved, rushing anxiously towards the Bright Symbol Stronghold.

Bing glanced at the wavering light barrier, he immediately assessed that taking over the defense of the stronghold was already too late.

All the work he had done throughout the journey, skipping on his sleep, was displayed to great use. After continuously asking He Si Ji questions, Bing knew the terrain and structure of the Bright Symbol Stronghold like the back of his hand, and immediately planned his battle strategy.

“We need to put the enemies inside the stronghold. Xie Yu An, your position is the center corridor, your task is to block them up.” Bing spoke quickly: “Shi Sen, bring your men to wait in ambush at the far end gate, do not expose yourselves. Once the enemies are blocked, your task is to slice the enemies by the waist, remember, follow the gate and rush in. Aya, Skull Unit is to lay in ambush at the two houses by the sides, and attack from there. Ling Xu and Crane, your task, is the enemy frigates and warships, the space inside is limited, if they want to come in, we are unable to support the defensive barrier. Crane. Coordinate with Aya, your goal is the frigates, destroy them. Ling Xu, coordinate with Xie Yu An, your target are the warships, take over the warships!”

Everyone hurried to their respective positions, and before they were set, bang, the light barrier shattered.

The enemies outside the stronghold immediately cried out in joy.

Everyone quieted down, they were all experienced people, even in the most anxious of situations, they were able to remain calm and steady, not panicking or stressed out. The only anxious ones were the disciples led by Ling Xu and Crane, they had never gone through any large scale battles.

Ling Xu glanced at the amateurs, seeing their tensed looks, he became angry, Truly amateurs!

He snorted: “Whoever dares to drag us down, will be speared to death!”

Crane was instead more gently: “Don’t panic, everyone be prepared, when I use my fingers to point the direction, do you all still remember the [Sunset Arrow]?”

Crane had read all of the inheritance of Sagittarius Constellation when he was young, but he was not willing to learn because of his hatred. At the moment, leading the group of amateurs of Sagittarius Constellation, he had no choice but to pick up the unfamiliar bow and arrow.

Everyone nodded.

As time was short, Crane could only teach them a simple yet relatively powerful spirit technique of Sagittarius Constellation. [Sunset Arrow] was Sagittarius Constellation’s spirit technique, it was not complicated, but the demand for True Power was high. But these Sagittarius disciples were all saints, and energy was what

they had most. But at the moment, the strongest out of all of them could shoot out five of the [Sunset Arrow], demonstrating its astonishing energy consumption.

But as they did not have a spirit domain but controlled the energy directly, Crane had to make a few changes to the spirit techniques for them to be able to learn.

The shouts outside the stronghold grew closer.

The big gate that had no light barrier for protection shattered, a small scale warship rushed in with its overwhelming might. Behind it was a slippery frigate. And there were many pirates that followed the warship and frigate, shouting out with their cheers and roars like tides rushing inside the Stronghold.

The warship at the front was like a wild horse out of control, in a breath it had rushed to the other end of the stronghold.

“What is that?”

Suddenly, the people inside the warship were alarmed, ahead of them was a tightly formed army!

“Not good!”

“It’s an ambush!”

Everyone's faces immediately changed.

Without waiting for them to react, a voice suddenly roared out like thunder, a dazzling light aura lit up behind them.

Shi Sen's face did not change at all, all his old subordinates were relatively calm as well. Compared to them, Huo Qing and the new Demonic Mounts were all revealing expressions of excitement, all of them eager to fight.

Evening Snow Ocean was unsheathed, its blade tip pointing towards the enemy.

The Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts started to charge silently. It was an extremely fast charge, yet there were no sound coming out, it wasn't until the moment when they reached right in front of the enemies that the pirates reacted.

“Kill!”

Evening Snow Ocean slashed the air, in which the 500 black blades behind slashed down together.

The astonishing synchronization frequency caused all the blade auras to merge as one, one single unstoppable blade aura tide cut into the sea of pirates.

Bang!

The pirates who were not in time to defend themselves immediately suffered a crushing defeat, all of their members were splattered with blood, body parts flying everywhere. The blade aura swept through the rear end, causing wood planks to fly, followed by a dazzling light aura from the rear of the frigate, it was the large quantity of highly concentrated energy stones, the dazzling light aura swelled up like a balloon and devoured the entire frigate.

Bang!

The intense explosion and the bizarre red flames instantly devoured the pirates in the surroundings.

“Sunset!”

One clear shout came out, and the sounds of bowstrings came out.

Arrow auras from the [Sunset Arrows] had a clear distinction from other arrow auras. Ordinary arrow auras had the shape of light arrows but slightly denser and congealed, its shape longer and brighter. But the shape of the sunset arrows were round, resembling many dazzling suns!

A rain of suns scorched the entire sky.

Chapter 660 – Intense Battle

Many small suns soared into the sky, forming lines after lines of orange arcs, smashing straight into the enemy ranks.

Boom boom boom!

Upon impact on the body of the frigates, the round shaped arrow auras immediately exploded, with the berserk orange energy surging out. The frigate's bodies that did not have any barriers, under the surging tyrannical orange energy were as weak as paper, instantly shattering into dust.

One after another, the fiery lights blossomed, the piercing light enveloped their entire vision.

The pirates all opened their eyes wide in shock, the intense energy ripples struck their eardrums, causing them to be temporary deaf. The piercing white light aura enveloped the entire battlefield, the entire place was so bright there were no shadows or sound. The flames danced around the badly broken frigates, a blood mist instantly vaporized in the sky, floating away like leaves drifting along the waves.....

The bitter scene played out in the silence.

All the pirates that were not prepared at all were helpless and at a loss.

Only the general on the warship at the front shouted: “Attack! Attack now!”

“At-.....attack where?” The adjutant, who was completely at a loss blurted out subconsciously. Their enemies were attacking in all directions, where were they going to attack?

Before the general could reply, someone suddenly screamed in fear: “Not good! They are boarding our ships!”

Everyone on board was immediately triggered, their faces changed to horror, if the enemies board the ship....

They did not even dare to think about the scenario.

“Block them!” the leader shouted, his voice completely high pitched. The general who came from the Honorable Martial Continent had never experienced such a fierce attack, it was as though all of his past fighting experiences were all lost.

Trap! It was a real trap! The enemy had prepared beforehand!

This judgement caused his heart to tremble.

Ling Xu was a man of steel, he always took the lead, his orange pupils blazing up, he rushed forward with his spear.

The crew onboard only saw a silver shooting star suddenly

bursting forth. The silver light rushed to their front, to which they realized that the silver light was actually a person!

The soldier who screamed was not in time to react, the silver light exploded in his face, the boundless silver aura was like a sea of stars, pouncing onto the frigate.

Aries Spear of Stars!

Chi chi chi!

The condensed silver aura was extremely heavy. The soldiers who held up the weapons in their hands instinctively, felt as if they were struck by heavy machinery, their wails came out, and all of them were sent flying. Before they even landed, all these soldiers were bleeding from their ears, nose and mouth, bodies void of life.

Boom, A Honeycomb Sword Cannon was instantly shattered into dust by the silver aura, dissipating into the air. Ling Xu's two feet were already on the warship.

Seeing Ling Xu's dauntless performance, the Yu family Disciples who were following behind Ling Xu felt a great boost in morale, and roared as they charged up the warship.

In the distance, Bing watched the scene unfold. Boarding a warship, was an extremely intense and cruel battle, and even trained armies would fear doing that. But Bing dared to use the amateurs to board the boat, was because he had the advantage of

an ambush, and because of Ling Xu.

Held as “One Spear to Death”, the “Furious Ling Xu” had an explosive temperament, his fighting intent was always held high, he was extremely dauntless and would rush into battle first. To fight at close quarters, tactics and coordination were second to the most important aspect, the imposing grandeur.

The grandeur Ling Xu gives off in battle was the strongest out of everyone.

On the warship, not only did Ling Xu not cower in the face of multiple enemies in front of him, but his fighting intent soared even higher, he roared and like lightning, he rushed into them. Silver spear in hand, he was unstoppable, wherever he went, people would suffer crushing defeat, their blood flowing into rivers.

The Yu family Disciples who were taught by Ling Xu recently arrived and pounced on the enemies.

Yu Qing Yi was extremely intelligent, he knew that their strength was far from Ling Xu, he knew as compared to the elite pirates, they were still lacking slightly. So he grouped everyone up into threes or fives, their spears always together, striking together. Facing such a rogue style of fighting, the pirates were at a loss, and one by one they suffered defeat.

The pirates on board the warship were all old soldiers, and many of them were core members and elite soldiers of the Honorable

Martial Continent.

In that dire situation, three Honorable Martial Continent elites looked at each other, and they immediately pounced towards Ling Xu. The other few turned and rushed towards Yu Qing Yi!

They could see that the Yu Family disciples had average fighting abilities, but were able to deal such damage due to Yu Qing Yi. It was Yu Qing Yi's dispatch that allowed the amateurs to display such unordinary strength.

Tangle Ling Xu, kill Yu Qing Yi!

All these Honorable Martial Continent elites decided tacitly, in that instant, they made their decision.

Seeing the few Honorable Martial Continent elites pouncing towards him, Ling Xu sneered, he gently moved his spear body, the tip trembling slightly, transforming into a sea of silver aura.

Yet, his body stood still like a statue without moving an inch, only the spear tip was being controlled at an astonishing frequency. The silver stars sprinkled forward forming a river of stars, the few figures were approaching closer and closer, yet Ling Xu ignored them. He continued to waved the silver aura motionlessly, the thin layer of silver auras continued to converge, continuously flowing like an endless ocean of stars.

The three elites revealed sinister killing intent on their faces, one

of them had his hand enveloped with a layer of needle glimmer, another had his entire body enveloped with white flames, and the last held a light sword that was congealed like snow.

The three of them were ecstatic, they were the three strongest on the entire warship. Although their enemy's spear aura was extremely dense, but to them, it was nothing. As long as they broke through the spear auras, their enemy would perish!

In his eyes, the enemies were getting closer and closer, but the blaze continued to surge in his orange pupils.

Ling Xu suddenly stepped forward, the silver hair draping over his shoulders flew messily. The sea of silver aura around him suddenly became extremely bright.

The silver spear pierced out.

The sky full of bright silver aura were suddenly attracted at the same time, forming lines after lines of dazzling light scars, countless of them converging towards Ling Xu's body.

His long hair danced as he thrust forward, inside the piercing white light.

Time seemed to stop.

Thumb sized silver light beams shot out from the spear tip, effortlessly piercing through the hearts of the three elites, and out

from their backs.

Justice Origin Core Pierce!

This was the first killing technique Ling Xu had been enlightened on, and it was reasonable to say that it was no longer suitable for the current Ling Xu. But Ling Xu was not willing to give it up, with his explosive temperament, there was a softness deep inside him that people could not comprehend.

This technique always reminded him of his teacher.

Maybe it was his longing for his teacher, the longing that will never dissipate, to never give up.

Because, it was his core. Because, it was his justice.

It was silly, it was weak, but it was him. Ling Xu continuously gave it his all, and continued to change it, continued to ponder on it, continuously attaining more enlightenment on it, as though he missed it more and more.

I miss you, teacher.

The Justice Origin Core Pierce in Ling Xu's hand finally released a dangerous aura, and started to produce an overwhelmingly terrifying might.

Retracting his spear, the piercing light auras disappeared, and the three corpses fell from the sky. Without even looking, he thrust out a spear towards Yu Qing Yi's direction.

Whoosh, his body suddenly disappeared.

Spear Rush!

He appeared behind Yu Qing Yi like a ghost, thrusting out his silver spear. The throat of an Honorable Martial Continent elite exploded, blood mist spurting out. The other two became horrified and turned to run, but why would Ling Xu give them the opportunity to do so?

Two spears thrust out, forming two bloodied holes on their backs, they had merely rushed out two steps from their original position, before falling to the ground void of life.

When the Yu family disciples saw Ling Xu appearing from thin air, they became excited.

The Yu Family spear technique, no, the Aries Spear of Stars, was actually so powerful, so daunting! Ling Xu had already passed down the Aries Spear of Stars to them, and there was nothing more exciting to personally witness the power of it.

In the future, they could be as powerful as Master Ling Xu!

That thought surfaced in everyone's mind, a flame that would

burn for ages.

All the warships and frigates that rushed into the stronghold were either destroyed or taken down. The Skull Unit took the opportunity to rush into the enemy's formation and immediately create chaos.

But it was in such chaos that the Skull Unit could thrive. Although Aya was confident with her men, but Aya still chose to initiate the attack, the Skull Unit were most suited for messy battles.

Small scale alternatives, permeations and killing, the Skull Unit was like a flying blade piece, every time it flew, it would cut down some flesh.

Compared to the Skull Unit, Xie Yu An's Swift Army was slowly moving forward. The Swift Army's formation was extremely dense, like a moveable wall, they were slowly advancing, which was done purposefully.

In such a chaotic battle with limited space, it was not advantageous for the Swift Army, and with the messiness, it truly was too crowded. Blindly advancing quickly would not quicken the pace of battle. But on the contrary, forming the dense formation and gradually advancing would create a huge mental pressure on the enemy, and quickly crumble the enemies from within.

Ying Yan who was outside the Bright Symbol Stronghold went frantic, and shouted with all his might: "Go! Go in now!"

The Bright Symbol Stronghold continued to explode, the earth shaking shoutings and the fires inside the stronghold made the people outside far away to feel fear.

Ambush!

It was actually an ambush!

Ying Yan was not able to comprehend, how could there be an ambush inside the Bright Symbol Stronghold? Could it be that my plan for the attack was exposed?

He never thought that his opponents would actually endure silently, so much that they could make the place appear so empty as bait. Ying Yan felt immense regret, to actually make such a huge mistake, it was such an important stronghold, how could there be no one defending?

I was truly played the fool!

The fire pillars that soared to the sky caused Ying Yan's heart to bleed, it was his biggest failure ever since he led the pirates. Almost 70% of his forces were trapped inside the stronghold.

At such a time, he could not care about anything else, it was like a gambler that lost to the point of anger, and throwing the remaining of his chips onto the table. If he did not save his troops who were inside, all his hard work would go to waste, all his

planning, would go down the drain!

Ying Yan whose eyes were red with anger did not notice that an army was quietly approaching from behind him.

Chapter 661 – Pirate Invasion

6000 li away from the Shang Continent's Estuary, a fleet of pirates quietly advanced in the Sea of Energy.

“It is currently the period where the Shang Continent is the most empty, and also our best chance.” The one who spoke was a tall and skinny man, his face had a smile that was not a smile, with squinted eyes, he looked like a fox. The East Divergent Fox, Fu Dong Ku, was an intelligent man and known as the wise general of the East Divergent Continent, proficient in dangerous and unconventional moves, always appearing unexpectedly, he was a man hard to fathom.

“But with this, we will become enemies with the Shang Continent.” His adjutant's face was filled with worry, Fu Dong Ku was a man who played on the edge, but his adjutant was a cautious man, one who sought to protect his own life.

Although the two of them had differing opinions, Fu Dong Ku never changed his adjutant. Fu Dong Ku knew of his own dangerous gambits, and needed a meticulous and cautious man to pull him down from his absurdity. His own adjutant had average strength, but was a careful and steady man, and was the best compliment to him.

“We are a group of pirates, since when did pirates and the Shang Continent ever see eye to eye?” Fu Dong Ku waved his hand with a look of innocence.

His adjutant did not know whether to cry or laugh with his superior's attitude: "They will find out."

"So what if they find out?" Fu Dong Ku laughed: "Who told the Shang Continent to fight so well? But the Pontoon Bridge that everyone is vying for, if he wants to gift it out, he also has to prove that he has the qualifications to. If not, to give an ownerless land to others as a favor, that is truly thinking too much. If not for the White Sands Continent, Bai Family, and the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, what's the Shang Continent?"

His Adjutant did not know how to refute him, and spoke after thinking a long while: "Actually, this alliance is not a bad choice for us too."

"Not a bad choice?" Fu Dong Ku laughed: "Yes, It is not a bad choice, after calculating, what can we get, 12.5% or 10%? But why take 12.5%? The White Sands Continent is strong, the Bai Family has deep roots and connections, and the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce is even richer, but they are too far. To extend their hands, hehe, that will be tiring. Being mediators isn't easy either, if the Shang Continent is destroyed, they can only watch and sigh. This is our territory, this piece of meat is not for them to decide."

The adjutant, who was from the East Divergent Continent, agreed, but his cautious nature still spoke: "But the Shang Continent is truly powerful."

"So we always go back to this point!" Fu Dong Ku clapped his hands and exclaimed.

Although he had decided for a sneak attack, but he did not dare to underestimate the Shang Continent at all. In truth, he was fearful of them, the Shang Continent had defeated the the Vast Star Continent in a few battles, on the surface it might just be because of two points, homeground territory and underestimation, but Fu Dong Ku still saw many more things.

Even Bu Zi Fei was held captive, and surrendered to the Shang Continent. Underestimating the enemy was no different than seeking death.

And his spies came back with information that made Fu Dong Ku even more fearful. He had never heard of any army of any continent that would train in the Sea of Energy. Such a fearsome army, if they were to hold even more sources of wealth, who would possibly be able to stop them?

Fu Dong Ku did not want to clash head on with the Shang Continent, but he did not want the Shang Continent to obtain the Pontoon Bridge so easily as well, and immediately thought of a way. The Shang Continent had left its nest, and it was at its weakest, such a time, even blowing cold air would cause the Shang Continent to fall.

The production of Black Gold in the Shang Continent was no longer any secret, the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce and the Shang Continent's collaboration further proved this point.

Fu Dong Ku wanted to make the Shang Continent decide, Black

Gold or the Pontoon Bridge, which do you want?

Suddenly, the alarm on the warship sounded out.,

Fu Dong Ku immediately stood up and bellowed: “What’s going on?”

“Sentries! We met with sentries!”

Fu Dong Ku’s face changed, sentries! How could the Shang Continent place sentries at such a distance!

The Shang Continent’s cautiousness and precaution far exceeded Fu Dong Ku’s anticipation, but he then laughed, because that revealed the weakness of having insufficient strength.

He saw the Shang Continent’s sentry, he was enveloped with light aura, whom upon seeing the fleet immediately escaped without hesitation. This sentry seemed to not be affected by the Sea of Energy, he ran extremely quickly.

Fu Dong Ku became calm again, since they were caught, there was no meaning on sneaking in.

“Army, advance quickly!”

Fu Dong Ku gave the order without hesitation. The Shang Continent did not have any organized army, and since he was

going in with a storm, Fu Dong Ku had confidence in himself.

Tang Tian did not know that Fu Dong Ku was near the Shang Continent, but he could sense an abnormality. He initially thought that his proposal would be successful, and never thought that it would turn out not as smooth, that everyone chose to keep quiet and watch from the sidelines.

“My apologies, Mister Meng, until now I have not received any reply from any families.” From the bronze plate was Eldest Young Noble, the current Continent Lord of White Sands Continent, spoke apologetically, he initially thought that the name of White Sands Continent would give him some face with the other continents, but he did not expect everyone to be indifferent.

“It’s fine.” Tang Tian consoled him: “They will soon understand the situation.”

“I truly....” Eldest Young Noble felt embarrassed.

“Since their appetite is so big, then let us test their teeth.” Tang Tian’s voice was laced with a thread of killing intent.

Eldest Young Noble spoke: “Commander Suo Bi has said it, our White Sands will always be Mister Meng’s friend, if you need our cooperation, just let us know. We will help Mister Meng and give some pressure to those greedy people.”

In this matter, White Sands and the Shang Continent stood together. The refusal of the few families made the White Sands Continent rather annoyed. He and Suo Bi had specially discussed about the matter, if they were able to facilitate and help with the Pontoon Bridge, to the recovering White Sands Continent, it would definitely be good news to soothe the citizens.

“If I need your continent’s help, I will definitely not be courteous!” Tang Tian laughed.

After finishing the conversation with the White Sands Continent, Tang Tian did not think about asking the other two mediators, he believed the result would be the same. Within expectations, not long later, Bai Yue and Xu Jin contacted Tang Tian to inform him of the bad news.

Bai Yue and Xu Jin were in the same plight.

Tang Tian knew what the other continents were thinking. The Pontoon Bridge was a big piece of meat, if they wanted to share with the few powerhouses, the share that each family would get would not be big. These continents were not satisfied with a 12.5% stake in the bridge.

Their appetites were truly big.

Tang Tian sneered, he was not someone new to the battlefield, and clearly understood what the others were waiting for. No one thought that the Shang Continent could hold the Pontoon Bridge.

Furthermore, Tang Tian had initiated sharing the Pontoon Bridge, causing them to see it as lack of confidence. If they did not have enough strength, why would they want to share the Pontoon Bridge?

Nowadays, wanting to gift things to people isn't easy too.

Tang Tian felt helpless.

Just at that moment, Ye Lao Er barged in like the wind: "Boss! Boss! Pirates! There are Pirates!"

"Pirates?" Tang Tian squinted his eyes.

Ever since they finished the training in the Sea of Energy, Ye Lao Er and the rest were addicted to such high intensity training. To the disciples of the five families who bear the weight of hatred in their blood, their optimal choice in everything was to quickly raise their own strength. Whether it was danger or the intensity, they did not care.

They were overly excessive, everyday they would run out of the stronghold and train bitterly in the Sea of Energy. For the sake of attaining even higher intensity, they would run far and wide.

Fu Dong Ku mistook them as scouts.

Their use were truly like scouts, they were scattered to all the regions around the Estuary of the Shang Continent. Ye Lao Er flew

out the furthest, and was the one who scouted the pirates.

He was recently excited because of Master Jing Hao. For someone who was just a few years older than him, but yet so much stronger than him and was able to defeat him in a few moves, from being unconvinced, Ye Lao Er was defeated multiple times till he was sincerely convinced and ready to concede. What he didn't expect was that even the powerful Master Jing Hao would also run into the Sea of Energy and temper himself seriously.

If Master Jing Hao was doing such a thing, what kind of excuse could they give to skive?

Jing Hao's determination became a role model for the three families in the stronghold.

The Sagittarius Constellation and Aries Constellation were brought away by Crane and Ling Xu, while the remaining three were given to Jing Hao by Tang Tian.

Tang Tian felt that the five families were suitable to walk the path of how Heaven's Road people fought, as armies were not suited for them. Tang Tian retrieved many spirit cards from Three Spirits City relating to the five constellations, although their martial techniques were not powerful, they were extremely suitable for them. They were filled with plenty of energy, and in their hands, the low grade martial techniques could become extremely powerful. Spirit technique cards were not suitable for them as they required enlightenment on laws, which was still far for them.

Jing Hao used a simple method to teach them, sparring.

The ruthless Drunk on Saint Blood became a nightmare for the disciples in the training period, but Jing Hao's reputation soared. Adding that Jing Hao was a good role model, he quickly became deeply respected.

Jing Hao noticed the energy vortex ahead of him.

It spanned roughly 10m long and was mixed with a myriad of colors, faintly rotating. Such an energy vortex was common in the Sea of Energy, while the large energy vortices could span over 10 thousand li. Such monstrosities would be extremely dangerous to go close to.

Jing Hao watched it for three days, his gaze fully focused without moving.

He had already found 46 different types of energy inside this particular energy vortex. He realised that energy vortices were in truth not peaceful at all. The insides were like a volcano, the berserk energy that mixed with each other, formed a strange and miraculous equilibrium. He realised that the energy was continuously fighting and destroying each other, with new energy growing from within. Inside the chaotic energy, there was destruction and birth, there would occasionally be a straight light beam, it was extremely ordinary looking, and extremely short lived, but Jing Hao was always attracted to them.

He had never thought that he would be able to witness such an enriching world in the energy vortex.

It was as if he was drunk and intoxicated.

Suddenly, he sensed something, and raised his head. His calm and deep eyes seem to penetrate through the boundless energy.....

A fleet with pirate flags were disrupting the energy, heading towards his direction with great speed.

Behind him.....was the Estuary to the Shang Continent!

Jing Hao squinted his eyes, he looked at the energy vortex in front of him, and suddenly laughed.

Chapter 662 – Storm

Song Didi was not the Song Didi of the past.

The deep blue eyes above his aquiline nose were sharp and filled with oppressiveness. He had been high spirited recently, due to his personally created Awakened Army, he had become sharper. To any general, there was nothing that could make them feel more successful. Barbara took the position as his adjutant, mainly to facilitate the logistics and to communicate with the Shang Continent, adding that his military achievements were beyond bad, he also had many evil tricks up his sleeves, and could frequently help Song Didi solve difficult problems.

The Awakened Army's prestige grew more and more in the Blue World, and more and more awakened came up to help, hoping to join the army.

The flourishing and fertile Sacred Saint Galaxy left these conscious awakened Blue Dwarves to be filled with yearning. Compared to the barren and quiet Blue World, the Sacred Saint Galaxy's rich history and unique culture was colorful and filled with attraction.

The Awakened Army's strength was quickly improving, as well as Song Didi's standard. Throughout the history of mankind, wars never ceased, how to fight, how to battle with brains and brawn, all of the abundant and perfect theories, allowed the military theories in the Blue World to look extremely primitive and naive. The awakened Blue Dwarves greedily absorbed all that knowledge, they yearned to have a day that they could create their own culture

and and civilization with their hands and brains that they could call their own, and not just the Blue Sea.

Although after being awakened, the Blue Dwarves were rather timid and extremely intelligent.

They were quickly improving, and after the grinding of constant battles, although it did not make them fearless, but it unearthed the crafty nature deep within them.

They were quick and hard to fathom and could slip away easily. This Awakened Army gradually formed its characteristics that its enemies hated.

The prior task of the Awakened Army was to swim around the Pontoon Bridge and increase the pressure on the Vast Star Continent, so they had not left the Pontoon Bridge When Bing's order arrived, Song Didi immediately sent the Awakened Army to move.

When he arrived at the battlefield, he coincidentally saw the light beams and the dazzling light auras that shot out periodically from the Bright Symbol Stronghold.

The sounds of explosions caused the Song Didi's fighting intent to soar.

His blue hunter like eyes quickly found his target, the pirates that were attacking the stronghold from the outside.

Pirates?

Song Didi sneered, his blue eyes were as cold as the Blue Sea, releasing an extremely cold glare, his enemies did not have any defense behind them, truly like the soft abdomen of a wild beast.

He quickly raised his right hand.

All the Blue Dwarves behind him retrieved out their different shaped parts and components on their back, they moved silently, their blue eyes releasing a dark blue light aura that resembled blue flames.

They moved adeptly as they begun to construct, and after a minute and a half, their assemblies were complete.

It was a brand new type of weapon, it looked like armor, but they were just at the upper bodies. Their shoulders and arms were exceptionally thick and bulky, but the most eye catching thing was the big and massive black gold basket that resembled a palm grabbing an object.

The Blue Dwarves had skinny figures, so it made them look as though their heads were big and their legs were small.

Storm was its name. The Shang Continent's Black Gold Series new weapon, created by Grandmaster Sai Lei.

The expansion of the Black Gold Series weapons was requested by Bing, the reason was simple, it was cheap. To the Shang Continent, the boundless black stone desert was the cheapest it could get. It was still possible to bring a few materials from Three Spirits City, but to bring conventional weapons from Three Spirits City, then young lad Tang need not bother to do anything else as he would be too busy.

These lower end weapon plans were unable to incite Sai Lei's interests, but lucky for them, her subordinates were all crouching tiger hidden dragons, with countless of different tastes. To finally obtain a chance to display themselves, all of them looked as if they were on drugs, they racked their brains and worked around the clock.

Many bizarre and strange weapons were sent over, numbering over 162 types, and after Bing's screening, only seven were selected, Storm being one of them.

Storm was sent to Song Didi, immediately causing his eyes to become bright, although the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears possessed considerable might for battles inside continents, but if they were in the Sea of Energy, it was far from sufficient to fight against warships. Storm was used for that reason.

It was Storm's first practical use in battle. Song Didi opened his eyes wide, not daring to relax for a second. The only way to test a weapon was in real battle.

Storm was rather troublesome in being set up, even with adept and familiar hands, it required at least a minute, so for the

Awakened Army that used a minute and a half was already not too bad. But it looked rather comical, a straight neat row of soldiers dressed in swollen upper body armor, and on the thick arms that were bigger than the Blue Dwarves body carried two black baskets.

Barbara who was glancing left and right froze, he sent his respects to the person who designed Storm over a hundred times!

Asshole, why does it look like a group of people going to the market to buy vegetables....

Where is the agreed formidable majestic look? Where is the tyrannical vigor?

Song Didi was instead very calm, he focused more on strength and power, after waving the black baskets, and finding that they were not sluggish at all, he was rather satisfied.

Bang!

He raised the black basket on his right hand, and the army quietened down.

“Everyone get ready!”

Song Didi felt the blood in his veins surging, he arched his back, the black basket on his right hand naturally drooped down, a dazzling light aura quickly converging inside the black basket, instantly becoming extremely bright, forming a bright light ball!

All the soldiers in the Awakened Army did the same movement, many light balls appearing.

“Kill!”

Song Didi roared, he suddenly threw the light ball in his hand. The powerful upper body armor and arms increased his strength exponentially, the light ball flung out at an extreme speed.

“Kill!”

All of them roared in unison, countless of the different sized light balls inside the baskets were flung out, and dropped onto the warships ahead like rain.

Song Didi did not stop, borrowing the momentum as he flung the light ball in his right hand, he took a step forward and flung the light ball in his left as well. His movements were extremely quick and in a blink of an eye, he had flung out 12 of the light balls. The soldiers behind him were also frantically throwing them out, consecutively 12 waves of light balls were flung, in total, each person threw out 24 of the light balls.

The Awakened Army had a total of 3000 soldiers, and was the largest drawn up army of the Shang Continent, because Bing thought that the fighting ability of the Blue Dwarves individually were weaker, and with too few a number, they would not be practical.

72000 light balls flew out like a storm, occupying the entire sky.

Ying Yan was fully focused on attacking the Symbol Stronghold that he never thought that there would be people sneaking an attack from behind.

When the sudden intense energy undulation appeared behind him, he finally sensed it. He looked up to see the rain of light balls, causing his face to turn ashen.

What's that?

That was the only question that he could think of at that time, followed by the intense explosions that caused him to go blank.

Bang bang bang!

The energy barrier of the warship only lasted for three seconds before it shattered. The throng of light balls smashed onto the hull of the warship like raindrops, light of fires soared into the sky, planks flying all over, the explosion sounds shook the entire place, overpowering any other sounds, the piercing light aura shining into every corner of the warship, causing the entire place to be white and blinded. Every single pirate was pale white and afraid, they had never received such an intense attack before.

This silver grade warship was heavily damaged in an instant, dense smoke arising from its body, while all the other warships

around it were already up in flames.

Song Didi gasped for breath as he watched the battlefield ahead, he could almost not believe his own eyes. The Storm Armor on their bodies were covered in cracks, pa, they shattered and fell from the soldier's bodies, but the soldiers had the same expression as Song Didi, watching the fleet that were enveloped in flames and explosions.

Is this truly what we can achieve?

Many of the soldiers hugged their heads subconsciously, they could not believe it.

Those were warships, in the Blue World, every single time the humans' warships appeared, they could only escape. If not for the Blue World being a natural protection that stopped the warships, the Blue World might had been ravaged long ago.

The Blue Dwarves were experts in throwing at long distance and the black gold was suitable as warship weapons, and thus Storm was the perfect combination of these two. The strength of the Blue Dwarves' arms were strengthened from the armor, allowing their ability to throw to become even stronger. The light balls that were comparable to shots made by warships weapons, although they could only sustain 24 shots, but it was more than enough for a Blue Dwarf.

The Storm was a one time use type of weapon.

Clank clank clank, Song Didi shrugged off the remaining pieces of the armor and shouted in excitement: “Do not leave any alive!”

The other soldiers were awakened from their stupor. They took out their spears and rushed forward along with Song Didi.

Boom!

An unprecedented fire suddenly exploded from Ying Yan’s warship, it had completely exploded, the immense wave shot towards the Awakened Army, causing the front lines to turn sluggish.

When the fire disappeared, there was no one left in front of the Awakened Army.

And at that moment, the massacre in the Bright Symbol Stronghold was nearing its end. The exploding sounds of the warships outside caused the all the pirates who were in peril inside the stronghold to lose all hopes of resistance. They were after all pirates, their determination to fight was never as strong as the elites of the Honorable Martial Continent, and the elites fighting amongst them were still resisting in the corner.

But very quickly, these Honorable Martial Continent elites were all killed.

Bright Symbol Stronghold, Cleared.

Three hours later.

“Do you understand your mission?” Bing looked at Xie Yu An and asked.

“This subordinate understands.” Xie Yu An replied calmly, his tone did not have any traces of excitement or undulation, as though he was answering an ordinary question.

Bing nodded his head in satisfaction, Xie Yu An’s state of mind was strong, and with the Bright Symbol Stronghold in his hands, Bing felt relieved.

After completing the installations inside the Bright Symbol Stronghold, and relying on Xie Yu An’s outstanding defense abilities, even if Bright Symbol Stronghold was not an invulnerable stronghold, it was definitely a tough nut to crack.

“I’ll leave this place to you.”

With that, Bing brought the majority of the troops and left.

Xie Yu An watched as they left, his calm gaze, finally revealed a trace of movement. He knew that the following battles would be extremely difficult, but wasn’t that what he had been looking for?

His gaze became calm again, and he spoke: “Gather the captives to form groups to repair the gates. Get the defensive layout of the Bright Symbol Stronghold out.”

His guard over the Bright Symbol Stronghold would become one of the iron locks of the Pontoon Bridge,

And no one would be able to pass through his territory.

Chapter 663 – The Pack Of Hidden Energy Vortices

Tang Tian did not have many cards left to play.

Bing had taken all the elite armies, and what was left were the disciples of the three families, Libra, Cancer and Aquarius, and the Precious Bright Village Regiment. The Precious Bright Village Regiment's was improving very quickly, and the continuous high intensity of battles made them give off a slight feel of elites. But as their starting point was too low, they still had a long route to becoming true elites. So currently, they only had one use, for defense.

The good news was that through the rush work, the stronghold at the Estuary had completed its preliminary stages and could be used.

Bu Zi Fei looked at Tang Tian, he was a stranger towards this big boss, and whenever they talked, the conversation would end in less than 10 sentences. The Big Boss did not seem to probe into the matters of the continent, and would train everyday, frantically. It seemed as though everything were left to his direct superior Master Bing to supervise.

Compared to Master Bing who could do everything, to Bu Zi Fei, the big boss was a blur.

To Bu Zi Fei, he thought that Master Bing hoped that he would be able to help the Big Boss protect the Shang Continent. It seemed as

though the Big Boss did not have any ability to lead.

Bu Zi Fei wanted to speak, but he was interrupted by a voice.

“You, you and you, bring everyone, prepare to attack.”

Tang Tian pointed at the disciples and gave the command. A newborn calf would not fear the tiger, not only did the disciples not show any fear, they were extremely eager and were cracking their knuckles.

Bu Zi Fei jumped, it was too messy, he immediately panicked and stopped them: “Master, our strength is at an disadvantage, we should use the defensive abilities of the stronghold....”

“It is just a group of pirates!” Tang Tian extended his hand out and stopped Bu Zi Fei, his face filled with disapproval.

He did not even give Bu Zi Fei any chance to speak, he brought the disciples and flew out. Bu Zi Fei’s face turned pale, he thought that the big boss might be unreliable, but he never thought that the big boss would be completely unreliable! The Shang Continent had fought two head on clashes and won, so what ordinary pirates would dare to find trouble at their door? Bu Zi Fei knew that the pirates incoming were most likely a powerhouse.

Even if they stayed in the stronghold for defense, Bu Zi Fei did not have much confidence as well. The opponent chose such a time to attack, that meant they had obtained news and did not

underestimate them. But the disciples were weak, and to go out to fight, wasn't that suicide?

He could only watch as Tang Tian led the group of people and rushed out of the stronghold.

Bu Zi Fei clenched his teeth and followed along. It was not enough to defend the stronghold with the Precious Bright Village Regiment. He was not the one to lead the Precious Bright Village Regiment, and thus his fighting ability could not be completely displayed. The relation and communication between the commanders armies cannot be disregarded, without an outstanding commander, the army would just be a mob. And if they were not familiar with each other, the army might be powerful, but if the general could not do much, they would be useless.

Compared to that, although all the single combat saints had difficulty fighting with armies, but the restrictions and confinements faced by them were fewer.

Only after they rushed out of the stronghold and into the Sea of Energy did Bu Zi Fei come to his senses.

He did not have the intention of rushing out, his personal strength was average, and at any crucial moment, he would be unable to save the Big Boss. But thinking about it, guarding inside the stronghold would just be sitting and waiting for death.

ALright, maybe if things are going south, I can turn and escape.

He felt remorseful. In truth, he was completely convinced by Master Bing, the profound and mysterious Master Bing was like a god of war in his eyes. To be a subordinate of such an outstanding commander awaiting orders was the fortune of any lower ranked commanders. Bu Zi Fei had spent his days being cautious and conscientious, and felt that Shang Continent had a great future, and he could not let himself fall.

But, he did not wish to be a captive ever again.

When he thought about the uncertainty of having to escape to survive, bitterness flooded his taste buds.

Bu Zi Fei felt dejected, the god of war commander, is actually assisting a bold but not very astute Sovereign, Master Bing is truly unfortunate. Maybe it was an ego thing, but Bu Zi Fei's emotions became slightly better thinking about that.

He blindly followed suit behind Tang Tian, watching quietly.

Tang Tian did not care about Bu Zi Fei, he had his own ideas. He was clear of what he could and could not do. Bing could lead the regiment to protect the stronghold, but in the same situation, he would lead it to failure.

Because he did not know how to. Defend was not in his dictionary right from the start.

After fighting so many battles, Tang Tian had gradually understood a superficial logic, fighting in wars and brawling were the same, one had to use all of his advantages and avoid using his weaknesses. What is my advantage? To attack! Although there is a fleet ahead, and my offense is not very powerful, but obviously it is stronger than my defense.

So Tang Tian never thought about staying back for defense.

He was different from Bu Zi Fei, a mature and decisive commander, and analyzed things differently. Tang Tian relied more on his astonishing intuition in battles. The analysis in black and white did not mean anything to Tang Tian. It was not that they were useless, but he did not understand them.

It was like the stronghold at the Estuary, it was a defensive weapon, but Tang Tian was not familiar with it at all, to use what at which part, how to utilize its strongest fighting abilities, Tang Tian was confused by those things.

Compared to that, Tang Tian was more familiar with the danger inside the Sea of Energy. Fighting in familiar territory was never wrong.

It was not only Tang Tian who felt that way, the disciples from the three families who had been through the long distance training, adding that they had continued to train by themselves, felt extremely familiar with the Sea of Energy.

Drunk on Saint Blood trembled slightly in Jing Hao's hands, the

sword blade was buzzing, attracting the surrounding energy. The energy all around was being attracted and surged rapidly towards Drunk on Saint Blood, drawing a perfect circle at the blade tip, the circular sword aura flickered, then faded, but its suction force suddenly became stronger.

The surging energy became faster and faster, and a complete energy vortex formed quietly.

The newly formed energy vortex was dim and void of light, it was difficult to catch with the naked eye. It was the nascent stage of an energy vortex, in which as time goes by, it would gradually become stronger and brighter, the strong suction force would give rise to the light scars, and like the occasionally seen energy vortex, could become a leviathan that spanned over a thousand li.

But to Jing Hao, the nascent energy vortex was enough.

Satisfaction could be seen from his face, his legs moved and his body flickered. He appeared at another location, following a set pattern.

He ignored the pirate fleet that was drawing closer, and continued to draw out more vortices.

He only stopped 10 minutes later. He raised his head and looked at the fleet of pirates, who had already barged into the his formation of vortices. Inside this vast area, he had drawn over 6000 energy vortices in a breath.

Fu Dong Ku was extremely careful, cunning people were the most cautious, although he enjoyed living life on the edge, but to be able to be successful every round, it was pertinent to be daring yet scrupulous.

“How much longer till we reach the Estuary?”

“About half an hour.”

“Speed up 10 minutes later.”

“Yes.”

Everyone became tense, increasing speed meant that they were approaching battle. All of them knew of the Shang Continent’s reputation, and Fu Dong Ku had brought many sieging frigates meant to handle the Shang Continent’s stronghold. Sieging frigates were effective against strongholds, but as it only had one purpose, there were many flaws to it.

For example it’s terrible defensive capabilities, or the preparation time it required.

Suddenly, the body of the ship trembled, it was not a large movement, but Fu Dong Ku immediately frowned: “What happened?”

“Could be a hidden energy vortex.” His subordinate immediately replied.

Fu Dong Ku’s tensed heart loosened up, energy vortices were common, and the small energy vortices were countless and everywhere. For energy vortices to pose a threat to the ships, they needed to have a span of over 60m. But such large energy vortices would release bright light auras and could be easily seen. Hidden energy vortices were the small energy vortex that are unable to release light auras. Such energy vortices were weak and could not hurt the defense of the ships.

Just at that moment, the ship suddenly trembled incessantly.

Boom boom boom!

Exploding light auras continued to blossom, the lights flickering through the windows of the warship.

“What is going on?” Fu Dong Ku stood up and bellowed.

Hidden energy vortices cannot explode, did we meet with something else?

The soldiers controlling the navigation had ugly complexions on their faces, they did not know what was going on.

Fu Dong Ku was suspicious, and with a stride he appeared by the window, and saw everything clearly. The warship was moving quickly, the energy barrier seemed to have touched something, causing flames to explode on their energy barrier. The explosions were extremely condensed, but fortunately the explosions were not strong, although there were movements on their light barrier, but it was not much influence.

Suddenly, Fu Dong Ku thought about something, his complexion instantly changed, but before he could speak.

Bang bang bang!

Powerful explosions came up from behind them, the light that arose from the flames surged into the sky, causing his vision to turn white.

The flames had enveloped a few of their sieging frigates!

Fu Dong Ku's face turned green, the power of the explosions were negligible to his warship. But to the weak sieging frigates, it was fatal!

Damn it!

The entire fleet was advancing at full speed, and like furious arrows, they surged into the pack of hidden energy vortices Jing Hao had laid out.

Fu Dong Ku never thought that they would encounter such a situation, but he was experienced and knowledgeable, and knew that it was too late to slow down, they could only gather their remaining strength and escape the dangerous area.

“Advance at full speed!”

Fu Dong Ku’s bellow sounded out towards the entire fleet, all the warships and frigates forced themselves to advance!

Bang bang bang!

Explosions continued to occur on the sieging frigates, shining on Fu Dong Ku’s green face. He was already completely infuriated.

When the explosions stopped, it meant that they had already rushed out of the dangerous pack of hidden energy vortices.

“Report to me the casualties!” Fu Dong Ku gritted his teeth and said.

“We have six sieging frigates left, the rest all suffered from different degrees of damage.” A subordinate reported with trembling voice.

Bang!

Fu Dong Ku struck his fist on the table in anger, he had brought

20 sieging frigates, which was his most important card to devastate the Shang Continent, but who knew that before they have reached Shang Continent, they would actually lose everything!

Damn it!

“There’s someone there!” A subordinate cried out.

Fu Dong Ku immediately raised his head up to look, shock bursting through his entire body.

Inside the shadows of the Sea of Energy, there stood a strong swordsman, seemingly aware of his gaze, wielding the large sword in hand, pointing straight at him from afar, the sword tip suddenly slashing down through the void.

Fu Dong Ku’s green face turned jet black.

Chapter 664 – Tang Tian's Plan

Fu Dong Ku held back the rage in his heart, although he did not recognize the powerful swordsman, but to do such a provocation, he was 90% from the Shang Continent. He did not lose his rationality, the opponents provocation was meant to attract his attention, and make him distracted.

He took a deep breath, his main objective was to attack the Shang Continent. The opponent was only one person, and was unable to change the course of the situation. Fu Dong Ku calmed down, the rage in his eyes dissipated, he suddenly laughed. The opponent had used such a underhand move, which further proved his understanding that they had exhausted all of their abilities.

Even if their sieging frigates were destroyed, Fu Dong Ku had the absolute self confidence that their remaining forces were sufficient to trample the Shang Continent.

The only difference would be that it would be slightly more troublesome.

Whether or not the pack of hidden energy vortices were man made, who cared?

“Our target is the Shang Continent's Estuary!”

Fu Dong Ku calmly gave his order, drumming the morale of his soldiers, causing them to immediately calm down. This was the real commander they trusted, this was the East Divergent Fox that

was unstoppable!

Jing Hao saw that the fleet was not affected at all, and was somewhat regretful. He turned and flew towards the same direction as them, as he knew what they were trying to do.

The pirates were definitely not any ordinary pirates, to be able to stand such a provocation and remain calm, their general was definitely a formidable one.

But, you guys have definitely looked down on one person.

Jing Hao skillfully moved in the Sea of Energy, his face remained astonishingly calm, his deep serene pupils seemed to reflect his indifferent state of mind, only a faint smile at the corner of his lips revealed the curiosity of his heart.

He truly was curious.

How would Tang Tian deal with these pirates?

Young lad Tang definitely did not have any relation towards plans and schemes, but every time, he would use extremely weird methods and all his inconceivable victories would always cause others to become dumbstruck. And many times, his victories would be so bizarre that even the old timer Bing would not understand.

And the truly scary thing about him was that he had never lost!

I wonder what will he do this time? It truly piques my interest!

Jing Hao started to move faster.

Tang Tian and the rest already saw the fire lights and immediately guessed that it was Big Brother Jing Hao. This made him excited, he felt that his train of thoughts was right, the Sea of Energy had many places that could be used.

“Don’t use star treasures, we will launch a sneak attack.”

Tang Tian immediately stopped the disciples who were about to activate their treasures. The treasures would release light auras and would attract attention. Hearing that they were about to launch sneak attacks, they stopped.

Bu Zi Fei who was behind secretly shook his head, it was a terrible decision. Although a sneak attack would be unexpected, but the other party had a fleet, to use their physical bodies to handle a fleet, there was no chance of winning at all.

But he kept quiet, he knew that regardless of what he said, the big boss would not listen. And all of the amateurs were just listening to him.

Tang Tian got everyone to huddle: “There’s still time, everyone come, think of a way, how can we sneak attack here?”

“We cannot get too close, if we get too close they will be ready for us.”

“I remember there is a place with a lot of energy, why not lure them there? And then explode the energy there?”

“Are they that stupid?”

.....

All of the amateurs started to come up with all sorts of ideas, causing Bu Zi Fei to disapprove in his mind, completely disappointed. He was initially sort of expecting something, that although his big boss was not that reliable, but since he could even get Master Bing to follow him willingly, he would have some sort of specialty.....

But at the moment, big boss' performance is truly clumsy.

That's right, clumsy.

To rashly rush out without any sort of a plan, and to even ask a group of amateurs that did not know anything, if that isn't clumsiness, than what was it? Bu Zi Fei was unhappy, he felt that no matter what the Big Boss thought, it would be better asking him than the amateurs. Furthermore, he was a silver grade general, in the Vast Star Continent, he was the main commander of the main force. From whatever angle, he should be more trustworthy.

Could it be that Big Boss is biased against me?

Bu Zi Fei did not say anything, but he tossed that idea to the side of his mind, It should be because he isn't familiar with me. But, what idea can they come up with?

Bu Zi Fei frowned and racked his brains, but found that he had no idea as well. The disparity in power between both parties was too large, and the only way was to borrow the power from the Sea of Energy? But the Sea of Energy around the Shang Continent did not have any dangerous parts at all.

There was no other way.

Bu Zi Fei helplessly realized that even if the Big Boss asked him, he could not give any useful suggestions.

Tang Tian's eyes suddenly lit up, he waved towards Bu Zi Fei.

Bu Zi Fei was startled, and subconsciously went over.

Tang Tian asked: "If you bring the Precious Bright Village Regiment to garrison at the stronghold at the Estuary, how long can you hold for?"

The Precious Bright Village Regiment? Bu Zi Fei replied: "If there are sieging frigates, at most 10 minutes. If there are no sieging frigates, we can last for half an hour."

Bu Zi Fei's reply was not fabricated, he had already done some training, not with the family disciples, they could not even have energy synchronization. For garrisoning or defense, they were useless. So from the start, he could only rely on the Precious Bright Village Regiment.

“Great!” Tang Tian's eyes lit up: “Go back now, remember, you must hold on for half an hour! The rest of you, follow me!”

With that said, Tang Tian suddenly flashed 300m away, causing the three family disciples to awake from their daydream and follow along.

In the blink of an eye, only Bu Zi Fei was left in his original position.

Hey hey hey, what the hell is going on.....

Bu Zi Fei was startled, he had accepted the order without using his brains, causing him to panic. Returning to defend for half an hour, is there a reason for it? There was no meaning for it, the enemy was approaching, and the sentries had already informed them of their fighting strength, three warships and six medium size frigates, with such a strength, they could easily trample over the empty the Shang Continent.

What can half an hour do?

Can half an hour give them a chance to win?

Bu Zi Fei felt that it was ridiculous. Forget it, why bother wasting time with this bold but stupid and disordered person? Since there's no hope left, I should just run away.

He was just about the step forward, but looking around him, he suddenly became flustered. The world is so big, where can I go? I had enough humiliation from being a captive, am I going to be an army deserter now?

No, I cannot be an army deserter, I can be defeated, I can lose, I can be a captive, I can surrender, I can die, because I know even in those situations, I tried my best. That is the result from the war, albeit a bad result. But an army deserter? That is cowardice, to not even have the courage to fight.

No, I cannot escape.

I am a general myself, running away from war isn't humiliation, that is letting go the last bit of dignity of mine.

Determination slowly filled Bu Zi Fei's eyes, he patted his clothes neatly, and then bowed towards the direction that Tang Tian disappeared in.

This bow is to convey my will to fight, this bow is to convey my dignity.

Half an hour right? Then I will make it. If I can't, then I'll die. As a man of the army, it isn't much to die in the battlefield.

He turned and flew towards the Shang Continent's Estuary.

"Big Boss, where are we going?" Ye Lao Er asked.

"We are going into the undercurrent region." Tang Tian replied without turning back.

"Undercurrent region?" Everyone was stunned.

The undercurrent region was extremely close to the Shang Continent's Estuary, it was a region where the energy flow was extremely chaotic, and if careless, anyone would be pulled in and die. The energy was extremely berserk inside, and was marked as a dangerous area.

"Undercurrent region?"

Suddenly, a familiar voice came up. Tang Tian jumped in fright, but immediately became joyous. Not far, Jing Hao stood straight with his sword, smiling at everyone. He had initially wanted to return to the Shang Continent to support everyone, but he did not expect to meet Tang Tian and the gang halfway, and thus ran over.

“Big bro Jing Hao, was it you just now?” Tang Tian asked impatiently.

Jing Hao nodded, and told them of what happened.

Hearing that their sieging frigates were nearly destroyed, Tang Tian revealed a crazy yet joyous expression, and clapped his hands: “That’s great! Then Bu Zi Fei can last for more than half an hour!”

“Half an hour?” Hearing that, Jing Hao knew that Tang Tian was up to something: “You have a plan?”

“We can lay an ambush in the undercurrent region.” Tang Tian explained: “The enemy knows that we are short of manpower but they will never expect us to split our forces. The undercurrent region is dangerous, so they will not think that there will be people hiding there. We will wait for them to fight in full swing, and will suddenly appear behind them fiercely, that will be fun!”

Jing Hao muttered: “The undercurrent region is extremely dangerous, it will not be a problem for the both of us, but it will be for them.”

Jing Hao’s words did not have any intention of belittling them, even the arrogant Ye Lao Er did not dare refute against him. Even though they had refined themselves in the Sea of Energy, but no one dared to enter the undercurrent region.

“We have star treasures.” Tang Tian had thought about it:

“Aquarius, Libra and Cancer, which all have expertise in defense. I have been inside the undercurrent region before, with the help of star treasures, I believe that they can stay inside.”

Jing Hao thought for a moment, then nodded his head: “If that’s the case, then we have some hope. But what do we do with the warships? Their defensive capabilities are too powerful, they place emphasis on their defense and lesser on offense. Even if we manage to get behind their warships, we will have difficulty penetrating through the defense of the warships.”

“I have a plan, I’ll let you know later.” A cold glint flashed past Tang Tian’s eyes: “Let us enter the undercurrent region first.”

Everyone was extremely familiar with the terrain around the Shang Continent’s Estuary, and a few minutes later, they arrived at the undercurrent region.

The undercurrent region was like a black sea, engulfing the light around it, the chaotic black energy churned restlessly. The disciples of the three families were slightly pale, the undercurrent region was the Sea of Energy’s blacklands, and even warships were extremely afraid of the undercurrent regions.

“Quick, everyone activate your star treasures and get in. Remember, use all your strength to activate your star treasures!” Tang Tian said: “Big bro Jing Hao, go in first and take care of them.”

Jing Hao nodded and took the lead, rushing into the

undercurrent region.

Everyone else looked at each other with looks of hesitation.

“If you are all afraid of this, how are you guys going to take revenge in the future?”

Tang Tian snorted, causing their eyes to flush red.

“Big boss, you don’t need to aggravate us! Who doesn’t go in is a useless scoundrel!” Ye Lao Er snorted, and rushed in.

The other disciples followed suit.

When the last disciple entered, the pirates from far away entered Tang Tian’s vision.

With a cold glint in his eyes, Tang Tian entered the undercurrent region without a word.

Chapter 665 – Wu Wang Hai’s Blessings

After entering the undercurrent region, Tang Tian felt his vision go black.

Many figures with light regiments enveloping them appeared in his vision, all of them had looks of apprehension, the light regiments were extremely stable. But for some reason, Tang Tian wanted to laugh.

“When you guys get stronger, you guys can come here to train.”

Tang Tian suddenly said words that were out of the blue.

Little Fool flew out from Tang Tian’s body, he curiously looked around his surroundings. The last time Tang Tian had entered the undercurrent region, he was training. The energy in the undercurrent region was extremely peculiar, it was a bit similar to the Void Dark Flames , but it was more heterogenous. But to him, it was a good place to train. He drew out the Saint Sword Ocean Prison. Ocean Prison flew around in the chaotic energy like a fish in water, occasionally releasing cries.

Drunk on Saint Blood released a buzzing sound in Jing Hao’s hand, as though it was looking down on Ocean Prison Sword.

The disciples from the three families opened their eyes wide, they had never heard or seen before, a sword that seemed to have a mind of its own, as though it was alive.

The Ocean Prison Sword that received the mockery seemed to be enraged, it exploded forth with its black flames, the dense and pitch black Void Dark Flames transformed into many black fire dragons that were extremely ferocious, dancing wantonly around it.

The berserk killing intent enveloped everyone, causing the faces of the disciples to be filled with shock.

How could the black Drunk on Saint Blood be willing to submit to it? Enraged by the provocation, a row of blood red words erupted on the black sword blade, “Satisfaction from only Saint Blood”, it was alluring and bright, and at the same time the stench of blood filled the place, it was as though the black chaotic energy in the undercurrent region had been dyed a layer of blood.

The shocked filled disciples instantly became as pale as paper. They had never seen such a ferocious and intense sword! Furthermore, there were two!

Little Fool looked at Drunk on Saint Blood in Jing Hao’s hands, he knew that the sword was tyrannical, but he never thought that it would be able to suppress the Ocean Prison Sword, even after it had evolved. If looked carefully, one would realise that on the foreheads of the few black dragons flying around Ocean Prison Sword, there would be a faint rainbow-colored imprint, which was the Spirit Devouring Flame.

A savage sword worthy of contending with Drunk on Saint Blood!

Little Fool trained in the sword, and was naturally favoured by the swords, although the stench of blood on swords was not to his liking, but for a sword to evolve to such a level, it definitely had a glorious past.

But the characteristics of the energy inside the undercurrent region was extremely similar to the Void Dark Flames, and to the Ocean Prison Sword, it was extremely beneficial. Little Fool suddenly thought that maybe the Ocean Prison Sword could undergo its second evolution.

The Sword followed his thoughts, the few black dragons around Ocean Prison Sword opened their mouths.

Ssssi!

The dangerous and powerful energy inside the undercurrent region surged into the dragons' mouths, the dense black Void Dark Flames immediately strengthened, becoming gloomy, even the sword blade seemed to be completely engulfed by the flames.

Faraway, at the void of Ocean Prison, Wu Wang Hai opened his eyes, his face filled with shock.

The Ocean Prison that was beneath his body was formed by the Void Dark Flames, Booom, a black column of flames appeared

behind him and shot up. After that, another thick column of flames shot out of the void.

It was as though Ocean Prison was churning.

My student, for you to reach this level.....

Wu Wang Hai was at a loss.

The Ocean Prison Sword drew power from the boundless and boundless Ocean Prison, when Wu Wang Hai was bestowed as a saint, he used the Void Dark Flames of the Ocean Prison to form a sword, bestowing it with a soul, and his own spirit needed to stand guard inside the boundless Ocean Prison. He called it stand guard, but it was similar to imprisonment.

A few decades before, someone broke into the void and begged him for a trace of the Ocean Prison Sword concept.

He was a rather interesting person, so Wu Wang Hai agreed.

Wu Wang Hai knew that the person did not only beg him for the sword intent, because inside the palace that never saw the sun, many saint sword concepts were sealed. That quiet young man was an extremely good student adored by Wu Wang Hai. He also pitied the young man who carried the responsibility of an important mission. With this, he gave his all to impart and instruct the young man. The young man did not disappoint his expectations, and grew at godlike speed.

With such an outstanding student inheriting his legacy, his own imprisonment inside the Ocean Prison had worth.

But.....

He raised his head and looked at the Void Dark Flames that surged into the sky, and the Ocean Prison beneath his feet was faintly losing its ferocity.

He revealed a smile on his face.

Your accomplishment, are you finally able to breakthrough my imprisonment inside Ocean Prison? That is great!

One thousand five hundred years of darkness, one thousand five hundred years of dullness and boredom, finally my successor is here.

I have waited too long, and am already impatient. You have limitless potential, and as your teacher, I am gratified, I am proud. This is the heartfelt joy of a teacher.

My student, let me help you with one last burst of strength.

Wu Wang Hai opened up his arms, his black hair danced in the void, the Ocean Prison that was churning started to become even more fanatical. His body started to fall at great speed, like a sword,

he dropped into Ocean Prison.

The berserk Ocean Prison immediately calmed down.

The Ocean Prison Sword was fanatically absorbing the black energy current, it was like a bottomless pit, greedily taking up all the energy around it. The dim flames enveloping around the sword blade became extremely dense, when suddenly, Little Fool's eyes opened up as he stared intently at the sword tip.

The black flames quietly congealed, as though it was forming into another sword tip, but suddenly, the congealed sword tip disappeared.

Wait!

Something's wrong!

The congealed sword tip was still there, but it had become transparent, as transparent as air, so it was almost undetectable inside the undercurrent region's energy.

A thread containing thoughts of blessings transmitted into him, causing Little Fool's body to tremble, he was extremely familiar with this thread of thought. The years of him learning the sword flew past his eyes. In those dark and cold days, there were no joy, only stifling and chokingly bitter training, and the thread of

thoughts was the only smear of warmth he had.

It was also why he learned the Ocean Prison Sword best.

He had never spoken to the thread of thoughts, he only quietly felt it and listened to it.

From the start, he had always thought that the thread of thought was Ocean Prison Sword's sword concept.

Little Fool's mouth trembled, he did not say a word, and only after a moment, did he quietly mutter: "Thank you, teacher."

Jing Hao noticed the thin and delicately transparent Ocean Prison Sword that continued to form. Drunk on Saint blood continued to struggle, burning his palm, but he remained motionless as though he could not feel it. His eyes were fixated on the birth of the new sword inside the black flames, his eyes filled with admiration, he could clearly feel that the sword body's will was going through a transformation. That was why Drunk on Saint Blood was jumping so much, because it could sense the appearance of a sword capable of rivalling it.

The Ocean Prison Sword that completed its evolution floated quietly in the air.

The berserk and chaotic energy flow inside the undercurrent region quickly calmed down, as though it was after a torrential storm and everything had become quiet.

The pressure on everyone relaxed, but no one had noticed it, everyone was fixated on the extremely thin and delicate Ocean Prison Sword. It was as the sword concept had congealed into essence and was protecting the undercurrent region.

Tang Tian looked at Little Fool, but did not say a word.

Ocean Prison Sword's evolution was a huge leap in power, like giving a tiger wings. He could feel the exponential increase in strength of Little Fool, but Tang Tian was not the least bit happy. He and Little Fool's minds were connected, and he felt the thread of thoughts, and could also feel Little Fool's emotions.

He thought of Ghost Claw.

He shook his head, and threw away the yearnings in his mind. He subconsciously clenched his fists tightly, Ghost Claw, I am no longer a kid, I am already an adult, I have my mission, I have my responsibilities.

I will bring everyone to win!

Ghost Claw, I will definitely be even better than what you thought I would be!

The young man's heart was filled with determination as tough as steel.

Tang Tian did not make any sound and quietly left the undercurrent region, and looked towards the Estuary.

Over there, the battle had already begun.

Boom boom boom.

Attacks struck onto the stronghold's light barrier like rain, causing it to tremble endlessly. Bu Zi Fei was secretly joyous, the opponent only had six sieging frigates, thus their offensive ability became extremely limited, if not, they would have been in trouble.

But he knew that even if there were no sieging frigates, it was only a matter of time before the stronghold was breached. Three silver grade warships and six silver grade frigates, this was an extravagant fleet that no pirates could have.

Bu Zi Fei guessed that the commander of the fleet was someone he knew.

But he quickly realised that the Precious Bright Village Regiment's battle ability was far stronger than he had anticipated. After going through two difficult defensive battles in the Sword Forest Stronghold, their strength had improved tremendously.

It was not just their synchronization frequency written on paper, but the quality of the state of mind, Bu Zi Fei knew that these

invisible factors pertaining to their battle ability were extremely important. The intense barrage of cannon fire from the enemy did not cause the soldiers to panic, but instead relaxingly ridicule and tease each other.

Master Bing had planned out an extremely shallow tactic for them, and under their surprising synchronization, the might produced was outstanding.

Bu Zi Fei acutely sensed that the Precious Bright Village Regiment proved to be a threat to the enemy. Especially their synchronization frequency, it was extremely high, which meant that if they could gather even more soldiers, they could definitely launch powerful attacks.

Realizing this point, Bu Zi Fei's outstanding qualities as a silver grade general immediately flourished.

Firstly, he requested for 50 men to collaborate for attacks. This degree of attack would prove a threat to frigates but not for the warships. The frigates had no choice but to retreat, but the frigate's attack range was not as powerful as warships, which also meant that their attack would lessen, and the threat on the enemy would lessen as well.

The opponent's general was obviously unhappy, and quickly made a reaction. The three warships formed a meat shield and protected the six frigates.

Seeing that pressure was building up on the enemy, Bu Zi Fei

sneered.

For the sake of allowing the frigates to be able to reach the stronghold, they had to drive the warships closer to the stronghold.

Under the intense attacks, the energy barrier of the stronghold was in danger, and the counterattacks of the stronghold started to become weaker.

“Their men should have run to maintain the energy barrier, if we maintain full force attacks, they can only last for 3 more minutes.” The adjutant reported.

“This is truly easy.” Fu Dong Ku chuckled, he was extremely relaxed. Victory was right in front of him, as long as he destroyed the energy barrier, it was practically opening the door to the stronghold.

Suddenly, a dry crack sound came out, the stronghold’s energy barrier shattered.

Fu Dong Ku’s expression froze, his face immediately changed: “Shit!”

Bu Zi Fei looked at the time, 22 minutes, but, he could not care anymore.

A look of determination flashed past his eyes, seeing that their

synchronization were completed and that light auras had enveloped them, he shouted: “Get ready!”

Crack! The energy barrier shattered!

“KILL!”

Chapter 666 – Tang Tian Appears

A glaring light burst out.

Boom!

Fu Dong Ku felt the glaring and intense light flooding his vision, causing him to temporarily go blind. The warship beneath his feet trembled intensely, and in that moment he felt that he could not stand steadily, as though he was in a torrential storm. In the next moment, an ear shattering explosion came forth, causing everyone to be deaf and blind.

Fu Dong Ku's mind became blank, it was not cowardice, it was human nature.

After a few seconds, he regained his focal length, and was immediately shocked of the scene. Around 2km away from them was another warship, completely enveloped in flames, the soldiers wanted to rush out of the warship, but they were unable to struggle out of the terrifying flames.

Crack crack crack!

The bitter sound of cracks sounded out, causing Fu Dong Ku's skin to go numb as he witnessed the warship in front of him form cracks and split into two, becoming two enormous regiments of flames.

Fu Dong Ku was not an amateur, but it was his first time seeing such a tragic scene.

It was a silver grade warship!

A medium size silver grade warship had outstanding defense capabilities. And with it was its equally powerful construct, with its weapons, this silver grade warship cost at least 200 billion cloud coins.

200 billion cloud coins burnt in front of him, causing Fu Dong Ku to be stunned.

The loss made his heart bleed.

Ambush!

It was an ambush by the enemy!

Fu Dong Ku trembled, and suddenly shouted: “Retreat! Everyone retreat!”

The opponent had controlled their urge to attack from the beginning, forcing their frigates to move back and their warships as a meatshield. They then deliberately weakened their firepower, giving off a false sense of weakness, making it as if they were under increased pressure. The warships went too close, and thus were unable to avoid the attacks. The entire plan, each and every single consecutive move, if they were to restart, Fu Dong Ku knew that

he would be fooled again.

It was a powerful plot.

Fu Dong Ku forced himself to calm down. If the reports were true, then it would be pointless for the other party to plan any ambushes, because they had insufficient strength, such a plan would not allow them to obtain victory at all.

Unless.....

Fu Dong Ku's heart jumped.

~All of this was a ruse? They leaked the information that the Shang Continent was empty on purpose? And the information of the Pontoon Bridge was false? Countless of thoughts swept in Fu Dong Ku's mind, the more he thought, the more terrified it became. The cunning paranoia made his self confidence sway, he decided to retreat and watch the situation.

They retreated to a distance of 30 km.

The enemy's warship was getting closer and closer, causing Tang Tian to be extremely calm. Bu Zi Fei's move had also shocked him, but very quickly, he was rather impressed by it, ~Seems like that sissy has some standard after all.~ He did not blindly depend on the stronghold's defense to delay time, and was actually able to

destroy an enemy warship. This led Tang Tian to feel some respect for him.

Seeing that the pirates were being shocked like a flock of birds and retreating anxiously, Tang Tian was even more ecstatic.

It was as if they were serving themselves up on a silver platter, they saved a lot of time on traveling, they reached the back of the fleet, in which Tang Tian gave the rest a gesture. Everyone was extremely excited, all of them were holding a star treasure each but had not activated them.

“Begin!”

The moment Tang Tian instructed them, they activated the star treasures in their hands in unison.

One after another of light regiments quickly lit up, all those slumbering treasures were summoned awake, and the martial spirits that originate from Heaven’s Road, upon experiencing the dense energy, all started to leap out in joy.

They started to absorb the energy greedily.

All the energy started to surge towards them frantically. They were in the Sea of Energy, where there was no lack of energy. Every treasure became like a vortex. This time, Tang Tian had spent quite a bit, the treasures in their hands were all silver grade treasures.

But they were suppressed by their owners.

The treasures being suppressed were getting restless, struggling inside the hands of their owners. For 700 silver treasures to struggle at the same time, it produced a moderately large disturbance. The distance between both parties were too close, thus causing them to be detected.

“They are behind us!”

One of his subordinate screamed, causing Fu Dong Ku to rush to the window.

Outside of the warship, there were many human figures with small light regiments faintly discernible in their hands.

Not good! An Ambush!

Fu Dong Ku's face changed, the tone of his voice immediately changed key: “We leave this place now!”

Just at this moment, a shout came out from outside the fleet: “Throw them!”

Tang Tian's order made everyone feel as if a burden had been lifted off their shoulders, the treasures in their hands were burning like melting steel, and they threw it towards the fleet. After that,

every single one of them turned and ran without hesitation, all of them scattering agilely as though there was a rabid dog chasing after them, completely ignoring their bearings, stance or image, they looked fearful of something.

The light regiments were not fast, but the distance between both parties were too close, that the fleets were unable to dodge the lights.

The lights that were in their hands started to swell at an alarming rate upon being thrown, becoming the size of a basin in midair. They were a myriad of colors, with vortexes on their edges. They were still growing extremely quickly!

The intense sense of danger swept over Fu Dong Ku, his eyes were covered in fear, he felt as if he was being plunged into a well, covered in sharp blades and knives.

All the energy in the surroundings were surging towards the lights.

The star treasures that had lost control were absorbing energy at a berserk rate, causing rays of dazzling light scars to appear in the sky, like shooting stars streaking across the sky, formed by the friction between the fast and slow moving energies. Very quickly, more and more light scars appeared, making them look like rain, pouring down from all directions towards the treasures.

“We need to leave now!” Fu Dong Ku roared, his eyes were flushed red, like a gambler at the end of his road.

“The warship is being sucked in!” The subordinate’s voice was filled with fear and despair.

After activating the star treasures, they were actually suppressing the treasures from losing control. But after the suppression, these silver treasures were finally able to draw the energy from their surroundings unimpeded. The endless energy allowed the martial spirits inside the treasures to quickly grow. As they continued to strengthen, their absorption power became even more powerful.

700 odd silver treasures absorbing at the same time caused all the energy in the perimeter of 50km to be pulled in. Even the undercurrent region that Tang Tian and the rest were in was not spared. The black energy chaotic belts that resembled black cloths started to be pulled into the lights.

Fu Dong Ku’s fleet was at the center of the vortex, how could they escape?

Tang Tian and the disciples did not even turn back to look, they were trying to run with all their might, trying to get as far away as possible. They knew how terrifying were the lights, for they had absorbed all the energy in the Southern Islands the previous time.

They were currently in the Sea of Energy, where every inch of space, there exist extremely dense and viscous substance like energy.

Run!

Run with everything you got!

That was the only thought in everyone's mind, the terrifying sucking force behind them shook the energy around them. They were like fish swimming against the current, every step was extremely difficult, their speed quickly slowing down.

A groan sounded out beside him, causing Tang Tian to turn. He saw a disciple losing control of himself, in a blink of an eye, he was being flung out. Tang Tian's body flickered, he appeared beside the disciple and grabbed his collar, and bellowed: "Watch yourself!"

With that, he threw the disciple to one side. If it was an ordinary day, with Tang Tian's strength, he could fling the disciple out 300m, but at the moment, he only threw him out 30m.

More and more disciples started to reveal fatigue, causing Tang Tian to become alarmed. The suction force behind them was becoming stronger and stronger, if they did not escape from the perimeter, they would once again be pulled into the vortex.

"Get Behind me!"

Tang Tian roared, he rushed to the front of the team and welcoming the torrent in front, he fiercely punched forward.

Boom!

The torrent became chaotic, and with the space in front of him being blank, Tang Tian went forward. Before the torrent converged again, he punched out!

Boom boom boom!

Tang Tian was like a bulldozer, rushing through everything.

The disciples behind him felt the pressure on them lessening, all of them regaining their senses.

Suddenly, a small head bore its way out of Tang Tian's clothes, it was actually Ya Ya, its eyes were bright, Isn't this what I do best? Drill drill drill? It howled out once, and jumped out of Tang Tian's bosom, with the small flag on its buttock fluttering in the air, it waved its fists and started to drill. Although its fists were small, but they were extremely strong and had a high frequency of attack, it could actually form out a path. In the blink of an eye, there were a group of people following behind it.

Childish! Little Fool glanced at the excited Ya Ya who was howling crazily coldly. He remained expressionless as he suddenly appeared in front of a group like a ghost, with the transparent Ocean Prison Sword in hand, he thrust out.

A light barrier in the shape of an umbrella expanded out from his sword tip, [Ursa Major Stars Umbrella]!

Stars rotated on the surface of the umbrella, producing a thin layer of mist. Little Fool remained calm, Ocean Prison Sword had completed its evolution, and had become extremely powerful, even in the face of the torrents, he was having it easy.

The disciples around immediately scuttered behind Little Fool.

Jing Hao chuckled, he raised Drunk on Saint Blood and slashed at the torrents in front of him, sssii, the energy ahead of him ripped apart, and the disciples behind him felt the pressure on them lessening. When he saw that the torrents were converging again, Jing Hao would slash again.

One slash after another, Jing Hao used Drunk on Saint Blood casually, and a group of people gathered behind him.

With them leading the way, their speed increased greatly. But to travel for 25km, they required 10 minutes. And in this 10 minutes, it felt like a lifetime. Ordinarily, the distance of 25km only required them the time it took to speak.

The suction force behind them grew weak. They knew that they had escaped danger.

Many of them sat down on their buttocks without a care for their image, while the disciples who still had strength had their hands on their knees, gasping for breath.

“Oh, my god! Look!”

A voice came out, attracting everybody's attention, everyone turned their heads to look. The scene in front of them, caused all of them to become dumbstruck, some even holding their heads in disbelief.

Chapter 667 – Do You Want To Be Friends Or Enemies?

The 700 odd treasures had formed a humongous vortex.

It was a myriad of colors, like a rainbow vortex of dyes being mixed together. The illumination in the center became more intense and brighter, as it started to blaze to the point of being like a sun, even the treasures inside could not be clearly seen.

Inside the colorful vortex, the entire fleet was trying to escape, but they were turtles trapped in nets, it was difficult for them to escape. What was worse was that the energy barriers of the warships, under the intense attack of the energy lights, started to waver. The high speed energy light were stronger than the arrows, and being so concentrated, they could not avoid the arrows.

Bang bang bang!

The first to explode were the six frigates, which became six large regiments of flames. Dazzling flames that existed for only a second, in which the bodies of the frigates were instantly shattered and absorbed into the vortex.

The remaining two warships were also in peril.

Tang Tian was also shock by the scene before him, he had thought that the plan would be possible, but he did not expect for it to be so shocking. The scene at the Southern Islands where

everyone had activated their treasures in the Southern Islands on the Black Arrow Warship had left a huge impact in him. He felt that inside the Sea of Energy, the results would be better, but he never thought that it would be so effective.

If they had not been careful and escaped, they would be trapped inside as well.

Tang Tian had lingering fears.

He had completely underestimated its power, if not for them being able to escape well, it would not be them but the disciples that would be trapped in there.

The vortex was quickly expanding at a speed visible to the naked eye, and the warships that were struggling inside the vortices were becoming more and more sluggish, their light barriers shattered, bang, one of the warships exploded into flames, and the remains of that warship were sucked into the dazzling light of the vortex.

Bu Zi Fei stared at the gigantic energy vortex, his hands were cold, his face pale white.

Facing the terrifying energy, the powerful warships were actually not able to defend themselves in the slightest, and they could not even struggle out of the suction force. Bu Zi Fei's mental state was struck the heaviest, his state of mind was in in a daze. He had seen

energy vortices before, and he had seen countless of energy vortices much bigger than the one he was currently facing, but he had never thought there would be a day that there would be people that would use the power of the energy in battle.

A fleet consisting of three silver grade middle sized warships and six silver frigates, such a lavish match up, were actually completely destroyed, even before they could counterattack. It was a sense of helplessness, Bu Zi Fei was somewhat emotional, he knew how much manpower, wealth and time was required to build up the enemy fleet. But in the blink of an eye, everything was gone.

It was close to 1 trillion cloud coins, such a complete set of elite army to be wiped out, to any powerhouse, it was painful to the bones.

There was not resistance, no intense battle, only one perfect ambush.

What was that just now?

What did big boss and the rest of them throw?

Bu Zi Fei's heart trembled, his complexion revealing red and his heart thumping with excitement. Such a horrifying power, it could possibly change the way of war, and to any knowledgeable general, it was too much of details that were out of the norm!

Big Boss actually had such a powerful weapon in his hands!

Bu Zi Fei took a deep breath, he forced himself to be steady. In the darkness, there were countless of eyes watching. He believed that the battle would spread throughout the Southern Region in the next day. No, spread throughout the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Before anyone was made clear of the situation, no one would dare challenge them. Which meant, they were temporarily safe.

But one question remained in Bu Zi Fei's mind, What was that?

“What? Energy vortex? An entire fleet destroyed? What joke are you making!”

The lords of the few continents received the reports from their scouts, and their first reaction was disbelief. They had never heard of someone being able to use energy vortices, and the laws inside the energy vortices were never very high grade laws. To destroy a fleet that had three silver middle sized warships, how big would the energy vortex be?

But when the battle recording landed in their hands, they were forced silent.

The most direct report, Bing suddenly realized, was that the number of pirates around the Pontoon Bridge had decreased. And

the originally quiet continents had all sent out representatives to show interest in complying with the alliance.

Every continent's representative, before passing through Shang Continent's Estuary, would linger and look at the enormous energy vortex. Seeing the real thing always caused a bigger impact from the recordings, especially thinking about the gigantic energy vortex was actually man made, all of them could not help but breath in cold air.

Bing quickly rushed back from the Pontoon Bridge and saw the energy vortex, his mouth twitched, and with gritted teeth, he said: "What a waste!"

Bing's face turned back, since Tang Tian went to the White Sands Continent, he did not learn anything but using money to smash people, and the fact being that he learned it by himself. 700 silver grade treasures were not cheap even in Heaven's Road. If sold in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, it's worth might not be equal to the fleet, but it was definitely only slightly cheaper.

Bing had to go through a lot of difficulty to push through the Pontoon Bridge, each step he took being extremely heavy. But for Tang Tian, he just used treasures to drown the enemy, that fool took it so easy, but here I am as tired as a dog. Bing had initially prepared himself for a bitter battle, facing the big enemies, he had garnered high morale, but in the end, he was merely sent back hurriedly just for negotiations.

That's right, negotiations! All of them were actually frightened by Tang Tian, that fool, truly weak people.

Bing felt the restraint enclosing on him, he had prepared for a big battle, but someone had to tell him that the game was over. The feeling was extremely stifling.

Black faced Bing looked at the representatives with eyes that did not show any friendliness.

“We investigated, it’s the East Divergent Continent!” Richard said excitedly, he had already been promoted to the chief of intelligence, and put even more energy into his work: “Fu Dong Ku’s army had suddenly disappeared, and they publicized that he went out far to train, coincidentally they had a fleet of three middle sized silver grade warships and six silver frigates. Heh, I never thought it would be Fu Dong Ku, to die under Big Boss’ hands, he did not die in vain.”

Richard was definitely excited, East Divergent Fox Fu Dong Ku was a famed grade general, and this was a huge achievement. He was recruited by Tang Tian, and thus respected Tang Tian greatly, and thinking that the East Divergent Fox had died under Tang Tian’s hand, he thought that it was not a humiliation.

“Hahahaha, of course, to be defeated by me, that is his glory!” Tang Tian said happily, his nose pointed towards the sky.

Bing remained indifferent, he had never heard of the name Fu Dong Ku. He had no interests in such generals. Furthermore, when he saw how Richard was like, he felt disgusted, Humph, this guy truly bootlicks well.

But, East Divergent Continent.....

A cold glint flashed past Bing's eyes, and the smile on his face also became colder.

Inside the Sword Forest Stronghold hall.

“You guys can't do this!” The representative of East Divergent Continent waved his arms, his face filled with rage.

The other continents' representatives were taking in joy from the East Divergent Continent's calamity, the situation in front of them was favourable to them. The Pontoon Bridge was a huge cake, and the fewer people sharing it, the more could be given to them. So when Bing refused East Divergent Continent, almost everyone agreed to it.

Tang Tian could not be bothered about it, to want to share the profit after attacking the Shang Continent, where on earth was there such a good thing? Bing stood by one side, smoking his cigarette and ignoring the rest. Regardless if it was Bing or Tang Tian, they were not people who returned good for evil, and they did not keep their hatred overnight.

“You will all regret it!” The representative of East Divergent Continent said spitefully: “No one will ignore the existence of the East Divergent Continent!”

He had decided, when he returned to his continent, he would find a way to stop the Shang Continent's Alliance.

Suddenly, a subordinate barged into the hall, his complexion pale, his face filled with fear.

Everyone all looked at him, and the representative looked at him angrily and bellowed: "Who allowed you in!"

"Master, not good....." The subordinate was trembling.

Everyone all perked up their ears, only Bing remained indifferent, continuing his smoke.

Everyone else's ridiculing expression made this representative even angrier, pa, he smacked the subordinate and scolded: "Is the sky falling? What are you panicking for? Go back and reflect on your actions!"

"Master....." The subordinate ignored the palm print on his face, and said: "Pirates.....there are pirates, it's over, the East Divergent Continent is finished, The East Divergent Palace is being burned to the ground...."

Bang, the entire hall erupted, all the representatives stood up, all of them were shocked.....

The East Divergent Palace, that was the Palace of East Divergent Continent Lord, being burned to the ground, meant

that, East Divergent Continent.... was being destroyed!

The East Divergent Continent's representative felt as if he was punched in the brains, his world was spinning and only regained his senses after a long time. He turned and pointed at Tang Tian, and laughed bitterly: "Y-you.....you're so vicious...."

Tang Tian glanced at him once, and said indifferently: "You started it first, don't blame me for returning it to you."

The entire hall suddenly became quiet, all the representatives of their respective continents looked at Tang Tian in fear.

Even the representative of the East Divergent Continent did not expect that Tang Tian would admit it. But to this naked disregard, it made him feel even more furious, waaaa, he coughed out a mouth of blood.

"Cough cough cough!"

The intense coughing sound broke the silence. After hearing Tang Tian's words, he swallowed the smoke that was meant to be puffed out, inducing the violent cough. He scolded in his mind while coughing, Idiot, how can you admit to such a thing? If I had known earlier I would never allow this idiot to speak.....

After making sure that it was the East Divergent Continent, Bing had sent Shi Sen out, and intended to follow their enemies and disguised themselves as pirates and smash the East Divergent

Continent. Who knew that Tang Tian would be even more ferocious, upon hearing Bing's plan, without saying a word, he went to find real pirates. Contacting Lian Bo Jun through Suo Bi, he used 100 Black Gold warship weapons to purchase the Black Dragon Pirates.

Bing finally saw how the Tyrant Tang fought.

After losing Fu Dong Ku and his fleet, the East Divergent Continent were at their weakest, so how could they fight off the crafty Lian Bo Jun and Shi Sen's powerful Underworld Continent's Demonic Mounts? The East Divergent Continent's armies quickly depleted, Lian Bo Jun and Shi Sen easily found their flaws and killed their way up to the palace.

In truth, this result far exceeded Tang Tian's anticipation, but he did not feel the least bit guilty.

But at the moment, everyone was looking at Tang Tian in fear, as if they were looking at a demon from hell.

Tang Tian could not care, the East Divergent Continent was already an enemy in his mind. He would never be lenient to his enemies! Tang Tian who was impatient did not even bother beating about the bush, he suddenly stood up and looked at all the representatives, and immediately revealed the killing intent on his face.

"As friends, we will share the food together, enemies will just have to die, so people, do you want to be friends or enemies?"

Chapter 668 – Frost Mountains

Screw fiddled with the components with full concentration, like a kid playing with his most adored toys, and did not even raise his head once. Without resting, he lost himself as he dabbled in the trash. Luckily for him, he was a spirit general.

Before Sai Lei left, she had told everyone not to disturb him. But the old men of the Blood Meridians Laboratory were worried for him, and everyday they would take turns watching over Screw. Old Man Fei drank his tea, watching Screw who had buried his heads in the components, and was slightly surprised. In terms of age, Screw was a spirit general from ten thousand years ago, much older than the ages of everyone in Blood Meridians Laboratory combined. But Screw who looked like a child, made the old men all feel remorse, that they did not treat him well.

He is truly a naive spirit general.

Old Man Fei looked at the time, It's almost time.

As expected, Screw dropped the incomplete thing in his hand and walked over to the side of the training grounds. Every day, at the same time, Screw would put down the components and walk over to the training grounds and watch the mechanical martial artists train.

He would quietly observe the mechanical spirit weapons running back and forth, plowing in the mud, the intense collision and dashes in his eyes, was so familiar yet so strange, causing Screw to

be in a daze.

No one knew, but every day at this time, memories would surface in his mind.

Could it be that I used to watch this scene in the past?

He was in a daze, he shook his head to remove all the chaotic thoughts away from his mind. He then focused on the training grounds again. The training grounds were holding one against one sparring, the No.23 soldier had lost again, he had revealed an opening at his right rib which was caught by his opponent, he suffered an injury and lost.

A few memories surfaced yet again, the indistinct images overlapping with what he was seeing.

For some reason, he felt that No.23 soldier should not lose, although he had already lost 22 consecutive rounds, which was just a number away from his assigned number.

Suddenly, he walked into the training grounds.

Old Man Fei's eyes became wide opened, the cup that he had brought to his mouth stopped there, and he did not move an inch. After so many days, it was Screw's first action.

Duan Mu who was facilitating the training immediately got the soldiers who were training to stop. All of them looked at Screw

who had barged onto the training grounds in surprise. No one dared to scold Screw, they all knew of the badly injured Spirit General, but they did not understand what Screw was trying to do.

He walked over to No.23: “Do you want to win?”

The training grounds became dead silent, everyone were dumbstruck by Screw’s words.

No.23 looked at Screw blankly, and subconsciously replied: “Yes I do.”

“Put on your mechanical weapon and follow me.”

Screw said that, then turned and headed towards the pile of mechanical weapon components.

Duan Mu reacted faster than the soldier, and immediately bellowed: “Why are you still standing there, go!”

No.23 immediately crawled up and followed Screw. Duan Mu’s eyes flashed a look of envy, it was fortune that could only be chanced upon and not sought. But he quickly regained back his composure, Duan Mu who was held as “Weapons Rack”, had long become the chief training facilitator of Three Spirits City, and was responsible for the martial techniques passed down to the soldiers, and was satisfied with his life.

A badly injured spirit general and a mechanical spirit weapon

walked together.

The news of Mechanical Grandmaster Sai Lei returning to the Taurus Constellation spread like the wind.

The Taurus Constellation had declined over the past few years, and there were no major figures birthed from the Taurus Constellation, all of the seemingly talented geniuses were missing or addicted to the life of luxury and remained unknown.

As one of the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, the Taurus Constellation used to be illustrated, like the glorious Taurus Palace made with golden walls, which bustle with activities daily, but inside the palace walls, the inner walls had started to erode and peel off, cracks, spider webs and dust covered the place.

For the past few years, Sai Lei's name was never associated with the Taurus Constellation. Until recently, with the strength of the Ursa Major Constellation, Sai Lei who was held as the "Current generation's top Mechanical Grandmaster", her name spread far and wide. And thus, the news of her roots from the Taurus Constellation became widely known, and caused Sai Lei's name to become extremely popular in the Taurus Constellation.

The Taurus Constellation had sent out a large scale welcoming army, with Prince Bradley personally leading the army, they headed to the star door there to prepare.

There was never such a large scale treatment in the Taurus Constellation, and naturally it brought about criticism.

“I truly don’t understand cousin brother, just for one woman, we have to make such a huge formation?” Austin whined, he was also a prince, and had grown up together with Bradley, the two of them were very close, and thus spoke very casually with each other. He continued to whine: “I hope she is a beauty, if not It will be a waste.”

Bradley laughed: “Don’t you worry about this, Sai Lei is a publicly known great beauty.”

Different from Austin who was good looking, Bradley looked to be more earnest and honest, “Young Barbaric Prince” Bradley could be considered the only consolation that the Taurus Constellation had for the past few years. Although he was not as prestigious as Tang Tian or Sima Xiao, but his steady style of working had earned him praise.

Austin laughed: “Hope that the Yi Fan Family can produce beauties? If the Yi Fan family had women that were half as pretty as their maids, the Yi Fan family’s door would have long been trampled over already.”

Bradley laughed, but did not say anything.

“What does our King truly want?” Austin suddenly asked with curiosity: “This is a definite slap on the Yi Fan family’s face, how can that old gangster in the Yi Fan family bear to swallow this

down?”

“Dao Dun is fiercer than us.” Bradley kept the smile on his face and said: “He Xi that trash, all of his missions failed. They found out that Madam Chu Xi had poisoned Sai Lei’s mother that year, and then also found out that there are reports stating that Zhang Ming He’s attack on Three Spirits City was also linked to her. The Chu Family and the Honorable Martial Group were always very close, so Madam Chu Xi is already in prison. Because of this, the Chu Family went up to the Yi Fan Family’s door, resulting in Dao Dun, that old gangster, coming out and causing a ruckus, and they almost ended up fighting.”

“So fierce!” Austin took a deep breath, he suddenly remembered something, and his eyes grew round: “He Xi was the Yi Fan’s family successor, but now that he is being sentenced to punishment, did they say who was replacing him? Could it be....that that old gangster will want Sai Lei to take over?!”

“If you can think of that, I think that the old gangster will have already thought about it.” Bradley said indifferently.

“Absurd, that’s crazy!” Austin muttered: “I don’t understand what’s so good about that woman? All of you are going overboard. Isn’t it just one Ursa Major Constellation? The Honorable Martial Group hasn’t even lost!”

Bradley knew that his younger cousin brother had good feelings towards the Honorable Martial Group, and he did not refute him but merely laughed: “Out of the two, one of them will definitely fall.”

Austin snorted: “The Honorable Martial Group has been in Heaven’s Road for over a hundred years and has unfathomable roots here, how can a small constellation like the Ursa Major Constellation compare to them.”

“If Ursa Major Constellation is a small constellation, then what is our Taurus Constellation considered as?” Bradley asked indifferently.

Austin choked. The Constellation’s weak strength was something everyone knew about, and all the contradictions about it had been surfacing recently. For the past few years, none of the aristocratic family disciples could be considered as talented geniuses, and since they held a lot of resources, the talented geniuses from the ordinary people were scouted away by other constellations.”

The people beside Austin and Bradley did not join in the conversation, but they thought about the meaning behind Prince bradley’s words.

“”They’re coming!”

Someone bellowed, the star door ahead of them started to dazzle with a bright light aura.

A silver mechanical leg extended out from the star door, followed by a mechanical spirit weapon that walked out. All the influential people of the Taurus Constellation immediately became curious, the mechanical spirit weapon in front of them was completely

different from the ones available from the market. It was obvious that the Ursa Major Constellation had specially designed mechanical spirit weapons for their own armies which outsiders would have no way of purchasing.

Compared to ordinary Mechanical Spirit Weapons that were roughly 4 to 5m tall, the mechanical spirit weapon in front of them was much skinnier, its height roughly 2m tall, slightly taller than an average person. There were no heavy and big mechanical components on its body, but it had beautiful curvatures like flowing water tightly wrapped around the mechanical martial artist's body, there was no excess obesity, but instead looked like a silver armor. The transparent wings on its back were extremely eye-catching. What surprised people the most was that the thin and graceful mechanical spirit weapon seemed to be extremely heavy, every step it made would cause loud rumbles.

It must definitely be the latest mechanical spirit weapon from the Ursa Major Constellation, [Frost Mountain]!

Many people wished to record everything they saw about it down, the news of Frost Mountain had long spread, it was said that it was Sai Lei's best work. To personally see it today, how could they let go of such an opportunity? And compared to other Constellations, the sudden prominent Ursa Major Constellation was extremely mysterious, they had appeared in the sky without warning, causing the Taurus Constellation to become extremely curious about them.

One after another the silver clad armored soldiers walked out from the star door like gushing water.

Throughout the entire process, there were no clamors, only the rumbling of the mechanical spirit weapons.

Ah Lun walked out of the Star Door. Seeing the crowd in front of him, he frowned. The distance between them was too near, and an accident could easily occur from such a distance. For the mission, they had fought plenty. Finally, it was Ah Lun and Chen Zi Lin that came up as successful partners, earning the glorious mission to protect Big Sister.

Ah Lun definitely did not wish for any accident to occur, he controlled the mechanical spirit weapons and walked towards the crowd.

Although Austin felt tensed, but he forced a smile out, but before he could speak, the martial artist that walked over spoke: “All of you, retreat back 60m!”

Austin’s smile froze. Everyone’s expression froze on their faces as well.

“All of you, Retreat back 60m now!”

In the dead silence, Ah Lun repeated once again, his tone was unquestionable, it was direct and efficient, clear for everyone to hear.

No one moved, causing Ah Lun to squint, a thread of killing

intent surged out from his eyes.

Clang! He drew out the silver broadsword from his back.

Clang! All the soldiers behind him also drew out the silver broadswords from their backs.

“Every single one of you here, retreat by 60m now.”

Ah Lun said each word by word slowly, killing intent soaring and enveloping the entire place.

Chapter 669 – Bradley's Sigh

The dazzling silver broadswords revealed cold glints.

Austin's mouth opened up widely, he stared at the sword drawing soldiers filled with killing intent blankly, the extremely cold killing intent enveloped him, and in that moment, he felt as if he was in a snowstorm, his skin started to become numb.

Grrr grrrr grrrr.

The sound of grinding came out from Austin's teeth, his face was distorted with fear.

Bradley sighed in his mind, it was his own territory, yet he was being threatened at sword point, and for his side to behave so clumsily, the Taurus Constellation had truly fallen. His eyes landed on the other party's formation as he swept back and forth.

Amongst the soldiers was an important person, that was the true core of the other party.

Being extremely tight and disallowing anyone from entering, their killing intent were in unison without any flaws, they were experts!

Bradley's heart shook, he had never heard of the Frost Mountain Army in front of him before, thinking that it must be a newly formed unit in the Ursa Major Constellation, but they were

actually experts! The man in the lead had a valiant and powerful aura, which was most probably the commander of the Frost Mountain Army, and the one hidden behind should be his deputy.

Seeing the motionless unit, Bradley was fully aware of them being a problem. They were not reasonable and were continuously suppressing their enemies, their advantage would only grow larger and larger unknowingly. Such enemies were the most terrifying. Such a deputy could only be chanced upon, they played a huge role and could completely release the dauntlessness of their commander.

This unknown army to actually be deployed so extravagantly, how overflowed are the geniuses in Ursa Major Constellation?

Bradley did not feel upset, and his face revealed a thin smile. He raised his hands up to show no hostility, and gradually walked over to Austin's side. He grabbed Austin whose hands were trembling. Bradley felt even worse, and spoke out loud: "Everyone, step back!"

The welcoming troops awoke from their daydreams and retreated anxiously. Their formations had become extremely terrible, like a group of scattered soldiers. Bradley could not help but look at the army in front of him that seemed to be nailed to the ground, the army that was as strict and sharp as a sword made his face heated, The disparity is too great.

He involuntarily thought about the Honorable Martial Group's army, which was one of Heaven's Road strongest army, The Honorable Martial Group's Army were equally strict and neat, but

what was different was that their army had an aura of arrogance and overbearingness, but the Frost Mountain Army in front of him gave off an aura of an all out force ready to give it their all.

One was like nobles familiar with martial techniques, the other were like fugitives fighting for their lives.

Who was stronger? Bradley did not know, but he had to admit that the Taurus Constellation's army were not strong enough to fight either ones.

Rumble rumble.

The silver figures all started to advance quickly, the dazzling transformation which resembled liquid silver, adding the stifling atmosphere around them, they changed their formations.

Formation complete.

Behind his armor, Ah Lun revealed a look of satisfaction, no matter where the other party attacked from, they could defend against it. Although Ah Lun knew that no one would dare to, but he would definitely not make such a mistake.

Coming from the Lupus Constellation, he was born in poverty, but unexpectedly he entered the Sky Martial Wolf Academy, but he was never satisfied with himself, he cherished his life so badly, a life that he had never thought he would had in the past.

Ah Lun was one of the talented geniuses from the Sky Martial Wolf Academy, with the temperament of a potential general, although he was usually gentle and quiet on a daily basis, but when it came to battles, he would become ferocious and brave. Matched with Chen Zi Lin who was mostly quiet yet quick witted, the two of them got under the limelight competing with each other inside Ursa Major Constellation.

Tang Chou had easily given the task to them, also for them to grind themselves.

Ah Lun turned and looked to the back, nodding his head indicating that it was safe.

The Star Door became bright again, causing Bradley to look towards it. He was curious. Sai Lei's name had passed around from family to family in Taurus Constellation, but Bradley knew more, he had even seen Sai Lei's image before, and knew that she was a great beauty.

Just as everyone was thinking, that Sai Lei was about to appear, the ones to take the lead were a few extremely cold looking people.

Upon appearing, they looked around slowly.

Everyone's hearts were completely shook, all of them lowered their heads, their faces revealing respect.

Saints!

Every single one of them were actually saints!

The Saint Unit of Ursa Major Constellation was already well known, the number of saints they had far exceeded the Leo Constellation's, and was only second to the Temple of Honorable Martial Group. It was just that Ursa Major Constellation's Saint Unit were mostly Independent Saints and were not overly powerful, so it's fighting unit was behind Leo Constellation, and was currently recognized as the third strongest.

But Independent Saints were still saints!

The suppressive pressure released by saints immediately enveloped the entire field. If we were to say that the Frost Mountain Army gave off a shocking feeling, then the power from the saints subdued them.

The accompaniment of eight saints was a huge line up, and completely intimidated everybody.

Tang Chou knew how important Sai Lei was to Ursa Major Constellation, and in truth was not supportive of Sai Lei going back to the Taurus Constellation. To him, although the Taurus Constellation was also a 12 Ecliptic Palace, but their strength was something that could not compare with Ursa Major Constellation anymore, and they could simply refuse them and not afford to make any mistakes.

But since it was Tang Tian's decision, Tang Chou decided to give

it his best.

Bradley was no longer smiling, he was already gasping for breath. He long knew of Ursa Major Constellation's strength, but to personally witness it, he was completely stunned by the power Ursa Major Constellation was displaying.

Aren't they Independent Saints? Why are the auras coming off from them even more powerful than the old geezers in the Taurus Palace?

Bradley was suspicious.

Suddenly, a bright light intruded his vision, and he could not help but look over.

Dressed in a black evening dress like a black blooming flower, her body was a perfect silhouette, her sharp chin accentuating her beautiful face. She had bright glossy lips contrasting against her flawless skin, along with her fiery wavy hair that covered her shoulders matched with a languid and heck care attitude. Under her long eyebrows, the blue eyes were so attractive, yet revealing a hard to get close to and cold attitude. The three moles beneath her left eyes increased her coldness and eroticism.

Bradley stared at Sai Lei blankly, the image could not compare to the real person, she was too beautiful.

Time seemed to have stopped a to crawl.

Everyone was stunned, they had all heard of Sai Lei's beauty, but to personally see her, the impact was much more intense. Even Austin had forgotten about his fear, his mouth was wide opened, he looked at Sai Lei like a blockhead, drool seemingly dropping from the corner of his mouth.

Sai Lei did not even look at them, she walked ahead leisurely, with an extremely cold voice: "Is the carriage ready?"

Wearing high heels shoes hurt Sai Lei scolded in her mind.

Tang Tian you asshole, are you deliberately making me do this? The more she thought about it, the more plausible it was, she got even more pissed seeing the stares from Bradley and the rest. I haven't even finish my work in the lab, and you want me to waste my time here....

Damn you Tang Tian!

Thinking about how Tang Tian had set the direct correlation between her sleep and budget, Sai Lei became furious.

"Beautiful Grandmaster Sai Lei!" Bradley walked up and bowed and spoke respectfully: "I am Prince Bradley, we welcome Grandmaster to Taurus Constellation, the carriage is ready and is waiting for your orders."

Behind him, a gold Taurus Monarch Carriage sat there quietly

waiting.

Sai Lei ignored him, and turned to Ah Lun: “Xiao Ah Lun, where’s the carriage?”

Xiao Ah Lun.....

Ah Lun was a man of steel, but to be called “Xiao Ah Lun” in front of everybody, his face flushed slightly red. He secretly told himself that it was bad luck, but he was helpless against it. Big Sister is not one to offend, this had become the publicly known rule in the army. Everyone saw Sai Lei as a hungry tiger, she was unreasonable and tyrannical, and whoever dared to provoke her was seen as tired of living.

Ah Lun felt that it was weird, how come the Taurus Constellation could not see it and would provoke her.

“It is already prepared.” Ah Lun said without hesitating.

A simple silver carriage came out. It was a frequently used battle carriage, mainly for transporting soldiers or supplies. Not every army had aquarius martial artists, unless they were aquarius martial artists, the aquarius vase and related treasures could be used to their best potential, if not, the carriage would only be a transport tool, never to be utilised to its potential.

Ursa Major Constellation had always tried recruiting Aquarius Martial artists, but to no avail. Their business ambience was

extremely well known, and the martial artists were all well to do as well, and thus looked upon Ursa Major Constellation treatment in disdain.

Seeing the carriage that Ah Lun had prepared, Austin and the rest all revealed looks of disgust.

Truly a group of country bumpkins!

In front of the glorious and majestic Taurus Monarch Carriage, the battle carriage looked extremely bitter and poor. Many of them became even more arrogant, Ursa Major Constellation are truly people that recently got rich, in front of us aristocratic families with rich histories, they are so poor.

In the pleased looks of these people, Sai Lei chose to board the battle carriage without hesitation.

Bang!

The slamming of the carriage door shook Bradley and the rest awake, all of their faces were filled with shock and disbelief.

Is this woman crazy?

“Too rude! She is too rude!”

“Does she not respect us at all? Does she think that in front of our

Taurus Constellation, she can be arrogant or something?”

“We actually welcomed such a brute, rude and obnoxious woman....”

“Who does she think she is?”

.....

The remarks and angry scoldings caused Bradley to become annoyed, he roared: “Shut up!”

All the clamor stopped abruptly, everyone looked at Bradley. To them, the Prince must be infuriated by Sai Lei’s actions.

Bradley took a deep breath, he forced himself to calm down. He had long known that the mission would not be easy, the hatred between Sai Lei and the Yi Fan Family had not dwindled down, so her feelings towards the Taurus Constellation would not be good either. But in his eyes, the Taurus Constellation was still an old tyrant, and to the Ursa Major Constellation, they were also very important. If they were to truly offend the Taurus Constellation, the Ursa Major Constellation would be making a very powerful enemy without reason, and Bradley believed that Sai Lei could understand that point, so she would behave herself and not go too far.

But.....

The current him suspected that his judgement had gone wrong somewhere. Sai Lei's bearing had completely exceeded his anticipation.

Sai Lei did not even give them any face, and completely ignored them like air.

It was illogical.

Bradley told himself that it was Sai Lei deliberately doing so, but for some reason, his heart felt that there was something else.

His gaze landed on the simple carriage.

In the next moment, he understood.

Taurus Constellation was like the extravagant Taurus Monarch Carriage, it looked to beautiful but it was brittle and weak, while the Ursa Major Constellation was like the battle carriage, with a bitter and ugly exterior, but was actually powerful and energetic.

Chapter 670 – You Will Not Understand A Tyrant's Thoughts

The Southern Region had recently been extremely rowdy, but the biggest news was undoubtedly the Southern Alliance of the Southern Region.

The Southern Region had always been outstanding heroes who lived side by side, and there would always be new organizations appearing daily, and it was a very normal occurrence for new powerhouses to appear. But this time, the Southern Alliance was like a heavy grenade thrown by the Southern Region, attracting the eyes of the entire region.

Just by looking of the members in the Southern Alliance, everyone knew of its weight.

The White Sands Continent, Ming Continent, Yuan Continent, Li Hai Continent, just these four names were enough to shake Southern Region, because these 4 continents were in the top 20 continents of the Southern Region. Other than that, the Bai Family was a well known aristocratic family that had been in position for many years, and there was also the Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce which was one of the top five weapons trading business in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, how could this not raise any eyebrows? Due to its location, the Rainbow Continent was also pulled into the Southern Alliance, one should not look down on its strength as well.

But, the leader of the alliance was not any overlord, but some unknown continent, the Shang Continent.

To the Sacred Saint Galaxy, it was an extremely unfamiliar name, and was practically the first time many people had heard about it. And for those who understood the situation, they were even more surprised, because they knew how poor stricken and barren the Shang Continent was.

But, when more and more information were revealed, people were shocked to realise, the “Weak” Shang Continent was truly the one in control and leading the entire matter.

For the sake of restoring the Pontoon Bridge, the Vast Star Continent caused friction with the Shang Continent while trying to recruit citizens as manpower, causing both parties to erupt into battle. Surprisingly, the Vast Star Continent that was ranked top 10, lost to the Shang Continent twice, and thus plunged the Vast Star Continent into a state of peril.

After the Vast Star Continent lost their armies, they handed the Pontoon Bridge over to the Shang Continent, while the Shang Continent surprisingly took on the Pontoon Bridge with the intention to create the Southern Alliance to benefit everybody.

The Shang Continent’s alliance plan received cold shoulders, while the East Divergent Continent, hearing the news, sent out an army disguised as pirates, to ambush the weakened Shang Continent. But the Shang Continent once again came up victorious magically, the East Divergent Fox Fu Dong Ku was defeated and killed, and their fleet was completely destroyed.

A mysterious and powerful new weapon surfaced out from the water.

Following that, the East Divergent Continent met with the baptism of pirates, the East Divergent Palace was destroyed, causing the continent's future to fall into unprecedented darkness. The Shang Continent's vicious hands shook the spectating continents, and thus the Southern Alliance was formed smoothly.

The mysterious Shang Continent that came out from nowhere with an unknown history, but the Southern Alliance was a huge figure, and immediately caused the other continents of the Southern Region to feel bone chilling cold.

The various continents near the Southern Alliance all pleaded to join in, and in a short time, the Southern Alliance jumped from 8 participants to 32.

Such a fearsome powerhouse, caused the entire Southern Region to become silent.

With the current Shang Continent becoming well known, and with the formation of the Southern Alliance, the newly expanded Estuary was forced to once again expand. With the expansion of the Southern Alliance, the problem of manpower diminished, and the progress went smoothly.

Every warship or frigate that passed would enjoy the scene of the gigantic energy vortex and the light regiment in it, all of them revealing faces of respect. One silver grade warship which held Fu

Dong Ku was plunged into the light, this became a legend passed down by people.

A person's power could actually reach such a state!

The energy vortex at the Shang Continent's Estuary manifested as the impressive achievement of the Shang Continent.

Bing found Tang Tian who was squatting down by the side of the light regiment.

"There's something forming inside, I can feel it." Tang Tian's expression was serious.

Bing did not doubt him, Tan Tian's sharp intuition was something everyone knew of, something that was tested again and again and proven time and time again.

Bing asked: "What is it?"

"I don't know." Tang Tian shook his head, but in between his eyebrows, there was excitement: "It must be something powerful!"

Bing shook his head and threw this question to the back of his mind, to him, the light regiment of the vortex was like a battle monument, staying fixed there, it was a more fearful thing than

any treasure could be. He came to find Tang Tian for another matter. His eyes were deep, with a look of worry: “Our progress is going too fast.”

Tang Tian was startled for a moment, he raised his head: “Isn’t fast good?”

“More haste, less speed.” Bing said.

“But we have achieved everything now.” Tang Tian rarely saw Bing’s worried look, so he asked: “What problem is there?”

“Many.” Bing sorted out his thoughts: “We have expanded too quickly, now the Southern Alliance is like a sheet of loose sand, everyone is fighting for themselves and it is extremely chaotic. Every continent has their own benefits, and have their own armies, we do not have one in command, and they will also not listen to us, we need to think of a way to sort this out, that is the biggest problem.”

Tang Tian felt his head hurt listening, Bing’s words were too fast, so he could only ask: “What do you suggest?”

“I have nothing.” Bing’s face was dark and helpless: “You know, This is no longer under the problems of war, honestly, I am only good at fighting.”

Tang Tian who was already massaging his temples tried to use his brains to sort out Bing’s words, after a while, he said: “That also

means, your actual problem is that they are not obedient.”

“That’s right!” Bing felt that Tang Tian got the right words.

“That’s easy!” Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief, revealing a look of cheekiness: “If they are not obedient, just beat them? Didn’t you train soldiers just for that?”

“They are our allies, not our subordinates.” Bing reminded Tang Tian: “We are unable to take action on allies, it would cause a mutiny.”

Bing felt that he was being stupid, to actually bring such a complicated and profound problem to ask the fool, thinking that he was recently going crazy, his brain was fried, to actually do such an unreliable thing.

Alright, who should I look for to discuss this? Pi Pa? Hand Towel? Bing was racking his brains.

“Oh yea!” Tang Tian felt that Bing was right, to his understanding, an alliance was like a partnership, and he could not fight his partners, so what should he do?

If someone was being disobedient, and he could not be fought, how should we handle him?

Suddenly, Tang Tian’s eyes lit up, he suddenly clapped his hands: “I got an idea!”

Bing who thought that he made a mistake could not even bother looking at him, and was completely unmoved. This fool can think of an idea? Hehe..... Bing who sneered in his heart felt that he should had laughed out loud.

“We can bribe them!” Tang Tian was giving off the aura of a tyrant and spoke tyrannically: “If we can’t beat them, we can bribe them! Just like how we use the Pontoon Bridge to bribe them!”

“What use will that make?” Bing thought that it would not work: “The Pontoon Bridge’s only benefit was barely able to make them ally with each other, and you want them to give up their armies? That is impossible!”

“Then we will use more money!” Tang Tian was completely biased to his train of thoughts and said without hesitation.

Bing rolled his eyes: “You think Pontoon Bridges are vegetables growing on the side of the road? If you want one there will be one?”

“There are! Southern Region has many Pontoon Bridges!” Tang Tian said as a matter of factly.

“But they are not ours.” Bing blurted out.

Tang Tian looked at Bing as though like he was looking at an idiot: “If we take them down, wouldn’t they be ours?”

To be looked at by Tang Tian with those disdainful eyes caused Bing to feel extremely bad, but as it happened, Tang Tian's idea was rather constructive, and he was not a mature famed grade general to reject it purely because he wanted to reject the idea.

But very quickly, he found another problem for Tang Tian's problem.

“Who will fight? Us? With just our strength, how do we fight? This is just a long term goal, it looks to be perfect, but everyone isn't stupid, no one will let go of what they have now just for this. Even if we have no way to gain more benefits, but at least we can help preserve their current benefits.” Bing went straight to the point.

But he was obviously unable to understand the thoughts of a tyrant.

Tang Tian waved his hand: “We will use other things to bribe them! Star treasures, Black Gold, whoever listens to us, we will give some to them. Whoever follows us, we will make their armies stronger, and then we will attack the Pontoon Bridge. Whoever does more will get more of the share.”

Bing was startled.

His idea...

“Only we have all these things, whoever we give or not depends, the final call is still us. We will make use of something that others don’t have to bribe them, it is definitely more worth than money. Ho ho ho, just like how I used the Empyrean Ice Tree Spears that time, Uncle you did not see it, but everyone was going crazy!” Tang Tian said in elation: “No one else has our treasures, what is this called, good currency, no no, best sellers? Anyway this is what I meant.”

It might work!

Bing’s mind was thinking very quickly, he very quickly found out the essence of Tang Tian’s suggestion. Using short term goals to separate them, allowing those who followed to obtain more benefits, causing these allies to earn more benefits, causing them to be willing to renounce their own authority.

Bing then thought about a problem: “What about the Honorable Martial Continent? With so many star treasures appearing, they will definitely know about it.”

“They will know about us sooner or later.” Tang Tian was like a gangster, killing intent soaring: “At most we will all fight! This is the Southern Region, not their region!”

Bing nodded his head, That’s right, if the Honorable Martial Continent sends their soldiers, our Southern Alliance has the advantage, and this will cause the Southern Alliance to be even more firm, no, it might even cause the entire Southern Region to become one.

“Then for what reason should we be doing this?” Bing then threw out another question: “We need a reason to bribe them, if not sending them gifts for no reason, they would think that it’s normal for us to gift them things.”

Tang Tian thought about it very quickly, He’s right, we cannot give them money, they have to work for it.

“Eliminating the pirates!” Tang Tian had plenty of his own evil tricks, and scoffed: “Lian Bo Jun said, the Honorable Martial Continent had made many pirates enter the Southern Region. Then let us eliminate them, it is a just and honorable thing to do, anyways pirates are always a pain for everybody, it will be us being righteous!”

Tang Tian imitated Little Xu Xu’s tone while saying the last sentence.

Bing could not help but to praise, what a perfect plan!

Since when did this brat become so clever?

Bing looked at Tang Tian like it was inconceivable. Was this thorny situation just unravelled by this fool? Did this fool’s brain undergo some transformation recently?

“You need to understand how to spend money as a person, and not be stingy!” Tang Tian started to berate him, and then became

pleased: “I know Uncle, you must now be feeling respectful and revering this godlike young lad now. Alright alright, don’t revere me too much, just a bit will do, that is the advantage of youth....”

Bing felt as though he had swallowed a fly, his face instantly turning black.

This Fool!

There were already people thinking of eliminating the pirates already. But when the star treasures, Black Gold weapons appeared in front of everybody, all of them were immediately burning with passion, although there were still many spectators, but there were some people who wanted to join.

“Southern Region, this Southern Region belongs to the Southern Alliance!”

When Tang Tian shouted out those ambitious words, it caused the entire discussion room to explode, everyone became extremely excited. The Southern Region had always been a free land, and no one had ever said those words. Everyone was shocked by Tang Tian’s ambition, and were deeply attracted to the scene before them.

A fearsome tiger called the Southern Alliance quietly awakened.

Chapter 671 – Respective Preparations

As for how Bing organised the various armies of the continents, Tang Tian did not cut in. Although he would time and time again grasp the opportunity to ridicule Uncle Bing, but as for the matters of the army, Tang Tian tactfully handled it over to Bing.

However, Tang Tian had his own ideas.

After going through various battles, especially the recent one where he fought Fu Dong Ku personally, it gave him even more experience. The vortex with the light regiment was a masterpiece that came to him miraculously, but what left an even deeper impression on him was at the last moment where he, Jing Hao, Little Fool and Ya Ya brought everyone to escape the suction of the vortex, escaping narrowly.

He saw the use of experts on the battlefield.

To a standard traditional army, Tang Tian did not know and understand much. But he understood that the current situation was not one where Bing could manage it alone. Since I am the main commander of the army, then naturally I should accept more responsibilities.

If I can gather the experts to fight in the battles together, that would be a huge deciding factor in a battle.

Jing Hao, Ling Xu, Crane and Little Fool, all of them are powerful, and I even have Magic Flute. No, they are not enough,

what a pity that the strength of the five families are still weak, although they are saints, but as compared to Heaven Road Saints, they are still far lacking. The Sacred Saint Galaxy's martial technique system is too crude. If only the people from Saints Unit were here. Not much, just 20 of them should be enough to sweep the place.

Tang Tian shook his head, before the passage in the Blue World had been made, the idea was not feasible.

The passage in the Blue World could not be opened so easily, the vast Blue Sea that made them feel overwhelmed, it was partly due to luck that they managed to escape it. Although the Awakened Army was not weak, but the distance to form the passage between both worlds was too great, and it still required time.

Although the idea was currently not feasible, Tang Tian kept it in mind.

What they needed now was to quickly increase their individual strengths, the Southern Alliance were to begin eradicating the pirates, and with the large quantity of star treasures appearing, the Honorable Martial Continent would definitely know that people from Heaven's Road have entered the Sacred Saint Galaxy and the Honorable Martial Group will only require a bit of time to confirm their identities.

At that time, they would be facing immense pressure. The Honorable Martial Continent would spare no effort to destroy the Shang Continent and Ursa Major Constellation would be the target of attacks from the Honorable Martial Group. The attacks would

be extremely powerful, and the Honorable Martial Group might give up on attacking the Leo Constellation, and send everything they have to the Ursa Major Constellation.

Instead, they need not worry much about the Sacred Saint Galaxy, for the Honorable Martial Continent's large army to move in an expedition would not be easy.

Regardless of anything, they cannot allow the Honorable Martial Group to struggle out of the quagmire with the Leo Constellation.

What should I do?

Tang Tian very quickly thought of a simple method, which was to help the Leo Constellation. But the relation between the Ursa Major Constellation and the Leo Constellation was average, and there were even some slight conflicting views between the both of them. It was seemingly impossible for a profound collaboration, after bribing the partners of the alliance, Tang Tian had learned a little something.

Star treasures!

The treasures could evolve in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, something which he had tried and tested, If I am able to provide treasures that have gone through evolution, to the Leo Constellation, wouldn't it be giving wings to a tiger?

And to Tang Tian, it was an extremely simple job.

So he started to grasp on how to allow treasures to increase grade and evolve.

He took out a treasure, it was the bronze gloves from the Lupus Constellation. He activated the gloves, which very quickly started to absorb the energy, and as time passed, the bronze gloves gradually grew a layer of faint silver.

But after two hours, the gloves stopped absorbing energy.

Tang Tian looked over it carefully, and realized the gloves did not increase in grade.

Tang Tian took out a few treasures, and going through the same motion, he tested out six treasures, in which three completed their evolutions. He then tried it with silver grade treasures, after trying with six of them, only one managed to evolve into a gold grade treasure.

Gradually, Tang Tian found out a definite set of rules whether or not treasures could evolve, which had to do with the martial spirits in the treasures. This relation was not due to the simple strength of the martial spirit, but its purity, the purer the martial spirit, the easier for it to evolve.

This discovery surprised Tang Tian.

He used to think that there were nothing crucial about the purity

of the martial spirit inside the star treasure.

Tang Tian shook his head, it was easier to raise the power of the martial spirit, but he did not know of any methods to raise the purity. But he did not think much about it, he did not have much time, he took out a few Leo Constellation treasures that he had prepared, and began to strengthen them.

The Vast Star Continent was worrying about their bleak future, everything that had happened seemed to be a nightmare.

After hearing the news of the Southern Alliance, General He Si Ji became ill, the days to him had become extremely bleak, everyone knew that the general was nearing his end, and many of his students would come to visit him.

With the emergence of the Southern Alliance, the Vast Star Continent had become the biggest loser.

Yang Zi Qing had aged in the past few days, his hair had turn white, but he did not quit.

With the formation of the Southern Alliance, He Si Ji's so called plan had become the biggest joke. The current prestige of the Continent Lord had also fallen drastically, in the eyes of the citizens, the Vast Star Continent's current situation stemmed from the forced tax and levies set in place by the Continent Lord.

All of the aristocratic families who had lost a great deal of their

wealth were furious with the Continent Lord. Under the underhanded management of Prince Hai, all of these angered aristocratic families criticized the Continent Lord unbridledly. General He Si Ji was ill in bed, causing the army to become separated quickly, and many of the commanders had shown interest that the Vast Star Continent needed a new direction.

To the drowning Vast Star Continent, this division was poison.

For the sake of appeasing the aristocratic families, the Continent Lord chose to leave his Palace, and gave the position to Prince Hai.

Yang Zi Qing persevered on under this situation. He was filled with fear, looking back, he still did not understand where did they start to lose. Everything came from the group of people of the Shang Continent, which still remained a riddle.

Their initial plan to use the Shang Continent as a protective barrier completely went down the drain, the current Vast Star Continent was already set to shiver in cold under the shadows of the Southern Alliance.

The Shang Continent's every movement was completely unanticipated, no one knew what they would do. And the Vast Star Continent's every movement had fallen into their hands.

Yang Zi Qing was both mentally and physically exhausted, but he knew that the only path for Vast Star Continent was to join the Southern Alliance, and become one of the shareholders in the alliance, for them to be truly safe.

But his suggestion was met with objections and ridicule from Prince Hai and his team of authoritative figures. They placed emphasis on regaining what belonged to them, and once again bask in the glory of the Vast Star Continent. To them, Yang Zi Qing was a timid mouse, an extremely weak being, a vermin. Many of Yang Zi Qing's friends started to maintain a respectful distance from him, as though he had some infectious disease, all of them started to avoid him.

Yang Zi Qing wanted to knock on their heads for them to think clearly, What was going on with them? Have they all lost all sense of rationality?

The current Vast Star Continent, what can they bring to try and reclaim the Pontoon Bridge from the Southern Alliance?

In truth, Yang Zi Qing did not know what he was persevering for.

It was too late to build a new Continent Lord Manor, so they used one of the aristocratic manors for the Continent Lord. Currently, the manor was heavily guarded, guards every 10 steps, sentries every 5, all of the soldiers were there, as though they were waiting for a great enemy.

Inside one of the secret rooms of the manor.

Prince Hai was 56 years old, he was a rather stouty man with an amiable smile. In the reign of the previous Continent Lord, he did not seem to have any bit of existence, and successfully made

everyone oblivious to his existence. Until when the opportunity arose, he swooped in from the darkness like a venomous snake and gave a fatal blow.

He effortlessly took over the position as Continent Lord, proving that his methods were truly shocking.

But at the moment, he was enjoying the view of a beauty in front of him, who would have known that the beauty was the commander of pirates.

“Your suggestion is brilliant.” His speech always seemed very casual, his words were pleasing to the ears: “But we have suffered too much and are not able to fight against the Southern Alliance.”

He did not seem to be ashamed of his weakness.

Lady Rou slightly rose out of her seats, the smile on her face was gentle and harmless: “You’re right, if you just rely on the Vast Star Continent, you will not be able to pose as a threat towards the Southern Alliance. But if you have a powerful ally, then it can become a possibility.”

“You have trouble preserving your own lives too.” Prince Hai’s gaze turned sharp, although his smile remained gentle: “Recently, the Southern Alliance has been sweeping up the pirates, oh, I understand, you are in a tight spot.”

“In a tight spot?” Lady Rou laughed: “What do you think the

pirates think about being in a tight spot? Even if the Southern Alliance takes over the entire Southern Region, we can still go to the Eastern Region. From what I heard, the Southern Alliance said that the Southern Region belongs to them. I am curious, where will your continent go to?”

Prince Hai's expression did not change, he laughed: “Those words are nice to listen to, who knows if they would suddenly start saying that the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy belongs to the Southern Alliance.”

“They can say what they want.” Lady Rou said calmly: “But the Southern Alliance is right behind the Vast Star Continent. Honestly, I am very curious, why are you guys not joining the Southern Alliance? But now I understand, anyone can join the Southern Alliance, but you, Prince Hai, cannot.”

Prince Hai's eyes constricted to the size of a needle, she was right, anyone could join in the Southern Alliance, but he could not. He had obtained his position because he chose to side with the influential aristocratic families that were suffering from losses, if he were to join the Southern Alliance, all of these angered supporters would pull him down from the position.

He had not gotten enough of being the Continent Lord.

“My lady's eyes are truly sharp.” Prince Hai decided not to beat about the bush: “I think that Lady Rou isn't a pirate either.”

“That's right, I come from the Honorable Martial Continent.”

Lady Rou straightened her back and puffed out her chest, arrogance showing on her face.

Prince Hai looked at Lady Rou in a daze, as though he was struck by lightning, he had thought that she might be from a huge backing, but never thought that she would be from the Honorable Martial Continent.

“We are too far to launch an attack, between us, you are close enough, and our interests are aligned with each other, we have a common enemy.” Lady Rou might be smiling, but her gaze was as sharp as a sword: “The Shang Continent, as long as they are destroyed, the Southern Alliance would be a pack of beasts that has lost its leader, they will start to kill each other. Only by doing so can the Vast Star Continent rise to prominence again, and with the help of the Honorable Martial Continent, the Vast Star Continent will become even stronger than it was, you know we can do it! Only, we want the Shang Continent!!”

Her tone was as tough as steel, resonating out as though it had substance, her expression extremely confident.

Prince Wang’s face was extremely dark, after a long while, he raised his head once again: “How do you suggest doing it?”

Lady Rou laughed.

Chapter 672 – Jerome's Arrogance

“Up ahead is the Pristine Gravel City.”

Bradley maintained a shallow smile on his face as he hastened his pace to walk beside Ah Lun. In the past few days, he had not even seen Sai Lei once, Sai Lei remained inside the carriage without revealing herself, and all of their request to meet were rejected.

All of the nobles of Taurus Constellation were fuming. In their eyes, although the Ursa Major Constellation was currently powerful, but their roots were too shallow, and did not have any history to them, just a newly uprising constellation which was usually looked down on.

Initially, they felt that with their grand welcome, the Ursa Major Constellation would be moved to tears, but who knew they would actually completely ignore them as though they were nothing.

How could they not be infuriated?

~So what if you're a mechanical grandmaster? The rest of the troops that participated in the welcoming all watched by the side, all of them negative towards her.

The only one who remained courteous was Bradley.

“We have prepared lodging for all of you over at the Pristine Gravel City, we can take a short rest there.” Bradley explained: “After going past the Pristine Gravel City, we will journey straight for five days over a wasteland.”

Ah Lun nodded his head: “I will ask Young Miss.”

He then went over to the carriage and reported the journey.

Inside the carriage, Sai Lei was dressed in pyjamas, her hair was in a mess, completely the opposite of the goddess demeanour she had previously. In front of her, the table was covered with all sorts of drafts, she kept on muttering to herself, her eyes were bloodshot, she had not been sleeping for the past few days.

~Going out has its benefits, at least no one is forcing me to sleep.~
Sai Lei bit her tongue and continued to work.

Ah Lun's report interrupted her work.

Hearing that after the Pristine Gravel City was a few days of wasteland, Sai Lei thought for a while, and decided to rest and reorganize there. She was a workaholic, inside the carriage, it was filled with all sorts of materials, documents and even bathing tools, everything brought without any considerations. But since she was a women, she never felt anything whenever she was immersed in her work, but upon getting out of the state, she thought about being able to have a good bath in the city, her mood brightened up.

Hearing that Ah Lun had agreed to rest in the Pristine Gravel City, Bradley heaved a sigh of relief.

In the past few days, regardless of how much he tried to court their favour, it would end up fruitless. But he continued to follow Ah Lun blindly, so much that amongst the aristocratic families, there would be the ridicule of 'being snubbed despite showing good intentions'. Bradley was the only one with a deep impression of the strength of the Frost Mountain Army.

This is a real powerful army.

They were strict and disciplined, did not know fatigue, never slacked, and were forever being cautious. They were meticulous and did not have any hair out of place, causing Bradley to occasionally feel that they were overly rigid and making a big fuss over the minute issues. But he had to admit, the Taurus Constellation did not have any army that could compare to the army he was looking at.

He knew that recently, the Ursa Major Constellation had built up a few armies, all these armies came from splitting up a mechanical army. With the fading out of the traditional armies, a new generation surfaced, mechanical armies became their main forces. The Ursa Major Constellation held a tradition of usually attaching importance to younger people, all of their higher ups were all extremely young, and out of the few armies, the only one that could be hailed as an old general was the Commander of the Plateau Army, Ta Dun.

But Bradley never expected for the young commanders to be so outstanding. Especially Ah Lun, Bradley could not see the arrogance or recklessness of a youngster in him, he was trained to the point that he resembled an old general that had been in the military for decades.

When the mechanical army was split up, Bradley sighed. The Ursa Major Constellation's most prestigious two large armies, the Lupus Army led by Tang Yi, and the other was the Mechanical Army led by Bing. For such elite and prestigious armies, they should keep their traditions and rules. As traditions and rules decides the temperament of the army, and was the most valuable asset of an elite army.

Splitting up the army meant destroying everything, and a few cannon fodder could never compare to a true elite.

Tang Tian and Bing had not revealed themselves for a long time, causing many people to suspect that something had changed in the higher ups of Ursa Major Constellation.

Who knew that.....

Bradley's attention returned back to the army, he informed everybody about Sai Lei's agreement to rest in the Pristine Gravel City. Austin then volunteered to go ahead and remind the city to do preparations.

Austin obviously harbored malicious intentions.

After receiving the cold shoulder, he was completely infuriated.

Since when have I ever been treated like that? The arrogance of the army ignoring him made him even more angry, he decided to do something about it.

They are in the Taurus Constellation, not the Ursa Major Constellation.

Austin went over to the Pristine Gravel City, as one of the important cities of the Taurus Constellation's BullHorn region, the Pristine Gravel City had an elite army garrisoned there, the Bull Horn Army. The Bullhorn Army was one of the Taurus Constellation's most elite armies, their equipment were lavish, they were powerful and had never been defeated.

Coincidentally, the commander of the BullHorn Army, Jerome, was Austin's playmate since young, and the two were extremely close. Jerome's position was due to Austin pulling the strings from behind.

When Jerome saw Austin arriving, he was extremely pleased: "Austin, what're you doing here?"

“Don’t talk about it!” Austin said angrily: “My dad got the able bodied people to accompany Bradley to welcome a woman.”

“What woman, you’re talking about Grandmaster Sai Lei right.” Jerome laughed out loud, the news of Sai Lei wanting to come back to Taurus Constellation had been passed around, he looked at Austin: “Seeing the way you are, could it be that she is not as pretty as rumored?”

Austin shook his head: “No, Sai Lei is the most beautiful woman I have ever seen!”

“Then why the mood?” Jerome became curious, he knew his playmate from young, and knew of his mood regarding women. As long as it was a beauty, Austin would always become passionate.

“They are bullying us!” Austin’s face turned green as he

explained about everything that had happened.

Jerome's face also became ugly, regardless of how valiant Grandmaster Sai Lei was, they were in the Taurus Constellation, how could they endure other people strutting around?

"They really did that?" Jerome asked gravely.

Austin straightened himself up: "Jerome, do you think that I will be talking nonsense here? I am a prince of the Taurus Constellation, and have lived here for many years."

Jerome was quiet for a long while: "What about Bradley? Why did Bradley not show any disapproval to them?"

Austin sneered: "Bradley? He is still hoping to curry favor with the Ursa Major Constellation."

He started imitating Bradley and said: “Out of the two, one of them will definitely fall.”

Jerome raised one eyebrow, and with a tinge of arrogance: “Bradley is underestimating himself too much. Since when has our Taurus Constellation fallen to the point that we need to fawn upon the Ursa Major Constellation?”

“That’s right! Jerome!” Austin said excitedly: “You are truly the person worth relying on! Bradley threw away the most valuable traditions of our Taurus Constellation....”

“I think Bradley has his own considerations.” Jerome cut Austin’s words, he did not wish to join in the competition amongst the higher ups with authority. But as a military man, he had his own pride and arrogance, thinking about how an unknown army was strutting around on his homeland, a fire burned in his mind: “Being the commander of the Bullhorn Army, no matter what, I will never tolerate any armies being rampant in front of me!”

Austin waved his hands excitedly: “Jerome, what should we do?”

Jerome spoke in a serious tone: “Since Grandmaster Sai Lei came to our Taurus Constellation as a guest, then the problem of safety naturally falls on us to handle it. We will welcome Grandmaster Sai Lei, and must definitely let her feel at home!”

Austin understood what he meant and laughed.

Wu wu wu!

The gloomy bugle horn sounded out from the barracks, and the Bullhorn Army quickly gathered.

On the platform, Austin watched in shock, the entire army only

took five minutes to gather. The troops beneath the stage had a tight formation, it was squared and the edges were extremely sharp, they were extremely silent, and their killing intent pervaded outwards.

Austin could not help but praise: “Jerome, I was right to pick you! You are truly a famed general! Let those assholes of the Ursa Major Constellation tsee what a true elite is!”

Jerome’s eyes flashed a trace of arrogance, he had the ability to be arrogant, the Bullhorn Army had transformed in his hands, and became extremely powerful.

“Maybe we can have some exchange.” Jerome sneered, and his face immediately darkened as he bellowed: “Move out!”

Rumble rumble!

The silver tide rushed along the street, their footsteps caused the citizens of the Pristine Gravel City to stop in their tracks. Above the silver tide flew 10 saints who followed behind tightly.

The Bullhorn Army was a heavy armor unit, all of them were donned in silver grade Taurus Armor.

The Taurus Constellation's unique characteristic was that they could mass produce, and the equipment they had was easily recognisable, because their helmets would always have a sharp bull horn. To other constellations, their problems were with armor, but the Taurus Constellation could fully equip an entire army with armor.

The unison silver colored armor was of superior quality, something that was rarely seen in the entire Heaven's Road.

Ah Lun suddenly stopped, he had sensed the rumbling on the ground, he immediately judged that there was a group of people approaching them!

At a glance, shua, he drew his silver broadsword: “Incoming attack!”

This was the experience that Ah Lun had gained for himself, in a foreign environment, as long as he encountered a special situation, the most direct method would be using the words “incoming attack” to warn his comrades, these two words were the most effective, and could cause all of the soldiers to immediately be at their fullest attention.

In the distance, a silver tide rushed towards them.

Ah Lun remained calm and unmoved.

But very quickly, his eyes constricted, the other party’s assault did not have any intention of slowing down.

4.5km, 3.6km, 3km.....

Ah Lun's eyes immediately turned cold, he raised the silver broadsword high in the air, with the speed of the enemy, 2.4km was the safe distance.

2.4km!

Without any hesitation, Ah Lun pointed his silver broadsword ahead, and roared: "Units behind protect the carriage, Frontlines, Follow me to assault!"

500 Frost Mountains moved.

Chapter 673 - Three Steps Strike. Frost Mountains

Seeing the Bullhorn Army approaching, Bradley could not help but reveal a smile, Jerome was truly outstanding. The silver tide rolled and rolled with their tight formation, the impressive impetus caused Bradley's few days of bleakness to feel much better, I also have grandmasters and elites in the Taurus Constellation, and I have powerful generals!

He did not realise that unknowingly, the pressure on him from the Frost Mountain Army had increased so greatly.

It was not only Bradley, even the other nobles were all pleased.

“Who can stop that momentum!”

“Too spectacular! Oh my god, that silver tide is truly too powerful!”

“Master Jerome is truly outstanding, given enough time, maybe he can create another Taurus Army!”

Discussions came up all around, making Bradley emotional. Just like the Silver Frost Mounts of the Aries Constellation, in the Taurus Constellation's history, they once had an awe inspiring army that was prestigious in Heaven's Road, the Taurus Army. This Taurus Army was history's strongest heavy armor army, dressed in golden Taurus Armor, they were invincible.

That was the time when the Taurus Constellation was at its peak, 160 gold armors, something that the current generation could not think of.

Gold armors, were the symbol of the Taurus Army, the gold bull horns that dazzled with light auras and cutting edges, shook the entire Heaven's Road.

But through the passage of time, the Taurus Constellation started to decline, The Taurus Army started to wither as days passed, and gold armors became fewer and fewer, and the once strongest heavy armor army disappeared in the river of time. To any soldier who had knowledge of the Taurus Constellation, for the Taurus Army to reappear once again was their final target.

The Taurus Constellation has fallen for too long Bradley sighed once again, their position that remained stagnant caused the Taurus Constellation to lose their desire to improve. The higher ups were addicted to enjoyment and pleasure, and this bull, became skinnier and skinnier, weaker and weaker.

Currently in the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, the one that in the most similar situation was the Aries Constellation. The Aries Constellation already had a powerful martial artist, Ling Xu. Bearing the burden as the inheritor of the Silver Frost Mounts, with the Silver Frost Sheep Horn Seal in hand, although he never returned to Aries Constellation, but Ling Xu had become the idol that many of the Aries citizens admired.

Bradley had secretly studied the matters of the Aries Constellation, they had been secretly moving, all of the dissatisfied youths of the Black Feathers Mount were moving in the shadows, it was said that they were building up a new Silver Frost Mounts. Rumors said that the leader of the new Silver Frost Mounts, was Ling Xu!

At least Aries Constellation has Ling Xu.

Bradley was lost in his thoughts, but the surrounding cheers caused him to awaken.

But, Jerome is still doing rather well.

“We must let these recently rich people take a look at us!”

“Let them witness what are real elites!”

“Beat them down!”

The emotional crowd was already talking incoherently, Bradley understood the irritation everyone had suffered for the past few days, and smiled. He also thought that showing off to Sai Lei and her army would be good too, suppress the momentum that the Frost Mountain Army was showing, if not they would be underestimated and trampled all over.

Rumble rumble, the silver tide of Bullhorn Army surged frantically, the ground trembling incessantly, their speed was

extremely fast.

Bradley turned his head towards the Frost Mountain Army to look at them with elation, he wanted to see the faces of the arrogant army. His gaze landed on Ah Lun, he could not help laughing, all of their faces were tightly covered, and he could not see any expressions, What a pity.

Suddenly, the smile on his face turned sluggish, because he saw that Ah Lun had suddenly retrieved out his silver broadsword.

They....

Before he could even react, Ah Lun's thunderous roar exploded.

"Units behind protect the carriage, Frontlines, Follow me to assault!"

WAIT A MINUTE!

Bradley's face turned pale white like paper, his face transformed from confusion to unlimited fear.

Before he could even make a sound, a gigantic rumble came out.

500 Frost Mountains stomped on the ground at the same time, causing a gigantic shake, causing everyone to become unstable, the low resounding bass sound caused their eardrums to resonate, and

dust immediately filled the sky.

One after another, silver figures shot out from the dust filled area like arrows.

Rumble rumble!

The blood from the faces of the nobles had been swept clean completely, their expressions filled with fear and shock. Comparing the two armies, Bullhorn Army's assault could cause them to feel the ground trembling, but now, they were unable to stand steadily. They plopped to the ground, and a few timid ones immediately defecated.

"They have 10 saints, do we go up to help?" Meng Ta arrived beside the carriage and asked.

Although they only had eight saints while the Bullhorn Army had 10, but Meng Ta was not afraid at all. For the entire period, by relying on Ursa Major Constellation, their strengths had soared exponentially.

"No need." Sai Lei said lazily: "it is a good time for them to test themselves out, let us see what else the Frost Mountains can improve on."

Frost Mountains.

Ursa Major Constellation's newest mechanical spirit weapon,

made from almost all of Ursa Major Constellation's mechanical laboratories newest techniques condensed together, Sai Lei had thrown a lot of blood and effort into it. It was even smaller in size, even stronger and far more agile, and was the strongest mechanical spirit weapon to date before she had thought about the [Saint Armor] for saints.

Just like its name, Mountain represented its mighty power, and Frost to signify its cold cutting edge.

Like her, Ah Lun had plenty of confidence towards the Frost Mountain, he was unable to understand how the [Saint Armor] depicted by Miss Sai Lei would be, he already felt that the Frost Mountains were the world's strongest mechanical spirit weapons already.

They were the army that won against the other armies consecutively in sparring sessions internally, obtaining the first batch of Frost Mountains, and their army were thus hailed the Frost Mountain Army, causing the other armies to be jealous, and it was the proudest affair of Ah Lun's life.

In the sprint, the silver broadswords drooped down by their sides, sword tips aimed at the ground.

“Relax your wrists!”

“Relax your Shoulders!” “Watch your step!” “Control your breathing rhythm!”

Ah Lun in a state of battle was a completely different person, his roar was everywhere and filled with enthusiasm, the soldiers under him all liked his roars. Although they were long familiar with the routine, but the roars of their commander raised their morale, and set off a flame the blazed in their chest.

And their deputy commander, was the opposite, he was invisible as though he was not there at all.

But once Chen Zi Lin was not around, the result of this difference, that was an extremely smooth and comfortable feeling, would become like a rusty gear without oil.

The dash of 500 men with their aura blending together without any leakage, this was a true flowing liquid silver.

The distance between both parties quickly drew closer.

Jerome's eyes constricted, he initially planned to stop at a distance of 90m away from the other party, but he did not expect them to charge towards them as well! But following that, a sense of anger surged up, he completely believed Austin's words now, they were truly too rampant!

They are in the Taurus Constellation's territory, to do such a thing, they are completely not putting us in their eyes!

In the next moment, he made his decision, even if he were to suffer punishment, he still needed to teach the group of people

who have an exaggerated opinion on their own abilities a lesson.

“Full force assault!”

The anger fueled order resonated across the entire army, the Bullhorn Army suddenly increased its speed.

Ah Lun immediately sensed the the final increase in speed of the other party, he sneered, and then bellowed: “Prepare for three steps!”

The sprinting army immediately bent their waists.

“Three steps!”

Ah Lun’s roar was like a thunder that clapped above everybody’s head.

Everyone stepped out heavily at the same time, the monstrous power of the Frost Mountains were displayed to full saturation, it was like 500 heavy sledgehammers slamming the ground at the same time.

Booom!

If one were to overlook from the sky, they would be surprised to see that the ground that Ah Lun was standing on had sunk in by half a meter, forming a large and flattened concave depression.

A large group of silver figures suddenly shot forward from the pit like lightning, in a moment they appeared 60m away from their originally position, and they smashed the ground once again.

Boooom!

The ground sunk in again, and they shot forward once more, and they smashed the ground, yet again!

BOOOM!

The third step was as fast as lightning, as heavy as thunder, the three steps sounded like one, everyone's ear buzzed, the scene before them dazzled. The Frost Mountain Army had already appeared 300m away from their original position.

Jerome was deeply shocked, he only saw the scenery before him dazzle, and the other party were actually less than 300m away from them!

What sorcery is this?

Before he could even react, the thunderous roar came up from ahead: "KILL!"

At their very last step, their power had reached the pinnacle!

500 Frost Mounts, soared into the air and appeared 30m in the sky in an instant. All 500 Frost Mountains held their broadswords high up in the air, all the skinny Frost Mountains, at that moment, was brimming with powerful and beauty, like 500 lean soldiers raising their swords in anger!

Time seemed to have stop in that moment.

“KILL!”

Ah Lun's roar broke the silence, 500 silver broadswords, borrowing the momentum of the charge, smashed down!

500 sword auras, like a thousands of converging tributaries connecting to a large river, bringing forth dazzling light scars, entering Ah Lun's sword.

Ah Lun's entire body was enveloped by a congealed substance like light aura, like a war god descending, the tyrannical and absolute aura felt like Mt. Tai was above suppressing down, causing everyone to feel choked.

Three Steps Strike. Frost Mountains!

The ones to have a change in expressions first were the Bullhorn Army's saints, who were calm and steady unlike Jerome. Their attention were placed mostly on the eight saints around the carriage, in which gave off auras that made them suspicious. They initially did not plan to do anything, thinking that Jerome could

handle it, but on the other side, they hoped that the eight saints would not do anything.

But Ah Lun's technique immediately made them throw their plan away.

Their bodies suddenly disappeared, and appeared right in front of the army.

Ah Lun's sword aura had arrived, the vast and broad 90m sword aura released a tyrannical power that seemed to be able to split Heaven and Earth in half!

Any ordinary sword aura's whistle would be sharp, but this sword aura's whistling through the air sounded like countless of fragments of vibratos gathering into a rumble, inducing a crushing feeling in everybody's heart, every inch of their skin were shivering, and their scalp turn numb.

The 10 saints took action at the same time!

Various light auras appeared before the sword auras.

Boooom!

A dazzling light aura blossomed, like the sun exploding, the eye piercing light aura caused the entire place to turn white.

The terrifying white light seemed to even block off all sound, causing them to become open.

Ah Lun who received the counterattack felt a force that could shatter him into pieces surging towards him, and almost at the same time, Chen Zi Lin who was beside him released light aura from his eyes, the power that surged to his front immediately broke apart, breaking into pieces and spreading throughout the troops.

A few seconds later, Jerome who was overwhelmed with shock regained his composure, his entire unit were swaying unsteadily from side to side. The 10 saints that took action at the same time, were able to block the sword, but the power from the aftermath was enough to tear apart the army formation, causing them to be in a terrible mess.

Suddenly, Jerome's pupils constricted to its maximum.

In front of him, the 500 Frost Mountains held onto their swords and stood extremely straight, like 500 war god statues, vapor rising from their bodies, releasing their passionate fighting intent.

Jerome's eyes burnt red.

Chapter 674 – Bradley's Beseech

The attack that was dissipated by Chen Zi Lin entered Ah Lun's body, but it did not stir the man of steel.

He stood still like a statue, as though he did not care. Because of Chen Zi Lin's existence, he could test some dangerous and powerful offense, which created the Three Steps Strike. He had absolute trust in Chen Zi Lin, allowing them to be connected at an extremely deep level. Ah Lun, the one without any fear, was like a wild beast, the tenacity and dauntlessness of a Lupus man was displayed through him in saturation.

Ah Lun observed the messy enemies in front of him, he maintained his cautious posture, while his army maintained their offensive posture, just to add pressure to the other party.

Although the other general's face was slow and startled, but the soldiers were filled with fear and numbness, showing that this army had already lost its ability to fight.

But Ah Lun did not relax because of their expressions, if they were not in their territory, he would already had borrowed the momentum to kill them and completely obliterate them, and wipe out any possible dangers.

Ah Lun's eyes were serene and unfathomably deep, such a reckless way of attack, but there were not a least bit of ripples of the light scars.

This was Ah Lun.

Resolute and fearless, valiant and calm, the demeanour of a great general.

Jerome's face was pale white, his hands were weak, the temperament revealed by the enemies in front of him made him afraid to do battle, he could not find any bit of courage to go against them. At that moment, he was filled with shame and defeat, the Bullhorn Army that he had improved with utmost care, was actually not able to take a strike, and under the attack of a nameless army, had become disorderly and were utterly defeated.

For a moment, he was at a loss and did not know what to do.

No one said anything, it was a big wilderness, the entire place silent with only the sound of wind blowing, blowing and spreading the heat soaring from the Frost Mountain soldiers.

They were the same silver color, but they were entirely different, dazzling so brightly that the Taurus people felt pain in their eyes. They wanted to close their eyes, but the scene seemed to have some attractive force, they were unable to do so and could only watch on.

They were lost, afraid, overwhelmed with shock, in a daze, in a despair. Their expressions were sluggish, their lips shivering. Even the 10 saints who blocked the Three Steps Strike currently were speechless, their hands were trembling incessantly.

Suddenly, rumble rumble.

Footsteps broke the silence.

From the frozen silver, a mountainous figure stepped out.

Before the soldiers could even regain themselves from the shock, Jerome's eyes that had lost its focal length, regained his some expression.

Ah Lun stopped 30m away from the other party, pa, he stabbed the silver broadsword into the soil.

This is.....

Jerome's heart shook.

The hand holding the silver broadsword trembled, chi, a sharp sword aura effortlessly cut through the ground, like cutting through paper, the line extended out into the distance.

A straight sword trace blocked Bullhorn Army's front.

“Whoever dares offend the diplomacy will be killed!”

Ah Lun threw those words down, and without even looking at Jerome, he returned back to his troops.

Blood surged up Jerome's head, his face became flushed red, almost seeping out from his pores. He clenched his fists tightly, his entire body trembling. This line had drawn into his heart. It was a warning, not to step over the line.

But, this is the Taurus Constellation, this is our land!

The Taurus Constellation people blew up like volcanos, they were infuriated and started scolding out loud, hooting stuffs saying they would show Ah Lun and the rest.

Bradley's face darkened as he sought an audience with Sai Lei, in which Sai Lei did not reject this time.

"For your noble side to do this, you are clearly provoking us!" Bradley stared at Sai Lei, his tone ice cold.

"Is that so?" Sai Lei replied languidly: "They are just being responsible, protecting my safety, is there a problem with that? Wasn't it YOUR noble side's army that purposely started charging towards us, seemingly showing us hostility."

"They were just thinking of rushing over to welcome your noble side, and yet were met with your attack! Furthermore, this is the Taurus Constellation!" Bradley said emotionlessly: "Whatever we do, do we need your agreement?"

"You're wrong on one point, this is the Taurus Constellation, but

for now.” Sai Lei replied lazily: “With its current look, it would be difficult to hold for another few years.”

Bradley laughed in anger: “Oh, could it be that the Ursa Major Constellation wishes to dip a finger into my Taurus Constellation? Young Miss Sai Lei, although you are our guest, but there is a limit to our patience.....”

“It was you who begged me to come.” Sai Lei interrupted his words, she glanced at him, and revealed a smile of ridicule: “You want me to go now? That’s good, time is tight for me, I still have many tests to run. If the Taurus Constellation doesn’t welcome me, I will leave immediately, let’s not waste everybody’s time.”

Bradley choked.

Damn it!

He felt a flame blazing in his chest, he knew of the contents of the compromises made, which at the moment was like a blazing tongue licking all over his heart.

Sai Lei’s eyes turned cold, and said indifferently: “What does it have to do with me whether or not the Taurus Constellation live or die? Don’t even start with the Yi Fan Family, I did not find any trouble with them, they should be thanking me profusely already. If you are still wallowing in your ancestors’ era, then we have nothing much to talk about, a broken home destined to wither away, let’s not waste my time.”

A broken home destined to wither away huh.....

Bradley's mouth felt extremely bitter, he wanted to raise his voice to refute the other party, but when the ten thousand words reached his throat, it seemed to be lock down by something, and he could not say a thing.

“This should be one of your strongest armies already.” Sai Lei acted as though she did not see Bradley's facial expression, and continued to speak: “To be defeated in one move, oh, I should not underestimate you guys too much, maybe you can last two bouts.”

Sai Lei's words were like a venomous sword, stabbing right into Bradley's chest.

“You coming here, is just to humiliate us?” Bradley spoke through his gritted teeth with a flushed face, his eyes spewing fire of rage.

“Humiliate you? No no no!” Sai Lei stood up, she stood atop the carriage, looking down with a look of ridicule: “Are you worth me humiliating? You guys are nothing, and are even beginning to dwindle down the wealth your ancestors left you. All of you are wearing patched robes, deadly earnest in lying to yourselves, telling yourselves how luxurious all of you guys are. Such people, are you worth me humiliating?”

Bradley's face was a mix of green and red, the rashness birthed in his heart dropped.

They are here just to humiliate us!! They are not sincere at all! Without any sincere compromises, nothing can be exchanged, if this goes on, we will just be further humiliated by them.

“I came to the Taurus Constellation for only one purpose.”

Sai Lei's words caused Bradley who was about to turn and leave stop.

“I just wanted to see, the prestigious and famous Taurus Army of the past, if they had left a bit of seedlings, and where can I find some hope of reviving it?”

Bradley's entire body trembled, he looked up in disbelief, and stammered: “T-taurus Army.....revive the Taurus Army.....”

Sai Lei ignored him, and continued to mumble to herself: “But, what does this have to do with me? Whether or not the Taurus Army is revived, has nothing to do with me.”

“You can revive the Taurus Army?”

Bradley walked up suddenly, he was extremely emotional, every single muscle in his body was shivering in excitement. But in just half a step, he was locked down by cold killing intent, Meng Ta and the rest looked at him unkindly.

Bradley who was excited continued to walk towards Sai Lei. Chi Chi Chi, his body suddenly had criss cross of cuts all around him,

blood flew everywhere, the killing intent of Meng Ta and the rest had congealed into blades.

Bradley ignored them, his eyes only had Sai Lei, he asked while trembling: “You truly can revive the Taurus Army?”

Sai Lei was stirred, seeing Bradley’s emotional face, she was secretly moved.

Not every person here is willing to sink into corruption.

She raised her hand as an indication for Meng Ta and the rest to stop.

“It is just a thought of mine.” Sai Lei said honestly: “The Taurus Army has disappeared for so many years, whether or not it can be revived, I do not truly know. The most important thing for the Taurus Army is the gold armor, that I have some ideas for, but you have to know, just by having an armor does not mean.....”

“I will join you!” Bradley had already completely ignored everything else, he suddenly knelt down on the ground, and started to beseech Sai Lei, he was so excited that his speech was incoherent: “Please let me join you, regardless of any conditions, I wish to participate! I want to revive the Taurus Army, I want to revive it.....”

His incoherent speech was mixed with crying, tears falling into the soil beneath him.

Sai Lei looked at Bradley in surprise, she never expected this, just as she thought that Taurus Constellation was too corrupted beyond saving, there were still people holding on to the dream, willing to give up on everything to realise the dream, abandoning their dignity and painfully beg for it.

She had only seen such passion in the Ursa Major Constellation, and she always thought only they had such temperament.

Everyone by the side watched in surprise, watched Bradley lose control, and after that short silence, they flew into uproars. Their faces were smeared with anger, disdain, shameful expressions, some of them could not help but cover their faces with their sleeves.

“God! What has happened to the highness? Too embarrassing!”

“Revive the Taurus Army? Such nonsensical things, for his highness to truly believe it for real, he is too naive!”

“That’s right! Does the Highness thinks he is the only one that cares for the Taurus Constellation? Too rude, this should not be happening!”

.....

Bradley who was kneeling on the ground was shivering all over, his fists were clenched to the point that his fingers were white. All

those words cut him like sharp blades.

“Can you hear their words? I only have this thought, just for this thought, is it worth it doing this?”

Sai Lei's words sounded out from above.

She stood on the carriage, looking down at Bradley.

Bradley raised his head up, the tears had already stopped. Deep inside his eyes, the profound pain and grief were still visible, but his face, had a boundless determination: “As long as there is a bit of hope, Bradley will sacrifice his life without sparing anything!”

“Not everyone will understand you, maybe you will be ridiculed, you might even lose your current position and lose everything, and with the potential result of nothing, obtain absolutely nothing.”

Bradley raised his head, and locked eyes with Sai Lei, he was like a soldier as he spoke loudly: “There are no dreams that require no sacrifice, I am willing to give up anything.”

In those eyes, flames were combusting.

Sai Lei smiled sweetly, and said meaningfully.

“Welcome aboard!”

Chapter 675 – A New Phase

“When Lei Ang sees these treasures, he will definitely be dumbstruck!”

Tang Tian looked at the floating treasures in front of him with please, all of them were treasures of Leo Constellation. The densely packed treasures were dazzling with attractive light auras, majority of them had revealed a faint gold color, and the golden bright dazzling gold treasures had increased by 15.

No one bothered about him.

Beside him, Ling Xu, Crane and Jing Hao were lying down, they were so tired they could not even lift their fingers. They were paralyzed by the Sea of Energy and were lying down motionless. They were all grabbed by Tang Tian, all of them were forced to bring the treasures out, which was an exhausting task.

Tang Tian felt that his idea was too powerful and brilliant.

He did not have many treasures from Leo Constellation, and even when he got the Ursa Major Constellation to secretly purchase them, he only got 200 pieces, and the majority of them were ordinary. The Leo Constellation did not spread their treasures out much, Lei Ang's group of battle crazy subordinates all fought for treasures, and as there were many of them, they did not even have enough for themselves.

They gradually found the knack to strengthening the treasures.

200 pieces, not one of them were gold grade treasures, but currently, 15 of them were gold grade, and out of the remaining 180 treasures, half of them were half step gold grade treasures, the remaining half were all at the peak of the silver grade.

If these treasures were placed in Heaven's Road, it would definitely shake the entire place. To Leo Constellation, this was already regarded as a battle grade supplies. Treasures was the foundation of any constellation's strength, and even the spirit treasures used by saints were refined out from star treasures. 15 gold grade star treasures, each commander could have one, just with that point would increase the fighting ability of Leo Constellation by a level.

After a moment, Jing Hao who got back some energy asked curiously: "Will this method really work?"

"It should, but we need to meet Lei Ang first, before we will know." Tang Tian scratched his chin, in truth, he was not too sure either.

When the Lion King Lei Ang hailed himself as hegemon, Tang Tian was not born yet, and from young he grew up hearing and knowing the legendary hero and his battle achievements. It was not only him, whenever Jing Hao and the rest thought of Lion King Lei Ang, they would all quiet down.

In the history of the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, there were all sorts of rich and power families, but in the recent 100 years, the most dazzling constellation belonged to the Leo Constellation.

If the 12 Ecliptic Palaces were Heaven's Road brightest and most dazzling constellations, then Leo Constellation was as bright as the sun!

And the one controlling it, was Lei Ang, he had brought his own companions, overcame all their obstacles, penetrated into the most dangerous of places, and started his own Leo Constellation! That glory was able to match him up with any famous heroes in history, he was hailed as Lion King, but there were others who called him The Great Lei Ang.

No one had the confidence to convince this powerful existence.

"There's nothing difficult about it." Tang Tian snorted, a strange light flickering in his eyes: "If he doesn't agree, we can just keep it for ourselves! If they dare to try any dirty tricks, we will just defeat him!"

On his last sentence, Tang Tian's expression became ferocious.

Everyone was dumbstruck.

"Has he been like this recently?" Jing Hao muttered, coming from the Honorable Martial Group, he understood Lei Ang more as he treated him as an enemy.

In the higher ups of the entire Honorable Martial Group, everyone was fearful of the Lion King, even if he had aged. And he

knew that there had always been a saying amongst the higher ups, the best time to attack Leo Constellation was when the Lion King dies.

In their eyes, although Andre and the rest were powerful martial artists, but compared to Lei Ang who, with his bare hands created the powerful kingdom, they were still far lacking.

“Kill Lei Ang! Trample on Leo Constellation!”

Ling Xu without hesitation entered a fanatical state, and jumped up. He was extremely excited, his eyes lit up, the orange pupils blazing with fire, he was completely in a trance because of Tang Tian. He wanted to fight into Leo Constellation right at that moment. Tang Tian’s idea is too awesome, whoever that Lei Ang is, even if he is the Lion King, as long as I defeat him, hehehe, I will become the world’s strongest martial artist!

Ling Xu’s blood was boiling, every single pore on his body was emitting fighting intent, immersed in the state of fanaticism.

“Two lunatics.” Crane looked at the two of them shouting up and down, and could not help but facepalm: “The two of you, can’t you act normally? You’re dragging down the image of Ursa Major Constellation and the Shang Continent.”

Jing Hao had the same sentiments: “Are we truly letting him talk to Lei Ang?”

“Only he can go back.” Crane was helpless: “His mental state cannot be cured, but, I heard that Lei Ang himself is not normal too.....I hope that they do not fight, that beautiful image, I dare not even think of it.”

To think about Tang Tian and Lei Ang.....

Jing Hao trembled, he had never felt himself as one to cower in fear, but compared to Crazy Tang, he was still lacking something. Alright, there will always be something lacking when comparing with a lunatic young man.

Jing Hao consoled himself.

“Crazy Tang, why not we just set up an ambush and get rid of Lei Ang!”

“Crazy Tang, I will stay in ambush behind you, and wait for your signal! Then I will spear him to death!”

“Spear to death! Spear to death!”

Seeing that Ling Xu had completely gone crazy, Tang Tian sensed that it had become bad, and immediately kept all the treasures and slipped away. Crane and Jing Hao had long disappeared.

“No no, let’s fight, I want to fight, which of you can come and fight with me.....eh, where are all of you....”

Ling Xu was startled for a moment, he then looked around, looking for an opponent to fight.

Returning back to his residence, Crane thought about the Sagittarius Constellation. Regardless of anything, The Empress is my aunt. The Sagittarius Constellation is slightly weaker than the Leo Constellation in the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, although they are powerful, but their resources and economy are not outstanding enough. And my aunt doesn't seem to care about the politics going on.

But, no one dares to look down on Sagittarius, The Empress who doesn't care about politics is one of the strongest martial artist.

Crane knew of Crazy Tang's plan.

Crazy Tang hoped to form a communication with the 12 Ecliptic Palaces and fight against the Honorable Martial Group. Crazy Tang's plan had been scrutinized by Crane, and the possibility of success was very high. Because in Tang Tian's hand, he held an irresistible bargaining chip, the ability to strengthen treasures.

In the entire Heaven's Road Constellation system, it was built upon the star treasures, so its importance was of paramount.

He then began to write a letter to his distant Empress Aunt, and suggested her to send over a batch of Sagittarius Constellation treasures to Three Spirits City, and suggested her to collaborate with the Ursa Major Constellation, with all the analysis on pros

and cons, he then wrote about the inside information regarding the Honorable Martial Group.

Writing to this point, Crane suddenly realized, them and the Honorable Martial Continent, including the battle between Honorable Martial Group and Heaven's Road, have entered a new phase.

Up until now, both sides did not have any space to withdraw or compromise, as both sides completely understood their enemy's intent and their own situation. Information indicating that they came from Heaven's Road might have most probably reached the Honorable Martial Continent, following that, they would send their forces to engage on destroying the Shang Continent. And as the spokesperson in Heaven's Road, the Honorable Martial Group will launch its forces on the Ursa Major Constellation with an unprecedented ferociousness.

The battle would enter an extremely bitter and desperate stage.

Has Crazy Tang already thought about this?

Crane became alert and continued to write.

“.....Honorable Martial Group is not only Ursa Major Constellation's enemy, they are the enemy of the entire Heaven's Road, their existence is for the Sacred Saint Galaxy to enter Heaven's Road. We have sought information regarding the time for the Star Door to open, and finally obtained some results. 10 years, 10 years later, the Star Door connecting the Sacred Saint

Galaxy and the Heaven's Road will open, and at that time, the war between the two worlds will be inevitable! Heaven's Road's abundance of spirits, is a place that they must have....”

Crane did not know what influence he would cause to his Aunt, but he still wrote the letter earnestly to completion.

There were Sagittarius Constellation people in Three Spirits City, and the letter would very quickly be sent to the Empress.

After finishing the letter, he then wrote a letter to his Great Clan Elder, and carefully noted down all the enlightenments he had regarding the martial techniques of Crane Sect.

After his continued improvements on the Crane Sect's martial techniques, Crane Sect quickly grew stronger at an alarming rate. The Crane Sect followed and complied with the traditions of the Ancient Sects, although their martial techniques were completely different from the old martial techniques, but the traditions had not been lost, and the disciples had extremely deep foundations. When Crane found the Legacy and returned it back to Crane Sect, the Crane Sect found their hope and confidence again. The Crane Sect that had remained silent for hundreds of years, obtained even more intense yearnings.

The Ursa Major Constellation's dense energy concentration, along with Tang Tian learning some of Crane Sect's martial techniques in the past and Crane's important position to the Constellation allowed Crane Sect to live comfortably. They were like a sponge that greedily absorb their share, with their sect's strictness, it won them respect.

The Great Clan Elder smiled as he gazed down the mountain.

There was a large crowd of people at the foot of the mountain.

The Grus Mountain was as steep as a sword, formed at the side of the mountain as though a sword had cut off a horizontal piece of land that was as smooth as a mirror, the words “Grus Academy” appeared at the top, it was majestic and full of life.

Today was the first day of Grus Academy’s opening.

The Crane Sect received Tang Tian’s care, and they decided to build up the Grus Academy, to publicly pass down the Crane Sect’s martial techniques to the Ursa Major Constellation.

The opening of the Grus Academy, caused a sensation in the internal department of the Ursa Major Constellation. In the past, no one knew of the Crane Sect’s decline, but the current day Crane was one of the top figures of the Ursa Major Constellation, Bear King Tang Tian had personally admitted to learning the Crane Sect martial techniques before, adding that the Crane Sect’s martial techniques were based more on being confident and at ease and extremely agile, many youths rushed for it like ducks.

Down below the mountain, the hubbub of people was lively, the flourishing scene beneath caused the entire Crane Sect to be

unable to conceal their happiness. No one would have thought that the hubbub would cause the entire Crane Sect to be so emotional.

Countless white figures flew down from the mountains, all of them resembling agile white cranes, causing the disciples to be even more excited, and their hearts to fawn over them.

“The Crane Sect’s revival, is the fortune of my generation.”

The Great Clan Elder muttered, he never thought that he would be able to witness such a scene in his life, even if he died at this moment, he would be content.

All around, no one was feeling sad. The Crane Sect’s decline and defeat seemed like just yesterday, and no one was willing to go back to it.

“This is all thanks to Crane.”

“Yes, Ancestors in the heavens, please protect my Crane Sect forever.”

Everyone was emotional.

The Great Clan Elder was quiet for a moment, then spoke solemnly: “Crane is still young, but is fighting endlessly outside, earning our Crane Sect this blessed land. We cannot just bask in the fortune happily in the back. Crane Sect Disciples, yearn to obtain the strength of Gold Ranked Martial Artists, and head on to

increase the power of the armies! The Ursa Major Constellation's future, Our Crane Sect's future, requires everyone in the Crane Sect to uphold and defend it together!

“YES!” Everybody bowed and replied in unison.

From henceforth, In the armies of Ursa Major Constellation, a legend was born, the Sword Emissary Crane.

Chapter 676 – Military Conference

Three Spirits City was heavily guarded, at an unprecedented scale.

There were endless numbers of patrols on the streets, all the hotels, houses, were being checked once, something that had never happened before in the history of Three Spirits City. The various Star Doors around Three Spirits City were being monitored strictly, and the garrisoned armies were all positioned tight, in a state of pre war.

All the spies hidden in the dark all knew that something big was about to happen in Three Spirits City.

But they dare not move recklessly, the current Three Spirits City had long been forged into a city like a steel bucket by the Ursa Major Constellation. Ever since the last ambush, Three Spirits City was continuously combed endless of times inside and out.

Three Spirits City had already become the Ursa Major Constellation's most famous strategic town, but this important town was attracting very important figures.

The massively guarded Star Door started to produce out the authoritative figures of the Ursa Major Constellation, Long Shou Jing, Ta Dun, Magic Flute, Hunter Adrian, Xiao Wu.....

Every person who witnessed the scene were overwhelmed with shock. Even the slowest person knew that an extremely important

matter had begun at Ursa Major Constellation.

A military conference that concerned the future of Ursa Major Constellation was about to begin, and almost all the core members and commanders of the various armies were gathered.

Bing's time was tight, he was about to take charge of the structural change for the various armies for the mission on eliminating the pirates, it was the most crucial step for them to stabilize the Southern Alliance. If this could be completed smoothly, the entire Southern Alliance would truly be in their control. But it would not be completed so easily, even if they had treasures as bargaining chips that everyone wanted, it was still an immensely huge and difficult task.

But the military conference directly affected their future military campaigns, they needed Bing to leave the Shang Continent to participate.

“If the Honorable Martial Continent knows of our identity, then the Honorable Martial Group will definitely give it their all to attack us. This attack will be unfathomable and without rationality, because it means that their identity has been exposed, and they will soon become the enemy of the entire Heaven's Road, they have no way out, and thus will give it their all to attack! And at the same time, the waterway that we have to the Sacred Saint Galaxy will be made known, our actions at Wu An Star cannot be hidden from them.”

Tang Chou's cold voice resonated in the conference room.

“When the enemy investigates and knows of the strategic importance of Wu An Star, they will without hesitation launch a full force attack there, and seize the path from us! I suggest to increase the forces stationed at Wu An Star, to us, Wu An Star’s strategic location is equally important and cannot be lost.”

Tang Tian nodded: “You will arrange the garrisoning of the armies. Other than that, move the entire Saint Unit over to Wu An Star, to prepare for battle at anytime.”

The few core members of the Saint Unit answered: “Yes!”

From the start, the Saint Unit had been rather free, in the Ursa Major Constellation, they were treated extremely well, with all the most outstanding training conditions, there was nothing strict about them, thus attracting even more Independent Saints that joined in their cause, and has been increasing in size since the start.

But the most prestigious part about the Ursa Major Constellation was not the Saint Unit, but the Armies. Every single army was deeply respected by the citizens, while very few people knew of the Saint Unit. The majority of the military successes and achievements were obtained with the appearances of the armies.

No one liked to feel pressure, and furthermore, how could the high and mighty Saint Unit? In the entire Saint Unit, every single member longed to prove their worth. Hearing Tang Tian’s order, all of them clenched their fists tightly filled with fighting spirit.

Although the entire Saint Unit was excited, the atmosphere was extremely tense, the commanders of the various armies had their backs straight, their sensitivity to wars were at a degree higher than the Saint Unit, and they could sense the impending great war.

To even mobilize the Saint Unit, will this be the decisive battle?

The commanders were all brimming with radiance, all of them were battle fanatics, not only were they not afraid of battles, but were instead yearning to engage in some.

“I require assistance.” Bing suddenly said, he looked at Tang Tian and threw out his problem.

The conference room quickly quieted down.

The commanders were surprised, from the start, Bing was always the one commanding all the battles, Tang Tian had never put his hand in, and furthermore he was mostly on the frontlines relying on his own personal strength.

But Bing did not throw off his gaze, he was confident in Tang Tian. Tang Tian’s words the last time had made him have a sudden flash of insight, and also made him suddenly realise that Tang Tian was clear of the situation unlike in the past.

He had extremely sharp intuition when it came to battle, and even displayed the same level of intuition in large scale wars. It

was just that Crazy Tang's logic was peculiar. But even Bing had to admit, although Tang Tian's logic was as crazy as his personality, he was still logical. All the weird logic was formed because of Tang Tian's extreme intuition in battles. Furthermore, his completely differing logic was forever unexpected, to even cause Bing to be dumbstruck, Bing was very excited to see how the Honorable Martial Group would look trying to fight against Tan Tian!

“What assistance?”

Tang Tian was startled.

“Although we have already confirmed the plan regarding the mobilizing of the Southern Alliance armies, but we are still too weak, and it is not enough just relying on the Swift Army and the Skull Unit. And it will still take us a long time to truly allow the two to become the true core armies, the Honorable Martial Continent will not give us enough time, I need some able fighting power.”

Bing explained his need of assistance.

“So that's the case!” Tang Tian scratched his chin, he suddenly thought of an idea that he used to have, and his eyes lit up: “Let Han Bing Ning and the rest go, and gather all the Gold Ranked Martial Artists with Zero Energy Bodies. Tell Song Didi's awakened Army to come in.”

“Zero Energy Bodies?” Bing was startled for a moment, but then he realised what Tang Tian was driving at: “You want them to

operate the warships?”

“Yea! The Zero Energy Body is heaven sent to match with warships, they are immune to the energy charges, and our warships’ power will be greatly increased.” Tang Tian was excited, but he suddenly became gloomy: “It is just that the road will be dangerous.”

Bing became gloomy as well.

Han Bing Ning who was at the back row suddenly walked forward: “We want to go!”

Ah Mo Li stood up, he pouted with dissatisfaction: “Crazy Tang, so what if it’s dangerous, where is a place that isn’t dangerous?”

The old and wise Liang Qiu spoke out: “We can’t help much here anyways, Why not let us go to the Sacred Saint Galaxy, although it will be dangerous, but if we are successful, then we will be able to help out. The benefits outweigh the risks.”

The others nodded their heads.

They were the first batch of people in Ursa Major Constellation to experience the reducing energy transformation, in which their strength prior to it were already at the gold grade martial artists stage. After the reducing energy transformation, it became even harder for them to coordinate with armies. The Ursa Major Constellation had always wanted to build a Zero Energy Body

army, but at the moment, they were still in the testing phase.

But to be able to operate warships roused even more of their interests.

When Sai Lei obtained the designs and plans for the warships, it was as if they had gained the most precious treasures. The great amounts of warship weapons that Tang Tian brought over allowed Sai Lei the opportunity to proceed with many tests, in which Han Bing Ning and the rest participated.

It was affirmed that Zero Energy Bodies were truly immune to the energy charge brought about by the warship weapons.

The firepower they were able to produce were easily three times stronger than the equal grade warship weapons most intensive fire power, easily! This astronomical figure, if adding a general that could guide them, they could completely become a huge threat in battle.

When they heard Tang Tian's suggestion, they immediately wanted it to happen.

Regardless if they were martial artists or soldiers, they could only prove their value through battle, and only through victories could they earn respect!

They were in their prime, how could they stand in the backlines?

Tang Tian looked at the companions that came with him all the way from Wu An Star, seeing the flames in their eyes, it felt as if they were back in the academy, he suddenly laughed, and patted his chest: “Don’t worry, I’ll bring all of you in, haha, at that time, everyone can fight side by side together again!”

The conference room immediately exploded into an uproar, many of them were against it to the point that even a few had stood up to stop him.

Tang Tian extended his hand out and stopped them from speaking, then spoke calmly and with determination: “From the beginning, there was no safe haven. In Heaven’s Road, there is the Honorable Martial Group and the Temple, in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, we have already engaged in the final battle phase with the Honorable Martial Continent, at any time, at anywhere, it will be dangerous. Regarding leading the group, I have been through it once, other than me, who else has done it? If we are able to deliver them into the Sacred Saint Galaxy, then our strength in the Sacred Saint Galaxy will completely evolve. We have to gamble on this!”

No one could advise him against it.

Amidst the silence, only Ah Mo Li laughed out loud: “Crazy Tang, you’re truly the most loyal!”

Tang Tian looked at him with happiness.

The two of them were winking and looking at each other as if there were no one else in the room. Bing could no longer tolerate

it, and coughed: “Then we will do all of this, and start preparing for it.”

“What constellation should we join forces with first?” Tang Chou asked.

Everyone became alert, they had started calculating, it was not feasible for the Ursa Major Constellation to fight with the Honorable Martial Group alone. Although the Ursa Major Constellation had become much stronger in the past two years, but if not for the Leo Constellation hindering and fighting it out with the Honorable Martial Group, their days would not had passed so easily.

“Join forces with which constellation?” Tang Tian scoffed: “No, we will first inform everyone of the existence of the Sacred Saint Galaxy. We will tell them, we have found a waterway leading to a brand new world.”

“We’re not telling them about the Honorable Martial Group?” Bing could not resist to ask.

“No, we will first bring out a few materials and treasures from the Sacred Saint Galaxy.” Tang Tian’s evil tricks were starting to flow out, he had racked his brains to think about it: “We will first make a ruckus about it, and whatever we can sell for high prices, we do it. Let us earn a bit first. All of these constellations will definitely not want us to take this profits alone, and will beg to join us. At this time, what can the Honorable Martial Group do?”

Tang Tian suddenly asked.

“They will attack the Wu An Star and attempt to seize the waterway!” Tang Chou said without hesitation.

Tang Tian’s evil tricks continued to flow: “We cannot leak anything out, the Honorable Martial Group will think we have not found out anything about them, and most likely will look for us to collaborate, if they want to buy, we will sell. They are rich anyway. They speak about collaborating, we will agree to it. After that.....”

“We wait for them at the Wu An Star!”

Tang Tian’s expression suddenly became ferocious, his killing intent soaring.

Everyone’s eyes all gleamed with light auras at the same time.

Chapter 677 – Lion King Lei Ang

After the meeting had concluded, the entire Ursa Major Constellation started to move extremely quickly. Every core member that had participated in the meeting had gloomy expressions with a tinge of alertness.

They all knew that the curtains to the decisive battle had been drawn.

It was a long and challenging military campaign that was inevitable, regardless of whether it was the Honorable Martial Group and Temple or the Honorable Martial Continent, they were both mature and huge figures in their own worlds, and had a deep reservoir of wealth and power.

It was no longer like the friction in the past with the Honorable Martial Group, it was the decisive battle that one side would have to die before anyone could reset. The brutality that it had become was extremely numbing. Instead, to the ambitious youths of the Ursa Major Constellation, they saw it as an opportunity to prove themselves, they longed to do battle, looking forward to achievements, their passion and desire to stand firmly in the position as the stable old generals.

Formed through the flames of war, the youths the Ursa Major Constellation never failed in battle. The traditional provocations and challenges had become a habit to them, even if their current enemies were the Heaven's Road's rulers, they did not have any restraining fears. They were like their king, someone who never knew what was fear and cowardice.

Everything was conducted regularly and thoroughly despite the stifling and nervous atmosphere.

Two days later, the news shocked the entire Heaven's Road, Ursa Major Constellation had announced that they found a brand new world!

The news spread like wildfire, all the citizens of every constellation were talking rowdily about the news. It had quickly become the hottest topic discussed.

Following that, the Ursa Major Constellation started to showcase large quantities of products that came from the new world, crystals with extremely high energy concentration, grass and wood that contained sword concepts in them, all sorts of strange weapons.....

Nothing was more convincing than actual products. Everyone was completely convinced that at the end of Heaven's Road, there was a world completely different from the Heaven's Road. This made everyone extremely curious, what was the new world like?

Ursa Major Constellation then announced, that they were conducting auctions, to auction the things from the new world, any powerhouses or constellations were free to participate.

Everyone's eyes were locked onto the Ursa Major Constellation, and almost every constellation sent out their own representatives, hurrying over to the Ursa Major Constellation through the days and nights. All of them would meet with many other groups that

were quickly advancing towards the Ursa Major Constellation. Many independent, scattered and ambitious people had dropped everything and rushed towards the Ursa Major Constellation, thinking of participating in dredging up the land of gold.

Everyone knew that the Ursa Major Constellation had already obtained a key opportunity for any future competition. In the future, as long as the Ursa Major Constellation was able to secure this estate, they would undoubtedly be the tyrant of Heaven's Road.

Almost everyone favoured the odds of the Ursa Major Constellation being the Heaven's Road future tyrant. To the other constellations, it was a worrying thing, but to try and seize such a big cake from the prestigious and powerful Ursa Major Constellation, how much would be sacrificed?

The Ursa Major Constellation was overcrowded, especially Bear Head City that was the place where the auction would be held. Countless people had come from afar, just to have a glimpse of the grand affair.

After the meeting, the Three Spirits City had become calm again, the tight security had been lifted, all the armies that had been garrisoned there quickly headed towards the Ursa Major Constellation. All the indications had pointed towards the Ursa Major Constellation's future, and thus the plan to shift Three Spirits City over to Bear Head City.

All of stealthy spies then realised. The tight security for the past few days, were just for their internal department to discuss about

the new world.

Tang Tian did not leave Three Spirits City yet.

Three Spirits City that had become peaceful again, and was bustling with activity, it was currently the Heaven's Road's "Mechanic City", the place where countless of mechanical engineers and mechanical martial artists gathered. The majority of the independent mechanical engineers made their homes there, on one side, there were many of the same profession there, they could advise and spar with each other, and the other was that manufacturing mechanical weapons required a great quantity of materials, and Three Spirits City was loaded with materials, as long as anyone had the funds, they could easily obtained all the uncommon materials.

As the demands were immense, many trading companies had been established, with caravans moving day in and day out with endless flows.

Three Spirits City had specialized collaborating trading companies, and thus the resources inside the bronze camp was quickly depleting. As per usual, the transport fleet would enter the bronze camp on schedule, and everything ran as normal.

But, a carriage stopped by the side, in which Tang Tian had been waiting for.

The carriage door opened and a tall, sturdy and imposing figure jumped down. When he landed, he immediately noticed Tang Tian

who was waiting in the distance although he had seen Tang Tian's image countless of times, but to personally look at him in the flesh, he still felt shocked by Tang Tian's youth.

“The young hero!” He praised with his deep and low voice, which had a tyrannical might to it, brimming with self confidence and power: “Worthy of your style, you're matchless beneath the heavens!”

Without feeling a bit of embarrassment, Tang Tian replied: “The Great Lion King Lei, welcome to Three Spirits City!”

The two looked at each other and laughed.

Everyone around was filled with reveration. When the two spoke, no one dared to make a noise. Lion King Lei Ang was like a dazzling sun, there was a natural pressure emitting off from him, causing the air around to seem to combust. As for Tang Tian who stood beside Lei Ang, he did not have any emotions, as though Lei Ang's powerful aura did not affect him the least bit, he stood there basking in the aura as though it was normal.

One was the tyrannical and strong Lion King, the other, the young Bear King that swooped down from the skies.

Lei Ang had been secretly observing Tang Tian, and despite the calm appearance he was showing, he was filled with shock and surprise. He could see fearlessness in the young man's clear eyes, the burning willpower, the contempt in ruling by power, it was as though he was looking at himself when he was younger.

He could not help but think of his sons, he had initially thought that Andre and the rest were outstanding, but upon seeing Tang Tian, he then understood the great difference between them.

He controlled the distracting thoughts in his mind, and was instead met with competitiveness. His territory had long been stable, his name had reached far and wide, and even the Honorable Martial Group did not dare be reckless with him, in so many years, how many people would even be able to speak a word with him? He was long used to his tyrannical lord position that shook the heavens and earth, and he could even look down on the Honorable Martial Group. If he wanted to fight, he would fight. If he wanted war, he would give war, he had always overlooked down at others.

But facing Tang Tian, he could feel the same aura and power as himself.

It was the feeling of meeting someone the same as you, a new competitor, causing his heart that slumbered due to loneliness to wake up once again. He could not help but smile and look around: "Is this Three Spirits City? The first city in Heaven's Road built on mechanical weapons, its name has since flourished, you will have to bring me to take a good look around."

He was not in the least bit anxious in his arrival, but instead felt it was a good opportunity to judge Ursa Major Constellation's strength.

The strength of the Ursa Major Constellation was a mystery to

everyone. To be able to personally witness and observe them, Lei Ang had decided to assess them.

A Lion will never make friends with wolves and jackals.

Tang Tian did not think too much, he generously brought Lei Ang around to observe even the base. But even though he was the one leading, the person to actually describe and provide information was Pi Pa.

All the additional constructions and various new technologies that had been formed were all a strange sight even to Tang Tian.

Pi Pa explained everything detailedly: “These are the Frost Mountains, and the main force of our mechanical spirit weapons. It’s weight is a third of any ordinary mechanical spirit weapon, using a brand new type of metal with the appearance of silver and high defensive capabilities. Without an energy barrier, it can block off five attacks of a Gold Ranked Martial Artist. It uses many new technologies, it’s equipped with seven different card slots, the lowest requiring silver grade spirit cards, and can even use Gold Ranked Spirit Cards. And all the martial spirits placed inside the spirit weapons are all battle spirits. We have filtered through and conducted integration with a large quantity of shattered battle spirits, and chose out martial spirits with fighting abilities of the Silver Rank....”

“Silver Ranked Martial Spirits?” Lei Ang interrupted Pi Pa.

Pi Pa explained: “Yes. After much research on martial spirits, we

have classified the strong and weak martial spirits. We use the most ordinary grading system of gold, silver, and bronze. Silver Rank Martial Spirits indicate that their intellect has reached the level of a Silver Rank Martial Artist. But as we chose all the battle spirits, they are all stronger and more experienced in nature, so they are slightly stronger.”

Lei Ang frowned: “They can replace martial artists to fight?”

“No.” Pi Pa shook her head: “The martial spirits inside mechanical spirit weapons can be considered as assistants. They have better and finer control over True Power, and help the martial artists focus better, placing the burden of battle onto the martial spirits instead.”

Lei Ang started to have an interested expression, to Leo Constellation, mechanical weapons are a new discovery. The Leo Constellation did not have a mechanical army, and all the special mechanical spirit weapons made him feel as though he had dived into a brand new world.

But as Pi Pa explained more and more, his expression became gloomy. As someone who had experienced many battles, he understood fighting very well, far more profoundly than any martial artists or generals. The existence of mechanical spirit weapons made the complicated fights simpler, and the demands in the qualities of the martial artists or soldiers to become lower.

“How long does it take to groom a qualified mechanical martial artist?” Lei Ang asked.

Pi Pa could not help but admire him, he truly was the Lion King, as he was able to grasp the problem quickly. Without hesitation, she replied: “The preparation in our mechanical martial artists barracks for Silver Rank Students to be prepared is a year. In a year, our talented students will be able to fundamentally obtain the essentials. In three years, they will become veterans. For the Bronze Rank Students, they will require more time, the initial essentials will take three years.

Lei Ang took a deep breath, he knew what that meant.

Although a traditional army was powerful, but that was through the long process of selection through countless people. And once a battle was in a stalemate, many soldiers would die, and thus a need to replenish the army, but the power of the army would drop.

But a mechanical army could keep on replenishing.

As he continued to observe, Lei Ang’s mind became more and more surprised, until he noticed a figure that was constantly sprinting back and forth on the training grounds. He subconsciously stopped in his tracks, and the forced emotionless and expressionless face finally changed.

On the mechanical spirit weapon, a blood red number was smeared.

No. 23.

Chapter 678 – Ugly Monster!

Colin had always felt that his talent was poor.

It had been proven in training, his results were always on the borderline, if not for Instructor Duan Mu's patience, he would have long since been kicked out.

Colin knew it for himself, that was why he was extremely hardworking, hoping to use his hard work to make up for his lack of talent. He was one of the most hardworking students in the training barracks, which was the reason why Instructor Duan Mu never gave up on him. But reality was cruel, no matter how hardworking he was, his results were always hovering around the borderlines of passing.

A qualified student?

Colin would always laugh bitterly at his own results. The competition in the training barracks was far more intense than what outsiders could ever imagine, the years of decline that the mechanical martial artists had endured, their passion had become volcanoes spewing out densely. Any mechanical martial artists from any constellation in Heaven's Road, as long as they had a bit of ambition, they would travel far and wide through difficulties to reach Three Spirits City, to achieve their dreams in this sanctuary.

The number one training barracks for mechanical martial artists!

There was no second.

Without even speaking about being on par, there were no other training barracks that could even come close to Three Spirits City. When all the other constellations were still thinking whether or not it was the time of decline for mechanical techniques, it was Ursa Major Constellation's mechanical army that prospered, killing in all directions, to the point that they could consider themselves as the originators of mechanical techniques.

With the best instructors, the most advanced war tactics, the most advanced mechanical spirit weapons, every single mechanical martial artists firmly believed that the mechanical martial artists that walked out of Three Spirits City training barracks would be the most outstanding mechanical martial artists!

In truth, Colin was not one that had no way out, he could graduate from the training barracks smoothly, once they walked out of the majestic and grand bronze door, they would become the hottest mechanical martial artists in the market. There were countless people waving their money wanting to hire them, and their salaries would definitely be equal to Gold Rank Martial Artists. There were some constellations willing to hand out the position of commanders to attract them even.

Salary, position, respect, they did not lack any of these.

But every single member inside the training barracks only had one goal, to join Ursa Major Constellation's Mechanical Army!

The most prestigious and strongest mechanical army!

Only by joining one of Ursa Major Constellation's mechanical armies would they be able to control the most advanced mechanical spirit weapons, the strongest weapons specially built by Grandmaster Sai Lei! All the cool and ruthless battle weapons, were on a totally different level than those purchasable on the markets.

Only by controlling the strongest mechanical spirit weapons will one be worthy of having the most illustrious military achievement!

No one knew who made up that sentence, it was highly toxic and fervent, frantically spreading throughout the entire training barracks.

Colin was one of those who was struck with this poison. Deeply.

But reality was truly dejecting, every time after training, he would feel the fatigue, and feel even more depressed. His biggest problem was that he could not coordinate with the martial spirit inside the mechanical spirit weapon well. Every mechanical spirit weapon would have a martial spirit, and the stronger the mechanical spirit weapon, the higher grade the martial spirit. The forte of a mechanical spirit weapon was that it did not need the martial artist to directly control the mechanical spirit weapon, and it was through guiding the martial spirit to control the mechanical spirit weapon.

A martial spirit had its own consciousness, and it required a lot

from the martial artist to want to tame it and get it to listen to him. On the battlefield, anything could happen, and it required a martial artist to be able to make a reaction in the shortest amount of time, and this also required the tacit understanding between a martial artist and the martial spirit.

This coordination was the most important criteria for a mechanical martial artist.

But Colin had a problem in this, he was unable to perfectly control the martial spirit inside the mechanical spirit weapon, and thus, in battle, he was always be slower than the rest by a tad. Even if he made the right decision and his counters would be simple and straightforward, but “By a tad”, made everything worse. He felt that on the battlefield, he was like a clumsy turtle.

But, he was chosen by Screw.

Screw, that’s right, it was a very strange name, Colin heard it from others, it was said that Screw was a maintenance officer in the Southern Cross Army. Colin had went to investigate further, and it was said that in the Southern Cross Army era, it was mechanical engineers that took on the responsibility of maintenance officers.

This made Colin extremely excited.

The mechanical spirit weapons that Sai Lei had created bore a striking resemblance to the Southern Cross Army’s mechanical weapons, and everyone guessed that Grandmaster Sai Lei was able

to create a new generation of mechanical spirit weapons because of inheriting the legacy of the Southern Cross Army.

The era of the Three Great Armies was the peak of mechanical techniques.

Screw must be an extremely powerful figure in that generation, thinking about that, Colin became very excited. Maybe Screw can resolve the issue that I am having. But after that, hearing that Screw had lost his memories, it made his highly anticipated dreams disappear.

What's the use of a spirit general that lost his memories?

Screw's actions after that made him feel even worse, Screw took out a pile of trash from the components and started altering his mechanical spirit weapon.

Not in the legendary laboratory, but just scrap components.

Not the legendary Grandmaster, but a spirit general who had lost his memories.

No matter how one looked, it was absurd.

Colin tried to question Screw, but Screw did not speak a word, completely ignoring him. But Colin did not dare leave, because Screw did not give the order for him to leave. Screw's position was even higher than Instructor Duan Mu, and thus Colin did not dare

to be disrespectful just because Screw was a spirit general.

Ursa Major Constellation was different from other places, in the core circle of Ursa Major Constellation, spirit generals were important. And everything regarding military matters were completely run and commandeered by spirit generals, and they were long used to such a thing.

Just when Colin thought that Screw had long forgotten about him, Screw completed redesigning the mechanical spirit weapon.

Colin looked at the extremely ugly mechanical spirit weapon, dumbstruck, his heart was bleeding in pain.

It's too ugly!

Many large places of patches made it look like a beggar type mechanical spirit weapon. All of its streamlined beauty had been replaced with bumps. All of its graceful joints were replaced with swollen joints that resembled steamed buns.

When this mechanical spirit weapon appeared on the training ground, everyone's eyes towards Colin was brimming with sympathy and pity. Even the kind Duan Mu used his hands to cover his eyes, he could not bear to watch it, he felt that the previous envy towards Colin, Sigh, to think that I thought it was a blessing, what a pitiful child!

Inside the mechanical spirit weapon, Colin so badly wanted to

drill a hole and hide in it!

But Screw remained expressionless, waiting for him to test out the mechanical spirit weapon.

No one dared to go up and help Colin.

Colin could only numb himself as he controlled the weird monster mechanical spirit weapon, rumbling towards the training grounds. After walking six to seven steps, his attention was fully focused into the new mechanical spirit weapon.

Because he realised, the mechanical spirit weapon did not seem to be as cumbersome as he thought it would, although it was not graceful, but it was not cumbersome at all.

Colin then seemed to understand why, because the martial spirit had been weakened, the originally silver grade martial spirit had become a bronze grade martial spirit. The martial spirit that was weakened, although it was not as intelligent, but at the same time, the demands it required from the martial artist was also weakened.

It's just that.....

If the martial spirit is weakened, doesn't it mean that the mechanical spirit weapon is weakened as well?

So I am just suited for a weak martial spirit....

He stopped at the white lines by the side of the training grounds, and for a while, he remained in a daze.

The training grounds before him was the most familiar place to him. It was this place where he had perspired so much under the sun, fallen for so many times, failed for upteen times, and added his own quiet training in the night.

A man without wings, but yearned to fly in the sky, is determined to fall flat on his face.

Even if he were to struggle free from the gravitational force, it would only be for a few seconds.

Colin calmed down and took a deep breath. He was familiar with the bronze grade martial spirit in the mechanical spirit weapon. It was the familiar bronze spirit weapon that was used in training.

Ka ka ka!

The ugly and swollen monster half squatted.

There will be an ending to this.

This phrase flashed past Colin's mind, a smile of self ridicule appeared on his lips, which soon after disappeared. He was not the least bit regretful, he had harbored the dreams of entering this

sacred haven, and with all of his might, he had kept on working day in day out, never slacking, never giving up, that was why he did not regret at all.

Come on, you ugly freak!

Colin roared, he suddenly exerted force and rushed into the training grounds.

Boom!

A gigantic explosion occurred behind him, but Colin did not react to it, his expression froze in that second, he opened his eyes wide, not believing what was happening.

The visor on his face had become flushed red, unknowingly a spark had shot onto the visor, like liquid steel out of the furnace, it splashed everywhere!

Sparks.... These are..... sparks formed by the friction in the air.....

The extremely high speed mechanical spirit weapon dropped down from the sky like a boulder, with flames forming around it.

The immense power had made him lose all control over the mechanical spirit weapon.

Suddenly, he noticed something bronze quickly approaching, he shuddered, That's the bronze wall! He was completely stupefied, Bronze wall.....at the end of the training grounds, there is a bronze wall....how is that possible....the width of this training grounds.....

Wait a minute, the bronze wall!

Damn it!

Colin's face flushed white, if he were to clash onto the bronze wall, he would definitely turn into a pile of meat.

He forced himself to turn, transferring his power to the mechanical spirit weapon, in which a force multiple times of his own surged like a tide, in a moment swallowing him whole.

He had lost control once again!

The extremely ugly and huge figure, shot around with ear piercing screeches, rushing forwards through the sparks, forming a bizarre arc, smashing heavily into the training ground.

Booom!

A ripple was formed from the impact, soil flew everywhere, and the sparks blossomed out in midair.

All the students training were dumbstruck, they were completely overwhelmed and shocked by the scene. Duan Mu's expression turned sluggish, his eyes filled with shock.

Lion King's indifferent face was immediately filled with surprise, shock, disbelief. He was like a statue that stood there.

The ripple swept across the entire field, and the soil that dropped like rain hit onto everyone's body. The blossomed flames in the air disappeared.

In the training grounds, the ugly mechanical spirit weapon that resembled a malevolent monster stood there apathetically.

Chapter 679 – Nie Qiu, Zhong Li Bai And The Null Division

The negotiations with Lei Ang went far smoother than what Tang Tian had anticipated.

Who knew if it was the monstrosity that brought forth a shock to Lei Ang, or that the Lion King himself was filled with the thirst to conquer the Sacred Saint Galaxy, or the unfathomable hatred towards the Honorable Martial Group, but Lei Ang immediately chose to form an alliance with Tang Tian without hesitation.

He did not stay for long, because the Leo Constellation was at the moment planning to launch a full force attack on the Honorable Martial Group. Tang Tian's treasures were provided at an impeccable timing.

To repay him, he gave two subordinates to Tang Tian.

“They're good, but I have no place for them over in the Leo Constellation, following me is truly a waste of their talents.”

To Tang Tian, Lei Ang's words were for flaunting. But he had to admit that Ursa Major Constellation's military system was much simpler as compared to the Leo Constellation's. The Leo Constellation held the most perfect military system in Heaven's Road, with many outstanding military academies, the military men were revered and the higher ups valued all of them, forming a favourable atmosphere. The youths of the Leo Constellations were even more willing to become outstanding military generals than

powerful martial artists.

The Leo Constellation never had a lack of military generals, and it was a common phenomenon to have surpluses of them.

Nie Qiu and Zhong Li Bai were such examples, they were both brimming with talent, but they had zero experience, Leo Constellation's various large armies were full, and they were not willing to waste their time on grooming new talents for the future or reserves.

In truth, Lei Ang himself was not willing to let the two of them go, but in the situation, he had no other ways left. The Leo Constellation held the most perfect military general system, with the most military generals being groomed out endlessly. But their seniors were all sturdy and powerful young men with achievements under their belts and rich family experience to add. Ahead of Nie Qiu and Zhong Li Bai, there were countless people waiting in line as well, and although Lei Ang admired the two of them, but he would definitely not disrupt the order and system just for the two.

The both of them knew that they had no opportunity in the Leo Constellation, thus their eyes were set on the Ursa Major Constellation. To outsiders, the Ursa Major Constellation was full of famed grade generals, and had a galaxy of talents, but the two of them saw it another way. The Ursa Major Constellation's most outstanding generals were all spirit generals, although the Ursa Major Constellation had worked hard in grooming out military generals right from the start, but it required time as well, and the youths needed time to grow, and needed real battles to prove their

abilities.

The both of them did not privately seeked shelter in Ursa Major Constellation, but took the initiative to find Lei Ang and told him of their thoughts honestly. They did not know of the secret invitation sent by Tang Tian to Lei Ang, but they thought that Ursa Major Constellation did not truly want to ally with Leo Constellation but in truth wanted to use the name of the alliance.

But they did not mind, raising the strength of their allies was also not a bad choice.

After hearing the two's elaborations, Lei Ang was quiet for a while, but still agreed to it.

Tang Tian sized the two of them up.

Nie Qiu had a slightly round pale face full of baby fat and did not have a huge stature. He had short hair with large forehead, and was quiet and resembled a good student. The only unique thing about him was his eyes. His eyes were always shut, and his mouth always had a shallow smile.

Tang Tian was surprised: "Your eyes....."

Nie Qiu bowed, and then said warmly: "I was born blind."

"Then how do you command battles?" Tang Tian could not help but ask curiously.

“By perception. Nie Qiu’s face had a shallow yet warm smile: “This subordinate’s perception is rather outstanding.

Tang Tian was enlightened, but he had never heard of someone who was able to use their perception to command. Interesting! Tang Tian could not help but look at Nie Qiu’s eyes, and the smile on his face.

His eyes then turned to Zhong Li Bai. Compared to Nie Qiu, Zhong Li Bai was on the other extreme, his entire body had robust muscles, his face was jagged as though it was cut from an axe, with a small ponytail at the back of his head, his crude hair made it look like wires. His bean sized eyes were solemn, and even by casually standing there, he gave off a dangerous feeling.

He was like a wild beast ready to devour anybody that approached.

Li Zhong Bai was extremely tall, with a height of over 2m, Tang Tian had to raise his head: “What are you good in?”

“Destroying.” Li Zhong Bai spoke with energy, as though his chest was the place where the voice came from. Upon speaking, he had squinted his eyes, releasing a fierce glint.

“Are you both schoolmates?” Tang Tian asked curiously.

“We are not.” Nie Qiu’s voice was gently and determined.

“No!” Zhong Li Bai’s tone was unkind.

“This subordinate hails from Lionheart, Zhong Li Bai comes from Raging Inferno Academy. Both academies are in an intense competition.” Nie Qiu spoke with his gentle voice.

“Archenemies!” Li Zhong Bai snorted, releasing a cold intent.

Tang Tian understood, and felt that it had become interesting.

He scratched his chin and looked at them, and suddenly asked: “Do you guys wish to go to the Sacred Saint Galaxy or stay in Heaven’s Road?”

“This subordinate wishes to head to the Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

“The Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

The both of them answered at the same time. They were both intelligent people, and knew that the current Ursa Major Constellation’s structure had already formed earlier on, while the Sacred Saint Galaxy was still an unknown. Furthermore, they were both curious about the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

“The road to Sacred Saint Galaxy is dangerous.” Tang Tian reminded the two of them.

“The profession of a military general is dangerous from the start.” Nie Qiu said.

“Not a problem.” Zhong Li Bai said indifferently.

Tang Tian cut to the chase: “Then let us establish the martial spirit contract.”

He decided to let Bing assess the two of them.

Both of them heaved a sigh of relief in their hearts, they were most worried about Tang Tian’s unease with them. If the boss is uneasy with you, it means that you will forever be unable to obtain true support, and to a military general, the result was catastrophic. They had initially wanted to fight in the big war, without any other intentions, and the martial spirit contract which could not be betrayed quickly earned them the trust.

The two of them quickly established the martial spirit contract with Tang Tian without hesitation.

“Go and rest, we will move out in two days.”

Han Bing Ning was focused, her body as still as a boulder, her gaze never away from the sword tip. The grey flames on the sword tip seemed to be frozen, flickering at an extremely slow rate, fine and minute frost was quickly forming on Han Bing Nin’s eyelashes,

the indifferent frost infecting her eyebrows.

In the distance, Liang Qiu squatted, with a thin layer of grey flames around his ten fingers, he had a solemn expression, his ten fingers seemed to be holding heavy balls, slowly moving around, his entire body drenched in perspiration.

Ah Mo Li's eyes were enraged, the muscles all over his body tensed up, as though his clothes were about to be ripped, the grey flames on the blade's body danced all around, with every step, he would roar and slash, every step seemed to be able to move mountains, every roar was like claps of thunder, every blade forming gales.

Sima Xiang Shan was like a shadow, flying all around the training ground, his body brought forth a faint grey figure, the initially fleeting figure, resembled a specter, very yin and unfathomable.

These grey flames were the [Tiny Null Flames] that they had grasped, the talent of the Zero Energy Bodies.

They had initially wanted to call it [Null Flame], but Tang Tian had already used the name. And their might could not be compared to Null Flames, since inside the Null Flame existed in the Devil Flame. As it resembled a weaker version of the Null Flames, they had thus named it Tiny Null Flame.

Although the flames were not as tyrannical as Null Flame, the might of the Tiny Null Flames were shocking. The most direct

reflection would be its ability to defend against a saints' spirit techniques, and if struck by the Tiny Null Flames, it would be even more terrible, it had the effects of destroying energy, and permeating into the target's body, destroying the target's high concentration of energy. Even saints would be heavily injured upon taking a strike, as a saint's body's concentration of energy was even higher.

Han Bing Ning and the rest were hailed as the Null Division.

The current members of the Null Division had reached 2000, mostly consisting of Gold Rank Martial Artists who had completed the reducing energy transformation. After a long time, the Null Division were at a loss, the Zero Energy Bodies were powerful, but no one knew of the training after that. And after Tang Tian grasped the [Null Flame], Han Bing Ning and the rest created the [Tiny Null Flame] according to Tang Tian's experience. The Null Division's strength thus gained another metamorphosis.

The Null Division had always been going through the training style of armies, and other than not having a general, the Null Division had no difference from a standard army. Han Bing Ning and the rest did not think about building an army before, but after that, they felt that their use would be to assume strong offenses for the armies, operating as vanguards and such.

By going through the army training, it helped them assimilate better into armies.

'Ding ding ding', the bell for the end of training sounded out like a Heavenly chime. 'Plop plop', all the tired people dropped their

butts on the ground, all of them fell down, and only Han Bing Ning remained standing with her sword, gasping for breath and closing her eyes to recuperate.

Howls of anguish from the nearby training grounds sounded out, causing everyone to inhale in cold breaths. But very quickly, everyone plunged into a state of silence, it was their last training before moving out.

Normally, all of them hated training, but at the moment it did not feel that terrible, but instead they all felt a sense of reluctance.

They were about to enter into battle, and it was impossible for them to train so relaxingly. Everyone laid on the ground, watching the sky, enjoying the silence.

Ten minutes later, everyone had caught their breath and recovered slightly, the lingering sense of reluctance disappeared, replaced by curiousness.

“I wonder what the Sacred Saint Galaxy is like.” Sima Xiang Shan muttered.

“Could Xiao Shan Shan be scared?” Ah Mo Li Scoffed, and raised an eyebrow towards Sima Xiang Shan.

“Crazy.” Sima Xiang Shan rolled his eyes at Ah Mo Li, it was not intellectual to get into a scuffle with him.

“I am slightly nervous.” Liang Qiu laughed, he could not conceal his emotions: “I heard that the people of the Sacred Saint Galaxy are born saints, I never thought that there would be such a terrifying place in the world.”

Everyone’s faces were unwell, The saints in Heaven’s Road were existences at the peak of the pyramid, but in the Sacred Saint Galaxy, it was a norm. The thought of a sea of saints caused everyone to feel the pressure.

“What’s there to be afraid of!” Ah Mo Li said unhappily: “Isn’t Crazy Tang strutting around there? I want to go too! I want them to see the heroes of the Ursa Major Constellation!”

“Heroes of the Ursa Major Constellation? You have such a big face!” Sima Xiang Shan sneered in ridicule.

“Are you saying my face is big?” Ah Mo Li became enraged: “You want to fight?”

“You think by fighting, your face will become smaller? Face full of fat!”

“Face full of fat....I’m going to kill you.....”

Hearing Ah Mo Li and Sima Xiang Shan fighting intensely, Han Bing Ning slowly opened her eyes. The crystal eyes that was pure and limpid, refracted the rays of the sun.

I am finally able to fight alongside you.

Chapter 680 – Unexpected Guest

Before they left, Tang Tian brought in an unexpected guest.

With soft and curly natural brown hair, the young man's refined face had a neutral look, as though he had not fully matured and had not gotten rid of his childishness. He resembled an obedient young man, but he was able to play with the Clan Unions in the palm of his hands, and from it, he took one step and sat down as the Scorpio King. With a series of tricks that caused rivers of blood to flow, his exquisite checks and balances brought Scorpio Constellation into his palm.

Assimilating all the unique spirit general devouring and merging techniques of the Clan Union, he unearthed the potential of a constellation of the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, the fallen Scorpio Constellation, in his hands, gradually revived, and started to radiate with the radiance of a true 12 Ecliptic Palace Constellation. The Scorpio Constellation became stronger and stronger with each passing day, allowing its influence on Heaven's Road to expand. In the entire Scorpio Constellation, they had long forgotten of the terrible days, and started to call out for the young Scorpio King.

By his side was his inseparable senior brother, Qiu Zhi Jun. Dressed in casual white robes, his black hair was draped over his shoulders, his pale white appearance made him seem as though a wind was enough to blow him away. But no one dared to look down on this seemingly weak young man, he was Sima Xiao's sharpest blade, the Great Baptism of the Scorpio Constellation, half of it was executed by him.

The two men with the most authority of Scorpio Constellation.

Sima Xiao's sudden visitation surprised Tang Tian, the both of them did not have the best of relations, and in truth, were actually enemies. To the youth who was an expert in trickeries and plots, Tang Tian did not have any good sense from him, furthermore, he did not believe that the other party would have any good sense of himself.

“I am here for the Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

Sima Xiao got right to the point without concealing anything.

“If I am not wrong, you have intentionally sent out the information, that means there is some trouble you have encountered in the Sacred Saint Galaxy and you require the combined forces of the entire Heaven's Road to defend yourself in the Sacred Saint Galaxy. Although there was some unhappiness between the both of us previously, but we do not have any benefits in conflict. Even if you have inherited the banners of Southern Cross Army, the grievances with the Scorpio Constellation should have already dissipated. You do not need to doubt our sincerity, you can state your conditions.”

Tang Tian did not expect Sima Xiao's eyes to be so sharp, he had just released the information on the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but Sima Xiao had already guessed the intentions behind it.

The bravery needed to come up to the frontlines alone, was truly admirable.

Ignoring the declining Aries Constellation or Taurus Constellation, even the stable and mature other Ecliptic Palaces, the young Scorpio Constellation was displaying extraordinary vigor and bravery, somewhat similar to the Ursa Major Constellation. Tang Tian did not know how to describe the quality of it, but it made him feel intimate and familiar to them.

There isn't anything bad about working with Scorpio Constellation, as what Sima Xiao has said, we do not have any benefits to be in conflict.

But, what conditions should I raise?

Tang Tian was racking his brains, thinking carefully, causing a slight headache.

Sima Xiao was not in a rush, he casually sipped on his tea but secretly heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. Tang Tian did not reject instantly, it means that there truly is a play at hand. As long as there is one, regardless of what price, he would not mind. Other people were still suspicious and in doubt of the existence of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, but he had already seen it, taking the first step in the opening of the Sacred Saint Galaxy could profit endlessly in the future.

The structure of the Heaven's Road had already been stabilized for a long time, and even the progenitors, the Honorable Martial Group, did not dare to take over and annex other constellations.

There was no more space for expansion in Heaven's Road, and to the ambitious Sima Xiao, it was the most depressing thing. With the appearance of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, it immediately made him arouse interest, and after correctly guessing Tang Tian's intentions, he personally stepped forward without hesitation.

Holding the waterway to the Sacred Saint Galaxy in his hands, Tang Tian already held the boundless advantage for the future, as long as the waterway did not change hands, this advantage was not something anyone could try to take over.

And what if they failed to defend the waterway? Sima Xiao had already scrutinized and researched all the battles Tang Tian had been involved in, and made a conclusion, that Tang Tian and his people never made mistakes in the crux of battles. Tang Tian and his people were extraordinarily acute when it came to strategizing the crucial points, with extraordinary courage and decisiveness.

He did not believe that the Ursa Major Constellation's higher ups would make such a stupid mistake.

If he could not be the first, he would be the second, awaiting for the opportunity.

In truth, although it was not in line with Sima Xiao's ambitions, but the Scorpio King's ambitiousness and ruthless character was at the moment a rising popularity with the people, it was something that once something goes wrong, he would always be able to maximize his own benefits.

Since I am unable to compete to occupy the advantages for the future, then I will reduce my disadvantage as much as possible.

Qiu Zhi Jun did not speak at all, he had been observing Tang Tian from the start. To him, his junior brother was already a genius that appeared once every few hundred years, with all of his sky and cloud toppling methods, many heroes were played into the hands of his junior brother.

But, in Heaven's Road, there was one person that had always pressured his junior brother, and that was Tang Tian who was right in front of him thinking.

From his slow responses, he could tell that Tang Tian could not compete with his junior brother, if it was his junior brother, as long as the other party finished speaking, he would already have his answers and counterattacks prepared.

Tang Tian frowned very deeply, as though he was racking his brains. Qiu Zhi Jun did not understand how a seemingly unintelligent person like him was able to lay down a foundation with his bare hands, and pressure his junior brother.

Tang Tian completely ignored their gazes as he thought and calculated in his mind.

In truth, the current political situation was linked in countless ways, becoming vague and unclear, and to Tang Tian, it was truly a ball of mess. He was doing his best to calm himself down, What is the most important problem that I have to resolve now?

The Honorable Martial Group!

Tang Tian effortlessly came up with the conclusion, That's right, the Honorable Martial Group! Tang Tian's eyes gleamed with a fierce look, with the Scorpio Constellation joining their ranks to defeat the Honorable Martial Group, it was simply giving tiger wings.

Sima Xiao himself is a military general, to be able to rise above the rest in the Clan Union, that was because of his dazzling military achievements.

In terms of strength, the Scorpio Constellation would undoubtedly make them stronger, but if news of it were to leak out and the Honorable Martial Group were to get wind of it, then all the planning before would be pointless.

Sima Xiao was good at reading faces, he immediately noticed the change in Tang Tian's expression, and knew that there was a reason that made Tang Tian hesitate.

What reason can it be?

Countless of thoughts flashed past his mind, he kept on thinking, and noticed that at the most tense and crucial period, Tang Tian was hesitating!

Why is Tang Tian hesitating? Are the conditions not

satisfactory?

~No, nothing has been made, but Tang Tian is already hesitating, that means it has nothing to do with the value. But Tang Tian is not rejecting, which means that this suggestion has moved him.

~But what can make Tang Tian hesitate even before setting the conditions?~

Sima Xiao's eyes suddenly shrunk, Tang Tian and the rest must be planning something, if not, he would definitely not hesitate! The matters that they are planning in the shadows must be extremely important, to the point that Tang Tian is worrying and complicating the issue.

Yes, it must be like that!

But what can be so important?

Sima Xiao realized that he had missed out the most important part, but there were a plethora of things to tackle, and it was not easy for him to think at the moment, he needed Tang Tian to speak out first before he could express his attitude, if not, if Tang Tian rejects him, the matter would go back to where he first started.

“If you have any worries, I am willing to act as a hostage.”

Sima Xiao threw himself on the table without hesitation.

Qiu Zhi Jun's face changed, he wanted to stop Sima Xiao, but saw him raise his hands.

Sima Xiao stared at Tang Tian: "Godlike young lad, do not doubt my good faith. I heard that the Ursa Major Constellation has many mystical places, and I plan to stay here for the time being. Regardless of what actions your side has to take, our Scorpio Constellation will be your assistant. Our Scorpio Constellation has the sincerity and the ability to help the Ursa Major Constellation."

Tang Tian looked at Sima Xiao in surprise, he never thought that Sima Xiao's decision would be so determined, and did not hesitate to throw himself as a hostage to dispel all apprehensions on him.

This guy, is a gambler!

But Tang Tian felt admiration and respect for him.

Tang Tian suddenly had a brazen idea: "Recently, I want to go into the Sacred Saint Galaxy to look around, what about it, are you interested?"

Bringing this lunatic into the Sacred Saint Galaxy will be a good idea.

Qiu Zhi Jun's face changed again, if his junior brother stayed in the Ursa Major Constellation as a hostage, if anything were to happen, he could at least attempt to save him. But if his junior

brother were to enter the Sacred Saint Galaxy, then the Scorpio Constellation would be pulled by the nose without any grounds to resist.

Sima Xiao remained neutral and laughed: “Such an opportunity is hard to come by. I am truly curious of the Sacred Saint Galaxy!”

Qiu Zhi Jun knew that the matter had come to an end, and he was helpless to change it, so he spoke out: “I wonder if you can bring an additional person? This subordinate is curious about the Sacred Saint Galaxy as well.”

Sima Xiao looked at his senior brother apologetically: “Senior brother, the Scorpio Constellation still needs you to take care of it, if senior brother is not there, I am afraid Scorpio will not be able to stand firm.”

Qiu Zhi Jun was beyond helpless, and remained quiet. If the two of them were to disappear at the same time, the Scorpio Constellation would truly be in danger. And he knew for himself that his weight could never be comparable to his junior brother, and was unable to replace him.

He was filled with worries, but Tang Tian’s prestige had always been extremely good, and there was never once that he heard that they would willfully slaughter the innocent.

Compared to them, I am truly the butcher with blood on my hands.

Qiu Zhi Jun laughed bitterly in his mind, but he did not regret. Furthermore, as long as he held the Scorpio Constellation tightly, his junior brother would always be safe. No one dared to think of what would happen if an Ecliptic Constellation disregarded all consequences and did what they wanted.

Since it was already concluded, Tang Tian did not hide it from them: “We will be dealing with the Honorable Martial Group!”

Sima Xiao and Qiu Zhi Jun’s heart shook, but the both of them revealed their expressions shortly. In truth, it was nothing strange for the Ursa Major Constellation to want deal with the Honorable Martial Group, but Sima Xiao did not think that Tang Tian would choose such a time to tell them.

In theory, it was not a good time to be the enemies of the Honorable Martial Group. As time progresses, the battle between the Leo Constellation and the Honorable Martial Group will cause the Honorable Martial Group to be even weaker. And the Major Constellation that was allying with other constellations would become even stronger, that was the best time to strike.

The Ursa Major Constellation must definitely have a reason to want to make a move against the Honorable Martial Group.

Sima Xiao did not want to think further, he heaved a sigh of relief, although they were once closer to the side of the Honorable Martial Group, but to them, they were not considered allies.

And the Honorable Martial Group is the biggest powerhouse, if

they were to participate in the campaign to the Sacred Saint Galaxy, they will definitely want the bigger piece of the pie.

Since it is so, we must get rid of them!

A fierce gleam flashed past Sima Xiao's eyes. He stood up.

“You can count on Scorpio Constellation for this!”

Chapter 681 – The Gold Continent

“Be alert, once more!”

De Xing’s powerful voice sounded out in the training grounds. He had a tall and sturdy stature, and was also considerably down to earth because he came from an ordinary family, making him naturally approachable to the soldiers. Regardless of whether it was training or battle, he would always be in the lead, fighting alongside everybody else, he never took the superior ground, and was deeply respected and loved by the soldiers.

In the Southern Region, the Rainbow Continent had an above average strength, although its location was superior, they did not have the qualifications to become a core member of the Southern Region.

The current Southern Alliance had expanded to become a major figure, with 32 continents involved, it had already become the biggest collaboration body of the Southern Region. Stimulated by the Southern Alliance, many other continents of the Southern Region started to form up together, and countless alliances were formed. But, the Southern Alliance was still the biggest alliance in the Southern Region, and unexpectedly, when other alliances were slowly expanding, the Southern Alliance closed off their applications.

To the outside, the Southern Alliance was conducting a series of reforms, after the reforms were completed, there would be no further acceptance of new members.

The Rainbow Continent's higher ups had always been pragmatic, they knew that other than their prime location, the Rainbow Continent did not have any other advantages, and they were much weaker than the others. And in truth, after the establishment of the Southern Alliance, even their advantage in their location became pointless, and if the Southern Alliance wanted to kick the Rainbow Continent out, they would not dare to launch an attack on the Pontoon Bridge.

Amongst the core members of the Southern Alliance, the Rainbow Continent was the most cooperative towards the Shang Continent's army reforms. They had sent out almost all of their armies, and only left behind the Southern Rainbow Army commanded by De Xing.

But the result shocked the higher ups, the Southern Rainbow Army was not the strongest army of the Rainbow Continent, but Bing chose it.

To be able to hold the position as a commander of an army after being born as a commoner, De Xing naturally walked an extremely long and arduous path. But he was extremely sharp towards opportunities. He did not have any queries or rejections towards Bing's requests, and did everything as asked.

From the lowest ranked soldier, he took a step at a time up the rank ladder, and finally obtained the commander position at 45 years old. De Xin did not have much talent, but he was mature and firm with a strong standard. After interacting with star treasures for a short moment of time, he was immediately attracted to it.

I never thought that there would be a day, the extravagant spirit objects, oh, they call it the star treasures, would assimilate and be equipped into my army. Just as other armies were still skeptical about it, the Southern Rainbow Army was already training according to Bing's plans.

The Southern Rainbow Army quickly rose above the rest in the military reform, obtaining Bing's trust.

When the training ended, all the tired soldiers got the chance to rest and did so, but not De Xing, he needed to always report back questions and feedback to Master Bing.

Bing would earnestly listen to De Xing's reports. While training earlier, he stood at the side to observe, and already had answers to some questions, but needed time to slowly polish up the answers for the other questions.

Any new forces added into the army, how to be able to unleash its full potential, how to allow the soldiers to be utilized well, all of these tactics and problems could not be solved with just a smack on the head.

Bing knew of this, so he did not enforce in controlling everything, but firstly fumbled about in small scale groups.

From the current looks of it, the entire progress could not make everybody happy. Bing realised that the problem he was facing was the unprecedented complications in the future. The core members, the White Sands Continent, the Bai Family, the Rainbow

Continent, were more proactive, while the Yuan Continent, the Ming Continent, and the Li Hai Continent were much more passive. The Xu Ji Worldwide Commerce, being a weapons trading company, did not show any interests in the army.

But the White Sands Continent was still in its recovery stage and was not able to provide much strength. Bai Yue was interested in the military reform, but the Bai Family was too far away, and the army still needed a few more days to arrive.

Out of all the core members, the temporarily most compatible army was from the Rainbow Continent.

Compared to the passive members, the other 24 continents of the Southern Alliance actually had some responses. All of these continents were smaller in power and much weaker, but Bing managed to pick four armies from them.

The Yuan Continent Army of the Yuan Continent, the White Army of Center Park Continent, the Red Dragon Army of the Great Dragon Continent and the Young North Village Regiment of North Base Continent.

The selection of these four armies instigated ridicule amongst many. These four armies, other than the Yuan Continent Army which was still rather known, no one had heard of the other three armies before. Let it be that they might be unknown, but one of them was even a village regiment!

Was it a joke?

Everyone had heard of the Precious Bright Village Regiment of the Shang Continent, but the majority treated it as a joke and never saw it as true. To personally witness Bing choosing a village regiment, the spectating continents all felt that Bing was messing around.

Especially the Ming Continent, the Yuan Continent, and the Li Hai Continent, the three of them were eagerly wanting to mock Bing. When they joined the Southern Alliance, they were initially not very willing, but it was the Shang Continent's forceful behavior, along with Tang Tian's ferocious methods that shook them, and adding the immense benefits, they finally chose to join in.

But in their hearts, they still had restraining fears towards the Shang Continent.

They were eager to watch how much Bing could joke about, if the plan failed, it proved that it was a huge joke, and would become a huge attack on the Shang Continent's prestige. A leader with insufficient prestige was an opportunity to others.

The armies that were not chosen felt extremely bitter. Only the chosen armies had the opportunity to equip spirit objects. The various continents knew the usage and power of spirit objects, but they were too valuable and expensive, and unable to be used in wars. In any place, the spirit objects could be sold for extravagant prices!

In time, all sort of rumors started to spread in the Southern Alliance.

Bing acted as if he never heard of them, and placed all of his time in the armies. To someone who had seen everything, all these small matters were pointless. He was a strategist, and clearly understood pros and cons, so he knew that as long as he won, he could change everything.

But before that, he only needed to keep to his routine and implement his plans, and transform these armies into elites.

As long as he had 5 elite armies, the Shang Continent's control over the Southern Alliance would increase, and that time would be the true decisive transformation. As to his ability to train armies, Bing had definite self confidence.

In the midst of the suspicions and ridicule, the five armies started to test our brand new tactics.

The five armies were not from any big continents, or held high positions in their continents, and naturally had low self esteem. They cherished opportunities more, although it was a bumpy road, but they still gave it their all to train.

Bing gave it his all, and in half a month, the situation had changed for the better. Bing believed that he only needed half a year for the strength of the five armies to surprise everyone.

Furthermore, his enemy was also well versed in strategies.

Lady Rou looked at the report in her hand, her expression was calm, but the hall was silent, and all the military generals standing straight could feel a formless pressure on them.

The Lady had already read the report for ten minutes, and had not spoken a word. The delicate face did not have the usual charm and gentleness, but was releasing a cold might, causing all the military generals to stand extremely straight, their eyes staring at their noses, they did not even dare to breathe loudly.

“I never expected that they would have come to the Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

Lady Rou’s mutters was like the autumn breeze bringing along an unspeakable killing intent. She raised her head, her beautiful face appeared in everyone’s vision, only for them to realise that those beautiful eyes were actually shining like the stars.

“What I am going to say next, is the deepest and most delicate secret of the Honorable Martial Continent. Those not willing to participate can choose to leave this meeting.”

Everyone’s heart froze, but no one moved.

Lady Rou revealed a satisfied look: “Very good, all of you did not

disappoint me. For this plan, the Honorable Martial Continent has already worked hard at it for 500 years.”

Everyone’s heart shook.

On a black mountain range that penetrated through the clouds, there were densely packed mechanical spirit puppets travelling back and forth like ants. All of these mechanical spirit puppets were extremely strange and queer. Some of them dragged large cloaks filled with ores, whimpering as they moved. Some resembled insects, easily drilling into the sand and every time they resurfaced, they would spit out ores. And there were some that had extremely large stomachs, that would heat up and produce steam, and with a loud bang inside the stomach, the ores would be shattered into powder in their bellies.

This was the Gold Continent, the land where mechanical techniques were the most advanced, and such things were a norm.

The usage of mechanical puppets had reached an astronomical level in the Gold Continent.

Xiao Yao looked at the burning grounds, although he had seen it many times, but every time he saw it, he would be overwhelmed with emotions. The power of mechanical techniques always had that effect on others.

But he did not slow down, he needed to return as quick as possible.

The scene of the ore mine beneath him gave him some strength, lessening the fatigue in his body. Two days later, he finally reached the Mountain Pass City.

The Mountain Pass City was the Gold Continent's capital city, and was the most flourishing city of the Eastern Region. High rise bronze buildings were densely packed together, it was a bronze forest. Many mechanic puppets of different shapes and sizes flew in the air, like the birds of a forest.

Xiao Yao did not stop, he flew directly to the highest black structure, which was different from the bronze structures. This black structure's highest floor was pitch black, made from a unique metal, the structure looked like a crow's head.

This was the most prestigious structure and the famous mark of Gold Continent, the Black Crow Building.

It was made to commemorate the Gold Continent's Saint Creature, [Black Crow]. Gold Continent's mechanical techniques origin stemmed from the Saint Creature [Black Crow], in which when the ancestors were exploring, they chanced upon an unknown mechanical puppet remains of the Black Crow. Although this saint creature was badly damaged, it gave the ancestors of the Gold Continent enormous enlightenment, and from there they expanded on the Gold Continent's unique mechanic techniques.

The descendants later built the Black Crow building as an indication to never forget their origins.

It was said that the saint creature was placed inside the building, but the Black Crow Building never publicly announced it, and being the most heavily guarded location, whether the rumors were true or false, no one could determine it.

After inspecting and verifying Xiao Yao's identity, the patrolling soldiers brought Xiao Yao in.

Chapter 682 – Then, Bring It On!

“The little brat is here.”

“Are you sure?”

“Don’t forget, No one is more familiar to the Southern Cross Army’s scent than me. When you left it to that brat, wasn’t it for the sake of letting him find this place?”

“That’s right, but, you have to know, even if I were to do it again, who knows if I can reach the Sacred Saint Galaxy.”

“Like father, like son!”

“No, I was thinking that he must have endured countless of hardship on his way here. I have promised my wife to take good care of him. If she who is in Heaven knows about what I did, she will come and take my life.”

“The one to wear the crown must bear its weight.”

“.....your arts and literature, seem to have gotten better?”

“You want to fight?”

“You must be the real Gemini Constellation, you change faces so quickly!”

“Don’t bullshit with me, let’s fight!”

“To talk about fighting.....you must truly be bored, relax, we will be busy soon enough.”

“I’m truly looking forward to it.”

When everyone’s eyes were attracted to the Sacred Saint Galaxy items auction held in Bear Head City, a team quietly arrived at the Wu An Star.

“I never thought that the waterway would actually be here.” Sima Xiao was enlightened. The Wu An Star had been under Ursa Major Constellation’s control for a long time, but no one felt it weird, and no one ever stopped Tang Tian from obtaining the Wu An Star.

The Wu An Star was just a sideline planet with thin energy and no produce, it was not worth occupying. Everyone thought that Tang Tian had decided to take over the Wu An Star because it was his hometown. Even the Honorable Martial Group, a sworn enemy, would not fight Tang Tian because of that.

The Godlike young lad’s method to resolve the problem was extremely cruel, and that was to directly start a war.

This tyrannical, murderous ruler of the Ursa Major Constellation did not seem the least bit political and intellectual, they only used one method to solve problems, starting wars. If they were unhappy, they fought, if there were disputes, they fought, if there were conflicting views, they fought.....

It was because the Ursa Major Constellation's fighting ability was so powerful to the point of frightful that they won in every battle.

Everyone could only obediently keep quiet towards this powerful explosive. No one dared to even tread lightly, if the explosives were to explode, it would not be good for anybody.

Sima Xiao glanced at Tang Tian, the seemingly brute person was in truth not as stupid as what people thought. He had never underestimated Tang Tian, but in truth, in all of his opponents, Tang Tian was definitely ranked top three.

But now, he had to admit that he was still underestimating Tang Tian. Under the brutal and explosive actions, there were always hidden motives, truly an unfathomable and cunning person.

Sima Xiao quickly noticed the tense atmosphere in Wu An Star, and immediately realised: "You want to fight against the Honorable Martial Group here?"

Nie Qiu and Zhong Li Bai who were by Tang Tian's side both had a look of surprise in their eyes, the two remained silent for a moment before revealing expressions of enlightenment.

Sima Xiao's sharpness also caused Tang Tian to be surprised, he did not reply but returned with a question: "How did you tell?"

Although Tang Tian did not directly answer him, but his words gave Sima Xiao the confirmation to his guess.

"Because there are slightly too many armies here." Sima Xiao explained: "Although I have not truly seen the layout of your armies, but I feel that the defense on the outside is placed more heavily than the inside. If you are talking about defending the place, then you should do the opposite. You said that you have a plan too, so it is easy to guess."

Nie Qiu and Zhong Li Bai opened their eyes wide as they looked at Sima Xiao in shock. The both of them also vaguely felt the feeling that Sima Xiao had talked about, but the two of them never thought so far out.

He is more outstanding than us.

This conclusion was a heavy strike towards the two proud men. Even in the Leo Constellation where fearsome generals were everywhere, the two of them reckoned that they would not lose to anyone, but after arriving in the Ursa Major Constellation, they felt even more arrogant. Comparing military generals, the Ursa Major Constellation was still far from the Leo Constellation.

Along the journey, Tang Tian also gave them the responsibility of drilling the Null Division. Han Bing Ning and the rest might be fearsome and strong, but they were not qualified to be military

generals.

It was the first time the two of them interacted with Zero Energy Bodies, and this brand new power system surprised them, at the same time causing them to be excited. Old and mediocre military generals only wished for the usual things, and despised new things. But to the young and ambitious Nie Qiu and Zhong Li Bai who wanted to build up themselves, it was undoubtedly a feast.

They were prepared to do hard work.

But following their immersion, their raging hearts slowly went silent, becoming ice cold. Because they realised that the Null Division's training plan was much more outstanding than the ones they had thought of.

They were speechless.

The two of them felt like they were laughable, previously thinking that with their strength, they could command an army without a problem upon entering the Ursa Major Constellation. But the reality was cruel as they found out that they could not even compete with a training plan. The Null Division's own training plan was perfect and flawless in their eyes. They were ready to change some of the minute details that were seemingly incompatible, but as they were cautious, they thought about it carefully.

They would realise after a while that all those seemingly incompatible details had profound meanings behind them.

Expert!

The entire training plan reeked of a true expert.

In the short silence, the archenemies decided to work together. But the status quo stayed the same, other than huddling with each other, they did not know of what to do.

If they could not even complete the very first task that Tang Tian had given them, then their achievements would simply be unrealistic dreams. The two proud youths could definitely not tolerate it.

The two of them racked their brains and discussed all day and night, with 120% of their concentration, far more than what they had put in for their exams. In the entire thought process, even though they had an intense quarrel, but there were some results. The two of them managed to formulate a vague plan, although it was not satisfying, but at least it did not look bad.

When the two of them handed over their plan nervously to Tang Tian, Tang Tian actually had new found respect for them.

There were not many changes in the plan, but Tang Tian could see that the two of them had spent a lot of efforts to optimize it. To be able to change Bing's determined training plans proved their worth and strength.

Tang Tian then let Han Bing Ning and the rest test out their new training plan.

The two of them became more honest with each other, and on the road they did everything conscientiously, causing the Null Division's fighting ability to rise to another level.

But they were still struck a blow in front of the perverse Sima Xiao. They did not know him, and only felt that this boy next door was unfathomable.

Are there truly many perverts in the Ursa Major Constellation?

The two of them looked at each other.

"That's right." Tang Tian did not hide: "The Honorable Martial Group will definitely investigate and find out that the waterway is in Wu An Star, I do not doubt that at all. I feel that this is an extremely good opportunity."

Sima Xiao laughed: "Of course it is. But, this formation is too obvious, if even I can sense it out, i bet those old fogies in the Honorable Martial Group will definitely sense it."

"That's true." Tang Tian scratched his chin, Sima Xiao's warning immediately made him notice his shortfall.

~If the Honorable Martial Group were to invade, they will naturally launch sneak attacks, and might sense the ambush. But

what about the Temple? This is such an important place, the Temple will definitely send out their strongest experts.

~Gold Rank Saints!~

Tang Tian's breathing became rapid.

That's right, the Temple will definitely dispatch their Gold Rank Saints! In front of saints, whatever ambushes were pointless.

"The Temple has the most number of Gold Saints." Sima Xiao laughed, his tone was casual, but the light aura in his eyes were ruthless.

Gold Saints, the strongest saints, holding unfathomable destructive abilities.

So far, regardless of whether it was the Honorable Martial Group or the that was fighting with the Leo Constellation, they had never mobilized their Gold Saints. This was because the Leo Constellation also had their own Gold Saint, Lion King Lei Ang! Other than that, the Sagittarius Empress was also a Gold Saint.

The Temple did not dare plunge themselves into a war between Gold Saints.

But the Ursa Major Constellation did not have any Gold Saints, furthermore, the strategic significance of the waterway to the Sacred Saint Galaxy was too overwhelming. Even if it was the Leo

Constellation protecting the Wu An Star, the Temple would definitely still launch attacks.

So Sima Xiao was curious, what would Tang Tian do? His gaze never left Tang Tian's face, but he could not see any panic in Tang Tian.

He was not afraid of his own safety. As long as he did not step out of line, regardless if it was the Temple or the Ursa Major Constellation, no one would make it difficult for him. He had the Scorpio Constellation as his backing, because of his senior brother Qiu Zhi Jun.

When Tang Tian realised that he was most probably going to face against Gold Saints, no, he knew for certain that the Temple would mobilize the Gold Saints! Not because of the strategic importance of the waterway to Sacred Saint Galaxy, but for the Honorable Martial Continent!

As long as they broke through the waterway between the Sacred Saint Galaxy and Heaven's Road, the Honorable Martial Continent's great army would pour into Heaven's Road like a tide, engulfing and trampling over the entire Heaven's Road.

But Tang Tian was not afraid.

After so many battles, he knew that there was no use of fear and panic. Furthermore.....

It was as if there was a beast that was slumbering inside of him that had awakened, he was extremely eager. His current strength far exceeded that of his latest battle. In the Sacred Saint Galaxy, even a one on one was already unable to make him feel excited.

Gold Saints, the legendary grade.

That is the best opponent for me!

How exciting will that be!

Tang Tian licked his lips, his eyes were burning with fire, he was thinking, If Little Xu Xu knows that I have the opportunity to fight with Gold Saints, he will definitely be so jealous that he will be enraged!

“How many Gold Saints does the Temple have?” Tang Tian suddenly asked.

A light aura flashed past Sima Xiao's eyes, This guy's determination.....

But he did not falter in replying: “They should have a maximum of five.”

He then explained his reasoning: “If it was more than that, they would not be fighting with the Leo Constellation for so long, they will definitely not hesitate to directly destroy the Leo Constellation and destroy the 12 Ecliptic Palaces.”

“If that’s the case, then they will send about two or three of them.” The flames in Tang Tian’s eyes grew more intense.

Sima Xiao was not used to the fervent fighting intent leaking out of Tang Tian’s eyes, he subconsciously stepped back and said: “It should be two, they have a place that needs a person to stand guard. The remaining two will be for the Lion King and the Empress.”

“So that’s the case....”

Tang Tian muttered, his expression of fervent and fearlessness suddenly turned into a wide smile, revealing his pure white teeth.

“Then, bring it on!”

Chapter 683 – The Honorable Martial Constellation

Gold Saints, this name had a pressure of Mount Tai, causing people to choke and be unable to breath.

The atmosphere in the Wu An Star was as heavy as lead, the recently transferred over Saint Unit were in preparation, even the usually leisure Tang Chou had a solemn expression. If Tang Tian's conjecture were to truly happen, it meant that all of their arrangements had to be pushed over.

No one felt that using their methods to fight against a standard army was able to fight against Gold Saints.

No one knew how strong a Gold Saint was, and thus the pressure was naturally unprecedented.

Different from how others were feeling, Tang Tian was brimming with fighting spirit, like a wild beast brimming with the thirst to fight to show off its strength.

Although they did not receive any reports, but Tang Tian was sure that the Gold Saints would find them, because the matter was too important.

He patiently awaited for the arrival of his enemies.

While the entire Heaven's Road was fixated on the auction in the Ursa Major Constellation, the Aquarius King was worried.

He rubbed his temple: "Have you investigated it?"

The Chancellor of the Guards smiled bitterly: "Nope, when the target died, there were no movements. He was killed by some sort of blade, and when he was killed, no one sensed it at all."

"How do I account to the Honorable Martial Group?" The aged Aquarius King said helplessly.

A clan elder of the Honorable Martial Group that had participated in the Aquarius Palace banquet was murdered, and upon being discovered, he was long dead.

The Aquarius King was glad that everyone's eyes were stuck to the Ursa Major Constellation, if not, this matter would definitely shake Heaven's Road, and the Aquarius Constellation would be covered in dirt.

The Chancellor of the Guards hesitated: "We suspect that the murderer was the target's acquaintance, if not, with the target's strength, no one could kill him so silently. Could it be an internal strife of the Honorable Martial Group?"

"Do you think that reason can convince the Honorable Martial Group?" the Aquarius King's tone became unhappy.

The Honorable Martial Group had exerted a large pressure on him, and even sent out their army, and if Aquarius Constellation could not find the murderer, they would take action. The Aquarius King was clear that the other party was just expressing their stance. In history, there were many times that friction had occurred between the Honorable Martial Group and the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, but never once did they initiate an attack on any of them, other than the Leo Constellation.

To many outsiders, they believed that Lei Ang, with his bad temper, was the one to initiate and was responsible for the war between the Leo Constellation and the Honorable Martial Group.

The Chancellor of the Guards also knew that the Honorable Martial Group would not accept his suggestion, and said: “I think the Honorable Martial Group is just finding a way out of the situation, why don’t we look for a convict to bear the burden, then we will compensate them further.”

This solution made the Aquarius King satisfied, their thoughts were the same. The Aquarius Constellation and the Honorable Martial Group did not have any grievances, and they had worked together many times, especially in terms of trading and business.

The Aquarius King ordered: “Go and talk to them, no matter how much it requires, just pay it, do not complicate the issue.”

The human traffic was extremely flourishing, on one of the high

rise buildings that shot to the clouds everywhere, a roughly 30 year old man looked down at the crowd that resembled ants. If Jing Hao was here, he would recognize the man, he was Clan Elder An, the one who had recruited Jing Hao into the Honorable Martial Group in the past.

“Master, this is the Aquarius Constellation’s reply, they said....”

His subordinate stopped his report abruptly, seeing the Master raising his hand, he immediately swallowed his saliva.

“It doesn’t matter what the Aquarius Constellation reply.” The man did not even turn back, and muttered: “Lei Ang and the rest will believe that we will definitely attack the Ursa Major Constellation.”

The Clan Elder Ann revealed a faint smile, but this smile was not warm at all, but a formless pressure that would press down on people’s shoulders.

The current Honorable Martial Group was no longer as mighty and prestigious as the past.

The moment the Temple surfaced, it meant that the Honorable Martial Group had lost its control over the situation. The Temple, being the much stronger powerhouse, caused the Honorable Martial Group’s authority to drop drastically. The true reason for their heavy losses were consecutively losing to the Ursa Major Constellation.

The once Honorable Martial Group that was overflowing with power, was somewhat thinning out.

The authorities of the clan elders had lessened, but Clan Elder An was an exception. In the current situation, Clan Elder An went against the current and quietly rounded up a group of talents, causing his position to rise in the Honorable Martial Group, and he has already become the top person of the Honorable Martial Group.

“Temple is thinking of that as well, but I am going to advise them against it.”

Clan Elder An's words cause all his subordinates to reveal looks of reveration. The Temple had the superior position and all of the saints in there looked down on the rest, not even putting the Honorable Martial Group in their eyes, to be able to convince the Temple, only the Master had that kind of influence.

Calmly analyzing the situation, he unknowingly thought of the most crucial point, and after generously sharing it in the meeting, the wind blew in his favor.

After bitterly planning for over ten years, my plan is finally able to come to fruition.

He did not know how to express his own emotions, anticipation? Eager? But why is there a mix of fear in it?

What am I afraid of?

After calming himself down, he continued.

“I told the other masters, why the need to attack and occupy the Ursa Major Constellation? Just for that waterway? We do have one already, we just need 10 years, 10 years and ours will naturally open. If we were to fight the Ursa Major Constellation and seize the waterway, then we do not have any reason to stop the Great Army from coming in.”

His subordinates all showed suspicious expressions, because in their eyes, the mission of the Honorable Martial Group and the Temple was to welcome the Great Army. This reason, how could they convince the Temple and the other major figures?

ABut although Clan Elder An was young, he had a high authority, and although they harbored their suspicions, no one dared to say anything.

They got rid of their thoughts and calmed themselves, awaiting their Master to uncover the riddle.

“As long as we put in all our efforts, we can definitely seize their waterway. But if the Great Army comes, then what are we to do? At the moment, we have not taken down any constellation. Out of all the entire Heaven’s Road’s wealth, we only have a pitiful amount in our hands. What have we done? Nothing. We can only be left forgotten, the higher ups will just throw in a bit of tiny favors and grace to us, and leave us alone.”

All of his subordinates realized what he meant, and started nodding their heads.

~That's right! Master is right! If that's the case, they could understand their future. It was said that everyone in the Sacred Saint Galaxy were all saints. Just based on that point, it made everyone feel immense pressure.

“That's why we are here!” Clan Elder An turned and look at his subordinates, with a smear of berserk in his eyes: “Look at the ground beneath your feet! This is the wealthiest constellation of the entire Heaven's Road, it is said that they hold an eighth of the entire Heaven's Road wealth, how rich are they! As long as we take them down, the wealth will be ours! With that wealth, we can create even stronger armies, we can groom even more Gold Ranked Martial Artists, and we can do even more things.”

All of his subordinates were infected with his berserk, they started breathing rapidly, their eyes turning bloodshot and killing intent soaring into the sky.

“Money should be controlled by the Honorable Martial Group, the ancient 12 Ecliptic Palaces are already withering, we need to bring a new order into Heaven's Road, an order encompassing all of the Honorable Martial Group.”

Clan Elder An spoke slowly.

“Let's begin.”

All of his subordinates bowed and quietly left the room.

Clan Elder An stood by the window, looking out in a daze. He finally understood what his fear was, the hundred years of structure, would soon be completely destroyed, and everything was because of him. That strand of fear came from his enormous plan, and like a Pandora's Box, even he did not know what would appear after.

A man will be afraid of the unknown.

As chaos surfaced, amongst the intense shouts of murder, citizens all around were filled with fear and panic. All the guards who were caught unprepared were immediately plunged into confusion, in front of the elites of the Honorable Martial Group, they gave way at once.

The saints in the city flew into the sky, they were enraged, their killing intent soaring as well. But very quickly, their faces of rage completely disappeared, replaced with faces as white as paper.

Figure after figure gradually appeared in the sky, in all directions, they surrounded the saints.

The enemy saints were actually double theirs!

Clan Elder An who was on a high rise building watched the entire scene without any expression, his face void of happiness or smiles.

As flames emerged in front of him, it revealed the statue like face of his.

Anxious reports came one after another.

“Reporting! The garrison army was defeated, the captains and above are all killed.”

“Reporting! The Treasury is in our control!”

“Reporting! The Eight Great Aquarius Families are in our control!”

“Reporting! The Aquarius Palace has been surrounded, we are constraining all the leftover resistance!”

.....

Clan Elder An remained calm, the disturbance outside was not able to cause any ripples in his heart. The entire plan, was made completely by him, a plan to move the Temple.

In truth, when the Sacred Saint Galaxy had requested for them to investigate suspicious targets, Clan Elder An guessed that it was Tang Tian and the rest. After that, when the Ursa Major Constellation publicly announced the existence of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, it confirmed his conjectures. After that, Clan Elder An also judged, that the pathway they had was not truly broken through yet.

Because Tang Tian did not have a successful organized army.

Tang Tian, as the Bear King, had an unprecedented future, so how could he not have an army protecting him? It was not reasonable. Unless the waterway they had was not sufficient for a large group to move, and only in that situation was it possible for him to not have any army protecting him.

When the entire Honorable Martial Group and Temple's higher ups decided to send Gold Saints to attack the Ursa Major Constellation, Clan Elder An stood up and convinced the Temple. Despite knowing right from the start that the Ursa Major Constellation posed a bigger threat than the Leo Constellation, he endured it.

Because he saw the Temple's worries.

The Temple originated from the Honorable Martial Continent, but after 500 years, their founder had long passed away. In the entire Temple, all of them were Heaven's Road people, and towards the mysterious and foreign Sacred Saint Galaxy's Honorable Martial Continent, they became even more respectful. This reveration was formed through a long period, from the founder right from the start, and thus the and the Honorable Martial Group became the frontlines of the the Honorable Martial Continent Great Army, and generation after generation, they held this mission close to their hearts.

But, when the day was truly nearing, everyone in the Temple

realised that they were not prepared. How would the Honorable Martial Continent treat them? How would they treat Heaven's Road?

In their minds, the Honorable Martial Continent was just a symbol for them to be loyal to, they had no clue to how the real Honorable Martial Continent was, as no one had been there before.

When he saw that point, he found out that the major figures of the Temple were all feeling uneasy.

He began to incite the Temple, pushing out his long drawn plan.

And instead of handing the entire expedition over to the Honorable Martial Continent, why not put it in his own hands. Instead of having Heaven's Road submitting to the Honorable Martial Continent, it was more appropriate for the Heaven's Road people to govern the Heaven's Road, no matter how much they had to give in the end, they could still preserve a part for themselves. If it was still not enough, the more territories they attacked, the more achievements they would receive when it came to evaluating merits.

The majority of them in Temple were convinced by Clan Elder An, and they were used to being set up high in the organisation, and to having the final say. Deep in their hearts, they had the slight hope that the Honorable Martial Continent would not arrive. They could imagine about their lives in that future, and the position they were enjoying in the present that would be taken away, as they were merely sideline characters in the entire the Honorable Martial Continent.

For their intense uneasiness with their power, the Temple became silent for a period of time, and in unison they agreed to Clan Elder An's plan for the [Honorable Martial Constellation].

Clan Elder An, who obtained the support of the Temple, became the chief Clan Elder of the Honorable Martial Group, and the entire Honorable Martial Group became led by him, with him implementing the plan of [Honorable Martial Constellation]. Clan Elder An thus became the Honorable Martial Group's most powerful and famed Chief Clan Elder in its history.

To be able to move the Temple, Clan Elder naturally had his work for [Honorable Martial Constellation].

To him, other than the Leo Constellation and the Sagittarius Constellation, the other constellations were weak and degenerating. Used to their easy and comfortable lives, it allowed the nobles of the 12 Ecliptic Palaces to lose their cautiousness and sense to danger, they became domesticated sheep and pigs, basking and indulging in their pleasures. This long time of bad practise had fermented and grown, becoming a deep-rooted problem. What was even more terrifying was that the upper society was already dividing up all the resources, they were exploiting their authority and taking hold of as much land as they could, causing the middle society and lower to be plugged.

Beneath their beautiful robes, their bodies had started to deteriorate.

Clan Elder An firmly believed that with just a light strike, the awe inspiring figures of the 12 Ecliptic Palaces Constellations would burst like bubbles, and shatter in flames and ashes.

Upon taking down the Ecliptic Constellations, the Honorable Martial Group will destroy all the degenerates and vigorously promote their own talents, locking the Ecliptic Constellations in their own hands. So even when the Honorable Martial Continent arrived, it would not be easy to take away the fruits of their labour.

And the ultimate objective of [Honorable Martial Constellation], was to subdue the 12 Ecliptic Palaces and form them into one body, forming the never before heard Ultimate Great Constellation!

This Ultimate Great Constellation which they named as [Honorable Martial] would have an increased energy concentration far deeper than anyone would know, sufficient to compare against the Sacred Saint Galaxy!

The Temple was moved by the ambitious plan, to recreate a great constellation comparable to the Sacred Saint Galaxy was an extremely attractive plan. If it could be fulfilled, then the Honorable Martial Constellation would be able to contend against the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and they need not bend their knees!

In the entire Temple, they started to strategize according to the [Honorable Martial Constellation] plan. They still had 10 years of time.

Clan Elder An's first blade was aimed at the Aquarius

Constellation.

The richest and wealthiest constellation of Heaven's Road, held riches that caused others to be extremely jealous, but their military affairs were relaxed. The Aquarius Army held extremely lavish equipment, yet they lacked the willpower to fight. The most laughable matter was that in the entire Army, they were extremely committed to their own businesses, each army holding their own industry and business.

Because of their own actions for their own means, it confirmed the sayings in Heaven's Road: Aquarius Martial artists only knew how to use money to defeat their enemies.

To endure the words that had been passed down in history, the tenacious Aquarius Army had long dissipated with the passing of time. Even the higher ups of Aquarius Constellation were not willing to talk about their legendary army that held glorious achievements, because it was truly too bitter to think about it, all of them lavish dressed fat old men were disgraced to even think about it.

In Clan Elder An's eyes, the Aquarius Constellation was like a domesticated and fat pig.

As long as he took it down, they would hold the biggest wealth in Heaven's Road, who would stop him?

Facing the flames, Clan Elder An laughed silently, as though he had gone crazy over the fire.

~Pandora's Box has been opened, and with this, it will turn the winds of Heaven's Road. How many people can perform such a magnificent feat? How exciting is this, so many people are eager to see what happens, how many of them has their lives in my hands.~

Heh, the taste of power and blood is so beautiful!

The disaster in the Aquarius Constellation shook Heaven's Road.

The Honorable Martial Group and the 12 Ecliptic Palaces had remained passive for so many years, although the Honorable Martial Group frequently meddled with their internal affairs, but on the surface, they always gave face.

But when the peace was broken, when the Honorable Martial Group tore off their pretense, the entire Heaven's Road was speechless.

After the temporary silence, the remaining Ecliptic Palaces were immediately plunged into panic, all of them condemning the Honorable Martial Group's actions. On the contrary, their archenemy the Leo Constellation was actually extremely quiet.

The entire Heaven's Road was discussing the Honorable Martial Group's actions.

The Honorable Martial Group stated that they had no intention of changing the situation of Heaven's Road. The reason they had

proclaimed for attacking Aquarius Constellation was that their clan elder was murdered in the Aquarius Constellation. They had requested for the Aquarius Constellation to investigate the reason for murder, but were firmly rejected.

The Aquarius Constellation was overrun with rivers of blood, and every day there would be public beheading of the noble families. In front of the Aquarius Palace, the boards were as red as blood.

But Clan Elder An's actions proved that he was not just a brainless slaughterer.

He claimed that the Honorable Martial Group had no intention of altering the Aquarius Constellation's traditions, after they have established order in the Aquarius Constellation, the Honorable Martial Group will completely retreat out of the Aquarius Constellation, and hand over the Aquarius Constellation to the new Aquarius King.

The Aquarius Constellation's fate should be decided by its citizens, as the old ecliptic order had become completely corrupted, he wanted to build a brand new order, a brand new Honorable Martial Ecliptic Order.

He promoted the ambitious lower ranking officials vigorously, causing them to obtain high positions and responsibilities, and earning him countless support. After that, he organized for the Aquarius Constellation to begin choosing a new Aquarius King, and announced that it was time for them to retreat.

All of these actions caused the other constellations to firmly believe that Honorable Martial Group was just taking the chance to plunder them.

So much so, that a few strategists predicted that the battle between the Honorable Martial Group and Leo Constellation had made them lose capital, and urgently needed a new source of wealth, and the Aquarius Constellation was the place that satisfied them.

This plundering made the Honorable Martial Group full. A beast that was full, before it had completely digested all of its food, would not be interested in any other prey.

In order words, although the Honorable Martial Group's slaughter seemed unsightly, they would not have the intention to become enemies with the entire 12 Ecliptic Palaces. Because once the 12 Ecliptic Palaces form an alliance, it was enough to cause even the Honorable Martial Group to feel fear.

The majority of the people believed in that, and loosened their tensed minds. Furthermore, the Honorable Martial Group sent out many diplomats, further proving that the Honorable Martial Group did not wish to become enemies with the 12 Ecliptic Palaces.

Leo Constellation, King Palace.

Lei Ang finished reading the report and snorted: “A bunch of fools, to not even understand the diversion that the Honorable Martial Group is playing at. The Honorable Martial Group’s big movements are truly strange, why are they ignoring the waterway?”

Andre reminded him: “Could it be that they are merely creating a diversion?”

Lei Ang’s gaze landed on Duan Qing, the commander of the 36th Army, because Duan Qing had led the 36th Army to ambush the Honorable Martial Group’s 9th Gold Branch, which led to its destruction, and severely injured the 7th Gold Branch that wanted to seek revenge, causing his name to soar.

But very few people knew of Duan Qing’s illustrious family background. His father, before Lei Ang had become Lion King, was already a personal guard, and together, they fought brilliant battles. But it was a pity that he sacrificed himself in one of the battles.

Lei Ang was one who remembered comradeship, and cherished and took care of his comrade’s son. Duan Qing’s brave and careful personality was a chip off the old block, earning Lei Ang’s adoration and trust.

“Not likely.” Duan Qing said: “They chose the Aquarius Constellation which had always been more on their side. If they were creating a diversion, they should be attacking us or our

allies.”

The other generals nodded.

“I suspect that their goal should be the Ecliptic Palaces Constellations.” Duan Qing’s eyes flashed a look of worry: “They must have a plan.”

“Do we need to support the other constellations?” the commander of the 4th Army, AhGu TeWeng said as he cracked his knuckles, eager to take action.

“Why should we?” the Lion King sneered, a look of ridicule appearing on his face: “All of those people who are unable to accomplish anything but destroy even more things, are best to be killed by the Honorable Martial Group. Although we do not know why the Honorable Martial Group is beginning to move on the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, but if the shop is too big, they will not be able to take care of it.”

The few generals were all skilled in strategy, and hearing Lion King’s words, their eyes lit up.

That’s right, the more constellations Honorable Martial Group attacks, the more scattered will their forces be, to Leo Constellation, it will be a good thing.

Wu An Star.

Tang Tian looked at the news of the destruction in Aquarius Constellation in shock, he did not understand why Honorable Martial Group did not attack the Wu An Star, but attacked the Aquarius Constellation?

Unreasonable! Too illogical!

“Why are they making a move on the Aquarius Constellation?” Sima Xiao revealed a harmless smile: “Simple, self preservation. They feel that the Honorable Martial Continent coming to Heaven’s Road is already final, and they are not even a direct descendant of the Sacred Saint Galaxy, what would happen to them? First take what they can, so in the future discussions, they have some bargaining chips. As long as three to five Ecliptic Constellations are in their hands, they have value to negotiate.”

No one was as familiar to the dark side of a human’s heart than Sima Xiao, after a few glances of the reports, he was able to guess everything.

“Aren’t they dispersing their armies like that?” Tang Tian pointed to the report.

Sima Xiao rolled his eyes, What a fake, truly faking it! Your schemes and plots are too scary, to run to my face and act naive and stupid, do you truly think that I am an idiot? Are you trying to cheat me? Please, Even if you want to cheat me, please choose your words wisely.

“A pity, the Gold Saints are not coming anymore.” Tang Tian was feeling sad.

He was prepared to fight with the Gold Saints, but they were not coming, it was like punching into the air, causing Tang Tian’s entire body to feel extremely terrible.

Who should I look for to fight?

Sima Xiao saw Tang Tian’s killing intent and sensed something amiss, over the past few days, he had come to understand Tang Tian’s personality.

He decided to take the initiative, and change targets.

“If the Gold Saints do not find us, we can go and find them!” Sima Xiao’s tone was filled with allure: “I know where a Gold Saint is standing guard, what about it? Do you want to fish him out? It’s a heaven sent opportunity!”

Tang Tian’s eyes lit up: “Where, where?”

Chapter 684 – Price

“Give me some water.”

Bradley laid in his reclining chair without a care for his image, his tone spoke of his fatigue, and his servant immediately sprinted to fetch him water.

After drinking the warm water, Bradley finally regained some of his focus, yet the haze in his eyes did not dissipate. Thinking about the nightmarish scenes for the past few days, he felt extremely terrible.

He was not a short tempered person, he was amiable and patient, but for the past few days, he could not hold back and quarrelled many times. All kinds of rumors and slanders, all sorts of ridicule and mocking came from everywhere, and everyone's gaze towards him was extremely different. He could tolerate that, when he knelt down in front of Sai Lei to beseech her, he already knew what he was getting himself into, he had already settled his peace and would not back down.

He quietly endured, even with his revered position, he never thought to use his own position to suppress the rest. Many of them would quarrel with him, many of them would mock him, but he continued to speak and argue with them. The majority of them would hear him and laugh, not taking him seriously or even ridiculing him, but those willing for change, those who were thoughtful, could hear his voice.

It was his dream.

Holding on to this dream, even if all those big bellied men, holding their gold pipes, mocking and jeering at him, puffing the smoke in his face, he endured through it all. He knew his actions were impossible to obtain their favour, but he did not care.

Until he heard his father coldly saying to him suddenly “you did not need to be so anxious”, with the gaze of dissatisfaction and indifference, caused him to fall into an icehouse, his feet and hands turned ice cold.

But after that, an indescribable anger, like a volcano erupting, surged straight to his brain, causing him to lose control right on the spot. He was like an enraged bull, roaring non stop, causing the entire palace to tremble, his eyes were bloodshot, scaring everyone else, including his father. It was the first time the Taurus King had seen his own son being so angry and in a rage.

Bradley still remembered his father’s panic-stricken face, his loss for words. That indescribable feeling made him feel even worse.

The world was in chaos, the leaders had become weak, the flock below wallowed in their pleasures without wanting to improve, he did not see any hope in this Taurus Constellation.

He closed his eyes, working hard to escape all of his complicated thoughts, which might be his karma. After a moment, he opened his eyes, his brown pupils becoming tranquil again. He did not like the current Taurus Constellation, all of the rotting, cancerous

bodies, the officials who had been corrupted formed a large system, which even included his father, in which he was helpless against.

But it was still the Taurus Constellation that he loved, the place that he grew up in. As the prince of the Taurus Constellation, being unable to pull the Taurus Constellation out of the dredge, he had to at least leave a thread of pride and faith in it. Even if Taurus Constellation was destroyed, even if their homeland was gone, but with the faith, with the pride, the Taurus Constellation could be rebuilt once again!

The high and mighty Taurus, its horn will always aim up high in the sky!

By finding their lost glory, by finding their lost pride, this, it was him, Bradley, the reason for him to live and fight.

Bradley clenched his fists tightly, he felt a never ending energy in his body, feeling as if his skin and flesh were as tough as steel. He was not fighting alone, in the past few days, he brought a group of people together, the youths willing to strive hard to rebuild the Taurus Army.

Suddenly, a servant ruan in clumsily for a report.

Bradley accepted the report and looked, his face instantly changing. Without saying a word, he rushed out.

When Bradley rushed over, the Frost Mountain Army were already in security measures, only after notifying them was he finally allowed to enter the camp. When he entered, he was shocked, because the Frost Mountain Army were already packed up and looked ready to leave.

“What is going on?”

He found Ah Lun at the side and asked.

Ah Lun’s face was gloomy: “Didn’t you receive the news of the Aquarius Constellation being attacked?”

“I just did.” Bradley found it hard to understand: “I was just about to find you guys to discuss it, but what is the meaning of this? The Aquarius Constellation is being attacked, but what does it have to do with us? It is just a plundering, the Honorable Martial Group doesn’t have any money!”

“No, we have already discussed it.” Ah Lun said gravely: “This time, the Honorable Martial Group plans to make a move on the 12 Ecliptic Palaces, and it is definitely not just a plunder. Simply put, if it was a plunder, the Honorable Martial Group would not have killed so many of the noble families. They want to clean off all the old aristocratic families and nobles, what do you think about that?”

Bradley’s face turned white.

That's right, if it was for wealth, they could just use their great army to pressure the Aquarius Constellation, and the wealth and riches would be given. But to clean off all the nobles and aristocratic families, that leaves only one possibility, the Honorable Martial Group wants to topple to original regime of the Aquarius Constellation.

“But that is the Aquarius Constellation....” Bradley stammered.

Ah Lun looked at Bradley in sympathy, after interacting for the past few days, he knew that the Taurus Prince was a good man, and was different from all the other dirty people. He decided to explain clearly: “If the Honorable Martial Group decides to make a move on the Ecliptic Constellations, they will definitely not just make a move on any of them. Because then, the other constellations can gather to fight them. Once they have decided to make a move, then, they will have more than one target. We feel that the Taurus Constellation will most probably be the next to be hit.”

“W.....why?” Bradley was stumped.

“Because you are too weak.” Ah Lun said without caring, it was a nail to the heart: “In this period, any involvement will prove to be disadvantageous to the Honorable Martial Group. They need to move like lightning, that way they can get the momentum to win, and shake the other constellations, preventing them from forming an alliance.”

Bradley realised that he could not find any reasons to refute, his mind was in a bad mess.

“I am sorry.” Ah Lun said slowly: “Our mission is to ensure the safety of Young Miss Sai Lei. There is nothing else that is more important than this. We have decided to retreat and will move out at night, if you are all willing, come and find us.”

Ah Lun patted on Bradley the shoulders, who remained dumbstruck: “Think about it.”

He turned and left.

Bradley left the Frost Mountain Army area as though his soul had disappeared, he suddenly awakened and rushed into Taurus Palace.

“What? The Honorable Martial Group might attack us next?” The Taurus King could not be bothered much, but thinking about how his son had raged out the day before, he controlled himself: “There isn’t any signs stating that the Honorable Martial Group will attack us, what do we have? We are not rich like Aquarius Constellation, and are only ranked in the middle amongst the 12 Ecliptic Palaces. If they want to attack us after attacking the Aquarius Constellation, unless they are mad, it will cause the other constellations to be uneasy, and everyone will ally themselves to go against them. The Honorable Martial Group doesn’t have any reason to attack us.”

He looked at Bradley’s bloodshot eyes and consoled him: “Bradley, I know that recently, it has been tough on you, I think you should take a rest. Go to Bullhorn Bay for a holiday, and come

back whenever you want. You don't have to worry about things here.....”

Bradley did not know how he left the Palace.

He gathered his courage and looked for Marshal Da, and told him about Ah Lun's guess. Marshal Da laughed out loud, as though he had heard a joke. He patted Bradley's shoulder, consoling him to not be afraid, saying that the Taurus Constellation could beat any enemies in terms of anything. After that, he changed his clothes and whistled his way out as he prepared to participate in the banquet and gambling get-together.

Bradley then spoke to Jerome about it, but Jerome did not believe it as well, but he did not mock or ask Bradley to rest. Jerome knew of Bradley's ambition, and only told him that since the Frost Mountain Army was planning to leave, he should join them, and rebuild the Taurus Army, so even if he were to meet with danger, he had some sense of insurance.

Bradley finally understood that no one believed him, no one believed that the Honorable Martial Group would attack them.

On the contrary, when news of the Frost Mountain Army was retreating spread out, it became the most discussed about news, everyone mocking that they were coward like mice. They thought that the Ursa Major Constellation were mediocre, with only a small wind blowing, they would make such a huge reaction.

This widespread optimism caused Bradley to feel fear.

He was not moved by Ah Lun's words, but from his own heart, because when he first heard of the news, he became afraid and uneasy. He did not know why, but it was because of the uneasiness in his heart that he went to seek Ah Lun out.

In the Frost Mountain Army encampment, The Frost Mountain Army were already completely prepared, and were resting and waiting for the time to move out. Because they were worried of encountering any battles en route, Ah Lun hoped that the soldiers could maintain their physical strength.

"He is truly pitiful." Chen Zi Lin suddenly said.

"You're talking about Bradley?" Ah Lun turned to ask.

"Yea, considering this beyond saving constellation, I feel that he is rather brave." Chen Zi Lin said sympathetically: "Furthermore, he must be struggling with pain in his heart, watching the Taurus Constellation fall, being unable to do anything."

"He is truly rather good, that was why I told him so much." Ah Lun nodded his head, agreeing with Chen Zi Lin. Upon talking about the struggles and bitterness, he suddenly thought about the old Lupus Constellation, thinking about the days of hunger, poverty, being petty and low like ants, willing to be cannon fodder just for food.

The Lupus Constellation back then.....

Ah Lun thought about the million blood awakening plan that swept Lupus Constellation, thinking about how everyone fought fiercely amongst each other just to obtain the quota, he thought about the Clan Elder's strict reprimands.....

Everyone gave it their all just to eat, just to take care of their families, just to win a bit of praise, just to chase after the Lupus King. War after war, they transformed battle after battle, they regained their dignity, and the current Lupus citizens were well known for their perseverance and improvements, and were currently some of the elites under the heavens. Many people have heard of them, waving expensive paychecks for them, but every Lupus man and soldier, fought only for that one man!

“But, dreams needs a price, dignity also needs a price, the more one thinks, the more the price they need to pay, nothing can be obtained for free, right?” Ah Lun suddenly said.

“Yes.”

The ground shook, and the both of them stood up.

Bradley had brought along a tide of scattered brave warriors, raising a shabby and old flag, they sprinted towards them. On the flag was a golden Bull, fluttering rapidly in the wind, as though it was alive.

Chapter 685 – Liu Ya Zhi's Return

Jerome flew in the air, observing the rumbling of dust and sand in the distance, his face extremely gloomy.

The scouts had reported of discovering an army, that he initially thought were the Frost Mountain Army. They had decided to protect Grandmaster Sai Lei and retreat back to Three Spirits City, and had long become the joke amongst the higher ups of the Taurus Constellation. The Frost Mountain Army were described as a flock of birds easily startled, their cowardice had become their new name, and Austin had specially ran over to relate the stories to Jerome.

At that time, Jerome felt extremely awkward, if the Frost Mountain Army were flock of birds who were easily startled, then he who was defeated by them, what was he considered as?

When he received Bradley's communication, it resolved the suspicions in his heart, but he still felt that the Frost Mountain Army were making a big fuss over a small matter. Bradley is too trusting towards them, and have been swayed by them. What Taurus Constellation will be attacked, most likely the Frost Mountain Army are afraid of responsibility, and made the excuse to leave.

But he knew that Bradley truly wanted to revive the Taurus Army, and in truth he wanted to follow Bradley along. He hesitated for a long while, but still gave it up, he had got his position through hard work, and giving it up was extremely difficult.

Bradley had the qualifications to chase after that dream, he was the Prince, and had the qualifications to do whatever he wanted, and would still be able to ascend to the throne in the future. Jerome himself had no such qualifications, holding his current position was already not easy.

Jerome still hoped that Bradley could succeed, he was in the military, and he knew what the current military was like. The Bullhorn Army was already one of the top few elites of the Taurus Constellation, but compared to the Taurus Army, it was still greatly lacking. He was helpless in that situation. And because the Bullhorn Army was an elite army, it naturally became the army that was gold plated the most, countless of nobles and aristocratic disciples joined in his army, and he could not offend many people.

Fighting with them would require him to place a lot of focus on them, and it was more tiring than training soldiers.

Jerome saw a gradually approaching army, and started to think. He had never seen such a strange army before, a snow white creature forming an army, gradually approaching the Bullhorn Army encampment.

If not for their strict formations, he would highly suspect that they were a tide of beasts. All those star spirit beasts were like lifeless machines.

Suddenly, his eyes landed on the flag, his pupils constricting.

The Honorable Martial Group!

It was the Honorable Martial Group's army!

The Honorable Martial Flag that only the Honorable Martial Group possessed fluttered in the wind.

Bradley.....

Jerome's hands turned cold, his face ashen, he was at a loss for words. Bradley's words came up in his ears.

After a moment, his face recovered some color, and said gloomily: "Immediately send people to bar the way behind Frost Mountain Army, make them take a detour."

"Yes!"

"Quickly report to the Taurus Palace that the Honorable Martial Group is attacking!"

"Yes!"

"Gather all the armies, prepare for war."

"Yes!"

Jerome sent out countless of orders, his unwavering expression affected his panic stricken subordinates, who calmed down and went into action.

“Oh my god! The Honorable Martial Group’s Army! What army is that? Why did they appear here?” One of the noble disciple started panicking, and subconsciously whined: “Finished! We’re finished! We’re finished....”

The people behind him that were obviously following him started to panic.

“Making a racket before the battle, swaying the army’s hearts, kill!”

Jerome’s cold voice sounded out, a sword light flashed in the sky, and a head flew up, blood spewing all over. A few seconds later, a lifeless body dropped onto the ground.

It was complete silence.

The faces of the noble disciples all turned pale white, they were in disbelief, they never thought that the smooth talker Jerome could transform into such a person.

“Jerome, you’re crazy! You actually dared to kill Aaron! Duke Mo Er won’t let you go.....” One of the other noble shouted.

Jerome’s expression was ice cold, he spat: “Kill!”

His personal soldiers already knew how their general worked, without hesitation they took action, like arrows shooting from the bow, they pounced onto the young noble.

“You guys dare.....”

The exclamation stopped abruptly, the young noble stared at the sword in his chest. Plop, he fell to the ground, his eyes were opened wide, even after death, he did not understand why Jerome would make a move on him.

The young nobles kept quiet out of fear, their faces were pale white, afraid that even the slightest of sound would incite a disaster.

“I know what are all of you thinking. How all of you will take care of me after the war, I don’t care, but in the midst of battle, whoever violates the military laws cannot blame me for being merciless.”

After saying that, without even looking at them, Jerome turned and left.

When he saw the Honorable Martial Group’s flag, he knew of his and the Taurus Constellation’s fate. No one was clearer than him on how weak the once tyrannical Taurus currently was.

The Honorable Martial Group that was completely disguised was

an enemy that Taurus Constellation had no hopes to defeat. The beast army in front of him that he had never seen before released a terrifying aura, but Jerome knew that it was the Honorable Martial Group's secret weapon.

The Frost Mountain Army people were right, Bradley was right, who else was better prey than the Taurus Constellation?

Knowing the Taurus Constellation's fate, for some reason, he felt a bit of relief. No longer needing to handle all of the corrupted people, no longer needing to force out smiles, no longer needing to tread carefully with the various powerhouses.

Bradley, you must do your best.

Jerome silently muttered in his heart. Inside the disappointing and corrupted kingdom, Bradley was their only hope, the only thing worth protecting.

Regardless of anything, we need to protect the Prince to leave safely, regardless of anything, we need to keep this hope alive.

It was the only thing he could do.

Jerome pointed his sword forward, the blood dripping from the tip, his expression was calm, his eyes determined, he had never seen the mission and responsibility placed on himself so clearly in his life before.

Even if I die here, It will be worth it.

“Don your armor, and blow the horn!”

The low sound of the Bullhorn sounded out across Pristine Gravel City, like the wind blowing across a wasteland.

Liu Ya Zhi looked at Pristine Gravel City ahead of him, he licked his lips, a look of fervent flashing in his eyes. This was his first battle after relying on Clan Elder An, after the suppression of the Three Spirits City’s mechanicalspirit weapon, no one remembered the blood meridians weapons. Even Onyx Soul had given up the research on blood meridians weapons, they thought that it had no future.

The Blood Weapons Group disbanded, everyone broke up.

Liu Ya Zhi, who had personally controlled the Blood Meridians Weapon and engaged in battle against the mechanical spirit weapon before, was the most impacted. He became downcast, his life dropped into shambles, the mechanical spirit weapons became nightmares that enveloped him, he became irritable and violent, sensitive and crazy, lost in hysteria.

His close family left him, his friends left him, everyone that he held dear left him.

He was unhappy with his failure, and continued with his research, but very quickly, his resources and funding depleted, and

he became extremely poor.

With nowhere to go, someone came to knock on his front door.

When Clan Elder An appeared in front of his house, and smiled and agreed to continue to fund his research on the blood meridians weapon, he brought hope and an unswerving determination into the man. Clan Elder An did not go back on his words, regardless of funding or other requests, they were all obtained, and even gave him the absolute secret materials in the Honorable Martial Group's department.

Liu Ya Zhi then spent all of his focus and effort into it, he forgot to eat and sleep through the days and nights. He researched out the unique [Honorable Martial] series of Blood Meridians, and successfully merged it into star spirit beasts' bodies.

After every subsequent generation of artificial grooming, the [Honorable Martial] type blood meridians finally started to reveal its might.

After obtaining the support of the most authoritative figure, Liu Ya Zhi's progress soared. High leveled star spirit beasts, rare star spirit beasts that hibernated deep in mountains and seas were all hunted down and brought to him.

Liu Ya Zhi finally created a product that he was proud of.

[Saint Blood], the strongest Blood Meridians Weapon in all of

history. Using a Ninth Grade Snow Ape King, after transforming and grooming it, he created a brand new type of blood meridians weapon. Liu Ya Zhi had spent countless of effort into it, and brought forth the Honorable Martial Group's first mechanical army, the Saint Blood Army.

When Clan Elder An decided to launch an attack on the Taurus Constellation, Liu Ya Zhi took the initiative to volunteer for it.

Sai Lei!

The matter of Frost Mountain Army defeating the Bullhorn Army was no secret, as the Taurus Constellation wanted to conceal their failure as much as possible, they started to spread exaggerated rumors regarding the Frost Mountain Army, stating that they were the strongest mechanical army in all of history, and was the secret weapon of the Ursa Major Constellation.

What could be better to prove himself than to defeat her strongest mechanical weapon right in front of her?

Thinking about that, Liu Ya Zhi became extremely excited.

But, he had to first clear the problem in front of him, the Bullhorn Army.

But, he did not feel that the Bullhorn Army could pose any threat to him. Seeing the Bullhorn Army slowly approaching them with their strict formation, the Commanders of the Saint Blood Army

all looked at them in disdain.

“I heard that the Frost Mountain Army used one charge to topple the Bullhorn Army?” Liu Ya Zhi’s voice was extremely disgusting, as though his throat had been cut by countless of glass shards.

“That was what the report wrote.” The one who spoke was his adjutant, Shan Mao, as he shrugged his shoulders.

Liu Ya Zhi had a weird temper and was difficult to work with, causing him to send back countless of adjutants, and even Clan Elder An had a headache with him, and could only send Shan Mao, his own military general that he admired over. Who knew that Liu Ya Zhi kept Shan Mao, who was different from the adjutants that were self preserved and polite, Shan Mao was frivolous and was fond of teasing others, he also had a weird temper, and was not blindly patient with Liu Ya Zhi’s temper.

But instead, Liu Ya Zhi gave Shan Mao more free reign, because Shan Mao had outstanding standards.

Upon arriving in the Saint Blood Army, Shan Mao started to point out the mistakes in Liu Ya Zhi’s tactics without being courteous. Liu Ya Zhi was enraged, and quarreled with Shan Mao, both not relenting at all and fought a big fight. The proud and arrogant Liu Ya Zhi decided to use results to prove to the other party’s absurdity.

And in the end, it was Shan Mao who was right.

Liu Ya Zhi had a strange temper, but despite being obstinate, Shan Mao had proven himself, and thus his attitude towards Shan Mao changed 180 degrees. From that day on, Shan Mao quickly rose to become second in command of Saint Blood Army, and had Liu Ya Zhi's trust.

“If the Frost Mountain Army can do it, we can do it too!” Liu Ya Zhi said coldly.

“This type of pride battle is completely meaningless.” Shan Mao said indifferently.

Liu Ya Zhi turned his head and stared at Shan Mao with bloodshot eyes: “You said it is meaningless?”

Shan Mao knew that Sai Lei was Liu Ya Zhi's archnemesis. Mechanical spirit weapons were Liu Ya Zhi's enemies, as long as he lost a bit to them, Liu Ya Zhi would go crazy.

“If you wish, my Commander Master.” Shan Mao said tactfully.

It was just one charge, but it became a prideful thing.

Chapter 686 – Counterattacking With A Quarter Of Us At Death's Door

Shan Mao walked to the front of the formation.

Before joining the Saint Blood Army, he had never interacted with mechanical spirit weapons, much less blood meridians weapons. But Shan Mao was rich with experience and had the spirit of studying meticulously, quickly grasped the brand new type of war machines, and not long after, had become a well known figure in the entire army.

Liu Ya Zhi quickly realised that this adjutant that was not well liked, but held outstanding balance sense, acute battle intuition, and was a natural mechanical martial artist.

Shan Mao's strength far surpassed Liu Ya Zhi, and his grooming in tactics was not something Liu Ya Zhi could compare to. The Blood Weapons Group was just an external organization of Onyx Soul, while Shan Mao was a high level disciple groomed meticulously by the Honorable Martial Group.

Without saying a word, Liu Ya Zhi threw the entire Saint Blood Army to Shan Mao, and immersed himself to research and developed a brand new type of blood meridians weapon.

“Ya Ya said that we need to defeat the opponents with one charge, anyone has any good idea?” Shan Mao said languidly.

No one uttered a word, Shan Mao was a definite figure in the Honorable Martial Group. From the well known advocate for strictness and discipline of the Honorable Martial Group, Shan Mao's casual character, his frivolous personality naturally did not receive much attention from the rest. All the soldiers all had no idea on what to do with their superior.

In a day after entering the army, Shan Mao had been reminded by 17 soldiers to watch his etiquette.

Shan Mao was naturally someone who did things his way, and did not have any intention to change, and gradually, everyone else got used to him. But the strictness and discipline of the Honorable Martial Group had long been ingrained in their hearts.

So to them, this superior of theirs was an eyesore.

No one cared about him, but Shan Mao was equally indifferent, after yawning, he whined: "After the fight, I want to have a good sleep."

"A group of boring people." Shan Mao stretched his limbs: "Alright, then we will finish it in a charge. Prepare for the Duck Assault Formation!"

The faces of the soldiers turned black, every time they heard the tactic name, their expressions would become ugly. ~Duck Assault Formation? Are we [male prostitutes](#)? Isn't the name Saint Radiance Hammer Assault Formation better? Even if you have no creativity, at least all of us can accept the Honorable Martial

Assault Formation.~

(Duck and male prostitutes are the same in chinese.)

But the tactic was formulated by Shan Mao, and because of that, he was extremely pleased to have the authority to call it whatever he wanted.

Although the majority of the faces of the people inside their blood meridians weapons were black, they still completed their formation without hesitation. Three lines appeared behind Shan Mao, forming a cone formation, the two wings were thicker, impressively appearing like a white duck that had expanded its wings.

Inside [Saint Blood], Shan Mao's playfulness disappeared and he became serious.

It was his first time leading the Saint Blood Army into battle, and was also the first time he was utilizing the tactic that he had created. This army was formed by Clan Elder An's effort and money, with all of Liu Ya Zhi's conviction and faith, everyone had worked so hard for so long, wasn't it meant for this battle?

He suddenly sort of understood Liu Ya Zhi's thoughts.

Liu Ya Zhi admittedly had the intention to compete against the Frost Mountain Army, but, the extremist and fanatical man wanted to use this method to tell the entire Heaven's Road...

Saint Blood had arrived!

Alright, the Bullhorn Army is weaker, but still considerably reputable.

Shan Mao's expression became serious, the blood in his body started to boil, the True Power in his body resonated with [Saint Blood], lighting it up with white light, the familiar Honorable Martial aura caused him to become slightly indifferent, entering a weird state of mind.

His gaze turned extremely cold, like an unstoppable war machine that had no emotions.

Wrapped in his Honorable Martial Aura, it quickly extended his sixth sense across the entire battlefield, causing his mind to be clear on the entire situation. His originally serious Saint Blood Army became deadly silent, every [Saint Blood] was enveloped with white light, the terrifying aura pervading throughout the field, yet none of them seemed to be alive.

Shan Mao extended his hands out, gathering the light aura in his hands, forming a long white congealed handle and light hammer.

All of the [Saint Blood] behind him also retrieved out a long handle light hammer, while the [Saint Blood] situated at the wings held long handle light axes.

Shan Mao raised the Light hammer in his hand.

Whooosh, all of the [Saint Blood] squatted down, and the white light aura surged like a tide, forming into one body.

Jerome did not know what monsters were in front of him, he had never heard of blood meridians weapons before, but the frantically surging terrifying aura from them made him feel like he was under constant attack.

The terrifying white light was extremely dense energy, and even the air in his vision started to contort.

Is that the Honorable Martial Group's secret weapon?

Jerome took a deep breath and suddenly shouted out loud: "All of you should be afraid, right!"

Upon hearing their commander shouting out loud, all the nervous soldiers became startled.

"I am afraid too."

Jerome admitted, attracting the attention of the soldiers, What is the commander trying to say? All of the Bullhorn Army soldiers deeply respected the commander in front of them.

"But, I cannot bring you all to surrender." Jerome's voice sounded out from his armor: "Because the people in front of you

are intruders. I know, we cannot stop them, I know, Taurus Constellation is about to reach its end, I know, none of us can save ourselves from this desperate crisis. We will be destroyed like the Aquarius Constellation.”

The soldiers were shocked, ~the Taurus Constellation is going to do? Aren't we an Ecliptic Palace Constellation? Aren't we an enormous figure? Why are we suddenly going to be destroyed?”

But, everyone knew that their commander was not bluffing, the army that held the Honorable Martial Group flag did not hide anything.

Everyone were still feeling remorse over the destruction of the Aquarius Constellation, feeling remorse that the richest Constellation had been destroyed just like that.

~Why?~

The Taurus Constellation and the Honorable Martial Group did not have any grievances? So why?

Grief filled the air, all the young soldiers could not help but cry. The other lower ranked officers were lost, their expressions were of defeat, they knew much more of the matters that concerned the higher ups, and felt despair.

“I cannot bring you all to surrender. Because I want to leave some face for our Kingdom. I do not want for others to say that this

army did not dare to even retaliate when they talk about the destruction of the Taurus Constellation. I do not want other people to say that the men of the Taurus Constellation are not brave at all. We have a duty to protect our home, and this is my last responsibility. If you are willing to, stay, if you are not, leave.”

His voice resonated in the sky.

Everyone calmed down, but no one left.

They did not know why, it might be from the pride of being an Ecliptic Palace Constellation, it might be from what Jerome had said, it might be from the dissatisfaction and anger, but no one left. All of the soldiers recovered from their grief, and became determined.

But, the disciples of the noble families of Pristine Gravel City were completely different.

“Jerome has gone crazy, he has truly gone crazy, oh my god, the Honorable Martial Group! That is the secret weapon of Honorable Martial Group!”

“We are not their opponents, we need to run!”

Their faces were filled with panic and fear, only hating that they were born with two legs, they ran frantically like birds scattering. They only had one thought in their minds, it was over, completely over, and run.

Jerome could not be bothered to care about them, he was quickly disseminating their tactic to his soldiers, the opponent were far stronger than what they could imagine, and not any formation could be effective.

“They will definitely think of ending us in one attack. We must let them know, if they want to swallow us whole, they have to be careful of bones. Remember our building blocks training daily, our enemies are stronger than us, they will definitely not want to drag the battle out, and will definitely use a full force offense. We will use our building block training to spread their destructivity, after our formation dissipates, it will be a battle for yourselves. Remember, do not fight by yourself, we are not their opponents, quickly gather together and fight as groups.”

The Building Block training, was the Bullhorn Army’s usual yet unique training subject, mainly used to train the mutual coordination between the soldier’s ability to cooperate. The soldiers would form groups and scatter from the formation, like many different building blocks. This formation would shatter upon being struck, but the most difficult part of the training was that upon being separated, the attack inflicted would be divided into the soldier’s bodies, and this required extreme coordination and ability to match with one another.

But this formation did not have any offensive capabilities, and upon being separated, the formation would completely crumble. In battle, the formation was the foundation of any tactic, a formation that had been completely shattered would not be able to produce any effective attacks. That was why it was not usable in battle.

Facing enemies stronger than himself, Jerome suddenly thought of this completely unreliable and worthless tactic, he did not have any certainty of success, but he had no other choice.

The soldiers of the Bullhorn Army were extremely familiar to the Building Blocks training, the officers understood Jerome's thoughts, but they felt that Jerome's idea was too negative, and felt that despite the Honorable Martial Group being strong, it was not to the extent that they had to resort to such a method.

Luckily for Jerome, his prestige in the army was extremely high, and the officers were brought up by him, so they believed in him.

Just at that moment, the Honorable Martial Group Army was about to launch their assault.

And just then, all of the people that felt that Jerome was being too pessimistic no longer doubted his judgement. When all of the monstrous creatures started to rush, they then realised how terrifying it would be.

Ninth grade Snow Ape King, were tyrannical predators at the top of the food chain where only saints could handle them. They had inexhaustible strength, and despite transforming them into blood meridians weapons, they had completely kept that unique ability.

Every step they took were like deep bass drums, overlooking from the sky, and everywhere that their feet landed, large pits would form. Their bodies that were enveloped in white light had

formed one big body, and rushed towards Jerome and his army, they were like a large light wall with overwhelming pressure.

The ground shook and the air frantically distorted, the white light were like flames, the ice cold emotionless Snow Ape Kings were like fiendgods sprinting forward.

Jerome's face changed, the True Power from his body started to become slightly sluggish, and they were completely suppressed in their silver armors. It was not only him, the saints beside Jerome all looked on in shock.

They thought about the Frost Mountain Army subconsciously, their assault were equally unstoppable.

“Do you want us to block them?”

One of the Saints asked, the fearsome assault was something that the building block training could not even hold.

“No!” Jerome gritted his teeth: “I never thought of surviving, we must give them a greeting gift!”

The saints nodded their heads.

As both parties got closer, the pressure increased, as though Mt. Tai was suppressing their shoulders, causing many of them to choke.

“KILL!”

Shan Mao roared, the light hammer in his hand lit up the entire sky and smashed down on the Bullhorn Army!

All the soldiers behind him smashed down their light hammers at the same time!

The white hammer auras plummeted down from the sky like a powerful tide, smashing straight into the troops of Bullhorn Army.

Countless bodies flew everywhere, blood splurged across the entire battlefield, before they had even landed, the blood would evaporate.

The two wings with long axes swept down like thunderbolts, instantly slashing across like lightning. Two enormous axe auras swept horizontally across the Bullhorn Army.

Booom!

The entire Bullhorn Army split apart like Building Blocks, many of them were struck heavily, scattering all around like flowers scattering from the Daughter from Heaven.

Jerome's eyes were filled with grief, all the figures flying out by his sides, half of them were already dead, and a quarter of them

were crippled. Even the Building Blocks training was unable to scatter from the assault, it was too terrible.

The situation had turned out even worse than he thought, from this one assault, the Bullhorn Army was left with a quarter of their soldiers, and none of them came out unscathed.

A truly terrifying assault!

Jerome's eyes turned bloodshot, his arm drooped down, the bones inside had completely shattered into pieces. He only had six saints left around him, two of them were struck by the light hammer, another two were swept across by the axe aura and died on the spot, the remaining were not without injuries.

Counterattacking with a quarter of us already at death's door.....this is truly miserable.....ha ha ha!!

Die!

Like a crazy wild beast, he pounced onto the nearest [Saint Blood].

Chapter 687 – Light Of Winter

In the distance, a gigantic light pike stabbed right straight into Jerome's chest.

Ah Lun and Chen Zi Lin kept quiet as they stared intently at the battle that had concluded.

Beside them, Bradley's face turned pale white, his entire body was trembling, and tears covered his entire face.

The Frost Mountain Army that was protecting Sai Lei as they exited the Taurus Constellation met Jerome's scouts, and immediately sprinted away. When they saw the battle, it had already concluded, and they were already 20 li away from the battlefield, and was the limit of how well they could see.

The ground was filled with corpses, in front of the large Saint Blood figures, the Bullhorn Army soldiers were as weak as infants.

“Those are blood meridians weapons!” Chen Zi Lin said gloomily, from Immortal Martial, he was well versed and knowledgeable, and could instantly see through the backgrounds of the white monsters.

“Blood meridians weapons!” Ah Lun was shook: “How can the Honorable Martial Group have blood meridians weapons?”

The existence of blood meridians weapons was not a secret to any

mechanical army. Master Bing had once gave it a high valuation, and even specially brought it up as a hypothetical enemy in classes. But no one had seen the real blood meridians weapons before, so when Ah Lun realised that those white monsters were actually blood meridians weapons, he was completely shocked.

Ah Lun frowned: “Honorable Martial Group’s blood meridians weapon is far more powerful than what Master had said. It seems like that is their secret weapon.”

“Ninth grade Snow Ape King.” Chen Zi Lin said indifferently: “Purely with its own strength, it can hold its own against a gold rank martial artist. Watch the white light, that is the light aura formed with the resonance of Honorable Martial True Power. The Honorable Martial Group’s martial techniques, spirit techniques, are even more powerful. It should be transplanted from some unique blood meridians. Our opponent has appeared.”

Ah Lun understood Chen Zi Lin’s last sentence, from the start, mechanical armies never had any opponents. In the mechanical techniques domain, there were no place that could contend against Three Spirits City. The other families that produced mechanic spirit weapons were at least two generations away from them.

In the mechanical techniques domain, they had always been the greatest with no possible formidable opponents in sight.

Their old enemy had finally appeared, the blood meridians weapons pushed out by the Honorable Martial Group possessed power and might.

“Very good.” Ah Lun said those two words, then turned and left.

Bradley clenched his fists tightly, his veins protruding out of his skin, his entire body trembled incessantly, his tears continued to flow, all of his friends had died in the battlefield, it was truly cruel. Bradley so badly wanted to wipe away his tears, but no matter how much he tried, his vision would always be blurred by the water. He was the Prince of the Taurus Constellation, and held the hope of his home on his back, he wanted to be as strong and unyielding as the Taurus Army commanders in the past, but why.....

Why were there still be people that would be willing to give their lives for that corrupted and despairing constellation?

“You guys....will you all be like Jerome?”

For some reason, Bradley asked.

Ah Lun stopped, his stone like face became proud: “Be like him? No! We are not like you guys. Anyone who dares intrude us, from the frontlines of the Ursa Major Constellation to our Palace, every inch of land and grass will become a battlefield, become the place where we bury the bones, and become the land of the dead. Any Lupus citizen, regardless of man, woman, young or old, regardless of where they are, regardless of who they are, regardless of whether they are strong or weak, will run to the battlefield and fight till they die.”

Chen Zi Lin looked at him and said coldly: “If you say it like that,

the Crane Sect, Draco and Immortal Martial will all be unhappy.”

“Maybe.” Ah Lun said indifferently, but he obviously did not care. He did not think that any of their loyalty could compare to the Lupus citizens. But he was a person that disliked quarrels.

When he saw Bradley crying, he only said one sentence: “Take revenge for them.”

Sai Lei’s gaze landed on the Saint Blood Army in the distance, in her eyes was an indescribable excitement.

We finally have worthy opponents?

That’s exciting!

Shan Mao did not use the light hammer, but a light spear to pierce into Jerome’s chest.

He was a worthy opponent that should be left whole even if dead.

“You guys should be the Taurus Constellation’s last courageous soldiers.”

With that, he turned and left Jerome’s body which was already

void of life.

Liu Ya Zhi stared at Shan Mao with an unkind look, he screamed with an indistinguishable voice, like a venomous enraged snake: "Not only did we not take them down with one assault, we only killed 6 of them!"

"They have saints." Shan Mao shouted loudly: "Stop caring about all these little things, look, we have destroyed the Taurus Constellation's strongest army, now they are all so afraid they're shivering."

"There's enemies!" Suddenly, a scout shouted, he pointed to the distance: "There!"

Liu Ya Zhi's eyes lit up: "Isn't that Sai Lei? Capture her!"

Shan Mao stopped him: "We cannot afford to engage with the Ursa Major Constellation at this time."

"That is Sai Lei! As long as we grab her, the Ursa Major Constellation is finished, no one else can fight against us in terms of mechanical techniques, she is even more valuable than Taurus Constellation!" Liu Ya Zhi became so excited his face became distorted.

"But this will affect Master's [Honorable Martial Constellation] plan." Shan Mao did not cower back: "If you touch Sai Lei, the Ursa Major Constellation will never rest to fight us, and we will

only initiate a war. They are much stronger than the Taurus Constellation!”

Liu Ya Zhi stared at him with bloodshot eyes and said hatefully: “Are you going against me?”

“It’s for your own good.” Shan Mao said indifferently: “Master will not allow anyone to spoil his plans. Anyone.”

The two stared at each other, the atmosphere extremely tense.

Liu Ya Zhi’s forehead twitched, his eyes glaring ferociously, but said with anger and dissatisfaction: “We will let her off this time, but the next time you go against me, I’ll kill you first.”

“Relax man, I hate to butt into other people’s matters.”

Shan Mao said languidly, he suddenly raised his head, a layer of faint light aura had lit up in the sky.

The activation of the Treasure City!

On the gravel plains in the distance, a dense light barrier had formed.

Shan Mao did not care and gave the order: “Inform the city there that they have half an hour to surrender, if not, they will not be spared.”

The Saint Blood Army moved forward with powerful momentum, rumbling on towards the Pristine Gravel City.

10 minutes later, the Pristine Gravel City released their light barrier and surrendered to the Saint Blood Army.

Ouyang Shi and Zhuo Yan stopped, they raised their heads to look, the fiery lights enveloping Aries City in the night sky. The ancient city that had last through ages was burning in battle.

Everyone was crying or in pain.

Although their eyes were red, but they did not cry.

Ouyang Shi shouted: “There will be a day where we will take it back once again!”

Zhuo Yan maintained calm: “We need to be quick and take the chance while it is still chaotic to leave the Aries Constellation. I do not believe that Master Ling Xu will do nothing while watching Honorable Martial Group take over the Aries Constellation.”

Zhuo Yan’s words gave everyone a glimmer of hope. The soldiers whose morale were rock bottom became slightly inspired, carrying their injuries and supporting each other, they disappeared into the night.

For the sake of reviving the Silver Frost Mount, the two of them had snuck back into the Aries Constellation and found many youths who had the same beliefs and cause. When the Aquarius Constellation had fallen into Honorable Martial Group's hands, they became worried, and knew that Aries Constellation was weak, as the Black Feathers Mount had completely degraded.

The Honorable Martial Group had come earlier than they had expected.

Although they had a group of people, they were not strong and did not have any coordination, facing against the army of the Honorable Martial Group, they were completely helpless. Due to that, Ouyang Shi and Zhuo Yan could only bring the group out of Aries Constellation under the chaos and return to the Ursa Major Constellation.

Sean observed the Aries Palace in the flames, sighing in sorrow at the volatile human's life, at the fickle world.

He had spent countless effort, cautiously and conscientiously, to finally climb up to the Branch Master position of the 10th Gold Branch. At that time, the young and sturdy him was extremely ambitious, wishing to do a great deal of things, he built up the Red Leaf Army and managed to stand his ground despite everyone being against him to put Jones in charge as the commander. After that he spent his time creating the [Light of Autumn] secret technique, producing a large scale of gold rank martial artists with limitless potential.

But In the blink of an eye, Jones was dead, and the 10th Army was completely destroyed.

He was directly plunged into hell. It was not only him, his adjutant, the main members of the 10th Gold Branch, none of them were spared. And just when he thought that his life was over, he was saved by Clan Elder An.

To prevent even more talks, Clan Elder An hoped that he could remain in seclusion for a period of time.

Sean was then sent to a mountain far away, where he met his old adjutant, and the old backbones of the 10th Gold Branch. They had all accepted one mission, which was to continue researching on strengthening the [Light of Autumn].

And their test subjects were on gold rank martial artists.

Clan Elder An requested for them to use the [Light of Autumn] to quickly allow the gold rank martial artists to step into the saint rank as soon as possible.

This request that went against common reasoning made Sean and the rest see some hope. They immersed themselves in their passion and effort, and finally created the [Light of Winter], which was far stronger than the [Light of Autumn].

It could allow the dantian pools of the gold rank martial artists to

transform and form into a special state similar to the spirit domain, and then allow them to grasp some spirit techniques.

All shortcuts needed a price, and the [Light of Winter] was no exception, it allowed the dantian pool to transform, and the initially stable True Power structure would be broken, becoming extremely susceptible to being devoured. For the sake of controlling to devourment, Sean had no choice but to create a corresponding pill which had many usages.

Furthermore, the “Winter Spirit Domain” was not a true spirit domain, it could not be sustained long in battle. On one side, it was because its structure was not stable enough. The other being the True Power of a gold rank martial artist was unable to support spirit techniques, and when the True Power is insufficient, it would combust the martial artist’s life force. So, after they go through an intense battle, the martial artist would become extremely weak.

But this weakness did not affect the power of the Winter Army.

An army completely made up of saints, how long has the Heaven’s Road not seen that?

Although they could erupt for a short time, but the Winter Army’s strength was formidable.

To attack the Aries Constellation, they did not need to exert much force, only sending out a small unit, they resolved the battle quickly.

Without question, although the Winter Army was made up of malpractice, but it was still the current strongest army.

But for some reason, seeing the Aries Palace that was being engulfed in flames, Sean did not feel any happiness, but instead became emotional. The Silver Frost Mounts had once swept everything in Heaven's Road, but who knew that the Aries Palace would one day be destroyed in the flames of war?

I guess this would mean that I have made an impact in Heaven's Road history.

Sean self mocked himself.

Chapter 688 – Encountering An Expert!

The news in the past few days made even Tang Tian feel that he was caught unprepared.

First, it was the Aquarius Constellation, then the Taurus Constellation, and then the Aries Constellation. In the blink of an eye, three of the Ecliptic Palace Constellations had fallen. In the entire Heaven's Road, everyone was dumbfounded, the Honorable Martial Group, had been a hegemon of Heaven's Road for so many years, but never once did anyone felt so fearful of them.

Defeating three Ecliptic Palace Constellations were so easy as though they were red heated blades cutting across butter, they did not even spare much effort.

The Winter Army defeated the Black Feathers Mount in a face to face combat, and burned down the Aries Palace. The Saint Blood Army destroyed the Bullhorn Army, and accepted the Taurus Constellation's surrender. The two terrifying armies cleansed the battlefield, using the beautiful victories, they showed their prowess to the entire Heaven's Road.

Clan Elder An, the youngest Clan Elder amongst the 13 Clan Elders, shocked the entire Heaven's Road.

The first to panic were not the smaller constellations, but the Ecliptic Palace Constellations. These large constellations, after being at the top of the food chain for so long, maintained a tacit understanding between each other without any competition, they

did not have any natural predators and led comfortable lives. Even if it was the Martial Group or Onyx Soul, they all lived in harmony.

Slow and without pressure. That was what described the lives in the Ecliptic Palace Constellations the best.

Suddenly, the silence and peace was broken, they realised in panic that they had become the prey. Three Ecliptic Palace Constellations had fallen, striking an unprecedented fear into the other Ecliptic Palace Constellations.

Almost all of the Ecliptic Palace Constellations started to prepare their armies for war. But after having peace for too long, their speed of preparing made them look extremely panicked and chaotic. Only the Leo Constellation remained the same as usual, they had fought with the Honorable Martial Group for a long time, and was the strongest. But they were surprised by the appearance of the Winter Army and the Saint Blood Army, the two brand new armies that revealed a terrifying powerful in which even the Leo Constellation dared not be careless with.

Lei Ang had specially used a communications treasure device to ask Tang Tian about the Blood Meridians Weapons.

Other than the Leo Constellation, the only other one that was relatively calm was the Sagittarius Constellation. The Empress did not care about politics, but she was a Gold Saint, and had sufficient qualifications to maintain calm. Furthermore, everyone in Heaven's Road knew that the Sagittarius Constellation had a close relation with the Ursa Major Constellation, and unless the Honorable Martial Group had gone bonkers, they would not

aggravate the Sagittarius Constellation.

It was also the Libra Constellation's first time obtaining a connection with Tang Tian, and they hoped to achieve an even deeper level of alliance.

The Libra Constellation felt an immense pressure on them, their constellation's general mood was advocating freedom, with all sorts of techniques and sects existing in the constellation, but their fighting ability was not that strong. The higher ups of the Libra Constellation knew their own circumstances, although their advocate for pleasure was different from the Taurus Constellation and the Aries Constellation, but in the entire Libra Constellation, they were all immersed in learning techniques but did not attach any importance to fighting. When they saw the Ursa Major Constellation's mechanical techniques sudden emergence, they felt that it was a direction suitable for the Libra Constellation to expand into, and decided to purchase the Ursa Major Constellation's mechanical spirit weapons and the related techniques.,

They had initially thought to digest these techniques and expand on their own Libra Constellation mechanical techniques.

Only when the real war approached did they realise that the long term academics atmosphere in the Libra Constellation produced many scholars, yet was unable to produce any Gold Saints or powerful military generals. Without experienced military generals or trained armies, all of their mechanical spirit weapons were useless.

The panic and fear spread throughout the higher ups of the Libra Constellation, and the Ursa Major Constellation became the only lifeline that they could think of.

There was no other ally that held such extraordinary power that made them feel much safer.

It was not only the Libra Constellation, the other Ecliptic Palace Constellations were also looking for allies. To reorganize their military and equipment was not something that could be achieved overnight, if they wanted to form up their fighting strength, they needed more time. The current Honorable Martial Group was like a monstrous beast that had opened its mouth wide and was looking for prey after prey.

Clan Elder An had gone through the [Honorable Martial Constellation] plan with careful deliberations, the first wave of attacks were aimed at three targets, which were also selected through careful screening. Other than the three constellations being weak, Aquarius Constellation's wealth was able to help them for the following battles by supplying logistics and money. As for the Taurus Constellation and the Aries Constellation, they were like the frontline powerhouses of the Ecliptic Palace Constellations, and their destruction would be like stabbing two sharp knives into the Ecliptic Palace Constellations.

The battle progress far exceeded Tang Tian's expectations.

When the Taurus Constellation and the Aries Constellation were destroyed, Tang Tian had to cancel his sneak attack. Despite that, a sneak attack on the Honorable Martial Group's secret encampment

and killing off a Gold Saint was extremely alluring to Tang Tian.

But the Honorable Martial Group's forceful offense stance caused everyone to feel a chill in their spine.

"We are now unable to determine who their next target will be." Tang Tian said gloomily: "They have taken over three constellations, and their paths to engage have spread even more. Furthermore, the other constellation's defenses are full of mistakes."

This judgement made everyone feel helpless.

Other than the new Leo Constellation, all of the other Ecliptic Palace Constellations spent a great deal of effort on deploying defenses. Due to having peace for too long, they were rather unwary, and, as their deployment required a great deal of wealth, their ordinary day defense became a problem.

Who dared to attack the Ecliptic Palaces Constellations?

This phrase always made everyone speechless. Furthermore, spending would always be far greater than what they would expect.

Facing the machines of the Honorable Martial Group, the Ecliptic Palace Constellations could only wait like plump and well fed livestock, waiting to be cut.

Tang Tian could not help but ask: “What is the Honorable Martial Group trying to do?”

This was what he could not comprehend, it was advantageous to the current Honorable Martial Group. As long as the Star Door that connects to the Sacred Saint Galaxy opens, their army would continue to pour into Heaven’s Road, and the Honorable Martial Group would be successful.

Now that the Honorable Martial Group was performing a large scale attack on the Ecliptic Palace Constellations, if they said that the attack on the Aquarius Constellation was for money, then why would they attack the Taurus Constellation and the Aries Constellation, could it be that they were not afraid of the Ecliptic Palace Constellations forming an alliance against them?

As long as they formed an alliance, it would be an extreme provocation to the Honorable Martial Group.

Maybe the Ecliptic Palace Alliance would not fare well against Honorable Martial Group in the early stages of the battle, but as time passes, the Ecliptic Palace Alliance would gradually become more suited for battle, and their profound and deep history within their families would be unleashed. They held an astronomical sum of manpower and boundless of resource, with their star treasures, if they were to put everything into the battle, they would be able to produce terrifying power.

Why would the Honorable Martial Group risk universal condemnation and take the risk?

Tang Tian did not understand.

But it was not only him, the others could not comprehend the situation as well. If it was given as the old Honorable Martial Group was like a cunning old man, then he would not be a lunatic. Although the cunning old man's every step would cause everyone to be careful, but his every step was calculated and planned, while no one knew what the lunatic was doing.

If he could not understand it, he would ignore it. That was Tang Tian's style.

To the current Ursa Major Constellation, opening the pathway to the Sacred Saint Galaxy was the most pressing matter. As long as they formed the connection, the Ursa Major Constellation's strength would take a qualitative leap. At that time, he would hold advantages of both Heaven's Road and the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and would not need to be afraid of anyone.

Who cares if there were a myriad of changes, they would be speared to death!

Tang Tian handed over the defensive matters of Heaven's Road to Tang Chou. With him around, even if the Honorable Martial Group had any secret weapons, thinking to break into Ursa Major Constellation would definitely not be easy.

He suddenly realised that the crux of the war was him.

What he wanted to do, was not just to bring the Null Division into the Sacred Saint Galaxy as reinforcements, but most importantly to form the connection, a race against time.

“We are preparing to move out!”

Tang Tian shouted.

Bing bit his cigarette as he read the report in his hands carefully, behind the lingering smoke, he started to frown. The Southern Alliance’s recent large scale slaughtering of pirates, at the moment had turned very slow. It was not that the pirates in the Southern Region was powerful, but the pirates seemed to have vanished in a night.

This unordinary movement immediately roused Bing’s attention. Such a big movement was impossible to not raise the cautiousness of the pirates. But for the pirates to suddenly disappear, it meant that there was some plot at hand.

Bing knew that behind the pirates, were the Honorable Martial Continent people. With them amongst the pirates, the matter would definitely not be so simple.

Where did they go to? What are they planning to do?

Bing had not even noticed that the cigarette had burned to its end. No matter how big pirates were, they were still pirates, and they would definitely lose to a standard army in a head on clash. The advantages of pirates were that in the ever changing sea of energy, they moved like the wind, disappearing and appearing as and when they liked. Furthermore, they were better in warship battles, and not battles inside Continents.

He believed that the commander in the Honorable Martial Continent could see that as well, and have decided to place the battle inside the Sea of Energy.

The sudden disappearance of the pirates made Bing realize that inside the pirates camps, there was definitely a powerful military general.

“Report! The Young Leaf Continent suffered an attack, their Hong Shan City was sieged!”

“Report! Great Village Continent suffered an attack, the Yong Li City was sieged!”

“Report! Meadow Viper Continent suffered an attack, the Yang Rong City was sieged!”

.....

.....

In an instant, multiple reports came up, causing the atmosphere to become extremely tensed. In the blink of an eye, everywhere was enveloped in the flames of war, causing everyone to feel uneasy. 13 Cities were suddenly attacked, and seven of them that were sieged experienced a baptism, while the other six pushed back the pirates.

Powerful!

Upon receiving the news, Bing's first reaction was to praise them.

The opponent's move was brilliant!

The cities that were attacked were all the cities inside the small continents of the Southern Alliance. And the cities were not the heavily guarded main cities, but were still considered important, although the loss was not fatal, but it was still a headache. To the small continents, their resources were initially thin and they decided to join the Southern Alliance in hopes of landing themselves in some riches. Now, they did not even receive any benefits, but suffered heavy losses, how could the small continents tolerate it?

Such a result caused people's heart to stir.

How will the Southern Alliance reimburse the loss of the small continents? How would they handle the pirates, and give an account to the small continents?

If it was not handled properly, it would definitely cause endless troubles. It was like being cut by a small knife, leaving a small wound on your body. Although it is not fatal, but if you do not cover it up or bandage it up, it would gradually lead to a loss of blood.

Bing carefully studied the map and marked out the cities that were attacked.

He had to admit the craftiness of the opponent.

All of the cities' positions were randomly placed with no definite pattern to their attacks. No one was able to figure out where their main body was and where they planned to hit next.

The enemy is an expert!

Chapter 689 –

Lady Rou who was seated in the corner observed Mei Chen Xiu who was at the main seat of the meeting.

Lady Rou was from an intelligence unit, and was clear that her own ability was unable to make any large differences in terms of military movements. Mei Chen Xiu was the one who formulated the plan on attacking the Southern Region, and as the best candidate, he became the chief commander of the entire operation.

This was Mei Chen Xiu's first time taking on such an important position. Although he was the one who formulated the strategy on attacking the Southern Region, but what he submitted was merely the preliminary plan. The entire development was personally handled by the higher ups.

Finally after being left alone, Mei Chen Xiu felt extremely excited. To any military general, the ability to control the entire large scale war was a dream come true!

Mei Chen Xiu knew that it was an opportunity hard to come by. The process of annexing and swallowing up the various continents in the Western Region was a part of the vast battle history. After going through the countless battles, the Honorable Martial Continent that was not known for their armies grew stronger and stronger, and more famed grade generals appeared. Out of the few famous generals were the Five Honorable Martial Tigers: Mu Zhi Xia, Mo Xin, Qiu Xu Hua, Gou Cheng WenDao, and Jia Ya.

The Five absolute famed generals were neck to neck intimidating heroes. But to the other military generals of the Honorable Martial Continent, it meant that they had fewer chances to shine.

No one was born a famed grade general. A famed grade general was polished out. Only by going through the unforeseeable changes on the battlefield, battling with their enemy's general in terms of wits and bravery, all of these experiences were required. They were things unachievable just by reading. Every battle was an extremely hard to obtain experience for any military general. The larger the scale the war, the more complicated the situation, the higher the demands of the general, but at the same time, it gave valuable experience to him.

Mei Chen Xiu had immersed himself completely into it, his outstanding talent started to blossom with dazzling lights under the extreme difficulty.

For the first phase of the war, he had called it [The Wind Sighing and Crane Calling].

“At the moment, the plan is moving extremely smoothly. We did not attack the important cities, and thus they are not as prepared, other than Yuan Shan City sending soldiers out to chase, the other cities did not even bother chasing, so our retreat had been very smooth.”

The adjutant finished announcing the report, his face was full of excitement, from the looks of it, the progress had been rather smooth.

Mei Chen Xiu nodded his head, with no expressions visible on his face: “How was the situation of capturing them?”

“The cities that had been sieged uniformly have rewards, but as the cities are not too big, the rewards are not too big. As per your instructions, we did not attack any citizens. But the granaries have all been destroyed.”

“Well done.” Mei Chen Xiu smiled: “If they want to save the citizens, they need to transfer their food and resources, and thus deplete their manpower. We are pirates, born to destroy, we need to make them bleed continuously. How are the reactions from the other continents?”

“All of them have increased their guard.” The adjutant reported: “We do not have sufficient manpower. From the looks of the situation, I suggest attacking their transport ships, this will make them more fatigue and will increase their bleeding.”

To pirates, attacking transport ships were their most common battle tactic. Pirates rarely attacked cities as the estuaries had tight defenses and powerful strongholds.

For a warship to attack a fort, they would lose the advantage in mobility, and instead be destroyed by the forts.

So when Mei Chen Xiu just announced the plan, many people rejected it, but with Lady Rou’s support, this plan was completely pushed on. No one would had thought that it would run so

smoothly.

But after all, they were on unfamiliar grounds, using unfamiliar methods to do battle, the lower ranked pirates were fearful and did not have confidence in sieging cities. So when the other party increased their defense, they subconsciously returned to their familiar style of fighting.

“No, the transport ships will most probably be bait. Follow according to plan, gather at the allocated location, we need to be more patient.”

Despite his warm voice, Mei Chen Xiu’s voice had a strong sense of confidence.

Lady Rou looked at Mei Chen Xiu in admiration, from start to finish, she never interrupted him. This young man had extraordinary self confidence and outstanding talent, but was just lacking a stage.

There isn’t a better stage than this.

Maybe I am witnessing the rise of a fame grade general.

But even if Mei Chen Xiu did mess it up, it did not really matter, because Lady Rou had just received orders from the higher ups, that they had decided to launch an Expedition to the South!

A Southern Expedition!

These exciting words revealed an unusual scent, Lady Rou was inwardly shocked, because it would completely topple their previous strategy. From an ordinary continent, the Honorable Martial Continent developed to devour the Western Region, relying on the support of their strategies.

Regardless of spirit research, or the Honorable Martial techniques system or their attriting strategies, none had any results that could be seen in the short term. The Honorable Martial Continent was able to develop to where it was because of the perseverance and planning of the higher ups of Honorable Martial Continent for 500 years.

This seemingly dumb persistence caused the Honorable Martial Continent to become extremely strong, and many in the internal department of the Honorable Martial Continent felt that their strength was already enough for expeditions.

But no one had ever raised it up, because only after the early 300 years of persistence, did the Honorable Martial Continent see the dawn of being rich and powerful, obtaining and annexing as they went around the Sacred Saint Galaxy, waiting for the Star Door to open to launch the expedition in the Heaven's Road to replenish themselves. When that happens, combining the Honorable Martial Continent of both words, they would truly become undefeated, and that would be the beginning of the true expeditions!

Every single higher up of the Honorable Martial Continent have followed this strategy to extreme completeness, and were bent on setting fire to the entire Southern Region, plotting chaos and

disorder with petty tricks, never really starting a real expedition. An expedition would only cause the entire Sacred Saint Galaxy to unite and see the Honorable Martial Continent as an enemy.

To the Honorable Martial Continent, before conquering Heaven's Road, they would not start any expedition, which was the fundamental strategy. But at the moment, this strategy was being pushed aside, causing people to be lost.

The orders from above specially mentioned the Shang Continent, requesting her to formulate a plan around seizing control of the Shang Continent.

Lady Rou did not think that the Shang Continent was any threat to the Honorable Martial Continent, even with the current Southern Alliance thriving. But compared to the Honorable Martial Continent that solely occupied the Western Region and developed into a maturing giant, the Southern Alliance was still an infant. It's life was so weak and feeble, with many internal strifes, shortage of team spirit and chaotic supervision, any bit of contradiction had the possibility of destroying this new life.

Then what does the Shang Continent have? Only one answer: A Star Door to Heaven's Road!

But the Honorable Martial Continent also had a Star Door, just that it was not time to open. The Shang Continent's path obviously also had a big problem, because there were no Heaven's Road army entering the Sacred Saint Galaxy, and what the Shang Continent was relying on were all the armies from the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

Are the higher ups so impatient to this extent?

Lady Rou secretly shook her head, the current Honorable Martial Continent's authoritative figure was Great Clan Elder Augustine, and he had a pair of eyes that were capable of seeing and understanding everything, he held unfathomable knowledge and was extremely patient.

Great Clan Elder Augustine has been in power for 40 years, and in these 40 years, the Honorable Martial Continent has been flourishing. Great Clan Elder is also a careful man, and will not make such a lowly mistake.

There must be something that made the Great Clan Elder decide such a thing.

Could it be.....

Did something happen in Heaven's Road? Lady Rou's eyes opened widely, her face was full of shock.

A betrayal from the Honorable Martial Group and the Temple!

For some reason, that thought jumped out of her head. She was afraid of her own thought, but in the next second, she believed in that guess. She was a person from the intelligence unit, and treated everything with suspicion, especially loyalty. Furthermore, the connection between both sides was extremely thin, and the Sacred

Saint Galaxy lacked the ability to control the Honorable Martial Group and the Temple.

In that moment, she had plotted out the rough outline.

As the time for the Star Door slowly crept nearer, the Temple and the Honorable Martial Group will definitely be afraid and confused for their future, they should already be at the pinnacle too, and the communication and trust between both sides had been less. At this time, the Temple and the Honorable Martial Group should be like dried grass, with a bit of spark, they would combust.

If that is the case, that explains why the higher ups are unable to wait.

They require the waterway of the Shang Continent!

After understanding the situation, Lady Rou calmed down, she rubbed the temples on her forehead and started to think carefully, causing her to be slightly tired.

“My Lady, do you need to rest?”

Mei Chen Xiu noticed Lady Rou’s fatigue and asked in concern, towards this lady who had supported him endlessly, he treated her with utmost respect.

Lady Rou revealed a warm and gentle smile: “No matter, I need to leave for a while, I will hand this place over to you, will there be

any problem?”

“I will take care of everything.”

Mei Chen Xiu bowed and answered.

Lady Rou did not inform him of the top secret news, Mei Chen Xiu's rank was not high enough. She thought for a bit, and said: “You have roughly three months of time, and i hope that within that time, you will achieve a dazzling victory.”

Mei Chen Xiu was surprised, but he immediately revealed a thoughtful expression, and bowed again, speaking calmly: “Although victory or defeat cannot be predicted on the battlefield, but I, Chen Xiu, will do my best. Regardless of anything, my lady's promotion for me will always remain in my heart.”

Lady Rou revealed another look of admiration and laughed: “Your victory will be the best return.”

“Yes.” Mei Chen Xiu's eyes lit up with a bright light.

Lady Rou laughed and left. Although the higher ups have already determined the expedition, but such a large movement would be extremely complicated and require time. The Five Honorable Martial Tigers had to conscript and gather their forces, prepare supplies, choose their course of route, all of these required discussions.

It could not be completed without a few months of preparations.

From that point, it was obvious that the higher ups were somewhat caught off guard by the changes in Heaven's Road.

~I hope that before the Southern Expedition begins, Mei Chen Xiu can obtain a victory. Only from that will he not be completely suppressed. Once the expedition to the south begins, the Five Honorable Martial Tigers will definitely move, and out of the five tigers, a few would definitely go to war.

Facing the glorious and powerful Five Honorable Martial Tigers, the other generals did not need to speak about authority.

But if Mei Chen Xiu was able to take down the Shang Continent and obtain the waterway and establish the wonderful achievement, he would have the possibility to contend against the Five Tigers. But Lady Rou knew that it was impossible, the Shang Continent had won every battle they fought, and definitely were not amateurs.

~But all he needs is a victory, for the Five Tigers to witness his talent, and for that, he can only depend on himself.~

I have done all that I can.

And before the expedition to the south began, she decided to explore the Shang Continent.

She was a person of the intelligence unit, and knew of the importance of intelligence, which was her mission.

Shang Continent, I wonder what you are like?

Her mind was filled with anticipation and curiosity.

Chapter 690 – Wu Ma Tian

Wu Ma Tian stood extremely straight, which he had done for over half an hour.

This person smoking the cigarette is the chief general of the Southern Alliance? And he is even a spirit? Can a spirit even smoke? Seems like the cigarette tastes quite good, I should ask what brand it is later....

At the start he was feeling afraid, he did not understand why he was picked by name to meet face to face. Although he was the commander of Yuan Shan Army, but it was just a local army that was garrisoned in Yuan Shan City. It was just a small city, and the army was naturally not any big army, in which at times they were even sent to protect guests as bodyguards, maintain peace and order, and escorts for caravans.

I am just a small figure, why would they know of me?

Could it be that something has happened? Or is it something good? On the road, he kept on worrying about it, although he was not afraid. He never did anything bad, and an army with such poor wages, they could never strike it rich, and could only create some profits for themselves. The higher ups would only turn a blind eye to such actions.

Wu Ma Tian could only come up with a few ideas, if the higher ups asked him about his guilt, he would first ask about the one year and seven months worth of wages owed.

But being the head of a broken army, he did not care that much.

The poor and tired Wu Ma Tian calmed himself down. But the moment he stepped into the Shang Continent, the bustling activities and flourishing lives made him dumbstruck. Various trading ships traveled to and fro the Shang Continent, and all around there were many structures that rumbled with activities, dazzling line-ups of signboards filled the streets, each signboard more and more luxurious. Yuan Shan City's business district was extremely pitiful compared to this. The dense population was like dense cloud coins flowing all around.

He had never been to the Shang Continent in his life, but he knew that the Shang Continent was known for its poverty.

Along the sides of the road, many new buildings were slowly being built. This city that was buzzing with activity caused Wu Ma Tian to become extremely invigorated.

Suddenly, he raised his head, a look of suspicion appeared on his face. The energy undulation in the air had a sense of peculiarity. It seems that the energy flow here is being controlled somehow....

This discovery made all of his complicated thoughts disappear.

As he travelled in further, he realised that other than the flourishing businesses, there were many more armies. That's right, armies, he had seen at least four different armies training while moving.

When he saw Bing, he became extremely suspicious.

He stood there for half a day, and Bing treated him as non-existent. Wu Ma Tian at least knew what the rules were, if the commanding officer did not speak, he naturally would not move. Although he stood there extremely straight, but his mind kept drifting off with thoughts.

But what he did not know was that Bing was secretly observing him.

Wu Ma Tian's stature was not tall, and was skinny. Few strands of hair drooped over his forehead, looking as though he had not showered for a few days, and with his round chubby face, there was an indescribable wretchedness to him. The expression in his eyes were one of blankness, his eyes made him look drifted. With a relaxed posture, he did not look taut at all, like a skeleton that was about to fall apart. On his clothes, there was a large oil stain that had not been washed off, and it did not seem to be recent.

This man is definitely a crafty veteran.

The light in Bing's eyes was unscrupulous and shrewd.

Crafty Veterans were always trouble in the army, they were all the same, following the principles of looking after his own hide, outward devotion but inner opposition were their most common form of treatment, all of their courage mostly grinded away. Any experienced general hated to have any crafty veterans in their

troops, as the morale of the unit would be easily broken.

But, out of the 13 cities that had met with the pirates attack, only Yuan Shan City had chased after the pirates, and the one who led the chase was Wu Ma Tian.

“You have any problem?”

Bing asked coldly, he noticed the man in front of him was drifting off in his mind, his expression beginning to become sluggish.

“Problem? Oh, your cigarette seems good, can I have one?”

Wu Ma Tian who was completely dazed, did not use his brain and just blurted out his thoughts, and by the time he reacted, his face was completely pale white.

You fool, courting disaster! Oh my god, I have just courted my own death! How can I do such a thing?

To think that my first words to my commanding officer was to ask for cigarettes!

Wu Ma Tian felt that his days had gone gloomy, ~It's over, it's over, I will definitely be retrenched, the goddamn commander position will no longer be related to me, I have to face my own retrenchment, after I finish spending my life savings, I will wander about on the streets, my later years will definitely be mournful.....”

Thinking about the dilapidated home of his in the future, Wu Ma Tian started to grieve to the point that he almost cried.

~A single slip that will lead to everlasting sorrow, when I go back home, I will definitely use this suffering as a lesson, and teach all my subordinates. It seems that talking from one own's experience is the most convincing nowadays.....oh, I cannot forget to tell the old king that he owes me 20 thousand cloud coins.....who else owes me money? They can go, but the debt must be paid.....Shuan Zi said last year that he wanted to treat me to a big meal, oh, I cannot let him go, which place should we eat at? I better think of something good, oh yes, the fried pig trotters that Ming Sheng had talked about the last time, I have not been there before, eh, I'm hungry now.....~

Bing was also startled from Wu Ma Tian's request for his cigarette, he had met many of his subordinates, but not one had asked for a stick before.

“Take it.”

Bing was not a miser, and instantly threw one to Wu Ma Tian.

Wu Ma Tian who was still immersed in the fried pig trotters subconsciously accepted it with his hand. It's so light, what the hell. He immediately became enraged: “Boss, why is the pig trotters so small?”

It's a complete sham!

He raised his head to look at the fried pig trotters boss in anger, but when he saw the face clearly, it was like a bucket full of ice water drenching him down to his feet, he opened his mouth wide, his entire person became a statue, not moving an inch, completely frozen on the spot.

“Pig trotters?” Bing’s face was covered with the smoke and could not be seen clearly, but his squinted eyes released a cold aura that flickered like a blade edge: “Since you like pig trotters so much, from today on, you are in charge of pig trotters. Although our chefs do not have such a dish, but I agree in adding this dish. You only have one task, and that is to supply pig trotters to the entire army.”

Wu Ma Tian opened his mouth wide and stared at Bing blankly. On that spot, he did not know how to react to such a ridiculous order.

Will kneeling and begging help? Hug his thighs? Will crying be better? Should I just toughen myself up and say I am not doing it? Will I be directly chopped up by the guards at the door and fed to the dogs.....

当巫马天从自己的脑洞中回过神来, 。

When Wu Ma Tian came back from the thoughts in his head, Bing had already disappeared.

With that one order, he was transferred to the cooking

department.

His life is truly saddening!

Wu Ma Tian took the order with him and headed to the door, the sunlight outside was unable to relieve the pain in his heart, he clenched his fists, his face filled with unswerving determination, he had decided to let that smoking ghost understand what 'You can kill a soldier, but you cannot humiliate one' meant!

Feeling that his determination had attracted the attention of the guards by the door, he walked forward.

"Big brother, where is the cooking department and kitchen?"

After sending Wu Ma Tian to the kitchen, Bing continued with his daily work. The matters regarding the pirates did not seem to have affected him, other than reminding the various continents to raise their guard, he did not have any substantive actions.

In the war room, a gigantic map was plastered on the wall, with different colored lines written all over and many small numbers written all over, the entire map was covered with such drawings and writings, causing anyone to look at it to become dizzy.

The smell of smoke was extremely strong in the room, as the sunlight shot in through the window, strands of smoke and dust could be seen flowing around.

Bing got out of his concentrated state of mind and looked away from the map.

Stretching his waist, he subconsciously touched the snuffbox, but he quickly stopped, the cigarettes had been depleting quickly recently, and there were very few left in stock, so he had to hold back.

I wonder where Crazy Tang is at now.

And Ah Xin and the rest, how are they.

The situation in front of him was not any more challenging than the past, compared to the great war in Heaven's Road, it could even be considered relaxing. But at that time, although he was extremely busy and anxious, but as long as he carried out the orders well, he did not have much pressure. When the sky fell, the superiors above him would block it for him, and he did not need to do anything.

But now, all the pressure was on him.

At such a time, he would always think about Tang Tian. Although the young Tang was crazy all day and night and did not have any time of being ordinary, but his state of mind was extremely thick like no other. He never felt that the pressure was big, and if asked if he was under stress, he would simply raise his head and say, 'why think so much, just destroy the enemy, everything will be fine.'

So whenever Tang Tian was there, Bing did not feel that much pressure.

I am truly not suitable to be a leader.

But, Bing had never wanted to be a leader, It is so tiring, life is meant to be enjoyed, as long as everyone is here, it will be good, I wonder when Crazy Tang will be here.....

In a daze, Bing sunk into the sofa and fell asleep.

Sai Lei returned to Three Spirits City safe and sound, and in the entire Ursa Major Constellation, everyone heaved a sigh of relief. To the current Ursa Major Constellation, Sai Lei was definitely an important figure in their strategy, if anything were to happen to her, it would be an immense loss to Ursa Major Constellation.

Sai Lei raised her head high, her eyes burning with flames.

The Saint Blood Army's Blood Meridians Weapons had greatly incited her. Although she could easily count out the many malpractices inside the Blood Meridians Weapon, but in terms of the performance, the [Frost Mountain] was not inferior to the [Saint Blood].

But to the arrogant big sister, completely suppressing the other party was the only result she could accept.

It was the first time that she had encountered a provocation ever since she was regarded as a Grandmaster, causing her fighting intent to soar to an unprecedented level.

Come then!

She swore in her heart, to create a brand new mechanical spirit weapon that could completely destroy the [Saint Blood] in all aspects!

Once she returned, she did not have any intention to rest, dressed in her high heels, she stormed into the laboratory. With her killing intent, the roads split apart like the red sea for her, giving her unobstructed path. At this time, whoever crossed her would definitely die.

Passing through the training grounds, she stopped in her tracks after hearing a series of smashing sounds.

She turned her head and looked at the training grounds. What entered her vision was an extremely ugly mechanical spirit weapon. In terms of her beautiful work, it truly was the most despicable and ugly mechanical spirit weapon, its obese body made it look like a swollen wild beast.

“What the hell is that?” She blurted out.

Pi Pa who was beside her looked over. She explained: “That is

[Monster].”

“[Monster]?” Sai Lei’s eyes lit up.

“Yes, redesigned by Screw.” Pi Pa explained: “There is a batch of students with average results but are extremely suitable with Monster, So Screw made them all one each. They decided to call themselves the Monster Army....”

Before Pi Pa could even finish speaking, she watched in shock that the training grounds had a red figure.

With her high heel shoes, Sai Lei was rushing into the training grounds, one step after another, she rushed towards the Monsters.

Chapter 691 – New Moon Swallows

Command Whip

In the process of studying [Monster] from a distance, Sai Lei kept quiet.

The extremely ugly mechanical spirit weapon, as its name suggested, had an exterior uglier than what any human was capable of imagining, causing Sai Lei to feel shock.

[Monster] completely toppled Sai Lei's knowledge, every single component was filled with the scent of the Southern Cross Army style. There was no sleekness to it, no wings, but it held unimaginably thick defensive capabilities and astronomical strength. The weakened martial spirit needed to work a lot for it to conduct complicated actions. But at the same time, it greatly dropped the requirements of the mechanical martial artists, matched with the simplistic movements and martial techniques was an explosively powerful might.

This caused Sai Lei to be shocked but enlightened, she suddenly realised that her understanding on battle might be totally off.

As her mechanical spirit weapons became more and more complicated, the grade of martial spirits became higher and higher, but the requirements demanded of the mechanical martial artists also became higher.

But [Monster] was of a totally opposite style, crude, simple, easy to use, far from the beauty of [Frost Mountain], and was extremely

ugly to add. But Screw's unfathomable understanding towards mechanical techniques were displayed to full saturation from [Monster]. There were no fancy joints or components, but it held extreme stability, extraordinary sturdiness. Compared to it, Frost Mountain's joints were all pieces of art.

The thick arms and legs gave it extreme stability and monstrous strength. It stood there quietly, and like its name suggest, its savageness.

It was not that [Monster] did not have any weakness, but instead, its weakness was very obvious. It could not fly, was extremely heavy, and the user was required to exhaust more energy. Its martial spirit's grade was not high, thus it was not as intelligent as [Frost Mountain]. It also had requirements to be worn, just that it was in terms of physical strength and not in terms of the ability to communicate with the martial spirit. In a one against one scenario, [Monster]'s standard might not be inferior to [Frost Mountain], but its functions were far less than [Frost Mountain].

But despite all of its weaknesses, they could not hide [Monster]'s worth. Because [Monster]'s construction cost was extremely cheap, and compared to the extravagant [Frost Mountain], it truly had the worth of quality-price ratio. One [Frost Mountain] was enough to build twenty [Monster]s.

Just that advantage itself moved Tang Chou.

The Ursa Major Constellation had walked on the path of elite troops, and did not have many armies. The Mechanical Army was split up, Tang Yi's Lupus Army, Magic Flute's Hunter's Net Army

and Ta Dun's Plateau Army. These were the four main large armies of Ursa Major Constellation, but in line to the potential chaotic future, Tang Chou thought that the number of armies were too few.

The Ursa Major Constellation required average functionality and low cost mechanical spirit weapons, because with that, they could fully unleash the advantage of the manpower from the Lupus race.

The future war in Heaven's Road was bound to be large scale.

And thus, the formation of the Monster Army was quietly built up.

Deepin the Sea of Energy.

Many light regiments floated inside the Sea of Energy like fireflies, they were neatly arranged in files, flickering on and off, as though they were breathing. Following the seemingly breathing rhythm of flickers, the surrounding energy was being absorbed into the formation, and produced traces of vortices in the surroundings.

Xie Yu An stood in the center of the formation with a stern expression. 108 little swallows flew around, flying and surrounding the formation. These swallows had small bodies, with sizes as small as fingernails, they released extremely bright moonlight

light aura, like a group of cheeky sprites.

Around him, in front of every soldier floated silver weapons, which were releasing intense silver lights. Every soldier was drenched in perspiration, they did not dare slacken, and worked hard to control the treasures in front of them.

Bright to dark, inhaling and exhaling, energy surged into the formation rhythmically, and upon entering the formation, the swallows flying around would destroy the energy, transforming into thousands of minute threads that entered every treasure. Wave after wave of energy surged in, and the light auras on the treasures became even more intense.

After maintaining for a full six hours, Xie Yu An's forehead finally revealed a drop of perspiration.

The energy surging in became slower and slower, Xie Yu An knew that everyone were at their limits. He took a deep breath and shouted: "Break for me!"

The sky full of swallows abruptly flew back into his hands from all directions, pa pa pa, condensed sounds of explosions came up, and a moonlight colored long whip quickly grew in Xie Yu An's hands. A long whip consisting of 108 joints, resembled a moonlight colored bone snake, slowly waving about.

This was the spirit treasure specially refined for him by Little Fool, the New Moon Swallows Command Whip. Evening Snow Ocean that was in Shi Sen's hands had made all of the soldiers and

officers jealous for a long time. Xie Yu An did not dare to have any wishful thinking, he knew that his own Swift Army was an army that was bought. In truth, the boss was already very generous to them, and both the Swift Army and the Skull Unit were satisfied by the treatment.

It was said that Aya had even obtained a broadsword which was also a spirit treasure.

The densely packed lights quickly dimmed down.

Every soldier sat down on the ground, they were drenched from head to toe, their eyes were tired, and they were gasping for breath. No one spoke, they did not even have the strength to lift up a finger and were taking every single second of the precious time to rest.

If they did not have sufficient rest, they would not be able to persevere through the next cycle of training, and they would pull down the army.

Xie Yu An's circumstance was much better, he quickly recovered his physical strength and stood up to check on everyone, seeing that they were all safe, he heaved a sigh of relief and calmed himself down. The soldiers, even when resting, hugged onto their treasures with all their might.

Xie Yu An could not help but smile.

When Master Bing threw them a bunch of star treasures, they were over ecstatic, and even Xie Yu An became joyous. Star Treasures were precious objects with high value. Every single person of the The Five Southern Island Families had a star treasure, causing Xie Yu An to be extremely jealous since a long time ago. But he was not a general that liked to cause a ruckus, and maintained his silence the entire time.

When the Master truly brought star treasures to equip the entire Swift Army, every single person in the unit became so happy they almost went crazy. But when Xie Yu An sought guidance from Bing on how to train with the star treasures, and wanted a few coordinating tactics to train, he never expected Master Bing to simply say “Figure it out yourself”, and leave.

Xie Yu An was dumbfounded. Master Tang Chou was a perfectionist that attended to every matter personally. He would even specially structure every phase of a tactic. But Master Bing was of a completely different personality.

But it was good that Xie Yu An always executed the orders from his superiors to a hundred percent. He never asked why, and since Master Bing had asked him to figure it out himself, then he would, and that might also be the Master wishing to test him. Furthermore, giving his entire unit star treasures already made him extremely grateful, even if he had to figure out tactics on his own, no matter how difficult it was, he would not even frown doing it.

Xie Yu An was a cautious man by nature, and did things systematically. He first went to seek out The Five Southern Island

Families, and attentively consulted them on their daily training, as they had obtained their Star Treasures even earlier and had even more experience to boot. After that he visited Jing Hao, Crane and Ling Xu, seeking guidance from them to clarify his doubts.

After a bout, he had an outline on how to assimilate the treasures into his army.

He then started to lead the Swift Army to conduct tests in training, as The Five Southern Island Families walked the path of individual martial artists, they were not suitable to be used in armies, and he did not participate in their training any further. Xie Yu An was a meticulous man, he constantly thought about and repeatedly went through drills and practices, familiarizing himself with every soldier and their treasure.

Gradually, Xie Yu An, who brilliantly became accomplished in tactics by himself, understood the capabilities of star treasures, and quickly found a unique way for his army to train.

The method revolved around the star treasure in his hands, the New Moon Swallows Command Whip. Using the 108 New Moon Swallows, Xie Yu An's control over the army reached an all new level. The current synchronization frequency of the Swift Army had already attained a 98% rate, and that was a terrifying value. Every increase in one percent after hitting the 90% synchronization frequency rate was extremely difficult.

A synchronization frequency rate of 98%, was a value that Xie Yu An had previously thought was impossible, but who knew they were able to attain it.

This was directly related to the New Moon Swallows Command Whip in his hand, the tiny swallows had an extremely mythical name, called the New Moon Swallows. Their shapes were similar to the changes of a moon, crescent moon, gibbous moon, quarter moon and full moon. Every transformation bestowed them different capabilities.

The other most important function of the New Moon Swallows Command Whip was its ability to filter out the impurities in the energy, leaving behind energy that resembled moonlight. The entire army's star treasures absorbed this same type of energy, and that the reason for the extremely high synchronization frequency.

Xie Yu An gently caressed the New Moon Swallows Command Whip in his hand. During this period, everyone was improving at an astronomical rate, all of their star treasures absorbed a surprising amount of energy. But among the energy that was absorbed by the army, half of it was swallowed by the New Moon Swallows Command Whip.

More surprisingly, despite the vast amount of energy swallowed, the New Moon Swallows Command Whip did not show any signs of transformation, causing him to be extremely eager for it to transform.

The location of their training was rather far from the Shang Continent, and also far from any waterway, and with no other continents nearby, they were alone by themselves. Their training revealed too many movements, with the converging energy flows, the might was extremely imposing.

For the sake of not attracting any attention, they had specially chosen this place.

Xie Yu An never broke contact with the Shang Continent, reporting back to Master Bing about the progress of the army every three days. He had also heard of the pirate attacks, allowing Xie Yu An to be aware of the craftiness of the opponent.

But when he requested to move out, Master Bing rejected him without hesitation.

His request for them was only one thing, to grab every single second to train.

Xie Yu An could only suppress the battle intent in his heart, he could not hide his worry, the Shang Continent was walking on a tightrope, if they were not careful, they would fall into the abyss. He did not know how Master Bing would handle the situations that were soon to come.

He suddenly laughed at himself, What am I doing, seeing myself as the world savior.

Master Bing will definitely have his own ideas!

My task is to as quickly as possible increase our strength within the shortest period of time.

With the New Moon Swallows Command Whip and star treasures, as long as they had sufficient time, Xie Yu An was confident that the Swift Army would rise from a silver rank army to a gold rank army. It was something that he dared not ever think about in the past. It was the dream of a famed grade general, an opportunity that no other general of his grade could ever obtain.

But it landed in his hands.

Xie Yu An suddenly thought of a phrase.

If my continent treats me with such greatness, I will repay my continent with everything that I have.

The introverted Xie Yu An's heart was clapping and thundering as though a storm was raging in his heart.

Chapter 692 – Do You Know Why?

Jia Ya sat quietly, the young man in front of him, with his elegant and white face, had eyes with a gaze that was as sharp as a sword, causing others to be unable to look at him, was currently extremely reserved.

Jia Ya's gaze could not help but have a trace of admiration.

Qiu Xu Hua's prestige had emerged and rose abruptly, faintly surpassing his own. Jia Ya, a naturally peaceful man that did not like fighting and did not have much desire for power, was happy for Qiu Xu Hua's transformation.

"I most probably will not go." Jia Ya placed the cup of tea down and smiled.

Qiu Xu Hua did not reply, out of the Five Honorable Martial Tigers, he and Jia Ya had the best relationship. Every time he came into Jia Ya's residence, he felt extremely relaxed. Jia Ya was dressed in casual brown buddhist robes, his white socks were washed extremely clean, and looked plain and simple. He had small round eyes with luscious eyebrows, with thin lips that always maintained a shallow smile, his peaceful temperament always made the vicious currents in Qiu Xu Hua's chest disappear temporarily.

He quietly sipped on the tea with both hands. It was a crude tea, which was extremely bitter to the taste.

“I lack the will to win, and with this battle on a new ground, it’s too unsuitable for me. Boss Mu will definitely not go either, he needs to defend the Wei Ye Guan Continent. It is the stronghold that leads straight to Savage Continent’s Maw Stronghold, and recently the Savage Continent has had some unrest. I heard that some female war god is sweeping through everything there. Boss Mu is worried that as long as the Savage Continent’s tribes are completely unified, they will become a threat to us, causing Boss Mu to have a headache.”

Qiu Xu Hua listened quietly, he had rose to the ranks of the Honorable Martial Tigers the latest, and regardless of connections or background, he could not compare to the other four.

“The remaining people would be Mo Xin, you, and Gou Cheng WenDao, you three should be the ones going in.”

Hearing that, Qiu Xu Hua’s sharp eyebrows frowned, his eyes released a smear of light that resembled a treasure sword being unsheathed, the light as brilliant as snow. This result did not lay far from his guess, but to hear it from Jia Ya, his heart was still slightly stirred.

The Southern Expedition, was destined to be a great military campaign. Only through successful military campaigns could one measure the strength of a [commander](#). Only when there was war could there be military achievements, and any commander would long for war in their hearts. Those who wished for greatness required a large scale military campaign.

(For those who are unfamiliar with how the army works and confused with why I interchange general and commander,

commanders are anyone in command of any more than one man. A general is a high ranking commander, and commanders can mean sergeants to warrant officers to officers and captains and so on so forth. Generals are those with the brains and strategizes, warrant officers are those that implements.)

Wars were the platform for commanders, and where commanders fought to the death.

Feeling Qiu Xu Hua's fighting intent, Jia Ya retracted the smile on his face, and spoke gloomily: "In truth, the decision of the Southern Expedition was something that the Great Clan Elder hesitated with. We have never prepared for a Southern Expedition before, but because there are changes in Heaven's Road, we are forced to make this decision. The time for the Southern Expedition is set in two months, with such a short time for preparation, it is not enough to sustain such a large scale military campaign, and that is what I am worried about the most."

Qiu Xu Hua spoke: "We only need to attack them with the speed and power of thunder, and take down the Shang Continent. I have seen the position of the Shang Continent, it is at the side of the Southern Region, but it's not far from us. If we want to take it down, we only need to occupy a third of the Southern Region. As long as we control the scale of the battle to an appropriate extent, it will greatly lessen the pressure on us."

"That's right." Jia Ya relaxed his expression, but deep in his eyes, a layer of apprehension was still present: "That is why I did not go against the decision for the Southern Expedition. A third of the Southern Region, if the three of you go all out, the chances of

obtaining it will be much higher. But a war like the Southern Expedition has never occurred before, thus we cannot anticipate the reaction from the various continents of the Southern Region. If they were to group together, our attack on Shang Continent would incur a lot of losses.”

The thought of being unable to take down the Shang Continent never crossed Jia Ya’s mind. The Shang Continent might be quite powerful, but compared to the Honorable Martial Continent, they were still far lacking, the two of them were in complete different levels. Furthermore, such a large scale offense involving three tigers was the first time for the Honorable Martial Continent in the past few hundred years. But he knew that when the Honorable Martial Continent began the Southern Expedition, they would become public enemy number one. If the various continents of the Southern Region team together, it would be even more difficult for them.

“That is why we need speed.” Qiu Xu Hua returned to his main point, a flash of seriousness in his eyes: “As long as we are fast enough, they will not have the time to position themselves. As long as we are fast enough, before they team together, we can take down Shang Continent, and they will naturally scatter.”

Jia Ya laughed, Qiu Xu Hua’s decisiveness was like a sharp sword, no matter how chaotic the situation was, the matter could be resolved with speed in his hands to obtain victory.

Perhaps this battle is prepared for commanders such as us.

Jia Ya was filled with worry, such a large scale expedition,

without a long period of planning, adding that the situation was forced, they had already lost the initial preparations.

Thankfully, the Honorable Martial Continent had faithfully implemented their ancestors' plan. Although it was currently in chaos, but the long time preparation and investment was extremely sturdy. Regardless of the resource or development of their armies, they were far more advanced than in the early days, and with the three famed grade generals moving out, the Honorable Martial Continent was confident on taking down a third of the Southern Region.

Although Jia Ya still felt uneasy, he did not think that the Honorable Martial Continent would fail.

He decided to change the topic: "When are you getting married?"

"After the war ends I guess." Qiu Xu Hua's white face blushed with a bit of red, he was slightly embarrassed.

It was Jia Ya's first time seeing such an expression on Qiu Xu Hua's face, and could not help but laugh out loud.

Wu Ma Tian pushed on the food cart filled with fried pig trotters across the training grounds. For the past few days, Wu Ma Tian's fried pig trotters had become the barrack's most favourite food, and the various armies would always order a mountain load of it.

Wu Ma Tian also became the most welcomed food delivery man of the various armies, even the sentries that saw him would smile.

Wu Ma Tian's gaze was always stuck towards the soldiers in the training ground.

It was not his first time watching the soldiers train, and he always had something to gain from them. In Yuan Shan City, a place that was too poor for anything, whatever training he did, he could not improve. When he first entered the army, he was so eager to learn and even wanted to create an elite squad, but very quickly, he was defeated by reality. Much less training, even the daily salary was difficult to obtain.

Aside from him, everyone else had to work other side jobs to fend for themselves, and many such jobs were never clean. But, he still tried his best to look for opportunities to practise drills, just in case any conflicts were to arise, they would not lose too miserably.

Doing dirt on other villains were common matters.

Wu Ma Tian did not avert his eyes, and continued to watch.

“How is it? Are you interested in this?”

A voice suddenly came up beside him. Wu Ma Tian regained his senses, and looked unkindly towards the other party. It was a lady dressed in officer uniforms, with a plate of fried pig trotters in hand, she ate and talked at the same time.

He recognized her, every time he came to deliver the fried pig trotters, she would be the first to rush over, A hungry ghost that cannot reincarnate? Humph, from one look, you are definitely a person who got in through connections and pulled some strings, if not why are you so carefree when everyone else is busy training? Furthermore, you are a woman, can't you act like one?

Wu Ma Tian thought in despise, but spoke with a curved lips: "Interest? Of course I do, no matter what, it is more interesting than frying pig trotters."

"Do you want to go and train?" The female officer bit with her mouth full of oil and said: "If you send one additional portion of pig trotters here everyday, I will allow you to train on the field and experience the beauty of our Skull Unit."

"Not interested." Wu Ma Tian snorted.

"Eh, didn't you just say you were interested?" The female officer was surprised.

Wu Ma Tian replied lazily: "I am more interested in drilling other people in training."

"Oh!" The female officer was truly surprised now, she placed down the pig trotters in her hand and sized Wu Ma Tian up: "I couldn't tell, we are in the same line. So now there are even crouching tigers hidden dragons in frying pig trotters?"

These words stung Wu Ma Tian, so he ignored the other party.

“We are in the same line, let’s discuss about it.” The female officer took another pig trotter.

“Can’t you eat less!” Wu Ma Tian stared at her: “I have an exact number here, if you eat another one, when they come to look for me, I can only look for your commander.”

“Just because of one pig trotters, you need to report to the commander?” The female officer placed down the pig trotters in her hand, she wished to continue, thinking that she could rope him in and become familiar with him, who knows if he could bring in more pig trotters.

The pig trotters by the kitchen had become extremely popular, but the most wretched thing was that it’s quantity was limited and hard to even obtain one. A person had to order early in the morning, and if he were to be late by one step, he did not even need to think about it.

The lady officer coughed slightly: “Do you want me to explain it to you? Our Skull Unit’s tactics are really exquisite.”

“Alright, tell me about it.” Wu Ma Tian’s mind truly had a few places that he was curious and did not understand.

The female officer became attentive, she could not hold back and

threw out her goal: “Then you have to bring me a few more pig trotters tomorrow!”

“You’re just that?” Wu Ma Tian looked at her in despise: “As long as you explain it to me well, I will bring you three additional ones tomorrow. But if your standard is too low, hehe, don’t even think about it.”

The lady officer’s self confidence erupted, What joke is this, my tactics cannot compare to a chef that fries pig trotters?

“Heh, they are now conducting the training of small entanglement, do you know what small entanglements are? That indicates groups of less than five men entangling the enemy, and why five? Master Tang Chou thinks that a battle with less than five people requires lower expectation for a group coordinated attack, but in truth, it requires the individual strength of the participating members to be slightly higher. The energy synchronization frequency in a small scale battle will not have too much of an impact. You know, the more the people, the higher demand for the synchronization frequency. Notice how they stand, that is called a wedge-shape interweaving formation, it can stop the enemy’s coordination, the sides can perform defense, and can quickly cut into the enemy.....”

The lady officer relentlessly went on and on for the pig trotters.

Wu Ma Tian’s face surfaced some impatience, and cut her: “Can you be more exciting?”

The lady officer stopped abruptly.

He pointed to the intense battle in the training grounds: “Do you know what training they are doing?”

The lady officer was startled: “Silkworm Form Entanglement.”

“Why are they maintaining a distance of 5m?” Wu Ma Tian asked.

The lady officer was dumbstruck: “Why 5m....”

She had never thought of that question before.

“Because the 5m distance allows them to maintain the flexibility of the formation, the front will produce the sword, blade, axe auras, and can confine the area they are allocated to, while the behind acts as bows and arrows, shooting into the space.” Wu Ma Tian was already looking down on the female officer.

The female officer: “.....”

“Do you know why they are paired like that?”

The lady officer spoke weakly: “To increase their attacking power.”

“Bullshit!” Wu Ma Tian scolded her: “What does this have to do with attacking power? Flexibility! Do you know flexibility? The long distance attack is to increase their distance away from the enemy, with the distance, there will be greater flexibility and mobility. Do you have a pig brain?”

The lady officer: “I.....”

“Do you know why their attacking method appears to be like a wave?”

The female officer continued to be dumbstruck.

“Idiot! You don’t even know this, and want to eat pig trotters? You should gnaw off your own legs! That is to increase the area of attack, understand?”

Female officer: “.....”

“Do you know why.....”

Female officer: “.....”

Chapter 693 – The Approaching Storm

“Are you ok?” Tang Tian looked at Sima Xiao and asked.

Sima Xiao’s entire body was trembling, his complexion was a faint blue. The Blue Sea was a sea of energy, formed by countless energy. Tang Tian and the Null Division had Zero Energy Bodies, and were not affected, but Sima Xiao was having difficulties. The blue sea of energy was continuously trying to penetrate into his body.

If not for Magatama protecting his body, the blue energy would have corroded his entire body and left nothing behind. This blue energy that was never encountered or seen before was extremely strange, producing an unspeakable coldness with a powerful corrosive nature.

The vast and boundless sea of energy caused people to be in despair.

There were a few times that Sima Xiao had the impulse to transform himself into a zero energy body as well. But every time that happened, his eyes would land on the Magatama who was beside him.

Her delicate and beautiful complexion that did not have any blemishes, her jade like eyes sparkled like gems and her red lips as flowy as water. Her pitch black hair drooped over her shoulders that was covered with an elegant and relaxed rainbow colored robes, also hiding her beautiful figure, her snow white slender legs

were like perfect pieces of art, and one of her ankle had a red string tied around it as she walked around barefoot.

When Sima Xiao had entered Scorpio Constellation, he did not give up on the Clan Union, but instead swallowed in the entire Clan Union. The unique spirit generals assimilation technique made by the Clan Union was also inherited, and under Sima Xiao's energetic support, it grew.

She was the most perfect being as of the moment. When Sima Xiao first saw her, without hesitation, he placed the Scorpio Constellation's treasure, Scorpio Magatama into her body.

Her name, was changed to Magatama.

Magatama floated beside Sima Xiao, a gentle jade colored light aura enveloping him. When the jade light entered Sima Xiao's body, the blue on his face would fade slightly, and he would regain the blood color. With the constant protection of Magatama, periodically she still had to help Sima Xiao remove the blue energy from his body.

"I'm fine." Sima Xiao heaved a sigh of relief, feeling the warmth and comfort in his body once again, he spoke with emotion: "Lucky for my family's [Xiao Yu](#)."

(Xiao Yu is Magatama's nickname, Magatama in chinese is Gou Yu.)

Magatama smiled gently, her beauty was something that could never be replicated.

Tang Tian looked at him in disdain: “Relying on Xiao Yu like that, you have no backbone! A man must be strong and have his own backbone, and have an indomitable spirit!”

Sima Xiao’s face was one of bliss: “Are you jealous, heh, living off a woman is not something that anyone can do, it requires talent, requires patience, it is a super grade spirit technique, do you know that?”

“I have Qian Hui!” Tang Tian said unconvincingly: “I also have a super grade spirit technique!”

“Shangguan Qian Hui huh....” Sima Xiao touched his chin: “She is quite fearsome, but compared to Xiao Yu, she is still lacking a bit!”

“Bullshit!” Tang Tian was enraged: “Qian Hui is lacking compared to Xiao Yu? You want to fight me?”

The people behind could not help but reveal helpless expressions, everyone was used to Crazy Tang’s childishness, but Sima Xiao was the Scorpio King, an unfathomable crafty, shrewd and treacherous man, to act so stupidly with Tang Tian, did he not find it humiliating?

Or could he be feigning it.....

Everyone listened to the two bicker in talk for the entire road,

and had enough of it.

“How many days have we been travelling?” Zhong Li Bai asked, he had a cautious expression and did not dare relax.

Upon entering the blue sea, he and Nie Qiu met the same problem with Sima Xiao, but Sima Xiao had Magatama’s protection and they did not. They only lasted for half a day before almost collapsing. But the two of them were highly intelligent and outstanding military generals, and knew how to take advantage of the power of the army. The two of them found a way to use the army to disperse the energy corrosion, but this required an outstanding control aura used by military generals.

“21 days.” Nie Qiu replied, as a blind person, he was even more accurate with the grasp of time, and was not influenced by the world around him.

Zhong Li Bai frowned, 21 days was a long time for travelling, but on the fortunate side, they had not encountered anything. There were no blue dwarves or Empyrean Ice Tree Spears, the vast blue sea was monotonous and boring.

Just then, Tang Tian slightly made out an ‘eh’ sound.

“What happened?” Sima Xiao who was already revealing unhappiness secretly became tense, seeing Tang Tian suddenly exclaiming out, a bad premonition bore in his mind.

“Sextan Eye seems to have a bit of problem, the direction seems wrong.”

Tang Tian looked at the blue sea ahead, his expression gloomy.

“The direction seems wrong.....” Sima Xiao was frightened, in such a vast and god forsaken land, if the direction was wrong, it was the same as death. He swallowed saliva: “You guys didn’t come by here the last time? Where did Sextans Eye bring you guys the last time?”

“The last time?” Tang Tian thought for a bit: “The last time, we encountered a storm, and we were flung all the way to Red Grass Beach.”

Everyone looked at each other.

Just at that moment, a sudden slight tremble came out from an extremely far location.

Tang Tian was the first to sense it and exclaimed out again, the second was Magatama, her beautiful pupils suddenly looked in the direction, and her face became slightly anxious. The sudden burst that made them all palpitate came extremely quickly, and at the start, what they saw was a thin line of blue. But in the blink of an eye, the blue line became as thick as an arm, the rumbling continued, and the blue sea around it seemed to churn.

The buzzing sound enveloped everyone, causing all of their faces

to change.

Rumble rumble!

When the trembling engulfed them, everyone then felt its terrifying might.

Magatama reacted the fastest, in the blink of an eye, her small body had pounced onto Sima Xiao's back. She was like a boneless snake, coiling around Sima Xiao's body, her exquisite face buried into Sima Xiao's chest, and the jade light suddenly exploded, enveloping the two of them.

Nie Qiu's reaction was barely slighter than Zhong Li Bai, he was much more sensitive to fluctuation in energy as he was blind, his face changed, and although he was surprised, he was not panicking, and shouted: "Prepare for defense!"

The Null division soldiers awoke from their daydream, with the shocked expressions, they immediately formed a defense formation.

Zhong Li Bai also reacted and immediately commanded his unit as well.

Everyone was prepared well, facing the surging wave that could topple mountains. In front of this heavenly might, an individual's strength was miniscule and insignificant, regardless if it was Sima Xiao and Magatama or the Null Division that had formed their

defense, they were all branches swaying with the wind.

From the explosive rumblings, they heard Tang Tian's excited voice: "The storm....the storm is here.....we are going....."

This idiot.....

Sima Xiao wanted to scold out loud.

But it was a pity that he could not do so in time, as a mighty force struck him from the back, he spat out blood and his eyes went black, losing consciousness. Right before he lost consciousness, he only had one thought.

Do you think that the storm is your carriage.....

After an unknown period of time, Tang Tian opened his eyes in a daze, feeling pain in his head. After a short while, he regained his focal length. What entered his vision was a dusky and damp ceiling, with fungi and bacteria growing in the corners of the ceiling, the air had a damp stink odor.

This....doesn't seem like Red Grass Beach.....

Why isn't this the Red Grass beach.....

Tang Tian stared at the ceiling for half a minute before reacting. Last time everyone was sent to the Red Grass Beach though....

He struggled to stand up, and suddenly felt that his entire body was tied down, his hands, legs, neck, had light needles piercing in them. His entire body felt weak, and he could not summon any strength.

The light needles were extremely strange, causing him to have no strength. Not only that, he could not even summon any Devil Flame.

I have become a prisoner....

Tang Tian was stunned for a while before reacting. Eh, why am I a prisoner? He suddenly trembled, he thought of Bing Ning and the rest, Not good!

He became tensed as he struggled to stand up, plop, as he was halfway to a stand, he fell back to the ground.

“Hahahaha, look at him, even the Prisoner Needles cannot completely hold him down, such a good quality body. He looks as though his body is made of steel, and can definitely be sold for a lot of money. I wonder which noble lady would want him and buy him, hehe.....”

“If we get him to the top, he will be worth a lot.”

“I heard that this time, there is an ice beauty, and over ten people were fighting over her, even Wang Ma Zi was refused, he must

definitely want them for himself. I never expected Miss Da Lin to appear, it's a pity you didn't get to see Wang Ma Zi's expression, hahahaha!"

"Haha, who asked him to owe Miss Da Lin so much favors, debts will always be repaid quickly!"

Tang Tian was startled, but very quickly he realised that they were talking about Han Bing Ning!

His blood started to boil to his head, Tang Tian started to struggle on the ground.

"Eh eh, why are you getting so agitated, could it be that you know the beauty?"

A man with a round face entered Tang Tian's vision, allowing him to see clearly the captors. He was dressed raggedly, his expression was sinister with two fierce bright eyes, he was obviously not a good person.

Tang Tian wanted to speak, but realised that his throat could not make out any sound.

Another person laughed and walked to Tang Tian and sized him up again, before saying: "Such a good body! Hey, what do you think about selling him to the Xue fFamily?"

"Xue Family?" His companion was startled: "You mean?"

“Don’t you think he fits the Xue Family very well?”

“True! The Xue Family has always been generous if we can satisfy them, we will definitely be rich! We can definitely sell it higher than to our superiors!”

“Go go go, we are going to the Xue Family now!”

The two of them immediately picked Tang Tian up and walked out. Tang Tian tried to struggle, but realised he did not even have an ounce of strength.

Tang Tian was thrown into a cart, and the remaining strength that he had was exhausted, causing his face to become a strange red, feeling extremely faint, his consciousness becoming a blur. The round faced man stood guard by his side, looking around carefully.

Tang Tian had never felt so powerless and helpless before, he felt as if the world spinning around him, and his consciousness became extremely blurry.

~All of you, you better be safe.....”

~I.....need to save everybody.....~

As he started to faint, Tang Tian could faintly hear people

talking.

“He seems to be having a fever! Damn it, to have a fever now, such timing!”

“What do we do?”

“What do we do?” We are already here, we have to try it! If it can’t work out, then we will think of something!”

“Such bad luck!”

“Shut up, you better not speak later.”

Tang Tian only felt the voice becoming more and more distant, his consciousness was quickly leaving him, and something seemed to be burning in his body.

Chapter 694 – Sin Domain

Tang Tian opened his eyes once again, and realised that he was lying on a bed.

The bed was made of stone, the bedding was simple but extremely clean. Tang Tian became slightly dazed, as though he had returned to the time when he was in Star Wind City. The many years of training and fighting, the young man's simpleness had become more solid through the grindings.

He was dazed for that moment, before thinking about the rest and seated himself up.

Where am I?

Where are the rest?

“Don't worry about your companion.” An old lady's voice caused Tang Tian to be startled, his face changed. He was completely unable to sense the person.

Tang Tian calmed down, his rich experience told him that if the other party had any hostility towards him, they would not have made any sound.

An old lady dressed in brown sat at a chair not far from him, she held a cane on one hand, and used her other hand to pour tea, and then slowly drank the tea. Beside her, a young lady dressed in

green stood straight, playing with her ponytail, her black clear eyes looked at Tang Tian curiously.

“Who are you guys? What is this place? Where are my companions?” Tang Tian asked without relaxing.

Upon remembering that everyone’s whereabouts were unknown, he became anxious, but he had to suppress the impatience in his heart as he knew it was of no help. His rationality prevailed over his emotions, which was something rarely seen in him.

“This is the Xue Family of Purple Cuckoo City, and I am the Matriarch.” The old lady had a kind appearance, she placed the cup down, and with a look of admiration: “You’re still stuck with the thoughts of your companions even when unconscious, you are a good young man that attaches importance in comradeship. Don’t worry, though your companions will suffer slightly, but they are out of danger. In the Sin Domain, no one will waste manpower.”

Tang Tian did not understand and asked: “Why?”

The old lady said indifferently: “In the Sin Domain, manpower is the most valuable resource.”

Sin Domain?

In this short conversation, Tang Tian had already heard the name twice, but he had never heard of such a place. He did not concern himself much over this matter, and immediately asked:

“Can I ask if you know where my companions are?”

“I don’t really know.” The old lady shook her head: “This time, Purple Cuckoo City picked up 300 people, which were all swept clean by the other families. Who knew that there were two that escaped the net, you’re one, and the other was a young lady. She was bought by Little Da Lin, while I bought you.”

Tang Tian’s face turned pale white as he muttered: “Only 300 people.....”

Seeing his unhappy expression, the old lady immediately knew that he had more than 300 companions, and said: “If you have more companions, they were definitely swept into the other cities. Every year, the Blue Sea will produce a Sin Tide, and many Blue Dwarves will rush up every year, the various families will go to and pick up these Blue Dwarves.”

“Why pick them up?” Tang Tian asked.

“For labour.” The old lady replied indifferently: “The Sin Domain is extremely lacking in laborers, so you do not need to worry, they are definitely safe from danger, if they are not obedient, at most they will have to do even more tough work.”

“I need to go and look for them!” Tang Tian stood up without hesitation.

The old lady did not even open her eyes: “Such affection is good,

but you should not have such audacious thoughts. You were bought by the Xue Family, and you are now a servant of the Xue Family. Doing your job well is your duty now.”

“Servant?” Tang Tian was startled.

“I spent 200,000 dollars on you.” The old lady said: “If you can take out 200,00 thousand to buy yourself off, you are free to walk.”

200,000 do-dollars.....servant.....

Tang Tian was dumbstruck, but in the next moment, his eyes became clear again, he shook his head with determination: “I am sorry, I have no money! I will definitely return you your 200,000 dollars, but for now, I need to save my companions!”

Tang Tian decided to leave.

The old lady’s voice came out from behind: “You can’t go. In the Sin Domain, any slave that escapes are treated as capital offenses. Servants who secretly plot to escape are also treated as such. No matter how powerful and capable you are, you cannot go against the entire Sin Domain. Once your matters are exposed, you will not even be in time to save them, they will be sentenced to death.”

Tang Tian turned around and stared at her in anger: “You.....”

“Your impulsiveness will only harm them.” The old lady remained expressionless: “As long as you step out of the Xue

Family, you will be seen as an escaped slave, and will be exposed through the Sin Domain Wanted List. If anything happens to the Xue Family, the Sin Domain will reexamine whether or not the batch of servants that came together are safe, at that time, your companions will not only be doing tough work.”

Tang Tian’s face flushed red, his fists were clenched so tightly that they started to crack, he was completely infuriated.

The old lady remained emotionless: “I admire your comradeship. As long as you do your work well, I will help you obtain some information on the whereabouts of your companions. The Sin Domain is not too big and not too small, and my Xue Family can obtain information much easier than you can. This old one promises you, if you are able to achieve good work for the Xue Family, I will set you free. If your contributions are huge enough, I can even buy the freedom of your companions. Although my Xue Family is not some big aristocratic family in the Sin Domain, everyone will give me some face.”

Tang Tian clenched his fists tightly, after a moment, he raised his head and said: “What do you want me to do?”

The old lady smiled: “This old one will arrange that for you, take a rest first.”

The two of them left Tang Tian’s residence and returned to the inner courtyard.

The young lady in green was impressed: “Madam is truly

powerful, to subdue him in a few sentences! But Ming Zhu was so afraid when Madam removed the needles from his body, Ming Zhu was afraid he would start hurting people the moment he woke up.”

“He kept on asking for his comrades even when he had lost consciousness, he cannot be so bad to that extent.” The old lady said with heartfelt words: “You must bear this in mind! People who attach importance in profit can be bought with money, people who attach importance in comradeship can be restricted with affections. He might not be extremely willing, but as a person of responsibility, he will naturally not be so reckless. If you want people to work for you, you cannot just employ them forcefully, you must know what he wants.”

Ming Zhu respectfully said: “Ming Zhu will remember.”

The old lady suddenly asked: “Did you find out about the harvest of the various families?”

“As of the moment, I do not know much, but there have a bit of information about the other cities, that this batch of people is more than a thousand.” Ming Zhu immediately reported.

“More than a thousand.” The old lady’s face became gloomy as she muttered to herself: “It is troubled times, seems like the Sin Domain will not be peaceful.”

“Madam, are you saying that there is an issue of where these people came from?” Ming Zhu’s face changed.

“In all the recent Sin Tides, the ones that come here are Blue Dwarves, but this time they are humans, it seems that they came from the Blue Sea.” The old lady said gloomily: “Their numbers are too much for people investigating the Blue Sea. I am afraid they are trying to look for something in the Blue Sea. From what he said just now, these thousand odd people are his companions, what do you think about a body filled with a few thousand people?”

Ming Zhu blurted out: “An Army!”

“That’s right, an army. I think he is not any ordinary soldier as well, if not he would not have such a responsible heart.” The old lady laughed: “Initially, I saw that he had a strong body and figured that the children that he would produce will have outstanding talents. My Xue Family does not have any good men, and all of you little girls are reaching the age to give birth, I also have consider these matters. If not, why do you think I would spend 200 thousand on a male servant?”

Ming Zhu never thought that that was the plan of the Madam, her face immediately blushed red and did not speak any further.

The old lady retracted her smile and sighed: “From the looks of it, he is a stubborn man, and cannot be forced. But he has just arrived in the Sin Domain, he is still sharp in the corners, after a while here, those sharp corners will be grinded away, at that time, even all of his great ambitions should be exhausted, he would then fully assimilate into the Sin Domain. Maybe I have over thought it, much less an army, even if it were a few armies that came to this wasteland, what can they do? Slowly grind away their hopes and dreams.”

Ming Zhu's expression looked dim.

Tang Tian opened his eyes, his complexion extremely ugly.

Not only could he not summon out the Null Flames, but the Cross Door that never had any problems before had trouble. The Cross Door was dim, as though it was almost dark, and no matter how much he tried to connect to it, the dim Cross Door had no changes.

This meant that he had lost all connections.

Damn it!

He punched the stone bed.

He forced himself to calm down, he stopped thinking about the effect that the storm had formed, because it was pointless. Regret and remorse were pointless. The only thought that he had in his mind was to find everybody else.

What should I do?

The old lady's words might be a reminder or a caution. But regardless if it is real or fake, I definitely cannot be reckless, as it involves everyone's lives.

I will first find out where we are, Purple Cuckoo City, Sin

Domain, I have never heard of such a place, much less what continent I am on.

When Tang Tian noticed the environment around him, he immediately noticed something off.

There is no energy in the air!

This was Tang Tian's first time experience a place with no energy, even the places with the thinnest of energy, for example Lupus Constellation, would have a substantial difference in sensation, as the thin energy was still energy. There was no need to talk about the Sacred Saint Galaxy where the air was brimming with energy.

This isn't the Sacred Saint Galaxy!

Tang Tian realised.

He curiously looked around, the house was extremely simple, a bed with a table and two chairs. The bed was made of stone, while the table and chairs were made from an unknown wood, and the work was extremely crude.

Tang Tian touched the stone bed, then dug out a few chips of wood from the table, after grinding them with his fingers, he placed his senses on them.

This is definitely not the Sacred Saint Galaxy!

Tang Tian became certain, there was no energy inside the materials. This was impossible in the Sacred Saint Galaxy or Heaven's Road, the energy that was in the air would cause every object in the world to contain some energy, sand, rocks, water, everything would have energy in them, the only question was how little.

I have no connections, I am penniless, I am unfamiliar to this environment, my own strength is disabled, and I know nothing of this place, or what situation the rest of them are.....

Tang Tian had encountered plenty of danger and troubles before, but he had never experienced something as drastic as this. The unprecedented situation did not discourage Tang Tian, but instead made him even more determined.

He closed his eyes and took a few deep breaths. The anxiousness in his heart gradually disappeared. He opened his eyes again, and his eyes were extremely clear.

He needed to take the initiative to associate himself and familiarise himself with the Sin Domain, and needed to work hard to think of a way to recover his strength, only from that could he have an opportunity.

Upon setting his resolve, Tang Tian no longer hesitated.

He went to find the Old Lady.

“I’ve recovered, what do you need me to do?”

Chapter 695 – Enlightenment In The Warehouse

There are times that when you have to do things that you are unfamiliar with, and you will unknowingly realise that you're not doing as terrible as you think.

Over the next few days, Tang Tian had already obtained plenty of information, for example knowing where the Sin Domain was roughly at.

It truly was not in the Sacred Saint Galaxy.

But, what Tang Tian did not expect was that the Sin Domain was actually found by the Honorable Martial Continent first. It was said that in the recent years, the Honorable Martial Continent had always been working hard to investigate the Blue World, and Tang Tian guessed that they had to be looking for a pathway into Heaven's Road. They did not find the pathway, but in one of their probings, they accidentally found a unique space. Inside this unique space, there was no existence of energy, and what surprised the Honorable Martial Continent even more was that any energy substance or object that entered this place would disperse at an astonishing rate. Even the Honorable Martial Continent's powerful Gold Saints could not stay long in this place. If they stayed inside for too long, it would cause a permanent fall in their strength.

This extremely dangerous place was then completely sealed, the Honorable Martial Continent did not have any interest in it.

The Honorable Martial Continent took over a few hundred years to devour the entire Western Region, the same time that it took for them to rise. The history of the Honorable Martial Continent's emergence was the history of the fall of many continents in the Western Region. All the big and small continents were struck by the Honorable Martial Continent's secret plots, wars and annexes. Very quickly, the higher ups of the Honorable Martial Continent found another problem, the captives.

All the continent's royal families, influential figures had stuffed the prisons of the Honorable Martial Continent. The Honorable Martial Continent was extremely wary of them, as the fallen royal families and influential figures were filled with hatred towards them. If they were forced into exile and accidentally rose from the ashes, there would be trouble. But the Honorable Martial Continent did not dare to kill all of them as well, as there were too many of them in numbers, with their huge population, if they killed all of them, it would incite the other continents in the Western Region to be more harmonious and fight against the Honorable Martial Continent.

A clan elder suddenly realised that the space that had no energy was the perfect natural prison for them.

That space was thus termed as Sin Domain, and became the land where all the royal families and influential figures were placed.

The Sin Domain's living environment was extremely poor, the people that were banished here had all of the energy in their bodies dissipate in a few months. They were unable to use any forms of energy, and could only rely on their physical strength. By dropping

from saint rank back to a weak state, many of these banished people could only last for a few years before dying. Those who had a strong will to live worked hard to survive, they created cities and worked hard to suit the Sin Domain, taking root in this exile and gradually reproducing here.

The Purple Cuckoo City was built by the Purple Cuckoo Family, which were the royal family of the Purple Cuckoo Continent. That year, when the Purple Cuckoo Prince and his other subjects were exiled, they landed on the same place and built the city, and even continued to hold the position of the royal family.

After hundreds of years, the current day Sin Domain people were all born here. All the infants born here did not have any energy in their body, and had adapted much better to living in Sin Domain.

As the exiled people were all higher ups of the various continents, they were people who had received an excellent education, and with the natural elimination of people who only knew how to drink and enjoy, the remaining people were filled with determination and the will to live, people brimming with talent. They continued to test and experiment, bringing all of their martial techniques and knowledge to be used in the Sin Domain.

The Sin Domain gradually became something that belonged to them.

All of this was just ordinary and common knowledge, unable to directly aid Tang Tian in resolving his current situation, but it granted him knowledge of the Sin Domain nonetheless. All of this knowledge allowed him to assimilate and familiarize himself with

the Sin Domain, furthermore, understanding and familiarising with the battlefield was the first thing any soldier should do.

Tang Tian held many suspicions in his mind, but was also enlightened.

Previously, he realised that the Sea of Energy in his Gemini Furnace was continuously shrinking, but now he understood why.

The Sin Domain did not have a sun, but still followed the day and night time. In the day, the sky would be a dim blue color, it was said that it was the Blue Sea. The Sin Domain citizens had said that the Sin Domain was like a big bubble in the Blue Sea. And because the Sin Domain repelled energy, it could continue to survive in the Blue Sea of Energy.

In the night, the sky would have brilliant dazzling lines of light, like auroras.

Tang Tian's job was simple, he was to guard the warehouse. The Xue Family engaged in the weaving business, when the ancestors of the Xue Family came in, they hid many cloud silkworm seeds in their clothes. The energy inside the cloud silkworm seeds quickly depleted, and the silkworms that came out were completely different from the original intended silkworms. And after three generations of grooming of the Xue Family, these cloud silkworms transformed into the golden steel silkworms, which was a completely different species.

The Sin Domain was sparse in vegetation, but had numerous

ores. The Golden Steel Silkworms evolved to be able to swallow ores. The Golden Steel Silkworms that swallowed ores could spit out extremely fine golden steel threads. These golden steel threads were not golden steel rocks, their internal diameter were hollow, had a soft texture, and was as light as feather yet extremely tough and durable to the point which swords and blades had difficulty cutting it.

Using this niche for their business, the Xue Family was able to sustain themselves.

The manufacturing of golden steel threads was extremely complicated and had many processes, thus its costly price. The warehouse which contained the golden steel threads became the haven for bandits and thieves, and they frequently lost stock. From the start, the Xue Family had more females than males, and 20 years ago, the situation became even more extreme. Everyone started to give birth to females, and from then on, this strange reality became the Xue Family's lineage, a line without males.

And for some unknown reason, the females of the Xue Family, without exception were extremely weak. The Xue Family had to spend a lot of their wealth to hire protection. But wealth moved people's heart, and theft often occurred. There were many times that the protection even bullied the main family, colluding with outsiders and planned events to steal the golden steel threads.

There was once where they were arrested on the spot, but the protection made bogus accusations. If not for the Xue Family and the Purple Cuckoo Family having a friendly relationship, their estate would had been given away.

Despite having repeated theft, the Xue Family kept quiet and did not reveal anything.

So Tang Tian's first task was to guard the warehouse. To other people, it was an extremely difficult mission, but to Tang Tian, it was exactly what he wanted.

Ever since he knew that the Sin Domain was able to repel energy, a brazen idea lingered in his mind.

Isn't this the best place to train Zero Energy Bodies?

He had suffered greatly from a loss in strength, and if he did not recover, even if he had information on everyone else, he could only watch on helplessly. He knew that he was not a person that could plot and plan, he could only take things head on. Since he had to take things head on, he required strength, without tyrannical strength, he would just lose.

Although Old lady Xue made many promises, but how could Tang Tian entrust the lives of his companions to another person? He had thought through the warnings from the old lady. Her words were true for the most part, but if it truly reached a bad situation, he had no other choice but to search for them house by house.

Whoever doesn't hand my companions over will be trampled on!

Tang Tian swore in his heart.

After clarifying his idea, Tang Tian settled himself. Regardless of anything, I need to recover my strength, so whether or not there is information or if I need to save everyone, at least I can do something about it.

The night turned quiet, in the corner of the warehouse, Tang Tian started to train in fundamental martial techniques, a warm up that he was consistent with.

Upon punching, Tang Tian felt a strange emotion.

In that moment, he had returned to Andrew Academy, returning to the mountain top where he trained in fundamental martial techniques for months. That familiar unfamiliarity enveloped him. In the past, his fundamental martial techniques had support from True Power, after that he had the power of blood meridians, which then led to Devil Flame and at long last transformed into the Null Flames.

But at the moment, all of the power in his body had disappeared, and he was purely using physical strength.

It was a completely different feeling, all of those movements that he had performed countless amounts of times, had always been extremely simple, but at the moment, even the last layer of its brilliance had been torn off.

Tang Tian's movements became slower and slower, perfecting every movement, as though he was partitioning the entire

movement into different segments, leaving marks in the air. There were no sounds of movements, even the undulation in the air had disappeared, one after another, fist afterimages, leg afterimages, formed in the air around him, and stayed for a long time.

The afterimages superimposed over each other, but there was no chaos or messiness in his movements.

In his immersed state, all of the instinctive movements started to transform, like dried up branches forming out green sprouts, showing signs of life. The frames of afterimages around him seemed to have come alive, as though there were many of him punching and kicking.

Tang Tian's movements started to transform, becoming increasingly free and fluid.

Like a painter, every stroke was succinct yet not following the same pattern, the patterns of the strokes were hard to predict, the ending positions unfathomable.

To reach the peak of succinctness was not easy, not abandoning variations but instead reaching the peak as well, his movements became clearly expressed, brimming with variations.

Tang Tian's eyes grew bright, inside the pitch black warehouse, it looked like two stars. He seemed to be enlightened with the perfect wisdom, his entire body emitting joy from his innermost heart, through his actions, there was an incomparable enjoyment. Space, time, power....all of these invisible forms, in his eyes were

like different colors of paint that were completely different with each other on the same plate, and his movements was the brush that used these paints.

In that moment, he finally knew that he had finally found the dao path that belonged to true powerful martial artists.

A dao path that truly belongs to me, a law that truly belongs to me.

This was the transformation that he had always dreamt of, finally able to glance upon a strength of an even higher realm. On this point, he was late compared to others, like Jing Hao who had long been enlightened on sword concepts. Tang Tian relied even more on his domitable body, and his innumerable series of movements to defeat his enemies. In terms of his enlightenment, he was far from others.

Until today, inside the warehouse, he broke through it as easy as breaking through paper.

He stopped moving, the freeze frames afterimages around him did not dissipate, he closed his eyes, and recounted the feeling. He had not recovered the Null Flames, the Cross Door remained dim, but he felt as if he had rebirth.

Just at that moment, Tang Tian felt something.

He gradually opened his eyes, like a pitch black room that

suddenly opened its windows, boundless of starlight shot in. One after another of tiny streams of airflow swept past, the freeze frames of afterimages disappeared like dust.

Tang Tian laughed silently.

I never expected for anyone to visit on my first night of guard duty.

Chapter 696 – Ping Xiao Shan

Ping Xiao Shan was very careful.

The matter of the old lady of the Xue Family spending 200 thousand dollars on a son-in-law had long spread out. 200 thousand dollars was a huge sum of money at any place, and the resolution of Old Lady Xue was clear as day.

The Xue Family have had too many females and too few males for far too long, and everyone knew of their hope to turn the situation around. He was secretly envious, all of the ladies in the Xue Family were beautiful and had gentle personalities, That guy is truly fortunate!

Dropping into such a tender place, Ping Xiao Shan did not believe that anyone could struggle out of it, and would just enjoy the loveliness of the ladies. Old Lady Xue's eyesight had high standards, many people had sought the Xue Family for marriage, but they were all rejected by the obstinate old lady. What does that unknown man have to be chosen by that old lady?

But, those who entered the Xue Family would not get out easily, the old lady was extremely afraid of leaking the secrets of the Golden Steel Silkworms, and thus only accepted for males to be married into the family, and thus any man with ambitions would naturally not be willing.

Ping Xiao Shan wanted to marry into the family, and was filled with jealousy. His attention went back to the warehouse. He had

chosen this specific day as he thought that Xue Family were too busy at the moment.

Humph, you can have the beauties, I will take the Golden Steel Threads Ping Xiao Shan was secretly pleased. It was not his first time entering the Xue Family Warehouse, and thus was familiar with the place. He was cautious by nature, and did not steal much each time. He knew that since he did not have any strong backing behind him, if he were to take too much golden steel threads, it would attract the attention of others. If they were to investigate, he would not be able to escape. As long as something was amiss, he would rather stay passive and not take any risk.

In the darkness, he waited patiently, quietly listening for any movements.

The warehouse was pitch black and silent.

Ping Xiao Shan did not dare to be reckless as he stealthily crept in, his movements were silent and careful. The Ping Family used to be a big family, their ancestors were all spies and scouts with great merits time and time again, and thus were bestowed a fiefdom for themselves. The Ping Family held unique stealth and concealment techniques which were passed down generation to generation. But it was a pity, the elites of the Ping Family all died in the battle against the Honorable Martial Continent, and there were only nine people banished to the Sin Domain.

After three generations, only Ping Xiao Shan was left.

But the hard work from the three generations were not for nothing, the stealth techniques of the Ping Family had been through countless revisions, all those techniques that required the use of energy were given up, and what replaced it were techniques requiring the strength and power from the physical bodies, they started to explore the potential of the physical body, and this tradition passed on within the Ping Family.

The Sin Domain had many thousands of families, all of them with their own legacies, but only one out of ten had survived to this day, and all of them disappeared within the Sin Domain. But the remaining families that continued to survive were the fortunate survivors of the cruel and gruesome past, and their legacies all suited the Sin Domain.

Ping Xiao Shan had extreme control over his every movement in his body. Every muscle of his could be as light as feather, every inch of his body obeyed his every thought.

His movements were extremely slow, moving with a speed close to a statue, the cavity in his eyes did not even have a flicker of light, as though there was no breath in him. No heartbeat, no warmth, no breath, he was like a lifeless rock, being as still as the surroundings around him. Every movement he made, every muscle in his body moved with extreme minute movements, merging with the movements of the air.

If air was a pool of water, Ping Xiao Shan was one with the water, not instigating any external ripple or flow.

When his feet touched the ground, the dust on the surface would

not even move.

Ping Xiao Shan had extreme confidence in his stealth techniques, he had once swept past a famous and powerful martial artist within a distance of only 3m, and the martial artist did not even sense him. To use his techniques to steal was truly like using a sledgehammer to crack a nut.

Ping Xiao Shan knew the positions of the golden steel threads like the back of his palm.

He quickly reached a corner that had a bunch of Golden steel threads. In the short distance, he could even smell the unique scent of the golden steel. Golden Steel Threads were basically scentless to ordinary people, but Ping Xiao Shan had acute and extremely sharp senses, Golden Steel Threads did have a scent, but it was extremely faint. And this extremely faint scent, regardless of how one tried to remove it, would never go away. Relying on this, he was able to discern between the real and fake products.

The seemingly lifeless finger suddenly became extremely alive, quickly opening the bag and retrieving out the minute golden steel threads, then sealed it back, making it look like it had not been touched. When the Xue Family took stock, they would not even sense the loss.

After obtaining it, Ping Xiao Shan turned without hesitation, ready to leave.

Ping Xiao Shan who had just turned, eyes immediately

constricted.

An unfamiliar man had unknowingly appeared behind him.

Ping Xiao Shan's heart jolted, the other party had appeared behind him without him knowing!

Any expert specializing in stealth would definitely be experts in countering stealth and deceit. But he did not even sense the other party, so he knew right then and there, expert!

Ping Xiao Shan was an experienced lone ranger, in that moment, his hand trembled, and the golden steel threads in his hands shot towards Tang Tian, the soft golden Steel Threads released 'xiu xiu' sounds in the air, followed with explosions in the sky, which was the sparks induced by the friction between the high speed golden steel threads and the air.

Tang Tian was surprised, the opponent's attack was rather powerful.

This is a copycat of Fire Scythe Ghost Claw.

Golden Steel Thread's concentrated strength were extremely tight packed and could not dissipate, the accumulated power was able to drill a few inches into steel boards.

Right at that moment, Tang Tian's eyes constricted, amongst the sparks and flames, a golden steel thread had quietly slipped

through, not inducing any sparks.

This golden steel thread released an extremely faint undulation, concealed within the dazzling flames and sharp sounds, it was like an assassin in the shadows.

An extreme sense of danger enveloped Tang Tian.

Tang Tian took a deep breath and punched out.

This punch looked extremely slow, but a faint build up of power enveloped the entire warehouse, the air seemed to have congealed to a stop.

Tang Tian's fist caused Ping Xiao Shan's face to change completely, he knew for sure that he had encountered an expert!

Without any hesitation, he leapt up and like a spirit, he flew out.

The chaotic sparks raged in the air, and the seemingly unnoticeable ripple all stopped in time in Tang Tian's eyes, his fist drawing an unusual arc, as though he had gone through countless planning for it, as though he knew his opponent's attack completely. The dancing sparks and the sharp screeching sounds, even the concealed golden steel thread was revealed, the faint ripple was as apparent as a ripple being produced in water.

But in front of this punch, they served as the perfect background. It had no light aura, no sound produced, no undulations, no

changes, it was a punch that he had trained countless of times, but it had completely captured Ping Xiao Shan's attention.

Pa.

It was as slight as a bubble rupturing, the sparks in the entire area, the ear piercing sounds and the undulation from the terrifying thread, disappeared like smoke.

The sky full of light disappeared, everything lost focus, only the fist that seemed to have frozen in the air.

Ping Xiao Shan that was flying out revealed a shocked look, there was only one thing on his mind, escape!

Even though he was completely spooked by the punch, his body was still able to react. Like a fish swimming, a thin ripple resonated out from his body, his body was like a mirror that reflected light, the air around him suddenly became blurry, and his body quickly became faint.

One palm suddenly swept across the air through the ripple.

Ping Xiao Shan felt his neck tighten, his body that was disappearing was quickly pulled back.

Tang Tian felt as though he was pulling on a sandbag as he pulled the figure out. Suddenly, Tang Tian's face changed, he immediately retreated away from Ping Xiao Shan. Pa, the

afterimage of Ping Xiao Shan suddenly shattered.

The shattered illusion rapidly collapsed, forming a tiny vortex, finally becoming a black hole the size of a grain.

Tang Tian looked at the small silent black hole with a shocked expression, he was surprised. Spatial Law, that guy actually used a Spatial Law!

He could not believe his own eyes, the crumbling space was extremely dangerous.

Tang Tian felt the fear in his mind. Previously, he had taken action without thinking. But now that he knew that the opponent could use Spatial Laws, he would not risk the danger. The crumbling space would ultimately form a spatial black hole.

Spacial black holes were the strongest weapons in Spatial Laws. With Tang Tian's current strength, if he had even touched a small bit of it, he would definitely die.

Tang Tian had not been in such a dangerous situation for a long time, causing all the hair on his body to stand straight.

He never thought that the Sin Domain would be so dangerous, a small thief would actually be able to use Spatial Laws. Space, Time, Life and Death were eternal laws of the world, and were the top and most powerful laws, they were the three great laws that formed the base of all worlds, and were the foundation of any

world, when the three interweaved with each other, they made up everything, and formed up countless of branches. There was a saying, the tens and thousands of laws were birthed from the three great laws. The three great laws were the core of all laws.

Although the three great laws were great, but at the same time they were extremely difficult laws to train in, they were not just one law by itself, but three huge law systems. Countless people had pursued them, but there was never anyone that dared to say that they were familiar in all the profound and unfathomable mysteries in any of the laws.

That was why Tang Tian was shocked.

Spatial Black Hole, that was definitely a high level spatial law.

For a high level law to appear on a thief was too inconceivable. Tang Tian then realised that the danger he felt from the golden steel thread was because of the spatial laws imbued into it.

Damn it, what kind of monstrous place is this!

Tang Tian who had just been enlightened on laws felt as though an ice bucket of water had drenched his entire body, the joyous feeling he had in his mind had completely disappeared. He suddenly realised that his understanding of the Sin Domain was extremely pitiful.

If Laws here are left unchecked, then it will not be easy.

Tang Tian felt a pain in his head.

In the darkness, Tang Tian's face changed, but he did not know that in his hand, Ping Xiao Shan was also overwhelmed by shock.

Ping Xiao Shan felt as though his neck was grabbed by metal pincers, he could not budge an inch, all of his limbs were stretched out wide, his entire body was frozen and did not react to his thoughts, like a frog in a lab.

He looked at the ground that was less than half a meter away from his face in shock, Ping Xiao Shan's mind went black.

This guy.....who is he.....

Chapter 697 – Test

Ping Xiao Shan did not speak, even when Tang Tian used the Golden Steel Threads to tie his hands behind his back and around his neck to the point that he looked like a dumpling. The time that both parties exchanged moves was extremely short, but in that bout, he had already suffered a crushing defeat, he knew of the disparity between both parties, and knew that the other party's strength far surpassed his.

In front of such an opponent, playing petty tricks would just humiliate himself.

If he wanted to kill me, I would not be alive now.

If course, from his perspective, the other party did not have a need to tie him up, he himself was unable to escape. But the other party's serious attitude made him choose to remain quiet.

He looks so young.....

Ping Xiao Shan was inwardly surprised, he secretly sized Tang Tian up, guessing his background. Could he be a hidden expert from the Xue Family? I have never heard about him before, that old foggy in the Xue Family had been stolen from countless times already. Inside Purple Cuckoo City, it was not only one family wishing to steal from the Xue Family. Such a young yet powerful martial artist, he must be from some great family, not only does he need to have talent that surpasses others, but he needs a lot of natural resource as well.

Could it be that the Xue Family have caught onto something and requested powerful backup from somewhere?

That is the most reasonable guess, the Golden Steel Threads are worth a lot of money, if Old Granny Xue uses it as a bargaining chip, there will be many great families willing to help. Although everyone in the Sin Domain are all disappointments, but they still have their glorious histories and their well versed tricks in politics. Such collaborations, compromises, underhand battles are all very frequent.

Ping Xiao Shan's mind worked extremely quickly, and first got rid of the Purple Cuckoo City. Although they were not weak, but they were not the strongest family in Sin Domain. Ping Xiao Shan knew of all the powerful martial artists of the Purple Cuckoo Family.

Then who is it?

He uses his fists, the great families in the Sin Domain that specializes in fist techniques are the Lie Family with the Tyrannical Fists, the Chi Lei Family with their Musical Fists and the Mu Family with their Mu Family Fists. Tyrannical Fists' laws are extremely forceful and fierce, seeking to only push and never retreat, to either kill or be killed. The Chi Lei Family's Musical Fists walks on the path of music laws and have unfathomable variations. The Mu Family fists are the most mysterious, the laws that they use have been speculated but no one has ever dared to confirm it.

Thinking about that extremely simple and unadorned yet heart palpitating fist, Ping Xiao Shan felt that he was most probably from the Mu Family. Regardless of whether it was the Tyrannical Fists or the Musical Fists, their laws were extremely obvious, and Tang Tian's fist did not match with them.

If the Xue Family had found a backing in the Mu Family, then no one would dare to lay their hands on the Xue Family business.

The old lady in the Xue Family truly has something up her sleeves, without anyone knowing, she found her way to the Mu Family.

Tang Tian did not know that Ping Xiao Shan had thought so far, both parties had only exchanged in a short bout, but the consumption of stamina was great, and his physical strength was at a low. He clumsily tied Ping Xiao Shan up, then sat down on the floor and gasped for breath.

He had just stepped into the realms of laws and knew little about them, so he was even more unfamiliar to confronting laws. If not for his recent enlightenment, adding his sharp senses and extraordinary strength, he would not be able to grab Ping Xiao Shan.

The first battle in the Sin Domain had left some fear in Tang Tian. In the Sacred Saint Galaxy, warships ruled the space and with the dense energy, the barrage of attacks that came down like red was a spectacular sight. But in the Sin Domain, it was just an inch of difference with regards to laws that were even more dangerous, unpredictable and unfathomable, if caught

unprepared, it would lead to death on the spot.

Ping Xiao Shan also noticed Tang Tian gasping for breath and perspiring all over, and heaved a sigh of relief. Although the other party was strong, but it was a level in which he could deem as acceptable.

“What’s your name?”

Tang Tian wiped off his perspiration and asked, in the battle, Tang Tian’s laws enveloped the entire warehouse, and did not reveal any sounds. Tang Tian had somewhat comprehended something, if energy was a solid, then laws was like an abstract principle, like an invisible hand. This invisible hand could not only control energy, but could control air, sound, light and darkness, etc.

No wonder Laws are a higher level of strength, although it isn’t as prestigious as spirit techniques, but its variations are unfathomable.

“Ping Xiao Shan.” Ping Xiao Shan answered honestly.

“You came to steal the Golden Steel Threads?” Tang Tian asked.

“Yep.” Ping Xiao Shan admitted.

Tang Tian rubbed his head, he did not know how to continue interrogating him. Such things were usually left for Bing. Bing’s

thoughts were meticulous and crafty, to play tricks and tell lies in front of him was to ask for trouble.

I cannot not ask anything....if not....wouldn't it seem that I am failing as a guard?

Tang Tian racked his brains and finally thought of something: "What technique did you use to try and escape just now?"

Ping Xiao Shan was startled: "My Ping Family's stealth techniques."

"Ping Family stealth techniques?" Tang Tian heaved a sigh of relief inwardly, and smiled: "It's name isn't that unique. But it can actually use spatial laws, it is very powerful, can you teach it to me?"

Ping Xiao Shan looked at Tang Tian's eager expression, and was speechless.

This guy...what is he thinking?

Seeing that Ping Xiao Shan was not speaking, Tang Tian immediately added: "If you are willing to teach me, I will let you go. Of course, you cannot come back and steal the Golden Steel Threads in the future."

Ping Xiao Shan looked at Tang Tian in disbelief, he would not lose out by imparting the stealth techniques, although the Ping

Family stealth techniques were unique, but if the other party was someone from the Mu Family, it would not count as well. What made him confused was that, if the other party wanted some secret techniques, he could simply torture and get it out from him, to give such an advantageous condition to him made Ping Xiao Shan skeptical.

Tang Tian patted his chest: “A real man will do what he say!”

Ping Xiao Shan was quiet for a moment: “R–really?”

“Really, really!” Seeing that Ping Xiao Shan was interested, Tang Tian became ecstatic and said: “Why would I lie to you?”

Ping Xiao Shan felt the same, the other party did not need to lie to him. Alright, even if he cheats me, I can’t do anything, my life is in his hands. Upon thinking about that, Ping Xiao Shan nodded: “Alright.”

[A few hours later.](#)

(This few hours might translate to few hours, the term used in chinese is an old way of interpreting time, in which 1 时辰 is our current 2 hours, so it is extremely vague.)

Ping Xiao Shan watched in dumbstruck at the figure that flickered around, disappearing and appearing, in just a few hours, Tang Tian was fluently utilizing the Ping Family’s stealth techniques. Although there were many flaws, but he merely took a few hours. Ping Xiao Shan remembered when he trained in the stealth techniques when he was young, and suffered a long time

before becoming better.

He learned it in just a few hours....

Alright, if he is the Mu Family disciple, there isn't anything strange....

“What? Your last name is Tang?” Ping Xiao Shan was stunned, Not last name Mu, he was not from the Mu Family!

“Yea.” Tang Tian already had his arms around Ping Xiao Shan's shoulders as though they were extremely familiar with each other: “You taught me the stealth techniques, from now on you are my good brother. If there is anything, just say my name.....”

Tang Tian suddenly remembered that he was not in the Shang Continent or the Ursa Major Constellation, and immediately changed his words and said: “And come and find me.”

Find you.....

Ping Xiao Shan looked blankly at Tang Tian, he felt that the person in front of him seemed to have a problem in his head. We are enemies, we were just fighting a few hours ago, and I was even.....oh, I am still tied up.

Tang Tian followed Ping Xiao Shan's gaze, and noticed that Ping Xiao Shan was still tied up, he immediately laughed: “Oh I forgot all about it.”

Ping Xiao Shan looked in shock as Tang Tian untangled the ropes. Tang Tian's excitement made him feel confused, This.....is not normal!

Ping Xiao Shan did not say it out, but he felt extremely uncomfortable.

"I can go?" Ping Xiao Shan asked carefully.

"Yeah you can." Tang Tian said as a matter of factly: "Remember, if you have anything, you can come and find me."

Ping Xiao Shan asked with a dazed expression: "What's your name?"

"Tang Tian!" Tang Tian patted his chest happily: "You can also call me the godlike young lad."

Godlike young lad.....

Ping Xiao Shan's face distorted, he felt extremely confused with everything that had happened. I guess life is like that, unpredictable and confusing. But, everything was because of this lunatic.

But for some reason, Tang Tian's extremely simple fist surfaced back in his mind. It seemed to have been ingrained into his mind,

he stared at Tang Tian, he was unable to see through him, how could such a crazy lunatic release such a stunning fist?

And just by spending a few hours, he was already playing with the Ping Family's stealth techniques, such a talent was beyond astonishing.

A fake! He must definitely be a fake!

Ping Xiao Shan's mind was roused, Tang Tian's brainless actions, after interpreting them, he became serious. This guy must be planning something big, what Ping Family stealth techniques, he must be acting, he must definitely have something planned, that's why he did not kill me. Why won't he kill me? Because he has some treacherous plot at hand!

It was as though Ping Xiao Shan had caught onto an invisible net that had quietly enveloped the entire Xue Family, causing him to quiver. Tang Tian's naive and harmless smile had become extremely terrifying in his eyes.

Ping Xiao Shan's expression started to become colder and colder the more he thought, causing him to forget where he was.

"Eh, you're still not going?" Tang Tian noticed Ping Xiao Shan standing there in a daze and felt strange.

Ping Xiao Shan jolted, he regained from his senses and immediately replied: "I'm just about to!"

With that, he escaped without hesitation.

Tang Tian looked at Ping Xiao Shan's pitiful figure, and could not help but remind him: "Hey, you're going in the wrong direction!"

Ping Xiao Shan: "....."

After Ping Xiao Shan left, Tang Tian continued to train. After the battle, he had been enlightened, afraid that as time passed, he would forget it, so he immersed himself back into practise.

In the morning, a group of women rushed over to the warehouse.

"Ming Zhu [Jie Jie](#), did Old Granny really say that? Oh my, how is this a good thing!"

(Jie Jie is older sister)

"What's bad about it? Didn't Old Granny investigate already? He is very strong and is a brave and fearless man, maybe you will like him instead!"

"I am afraid he is too vulgar, our Xue Family is still an aristocratic family with position, how can we be so casual? Old Granny has gone overboard this time....."

Ming Zhu could no longer hold back and shouted: "All of you, shut up! Since when did thea Old Granny's decision making

become something you all can comment about?”

The group of ladies kept quiet obediently, but a few of them revealed looks of unhappiness.

“Guarding over the warehouse through the night is the most difficult. And furthermore the warehouse is filled with Golden Steel Threads, the value of it is known throughout the cities, for him to keep watch over it, it is also a test of his character.” Ming Zhu looked around, seeing that the other ladies were looking on thoughtfully, she snorted: “How can all of your foresights compare with our Old Lady? By asking him to keep watch over a few nights, we will be able to see his character.”

Hearing that, the ladies nodded their heads.

“Once we go and take a look, won’t we know everything?” Ming Zhu said.

Just nice, they arrived before the door of the warehouse. Ming Zhu pushed open the door, and lit up the interior with sunlight.

The warehouse was in a mess, Golden Steel Threads were laid all over, a figure slept extremely soundly, his snores as loud as thunder.

Chapter 698 – Handing Over The Threads

Ming Zhu's face turned green, the old granny was already old, and the majority of the matters were being handled by her, it was a norm for her to handle the reward and punishments, especially with seeing people skiving. Upon witnessing the messy warehouse and Tang Tian who was sleeping extremely soundly, a rage built up in her heart, along with hate towards him.

This time, the Old Lady's eyes were wrong, she secretly thought.

The other sisters were all shocked, the Xue Family used to be a huge family, and had passed down countless strict rules. The ladies had long been influenced by these rules, with them deeply marked in their hearts. How could they ever stand such a scene? Even all the protection hired would never behave like that.

Tang Tian was sprawled on the ground, facing upwards with saliva drooling down from the corner of his mouth, the thunderous snore coming rhythmically from his nose.

“Xiao Yao, pack up the warehouse.” Ming Zhu said coldly.

A pretty and nimble young lady walked forward and started cleaning up the Golden Steel Threads around the warehouse. After the initial shock, the rest quickly recovered, their eyes brimmed with disdain as they looked at Tang Tian.

The Sin Domain was filled with royal and great families that were banished, all of them were families with strict rules, even the

families that stemmed from military successes had been through generations of nurturing, and naturally knew of etiquette. In the Sin Domain, even the lowest and dirtiest jobs also treated etiquette very heavily. Although they had all fallen, they still had their big and prestigious past.

It was the first time they had met with such a disdainful person.

Tang Tian slept very soundly, he had been practising laws, although the fight between him and Ping Xiao Shan was extremely short, it had completely exhausted his physical strength. The training after that lasted for another few hours, and being afraid of forgetting on the second day, he passionately trained for the entire night, at that time, he forced himself to endure, and only after all the enlightenment had been deeply ingrained in his mind, did he stop.

The tensed feeling he had in his heart finally stopped, Tang Tian who had held on all the way finally let the fatigue wash all over him.

The moment he let it seep in, he slept extremely sweetly, he did not even sense Ming Zhu and the rest coming in.

“There is none lacking.” After packing and cleaning it all up, Xiao Yao was surprised. She turned to look at Tang Tian.

“There really isn’t any missing?” Someone asked: “There are so many Golden Steel Threads, it must be him who did this! If there aren’t any missing, why did he tear them out?”

Xiao Yao did not refute, but said: “I did the counting previously, whoever doesn’t believe me can come and check yourself.”

The rest looked at each other, but no one said a word, Xiao Yao was a fine and careful person, she never made a mistake when taking inventory.

Ming Zhu’s expression became much better, the thieves that she hated the most did not appear, and caused her thoughts on Tang Tian to be much better. Although he was disdainful, but he was not a thief. Although she did not understand why there were so many Golden Steel Threads on the ground, but there was not one missing, that meant no theft had occurred.

Ming Zhu snorted: “Let’s go.”

“We’re not going to wake him up?” Xiao Yao asked.

“If he wants to sleep, then we will let him sleep.” Ming Zhu said coldly.

Everyone kept their thoughts to themselves, they were familiar with Ming Zhu’s temper, and knew that she was truly angry. If Ming Zhu was not willing, even the old lady could not force her. Since young, Ming Zhu was groomed by the old lady as a successor, if nothing came up, the future Xue Family would be in Ming Zhu’s hands.

Thinking about how they would never marry such a disdainful man, everyone exhaled at the same time. The old lady hoped to find a strong son-in-law to marry into the Xue Family, to give birth to more children and form the foundation of the Xue Family.

The living environment in the Sin Domain was extremely terrible, and the most important criteria to survive was the body, if their physiques were not good enough, the baby would have difficulty surviving. Furthermore, the Sin Domain did not have energy, and they only relied on the strength from their flesh and blood, regardless of what secret technique it was, it began by tempering the physical body. The body was the foundation of everything.

For their recent years, the Xue Family was lacking greatly in this department, and as time passed, they fell greater and greater in danger. If there were no powerful martial artists appearing in their next generation, they would have difficulty protecting their wealth and estate. If not for the protection from the Purple Cuckoo Family for the past few years, the Xue Family would have long been swept clean.

Ming Zhu bit her lips, she had been managing the Xue Family for so long, and she knew the plight that the Xue Family was currently in, and any slight mistake would lead them to no hope of reprieve. The Xue Family could not obtain any true allies, and having all females with not much abilities to protect themselves, to any powerhouse, it was an irresistible attraction. If they were to be married into the tyrant great families, the Xue Family's secret technique to groom Golden Steel Silkworms would be handed over, and in the blink of an eye, the Xue Family would be devoured with no remnants left.

But, upon thinking about the fact that she would have to marry such a spiteful and lazy person, Ming Zhe felt extremely terrible. Even if he had a position or name, Ming Zhu still found it hard to accept.

Seeing that Ming Zhu did not look right, Xiao Yao spoke softly: “Ming Zhu Jie, today is the day we hand over the threads.”

Ming Zhu regained her senses and ‘oh’d’ once, her complexion becoming even uglier. Xiao Yao immediately knew she said the wrong words.

“Is Miss Ming Zhu here?” A clear voice came out.

A look of complication flashed past Ming Zhu’s eyes, she calmed herself down and recovered her calm appearance and headed towards the yard. A handsome man with his hands behind his back walked leisurely into the yard, appreciating the flowers and plants.

“Young Master Qin!” Ming Zhu called out gently, and bowed.

“Miss Ming Zhu!” Young Master Qin returned the bow, his face revealed a smile as bright as the sun, causing Ming Zhu to be dazed.

She patted the fringe on her hair, covering up her mistake: “Young Master can just summon people to come down to obtain the threads, why come personally?”

“Everyone is very busy, and just right I am free, furthermore, I wanted to see Miss Ming Zhu, thus this is a pleasant task for me.” Qin Zi Shan’s eyes lit with passion, his clear voice not only made made others feel that he was not frivolous, but instead honest and filled with self confidence.

Xiao Yao sighed inwardly at the side, everyone knew that Young Master Qin admired Ming Zhu. Even the old lady kept quiet about this matter, feigning ignorance. The Qin Family was the Purple Cuckoo Family, and were the masters of the city. The Purple Cuckoo Family took care of the Xue Family, and if Qin Zi Shan asked for her head, it would be difficult for the old granny to reject him, but the main decision still laid with Min Zhu.

But she did not initiate any response towards Young Master Qin’s advances.

She had been groomed as the next successor from a young age, and was used to thinking for the Xue Family’s best benefits. If she truly agreed to him, then other than being merged into the Qin Family, there was no other path left for the Xue Family.

Ming Zhu avoided Qin Zi Shan’s passionate gaze, and said: “Everything is ready, young master, please.”

Xue Family’s Golden Steel Threads were not just sold to anyone, and one of their buyers was the Purple Cuckoo Family. Not only could the Golden Steel Threads weave clothes and light armor, it could also make extremely fine bowstrings, the Purple Cuckoo

Family bought the Golden Steel Threads to make strong bows.

Xiao Yao's face changed, she was not able to stop them, and Ming Zhu had already brought Young Master Qin towards the warehouse.

"I heard that your family is buying a son-in-law?" Qin Zi Shan laughed: "I wonder if I can meet him in person?"

Ming Zhu's face changed, she suddenly realised that Tang Tian was still sleeping in the warehouse! Oh my god, I was so infuriated with Tang Tian I became muddleheaded, to actually make such a grave mistake. I could just call for someone to grab the threads from the warehouse Ming Zhu could not imagine what would happen if Tang Tian and Young Master Qin were to meet.

Ming Zhu forced a smile: "I never thought that the news would spread to outside, it truly astounds me. He is just a servant, the old lady saw him as a pitiful boy, and felt that since our family had so much to do but are just a group of ladies, so we needed someone to do the manual labor."

"So it's like that, What I heard were just rumors, It is my bad!" Qin Zi Shan apologized to Ming Zhu.

Ming Zhu forced the smile even further: "Young Master, you are too polite, you regard me too much as an outsider already."

The group had already walked to the front of the warehouse,

where Ming Zhu stopped abruptly.

What do I do....What do I do....

Qin Zi Shan waited for a moment, seeing that Ming Zhu had not pushed open the door, he was confused: “Miss Ming Zhu?”

Ming Zhu who was extremely confused jumped in shock, she subconsciously pushed the door, causing it to rumble open.

The scene of Tang Tian sleeping with his thunderous snores appeared again, Xiao Yao could not help but face palm herself, she could no longer watch it, it was too embarrassing!

Young Master Qin was startled, he was speechless for a moment: “Your servant is sleeping really well.”

Ming Zhu regained her composure and replied: “He has guarded over the warehouse for a few consecutive nights, and is too tired, let us be quiet, lest we wake him up.”

Young Master Qin nodded in praise: “Miss Ming Zhu empathizes with others and is kindhearted, Zi Shan is full of respect for you.” He turned and told his subordinates: “All of you, move lightly.”

Previously, he had heard that the Old Granny Xue had bought a son-in-law and wanted to take a look at him, seeing Tang Tian’s current image, the heavyweight in his heart disappeared. He believed that Ming Zhu would not be blind to like such a disdainful

person. Confirming that the other party did not pose a threat to him at all, he became calm, and naturally did not harbor any jealousy, he could not even be bothered to be petty and lose his dignity.

Tang Tian was dreaming.

He dreamt that the Honorable Martial Group was invading the Ursa Major Constellation, the Shang Continent was covered with flames of war and battles surged crazily. He dreamt that Qian Hui was in danger, that Bing was bringing along everyone else and fighting to the death, dreaming that Tang Chou was prepared to die for his city, that Ling Xu no longer woke up, that Crane was severely injured. He dreamt that Jing Hao was stabbed with countless swords, that the Lupus People were falling one after another, the waves after waves of enemies surging in, dreamt that Ursa Major Constellation was put to the torch, the flames reaching high up in the sky.

Unfathomable pain and rage enveloped his entire body, causing him to tremble from head to toe and bellowing with his face up towards the sky.

Tang Tian suddenly woke up, and realised that he was seated down.

Hu.....hu.....hu.....

He was perspiring all over as he stared intently at the walls, gasping for breath. So it was a dream.....it was so terrifying!

Tang Tian sudden movement scared everyone, Ming Zhu frowned and asked with displeasure: “Xiao Tang, what’s wrong?”

Tang Tian did not hear her, he stared straight at the wall, Fortunately.....fortunately it was just a dream, no matter what, I will never let that happen!

“Miss is asking you a question!” the servant beside Ming Zhu could no longer continue watching, she screamed loudly at Tang Tian as she had never seen such an undisciplined person.

Tang Tian did not speak about his emotions, he stood up, without looking at them, without saying a word, he walked out of the warehouse with a black face.

Everyone looked at each other, it was extremely weird.

Chapter 699 – Ghost Face Mask and Bear Flag

Inside the warehouse, everyone's eyes were wide open, it was extremely quiet.

Qin Zi Shan was the first to regain his senses, sensing the awkward atmosphere, he started to break the silence and laugh: "Your servant has quite the character. I heard that he was someone that came out of the huge tide? I have some over at my place too, they are truly arrogant and untamed people, I think it is the norm of their environment, after a while of polishing, they will become much better."

Ming Zhu also regained her senses, she acted as though nothing happened and laughed: "Young Master is really experienced. No wonder I frequently hear that Young Master is capable and experienced, and does not go about mixing with disputes and misunderstandings, it truly is real. Ming Zhu is inexperienced at this, I hope that Young Master does not take offense."

Qin Zi Shan was secretly pleased, but he maintained his humble expression: "At least I managed to see Miss Ming Zhu smiling today."

He felt that it was worth it, not only was he not angered by Tang Tian's actions, but instead felt that it was perfect.

The two of them laughed and talked, and the atmosphere became better.

With an ashen face, Tang Tian walked to the backyard. Seeing a pool, he immediately jumped in. After being immersed in the water, the cooling sensation seeped into him and caused the anger in his mind to subside. Tang Tian's pupils became calm and profound, as dark as the abyss.

That terrifying nightmare had abruptly woken him.

What is there to fear? Afraid that you will harm the others? That you are unclear of the situation and are not able to act? Afraid of the future?

The young man was questioning himself.

Is that why I'm lost? Is that why I'm hesitating? Is that why I am so anxious and desperate? Is that why I am telling myself that everything will get better?

What a shame!

As long as you have fear in your heart, your heart will always conceal the cowardice and you will always find a joke of an excuse for yourself.

He clenched his fists so tight that his fingernails were white.

You have a heavy responsibility, and it should not become the

reason for you to run and hide. The future is unknown and has many dangers, but that should not be the reason that stops you. What does all of that complications have to do with you?

Everyone is waiting for you to save them, they have kept you, protected you, trusted you, followed you through life and death, you have a duty.

You don't know planning and don't know how to lead expeditions, if you lose your courage, what do you have?

You're stupid, you're bold but not smart, you're unreasonable, you always rush forward into danger, but so what?

You are Tang Tian, this is your style of fighting, this is your dao path to victory.

In the pool, Tang Tian opened his eyes wide, ripples undulated outwards, he could feel a flame combusting in his heart. All of the restrictions were being burnt by these flames. He felt himself brimming with power, he found back the familiar passion, he found back his fearless heart.

Heh, he sneered without making a sound, his eyes burning with fire.

Godlike young lad, Go go go!

The Purple Cuckoo City only have a few hundred people, I will

find them first, and we can all find a way to communicate with the rest, that is a better scenario. Tang Tian remembered that Old Lady Xue had said that Han Bing Ning was bought by a person called Miss Da Lin.

Tang Tian emerged out of the water, wiped the water off of his face and then leapt out of the water. A few Xue Family ladies passing by were shocked beyond words, Tang Tian ignored them and returned to his room.

He was Tang Tian, despite being young, he was still a lord, the godlike young lad that had left a trail of skeletons wherever he went, after being clear of the puzzlement, after placing down the fear in his heart, his mind was extremely clear. His fearlessness and courage started to ignite like a torch in the night, burning the sky red.

Back in his room, Tang Tian harmonized his breathing, a minute later, he became completely focused, his mind and heart extremely calm.

Sin Domain, so what?

Even if it's the Honorable Martial Continent, I will barge in myself!

He extended his arms, his fingers started to bend as he cracked his knuckles. The young man in the mirror had an extremely cold face, killing intent soaring from his entire body.

Godlike young lad, you can only move forward, how can you pity yourself?

In his mind, images of all of his friends swept past, Tang Tian smiled at the person in the mirror, the snow white teeth were laced with a layer of killing intent. He retracted his gaze and with a calm expression, he walked out of the room. His eyes glimpsed onto the few children toy masks hanging on the bamboo poles, and thought about the time in Humble Forest Planet, intercepting assassins on the young princess with Ling Xu, when he donned the orangutan mask.

Talk about coincidence, the young princess was also called Ming Zhu, thinking about that student which he had not met for a long time, he thought about how she had grown, and the gaze in Tang Tian's eyes became very gentle.

He walked forward and removed one of the masks.

It had a bloodied mouth and fierce, sharp teeth, with black hair and green eyes.

Using a mask will be more appropriate.

Tang Tian then found a black cloth that was sun drying in the courtyard, and found a dye cask in the corner, the Xue Family was in the clothes business, and all of these were common necessities. After looking for half a day, Tang Tian could not find a pen, and could only use a broom as a substitute, and started drawing with red dye.

A distorted red bear appeared on the black cloth.

It was extremely ugly!

Tang Tian cringed, he could not bear to look at it, I was thinking of a magnificent and powerful big bear, but why did it turn out to be so ugly and stupid? He whimpered, after thinking for a bit, he knew that his drawing was nowhere passable, and very quickly gave up the urge to redraw. Looking around, he grabbed onto the pole which the black cloth was initially hung to dry, he found some ropes and quickly grabbed the red bear black cloth and tied it to the pole.

This art....is truly humiliating....

Tang Tian smacked his lips, he waved it around, I should tighten it well, alright, I'll have to put up with it.

He grabbed onto the newly drawn bear flag, moving it up and down a few times, Tang Tian then disappeared.

Not long later, Ming Zhu burst into Tang Tian's room in anger, seeing that no one was around, her complexion changed.

Tang Tian carried the flag and walked on the streets of the Purple

Cuckoo City, causing the passersby to make way for him. A man with a mask and a flag reeking with killing intent caused them all to be fearful.

The black flag expanded out, and the red bear appeared in their eyes, it was extremely badly drawn, the red bear looked to be stupid and ugly, but the fresh red dye made it look like blood splattered on the black cloth, giving it a bizarre sense of killing intent.

A ghost face mask and a bloodied bear black flag.

Tang Tian stopped, he suddenly realised a problem, Where did Miss Da Lin stay?

He wanted to ask for directions, but all around him, there was nobody. Wherever his eyes swept, the passersby would dodge him. Tang Tian felt a headache coming, but coincidentally he saw a person at the door of a shop, his eyes lit up and he walked over.

Seeing the ghost face mask with the flag, he knew that it was a ferocious and evil man walking towards him. The young man's face immediately flushed white, and his legs started trembling. He held onto the wall as support, and watched as the other party closed in on him, and his entire body started trembling. The evil looking figure was like a black cloud suppressing him, causing his entire world to become black as he was choked in the darkness.

His mind went blank.

“Do you know how to get to Miss Da Lin’s house?”

A deep voice came out from the mask, the evil looking figure was brimming with an oppressive aura.

“West, take the west route all the w-way, t-then, t-then...”

The young man who was mind blank stuttered.

“Thank you.”

The figure dissipated, and the oppressive feeling disappeared, the young man could no longer resist and sat down on the floor where he remained paralyzed.

Tang Tian left just like that, and headed towards Miss Da Lin’s home.

“Miss Da Lin? Could he have a grudge with her?”

“What a dense killing intent!”

“Quickly, follow him and watch!”

“Are you trying to die? What if.....”

“We can follow from a distance, it will not be so dangerous.”

Along the road, figures followed eagerly like a school of fish, they jumped on the roofs and followed Tang Tian.

Tang Tian walked on the west route, it was roughly 60m wide, with tall stone walls at both sides that had a purple rattan cascading down the entire stretch of wall. Beautiful flowers of a variety of colors were scattered all along the sea of purple.

There was no one on the street, and all the way to the end was a majestic fort.

With the black flag on his shoulder, Tang Tian walked on the broad street alone, his footsteps were obvious, his complexion was livid like a tourist. The mask followed the rhythm of his footsteps, while the purple rattan gently swayed with the wind, and the black flag fluttered along. The blood red bear flickered in the sea of purple.

All of the spectators stopped at the entrance of the west route.

The ghost face mask and the blood bear gave off an unspeakable intent, all of the spectators subconsciously held their breaths. In the silent west route, the only set of footsteps seemed to walk at a steady pace similar to a heartbeat, every step thumped with killing intent.

While Tang Tian was walking, the head of the bodyguards had already noticed him, he made it known that the incoming man had unkind intentions, causing all the bodyguards to go into alert, the

loud warning system resonated throughout the entire fort. Inside the fort, it was in chaos, the bodyguards and soldiers all rushed out like a tide and went into position. It was as if the entire fort were facing against an enemy.

A few figures rushed out and blocked Tang Tian's path, one of them spoke out: "Fellow friend, this place is private."

"Is this Miss Da Lin's home?"

A low voice came out.

For some reason, some of them felt their body tense up, a cold feeling rose from their hearts.

"That's right." The head of the bodyguards became alarmed, and asked: "Can I ask who you are? Please give me your name, and I can report your arrival."

"That's good."

Tang Tian muttered to himself.

Tang Tian's act caused all the bodyguards to become even more tensed, he did not seem to be stable, causing the bodyguards who had great experience to be able to feel the killing intent despite the silence.

An expert!

The bodyguards subconsciously swallowed their saliva, Is this the calm before the storm?

Tang Tian's eyes never stopped at the bodyguards, he looked at the fort behind them, the majestic fort was like an unfathomable giant beast, devouring anyone that enters.

Behind the mask, Tang Tian suddenly laughed, he pulled out the flag from his shoulders and stabbed it onto the ground beside him. The hard sturdy rocks were pierced in like tofu, and with the wind, the black flag expanded out, causing the monstrous blood bear to look extremely sinister.

He looked up, the ghost face mask looking up into the sky, took a deep breath, and shouted at the top of his lungs.

“Ursa Major Null Division, Han Bing Ning, report!”

Chapter 700 – Hand Me My Friend

Inside the fort.

Da Lin spoke: “He’s only one person, but he is able to produce such a fearsome air, I have never heard of this Ursa Major Null Division, but I can tell that he is not ordinary! Is he your commander?”

She had a tall stature and pure white skin, the color of her eyes resembled the ocean, her golden hair was tied up in a bun and gave off an air of arrogance. She was only 24 years old, but she was much more intellectually mature than people her age, and she was the one who bought Han Bing Ning.

Over the past few days, she had grasped Han Bing Ning’s personality.

Han Bing Ning did not speak, but she did not treat it as disobedience, and continued to talk: “Does he know you are here? Maybe he does, I think your Ursa Major Null Division only has you as a female, as long as he investigated a bit, he will naturally know of your whereabouts.”

Han Bing Ning remained silent, her vision became blurry as all of the memories of the past surfaced in her mind.

She had met Tang Tian the first time at the Jaded Pond and Sea of Bamboos. Tang Tian’s angry eyes and his crouched figure, beating the Ink Black Iron Rhino with his hands, with all of his

veins and arteries stretched taut as he went berserk, felt just like yesterday.

The man I've always been chasing after, I've always been looking at your back.

"You best release me now." Han Bing Ning suddenly spoke out, on her back, a light needle wriggled down her spine.

"Oh?" Da Lin looked at Han Bing Ning in surprise: "It seems like you have confidence in him."

"He has never lost." Han Bing Ning raised her beautiful chin, her speech filled with a sense of pride.

Because, he was the man she had always chased after. Countless people were willing to fight for him and were willing to shed first blood for him. As long as he raised his flag, countless people would come running forward, giving their lives for him; as long as he blew his bugle horn, heroes would gather.

The high-spirited young man, their King!

Han Bing Ning never said those words, she did not have to explain anything.

Da Lin was not foolish, but instead, she sort of understood, she could feel the pride in Han Bing Ning, the deep, honest pride, was for the figure down below.

“Seems like she is held captive.”

Tang Tian muttered, his voice was not loud, but his words were mixed in with the fluttering of the flag, and resonated to every corner that the wind could reach. His indifference and calmness, was like the calm before the storm, quietly gathering an immense pressure, enveloping the entire place.

Da Lin's face became gloomy, the more carefree the other party was, the more it spoke of their confidence.

The ghost face mask turned towards her, causing Da Lin to become unsure if it was her hallucination or not.

Behind the mask, Tang Tian sneered, not wanting to beat about the bush anymore, he extended his hands out and grabbed the flag. His five fingers wrapped around the flagpole tightly, pu, the flag was lifted off the ground.

His gaze landed on the fort, behind the mask, he licked his lips, it's slightly far, huh.

His gaze suddenly turned extremely cold, the fighting intent that he had suppressed right from the beginning, along with the fiery evil surging in his heart was like rumbling lava, after burning through the last thin layer of rock, the lava erupted and surged out.

His mind suddenly had a brazen idea.....~The Ping Family Stealth techniques I learned~.

With that thought, Tang Tian's body instantly moved, the figure that was standing in the original position suddenly turned blurry.

No one could see his movements, he flashed, and the blurry figure suddenly disappeared, he had returned to his original position, as if he did not even move.

Boom!

A loud sound erupted, like striking on a bass drum extremely loudly, it shook everyone's hearts.

The big gate in front of the fort started to reveal spider web like cracks, in the middle of all of it was a black flag, the flag drooped down, making the blood bear look unbearably funny. But no one laughed, Tang Tian's move had shocked everyone.

No one had managed to see Tang Tian move, but only witnessed the air around him become slightly blurred.

The more bizarre thing was there were no sound of his movements in the air, no whistling screeches due to its fast speed, the air did not even undulate, the bear flag seemed to have teleported itself and embedded itself into the big gate.

Ping Xiao Shan who was amongst the crowd looked at the bear

flag blankly, his face void of blood.

That ghost face masked man.....

He initially had suspicions that it was the same man that had fought with him the night before, because their physiques were too similar. When Tang Tian made the move with the flag, he immediately confirmed his suspicions, but not only did it make him unhappy, it made him feel an unprecedented fear, he was completely shocked by the toss, and his mind went blank.

The toss was done with spatial laws, and it was the Ping Family Stealth Technique's spatial laws!

If not for Ping Xiao Shan being extremely familiar with the faint movements, he would not have believed his own eyes, the other party had actually integrated the Ping Family's stealth technique's spatial laws into his own techniques.

The Ping Family stealth techniques had changed throughout the generations, but there was no one that had successfully grasped the spatial laws in the techniques to be used as attacks. The spatial laws that the Ping Family had grasped could only be used for stealth and concealment, and that was the reason why the three generations of the Ping Family had gradually died out. Without any ability to fight, it was extremely difficult to survive in the Sin Domain.

The ideals and hopes of the Ping Family had actually appeared in another person's hands, and right in front of me, and he only

learned it last night.....

The impact that Ping Xiao Shan had suffered was unthinkable.

The entire west route was completely silent.

Tang Tian was completely oblivious to these thoughts, the move was purely accidental, he thought that the distance to the fort was too far, and a normal toss would prove to be difficult to hit.

In the silence, footsteps gradually came up, the young man wearing the ghost face mask walked towards the fort.

The bodyguards subconsciously stepped back. The head of the bodyguards was the first to react, although he was afraid, but he did not forget his responsibility, he resisted the fear in his heart and walked one step forward, and spoke with difficulty: "Sire...."

"Hand me my friend."

A calm and monotonous voice came out from behind the mask. The ghost face mask man's upper body did not move, his strides were leisurely, but every step that he took caused everyone's heart to tighten.

"Did your sire get something wrong....." The bodyguard was rich with experience and knew that it was not the right time to admit anything.

“Hand me my friend.”

The same monotonous voice came out, the determined and slow footsteps were the footsteps of death, the invisible cold aura was like autumn frost, permeating every corner of the entire place.

The first to move were five bodyguards, as they blocked Tang Tian at his front.

The ordinary, somber and determined footsteps, along with the terrifying ghost face mask continued to get closer to them, and the black flag embedded in the gate of the fort that had the blood red bear, seemed to be watching their every movement from the back.

The distance between both parties got closer and closer, one of the pale bodyguard's mental state finally crumbled, as he shouted and pounced towards Tang Tian.

His actions was like the fuse, immediately causing the situation that was approaching a crisis to completely lose control. All of his companions beside him had their mental states stretched taut, and at that moment they subconsciously rushed along with him and pounced towards Tang Tian.

The face of the head of the bodyguards changed, but at that moment he could no longer stop them, the look in his eyes became serious, I might as well join them, no matter how strong the other party is, he is only one person!

Five figures pounced towards Tang Tian like lightning.

Ping Xiao Shan's face changed, his heart jumping up to his throat. Miss Da Lin's bodyguards were all elites and every individual was very strong. Every year, her residence would replenish with new blood, and Ping Xiao Shan had participated in one of the tests before, but was rejected. The five bodyguards were the elites, and Captain Huo, the leader, even had a name for himself.

The five bodyguards moved out together in an imposing manner.

A clump of black raindrops shot towards Tang Tian. The black raindrops pervaded a stench, it was called lacquer rain, and was extremely poisonous. A blade and a spear flanked Tang Tian's sides, the blade light surged like a fish in water, bringing forth dense bubbles. The spear was like a dragon, the fiery red flames surging forth like a red dragon raising its head high and roaring out loud. A black figure appeared behind Tang Tian with unnoticeable lines that quickly formed into a large net.

But the most vicious was still Captain Huo, his sword had disappeared, and was not in the combination of attacks.

The ghost face mask young man was enveloped and swallowed up by the attacks, but suddenly, beneath the sinister and ugly ghost face mask, the indifferent and calm eyes suddenly lit up with splendor.

The indescribable splendor was as calm as water, yet as bright and brilliant like a spirit.

Tang Tian moved, and the splendor formed two bizarre light traces, his body suddenly became extremely weird as he became blurred.

The harsh environment of the Sin Domain had made the citizens to feel despair. But Tang Tian felt extremely comfortable, like a fish in the water, he was extremely free.

There was nothing as compatible to the Sin Domain like the Zero Energy Bodies.

Regardless of whether it was Heaven's Road or the Sacred Saint Galaxy, they were places filled with energy, and all around Tang Tian's Zero Energy Body was an interference and repelling force, making him like a drop of oil in water, unable to assimilate into the environment. But in the Sin Domain, a place where no energy existed, a place where there was no repelling force, Tang Tian's Zero Energy Body was extremely compatible.

Before, there was still a barrier between the two. But after enlightening on his laws, Tang Tian finally broke through this barrier, and the heartfelt congenial feeling with the environment was like how a fish finally entering water, it was something Tang Tian had never experienced before.

It was an enjoyable feeling.

The black lacquer, blade light, spear aura and undetectable poisonous web were extremely obvious in his eyes.

His right palm clenched into a fist and punched into the air in front of him, causing a ripple to diffuse out of his hand. The lacquer rain that was flying towards Tang Tian met with an invisible umbrella and exploded in the air.

The fiery red spear had already touched Tang Tian's waist, causing the bodyguard to reveal a look of joy, the red flames was the red lotus flames he had gained from the enlightenment of fire laws, it seemed to be ordinary but possessed a powerful might, as long as it touched something, the object would definitely burn to ashes.

Die!

His eyes were filled with rage as he gave it his all.

Pa!

A hand suddenly appeared and grabbed onto his fiery red spear.

How is that possible.....

The bodyguard that was using the spear could not believe his eyes.

Tang Tian held onto the spear's body with his hand that emitted a faint ripple. The fiery red flames that could melt everything was helpless against this faint ripple, and a terrifying power surged from the spear towards the bodyguard, causing him to panic, before he could react, he was lifted up into the air.

Before him, the blade light that produced countless bubbles approached.

Not good.....

Bang!

The two bodyguards clashed, the fiery red flames and bubbles touched and instantly exploded.

Tang Tian suddenly released the spear and with a push, the spear bodyguard and the blade user flew out like sand bags, towards the invisible web.

The web behind him instantly shattered, causing the bodyguard to spit out blood.

The shadow approached.

Beneath the ghost face mask, the pair of lit eyes suddenly dazzled. He sneered.

With his feet like a blade with the power of a heavy ax, he slashed towards the empty space on his right.

Captain Huo felt as if he was struck by a berserk wild beast, his throat turned sweet and he flew out.

Tang Tian stood alone once again.

Without even looking at the bodyguards, the ghost face mask suddenly lifted his legs and walked towards the fort.

In front of him, the black flag that was stabbed into the gate that had the blood bear dancing with the wind fluttered sinisterly.